



# ZHANXIAN

BOOK 02

*Ren Yuan*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Immortal Executioner

(斩仙)

by

**Ren Yuan**

(任怨)

# Synopsis

---

In his previous life, Yang Chen was benevolent, but he was bullied all his life.

Reborn, Yang Chen chose to become an Executioner, settling all gratitude and grudges with the executioner's blade, beheading the common people on the Immortal Executioner Stage.

Behead men in the world of men!

Behead demons in the world of demons!

Behead devils in the world of devils!

Behead immortals in the world of immortals!

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by weletranslations @ [weletranslations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 101 - The Sect's Arrangements

---

Gao Yue was also regretfully awakened by Wang Yong's happy voice, but she had also benefitted. Just the events of this pill tribulation had allowed her to become more knowledgeable, thanks to being able to directly observe the three calamities. This had given her many benefits regarding her tribulations in the future.

Currently Wang Yong did not know how to describe this grand disciple of his. As soon as they met with him, he had given such a pleasant surprise to the Palace Master and the elders. Penglai Divine Wood, a Third Grade Divine Wood Foundation Stage Pill, being a Third Grade Pill Concocting Master, and now also the Heaven Seizing Pill and these pill tribulations.

He must have surely gotten the Penglai Divine Wood from Elder Wu, after all Yang Chen was just a foundation stage disciple, how else would he be able to obtain it? Elder Wu had been so generous to give him the Heaven Seizing Pill, so obviously he would not think much about giving him a small piece of Penglai Divine Wood, but that little branch of Penglai Divine Wood was very important for the Pure Yang Palace. If they were able to breed it, after several hundred or thousand years, the Pure Yang Palace would be able to produce many treasures.

“Yang Chen, how do you plan to handle this Heaven Seizing Pill?”

After settling his heart and mind, Wang Yong realized that Yang Chen surely had some kind of intention when he took out this

Heaven Seizing Pill, otherwise he definitely would not have informed him so easily, so he directly asked, without waiting for Yang Chen to start talking. This made him appear very impatient; the Heaven Seizing Pill had already created a huge upheaval in his heart, which he was not able to cope up with.

“Great Master, although this Heaven Seizing Pill is not perfect, it can still increase the chances of ascending by seventy percent.”

Yang Chen softly muttered to himself and after organizing his excuses, he opened his mouth again:

“This Heaven Seizing Pill is of no use to both me and master for some time, so disciple wants to give it as a present to Great Master.”

“Give it as a present to me?”

Although Wang Yong had somewhat guessed that this would happen, but when Yang Chen really spoke out these words, Wang Yong was still greatly excited. This was the Heaven Seizing Pill, a powerful pill which even had to face tribulation after it had been refined; giving it as a present to him? This was not a dream, right?

“Great Master has already been at the YuanYing stage for a long time, as long as you go steady and strike hard, with the impression of the pill tribulation, you can surely enter the Da Cheng stage within the next hundred years. Then at the time of ascension, it will increase your chances to seventy percent.”

As if it had accidentally slipped off Yang Chen's mouth, he immediately retracted it:

“Disciple is showing his filial respect, Great Master should not care about it too much.”

Although it seemed as if Yang Chen had said these words unintentionally, for the listener it was as if he had realized something. Yang Chen's words had struck hard, which immediately made Wang Yong realize his mentality was somewhat fickle and impatient. Regardless of the reason, Wang Yong had wanted to rush towards the Da Cheng stage, but this kind of impatient attitude was the biggest reason for his Heart's Devil.

After realizing the problem with his mental state, it was seemingly not difficult for a YuanYing stage master such as Wang Yong to combat it. Simply speaking, it all looked quite trivial: he just had to adjust his mental condition, that's all, but this was not so easy to accomplish. The stronger an expert was, the harder it was to free himself after this kind of thing had been drilled into him.

But Yang Chen had given him the Heaven Seizing Pill, that meant that, as long as Wang Yong was able to reach the Da Cheng stage, he would have a chance of at least seventy percent to ascend. Hearing Yang Chen's words, together with the experience of the pill tribulation, this opportunity allowed him to attain a confidence of at least ninety percent. Even for the Yin Fire tribulation, when he reached the Da Cheng stage from the YuanYing stage, he was at least eighty percent sure that he would be successful.



Since he already had this kind of confidence, there was no need for Wang Yong to impatiently adopt some risky method, he could loosen the restrictions on his mind and cultivate step by step, that meant to move steadily, in accordance with Yang Chen's words, then not only would the Da Cheng stage be achievable, even ascending was just around the corner.

“Good, good child!”

Wang Yong suddenly sighed, after praising Yang Chen once, he started to laugh heartily.

“I used to think that I will always be stranded at the upper YuanYing stage, but your words have given me the hope to ascend, good! Good!”

This allowed him to let go of his Heart's Devil and have a sudden feeling of refreshment. Wang Yong exposed a rare, careless smile.

Naturally Yang Chen had realized the problem that Wang Yong had in his previous life, but the future tragedy of Wang Yong could have only been averted with the help of the Heaven Seizing Pill. Using a pill in exchange for getting an expert on his side in the future, that was a matter of great value for Yang Chen, even better was that this expert was also Yang Chen's great master.

Naturally, Yang Chen also had selfish motives in this, as the cultivation of Wang Yong increased, it would also mean that his status within the sect would also increase. And as the status of



Wang Yong increased, other people would not dare to criticize Yang Chen and Gao Yue, so Yang Chen would build a protective net around Gao Yue across the entire Pure Yang Palace from top to bottom, so that in this life she would not have to worry about anything.

“This Heaven Seizing Pill, you can also use it in the future, then why do you want to give it to this old man?”

After laughing, Wang Yong suddenly asked with a probing tone; he very much wanted to know what Yang Chen was thinking at this moment.

“Great Master, you must excuse me for being disrespectful!”

Yang Chen was also laughing gently towards Wang Yong. Just as he had finished speaking, he was immediately berated by Gao Yue:

“Yang Chen, you should not be rude towards your Great Master!”

“Speak, just talking is no harm!”

Wang Yong gestured with his hand, dismissing Gao Yue's beration. He was very cheerful right now and basically did not mind these words of Yang Chen in the least, Yang Chen had told him so much, he instead wanted to know even more, so what did he mean by speaking rudely.

“This Heaven Seizing Pill is not a perfect Heaven Seizing Pill, at

best it has a seventy percent efficacy.”

Yang Chen said fearlessly and immediately started laughing:

“Great Master’s cultivation is very profound, naturally you will not care about a Heaven Seizing Pill with a seventy percent efficacy. When master reaches the Da Cheng stage, I will refine a perfect Heaven Seizing Pill for master, if that time Great Master has not yet ascended, then you will certainly go green with envy!”

When Wang Yong and Gao Yue heard what he said, they became speechless and glanced at each other. Only these two people seemed to realize that Yang Chen really knew how to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill and as soon as his cultivation increased enough, maybe he could refine a perfect Heaven Seizing Pill. But these people did not know that, if Yang Chen really wanted to, then he would set his mind on even higher grade pills compared to the Heaven Seizing Pill.

“Good!”

Wang Yong praised him again, but immediately afterwards he sighed.

“Originally I had planned to give some pointers to you, but I had never expected that I would actually be guided by you. Fine, this old man will become thick skinned and accept your Heaven Seizing Pill.”

While speaking, he received that jade box into his qiankun pouch, but he wasn't very formal.

“Master!”

Gao Yue found this somewhat inappropriate, so she raised a small accusation against Wang Yong:

“So you have accepted the respect shown by my disciple, but did not say anything which would benefit your grand disciple”

Then she had also begun to ask for benefits for Yang Chen.

“Ha Ha Ha Ha!”

Wang Yong rejoiced endlessly.

“You really are very protective of your newly received disciple. Fine, this great master will also not be stingy. This qiankun pouch contains things which might be to your fancy, choose what you want!”

Wang Yong directly placed his qiankun pouch in front of Yang Chen and Gao Yue, allowing them to choose. In Wang Yong's eyes, although the things in the qiankun pouch were precious, they were not more precious than him ascending to the spiritual world. In any case they weren't outsiders, they were his disciple and grand disciple, so it would be best if he allowed them to choose.

Gao Yue shouted in joy and directly grabbed Wang Yong's qiankun pouch and began to flip it upside down to look at the objects inside, with her face full of smiles and still laughing she said:

“I have wanted some things from master long ago, but master was always very stingy, finally I have the opportunity!”

In front of Wang Yong, Gao Yue was acting as if she was still that charming little disciple which Wang Yong was fond of.

Yang Chen, who was standing not too far had a smile on his face, foolishly looking at Gao Yue's smile. That kind of happy laugh which came from the inside, after finding something which she had searched for, for a long time, made Yang Chen think that all that he had done was really worth it. As long as he could keep this smile on his master's face, he was willing to pay any price.

After Gao Yue had picked up several mouth watering items, she threw the qiankun pouch towards Yang Chen.

“Yang Chen, quickly pick, your great master is not very generous!”

Wang Yong was laughing heartily on one side, without feeling the slightest amount of anger at these words of Gao Yue. When Yang Chen took the qiankun pouch, Wang Yuan's gaze also shifted towards him, apparently he wanted to see whether or not Yang Chen had enough knowledge and what kind of item he would

choose?

Only, the things which Gao Yue had picked had made Yang Chen dumbfounded. All of them were related to the fire attribute, making Yang Chen suddenly want to remind Gao Yue:

‘Master, you have an Acquired Full Water Spirit Root, what do you want to do by picking up these fire attributed objects!’

Despite cursing her silently, Yang Chen did not show any courtesy towards the qiankun pouch given to him. Releasing his Spiritual Awareness to search it, he immediately found a qiankun pouch inside, which had moreover been refined by some expert. The mark of Pure Yang Palace was still on top of it and it was multiple times better than the one Wang Yuan had given him.

Although he did not know for whom it had been prepared, since Yang Chen had looked at it, then it was out of Wan Yong’s control. Taking out that one qiankun pouch, Yang Chen said, full of smiles:

“This qiankun pouch is many times better than the one I am carrying, Great Master, I will be troubling you!”

Seeing that Yang Chen had picked up that qiankun pouch, Wang Yong was also hesitant, but he immediately remembered that Yang Chen’s qiankun pouch was being treated as evidence and that he was still using the qiankun pouch of someone he had killed, which was of very poor quality. Finally, with good intentions, Wang Yong stretched out his hand.

“Bring me those qiankun pouches you have obtained from the people you have killed, I will properly refine them for you, so that nobody can steal my sect’s Real Pure Yang Fire from the qiankun pouch.”

Hearing Wang Yong’s words, Yang Chen was happy beyond measure. A Qiankun Pouch was something which everyone had, but everyone’s qiankun pouches were distinct. After being refined by a master, it would just not be the same thing as being given by their respective sect. Leaving aside the amount of the space where objects were held, even the degree of robustness would increase.

If, during the refining, some powerful materials were also added, the grade of the qiankun pouch would increase even more. Naturally, if it was refined with a heavenly grade magic tool, then maybe it could be made into a high grade object, comparable to the Yang Mountain Medicine Garden and if it was fused with immortal grade items, then maybe it would be even more extraordinary.

When two qiankun pouches were fused, the result would have at least the space of the two earlier qiankun pouches added together. That’s why Wang Yong had asked him to bring the qiankun pouches of all the people he had killed. But when Yang Chen took out more than twenty qiankun pouches in succession, even Wang Yong was dumbfounded. Especially because there still were imprints of Greatest Heaven Sect and Tian Quan Sect on top of the qiankun pouches, which astonished him even more.

“Are you cultivating or are you actually a killer?”

Gao Yue could not help but wrinkle her brows. Although she

knew that Yang Chen had previously killed many people, she hadn't anticipated that it would be this many.

“Killing too many people can be harmful to your dao heart, do you know this?”

“When you killed this many people, did any other people know about it?”

Actually Wang Yong was quite open minded, he knew that cultivation and killing people had nothing directly conflicting with each other. Wang Yong had only picked some qiankun pouches with a mark while asking, but he feared that Yang Chen would bring some trouble.

“At the time when I killed these people, nobody knew, but these people have come to find me, so whether or not anyone else knew is difficult to say.”

Frankly speaking, Yang Chen did not have any hatred with these people, they were incited by others to come and look for Yang Chen, so at least those who had incited them knew, but they didn't have any definite proof.

“That's good, kill when you need to kill, but when someone asks, pretend that you do not know.”

Wang Yuan reached out his hand to receive all of those qiankun pouches and afterwards he placed all of them in one place.



“I will return in a few days to help you refine it, so I will give it to you in a few days time!”

“I understand, Great Master, I completely understand everything!”

Yang Chen smiled happily and continued to probe the things within Wang Yong’s qiankun pouch without even lifting his head.

There were a few types of high grade material, a few other materials which could strengthen the fire attributed flying swords and there was also a jade slip, on which everything Wang Yuan had learned about Tool Refining had been recorded, but it was also flipped over by Yang Chen.

“There are still some good things left?”

Gao Yue saw this and directly extended her hand.

“Yang Chen, after paying respects to your master, you still haven’t given any gifts to your master, this is precisely when you show your respects to your master.”

After saying this, she seemingly thought of something, which reddened her face, then she again added a line:

“This Second Fierce Yang Courtyard does not count, it is not for

me alone.”

Yang Chen looked at Wang Yuan and then again at Gao Yue; he had no other choice but to carefully read the contents of the jade slip once and then he had no option than to give it to Gao Yue, while mumbling to himself:

“And they say disciples fight over things!”

“It is counted as you giving respects to your master, and won’t your master pass it on to you again, in the future?”

Gao Yue directly snatched the jade slip, and with a face full of smiles she examined it, while lecturing Yang Chen, so that he would not feel dissatisfied.

Wang Yong sitting at the side, looked at Gao Yue bullying Yang Chen happily, but he only smiled and did not say anything. His own disciple and grand disciple had already allowed him to have no worries, so in the future he had to speak for them to ensure that they would not get pushed around. Now there was nothing which they feared people would find out, so Wang Yuan began to remove the layers of his restrictions one by one.

“Yang Chen, what have you planned after reaching the foundation stage?”

After Yang Chen had finished choosing what he needed, Gao Yue asked with concern:

“Have you planned to cultivate within the sect or go out to train?”

“This disciple plans to go out!”

Yang Chen quickly replied.

“I have heard that the sect betraying disciple, Chu Heng, had already gone missing in the desolate valley and the people of the Law Enforcement Hall could not find him, so this disciple wants to personally go to settle his grudges!”

# Chapter 102 - If I Don't Kill You, I Am Not A Man

---

Yang Chen and Chu Heng's grudge had existed for a long time, it was already a well known matter in the Pure Yang Palace. Only currently, everyone was in support of Yang Chen and there was almost nobody in support of Chu Heng. After all, colluding with outsiders to attack a fellow disciple was a crime which no sect, even the devil sect, would permit.

Therefore, Yang Chen going to look for Chu Heng to settle his grudges, was nothing strange. The Palace Master had already said that, after the sect executed its punishment, the grudge between Yang Chen and Chu Heng was their personal matter. Currently, as the Law Enforcement Hall could not find Chu Heng's whereabouts, nobody could say anything about Yang Chen going to look for him by himself.

Gao Yue had wanted to say something, but after looking at Wang Yong's expression, she didn't open her mouth and only kept looking at Yang Chen with a complicated expression. Her gaze contained traces of worry for Yang Chen.

After the private discussion with Wang Yong and Gao Yue was over, Yang Chen had managed to gain a big supporter for Gao Yue and himself. If Wang Yong was able to break through to the Da Cheng stage, not only would the overall strength of the Pure Yang Palace increase, but so would his and Gao Yue's status.

Wang Yong and Gao Yue both knew the importance of this matter, therefore, regarding the matter of the Heaven Seizing Pill,

both had agreed to keep their mouths shut, not to reveal even a single word of it to other people, even the other disciples of Wang Yong would not be told about this matter. The one who closely hides his wealth will always be king. If other people knew, then it was very possible that the Pure Yang Palace would divide into factions.

Whatever the case, Chu Heng was a middle foundation stage expert, and he had been at the foundation stage for many years. After going to the Desolate Valley, who could know how much had he developed in these years? Even the foundation stage disciples with that JieDan stage disciple hadn't been able to capture him, so it was obvious how difficult to deal with he had become.

Chu Heng's disappearance was not at all because he was killed by demonic beasts, though saying that would lose them face. Actually he had escaped without any trace, even under the combined assault of four experts of the Law Enforcement Hall. Although he hadn't injured anyone, it could still be considered as a tight slap in the face of the Law Enforcement Hall or even the entire Pure Yang Palace. The four experts of the Law Enforcement Hall had surprisingly not been able to catch a person who had betrayed the sect, this really was a fact which lost them face.

Therefore, regardless of whether it was the Palace Master or the Law Enforcement Hall's Master, Meng Xian, both did not say much about this matter. Only Du Qian secretly gave some information to Yang Chen, but also without giving him a lot of details. He did not tell him about the situation at that time and neither did he tell him about the identity of the four disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall, just the conclusion that Chu Heng had escaped, which had been asserted as having gone missing to the public.

Naturally Yang Chen would not let Chu Heng, a mortal enemy slip off that easily. Although Chu Heng was not at the Pure Yang Palace and was also not likely to attack Yang Chen, Yang Chen knew that some people, including Chu Heng's master were dissatisfied about the punishment of the sect. If these people colluded with Chu Heng, then maybe it would cause trouble for Yang Chen.

Even if there were no troubles in the future, just the past actions of Chu Heng were enough for Yang Chen to hunt and kill him. In this life, Yang Chen would not be as good natured as his previous life. Anyone who gave him respect, he would respect them back, but if they wanted to kill him, then he had to kill them in return.

Wang Yong and Gao Yue were both not against his decisions, so naturally other people would also not be against it. If anyone went against him at this time, he was simply embarrassing himself in front of the entire Pure Yang Palace. Besides, other than Wang Yong and Gao Yue, Yang Chen basically hadn't informed anyone else about this matter.

This matter had already caused a great humiliation for the Pure Yang Palace, the foundation stage disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall had all been recalled from their training and even the JieDan stage elders had set out, trying to find Chu Heng's whereabouts in all directions.

Yang Chen would also go out to kill Chu Heng under the pretense of erasing the sect's humiliation. Since Chu Heng had gone missing from the Desolate Valley, Yang Chen's first stop would naturally be

the Desolate Valley.

Nobody knew that, apart from killing Chu Heng, Yang Chen also had another motive in going to the Desolate Valley. The Desolate Valley was a famous place for training through fights, other than having several fierce demonic beasts, it also had another feature: the earth attributed Spirit Power was very thick within the Desolate Valley, so only earth attributed cultivators and wood attributed cultivators would go there, as, among the five phases, only wood could subdue earth. Chu Heng was water attributed, so he was firmly subdued by the earth attributed Spirit Power. When he was sent here, this was precisely to serve as the penal sentence.

But Yang Chen knew the reason why the Desolate Valley was like this. There was a vein of fifth earth True Qi. If this fifth earth True Qi could be refined using fifth earth True Qi secrets, then that would be the best fifth earth cultivation method and also the ideal for the fifth earth attributed cultivation method of the great Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets.

By some lucky coincidence, Yang Chen had obtained a copy of fifth earth True Qi secrets from the immortals in the Heavenly Court. For cultivating the fifth earth True Qi secrets, one had to have a cultivation of at least the foundation stage, and also had to have a suitable fifth earth True Qi. Currently Yang Chen had reached the foundation stage in all attributes and also had the proper cultivating circumstances.

Among the Great Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, Yang Chen already had a copy of the first wood True Qi secrets, second wood True Qi secrets, third fire True Qi secrets, fifth earth True Qi



secrets, seventh metal True Qi secrets and tenth water True Qi secrets, he still hadn't obtained fourth fire, sixth earth, eighth metal and ninth water.

Collecting all ten scriptures of the Great Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets was a goal in Yang Chen's new life in the mortal world. Although he did not know where the last four pieces were, he knew of some sect who had these types of cultivation methods. What Yang Chen wanted to do was precisely to get his hands on these, one by one, according to the difficulty.

With regards to this, the fifth earth True Qi at the Desolate Valley was the type most easily obtainable for Yang Chen, so it was naturally the first priority for him at the moment. Other people only thought he had gone to hunt Chu Heng, so nobody doubted him.

Naturally, even though he had to go, he would not leave immediately. He had only recently reached the foundation stage, so Yang Chen had to consolidate it. In addition to that, the last few layers refining of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets had only been refined using the fire attribute, this time he had to refine his magic weapons all the way through once again.

Currently Yang Chen had reached the foundation stage in all of the five phases in yin and yang, so he began cultivating in those high level cultivation methods which he had found in the Hidden Pavilion. By the time Yang Chen had replaced the remaining six low level cultivation methods with the higher grade cultivation method, one month had already passed.

Only after completing all of this did Yang Chen begin the refining of the Profound Spirit Furnace and the Sword Box in the form of the XianTai stage's immortal blade. After reaching the foundation stage, everything had been different from the qi layer, even the quality of the spirit power in his body had changed. After he had refined the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets to four layers and six layers of the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets, the five phases Spirit Power finally attained equilibrium again.

This time, after he came out of the room where he was engaged in closed door training, he directly ran into his master, Gao Yue. Gao Yue was in high spirit this time, there was an unprecedented type of confidence on her face, perhaps this was the result of Yang Chen's previous arrangements.

“This is the qiankun pouch your Great Master has refined for you, check it once!”

Gao Yue sensed that Yang Chen was going to come out of the seclusion, so she had intentionally come over to wait for him. Seeing him, she threw a belt shaped object towards him while smiling.

Wang Yong had spent much thought on the qiankun pouch he refined for Yang Chen. Because of his last qiankun pouch, Yang Chen had even been hunted by a group of people and Wang Yong didn't want this kind of thing to happen to his grand disciple again.

Along with the qiankun pouch which Wang Yong had made for someone, Wang Yong also used the more than twenty qiankun pouches Yang Chen had given him and spared no efforts or materials, altering their bag shaped style and refining them to a belt.

Apart from serving as a qiankun pouch, the bag was also a good defensive magic tool. On the belt, Wang Yong had engraved three types of spell formations: One was a defensive spell formation, another one was an illusionary spell formation and one was a concealing spell formation, which could be used to cover up tracks. After buckling up the belt, there was a place to put in Spirit Stones; as long as a piece of Spirit Stone was placed there, it would be used to provide the Spirit Power for these three types of spell formations and, apart from the defensive spell formation, the other two spell formations would activate according to Yang Chen's will.

The opening of the qiankun pouch was also at a place where Yang Chen could access it conveniently. As long as he wanted to, he could put in and take out things without much trouble. As for the space, compared to the qiankun pouch Yang Chen had at the start, it had at least ten times more space, even compared to Wang Yong's qiankun pouch, it was not inferior in any aspect.

The thing that gave Yang Chen a nice surprise was that this qiankun pouch could be used as a defensive magic tool, so only after it had been refined by Yang Chen himself, it could be fully used. In addition to that, it had to be refined by using a special technique so that, even if someone took this qiankun pouch away, he would not be able to seize anything within the qiankun pouch. Only if the cultivation of the enemy was higher than Wang Yong's

current cultivation by a whole realm, in other words he had to be at least at the Da Cheng stage, would he be able to cut open this prohibiting formation.

But Yang Chen had the Achievement Ring and all of his important things could be placed within it, so he did not need to get anxious about the things inside of his qiankun pouch, but this qiankun pouch was the best excuse for him, so that from now on he did not need to explain to anyone how his things could be concealed so well.

This qiankun pouch could also be used as a magic tool, so it could still be upgraded after Yang Chen refined it. Currently Yang Chen had the Profound Spirit Furnace for concocting pills and for attacking he had the XianTai Stage's immortal blade-shaped Sword Box, he only lacked a good magic tool for self protection and this belt had appeared just in time, like getting charcoal in snowy weather. It could also be seen that Wang Yong had spent much thought about Yang Chen and only then decided on this, so Yang Chen was very grateful towards his great master's kind intentions.

“You are going to hunt the traitor, so I should have also gone with you, to look after you and assist you.”

Gao Yue had still adopted the face of a master and said this to Yang Chen with a serious face.

“But your Great Master has said that your path is different from ours, maybe excessive consideration can restrict you from many things. The most suitable thing this time is that you go alone. Master will not go with you, so do your best.”

Gao Yue had warned Yang Chen repeatedly, which made Yang Chen sense that he had already gotten very close to his master at the moment, perhaps it was because they shared a huge secret.

Only, when Gao Yue was speaking, she was acting a little dodgy, as if trying to hide something. Yang Chen, who knew everything about Gao Yue immediately sensed this abnormality.

“Master, what is the problem with me going?”

Yang Chen asked while creasing his brows, his eyes fixated on Gao Yue’s eyes, waiting for her reply.

Gao Yue grew restless under Yang Chen’s fixed gaze and became uncomfortable and clenching her teeth she said:

“This time, the four disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall who were chasing Chu Heng were seriously injured by him in the Desolate Valley. The Palace Master has strictly commanded that this news cannot be leaked, but Chu Heng had already spread it.”

Glancing again at Yang Chen, she once again dodged his gaze.

“He also said some offensive words about you.”

“This disciple is all ears!”

After hearing Gao Yue's words, Yang Chen was not that restless anymore, originally he had been getting anxious, but this kind of thing was not much of an issue. As for Chu Heng, injuring the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall was already a capital offense, Yang Chen would not bother much about a person who was doomed to die.

“Chu Heng has claimed that the Pure Yang Palace had not evicted him from the sect, but rather that he had been the one to rebel from the sect.”

Since Gao Yue had already begun to speak, she did not hide anything anymore. In any case, what she knew, Yang Chen also had to know, as hearing it from her mouth is far better than hearing it from the mouths of others.

“Saying that we had taken an executioner as a disciple and have already entered the devil path, he is ashamed to associate with us, therefore he has rebelled from the sect.”

“What about this is so offensive?”

Yang Chen smiled. If that was the extent of claims he had made, then not just Yang Chen, he would even be a joke to the entire Pure Yang Palace.

“He has also said that the four disciples who were trying to subdue him had been injured by just one person, himself, saying that malpractices have become far too frequent in the whole Pure Yang Palace and it was nowhere as good as it's made out to be.”

Gao Yue shook her head and continued:

“And he also said that you have done some odd jobs for pill concocting masters, but surprisingly dare to claim the credits for other people’s achievements, falsely claiming that the Heaven Seizing Pill had been refined by you, while really you are just a crafty flatterer who showed his colors given the opportunity. The whole Pure Yang Palace has supposedly been deceived by you, and he kept on cursing you as a nasty character.”

“Chu Heng is a disciple who betrayed the sect, what kind of pleasant words could he possibly say? This is not bad enough to worry master, is it?”

Yang Chen once again smiled hearing this. Not to mention Chu Heng, even young children could curse like this. Rather than bothering with this, it would be better to think about where to find him, so that he could chop off his head.

“He also boasted that as long as the disciples chasing him did not die, they should behead us two despicable and shameless master and disciple colluding to commit such fraud in front of everyone under the heavens.”

Seeing Yang Chen’s calmness, Gao Yue’s intonation also became gentle, even using the words as shameless and despicable to describe herself, she still had a joking tone.

“Even I taking you as a disciple, was also my ploy to gain a false



reputation of being your master.”

“Chu Heng dared to say that master is despicable and shameless?”

Against the expectations of Gao Yue, Yang Chen, who had been tranquil, making her think why she had been worried about Chu Heng’s words again, became furious at this moment, his eyes had stretched to the size of a copper bell and gnashing his teeth, he spat out these words:

“He had the impertinence to insult master!”

Bang!

Yang Chen mad fury had exploded out this moment. His master was the cause of his fury, regardless of how offensive the words Chu Heng said about him were, Yang Chen wouldn’t have given it a second thought. But Chu Heng had gone too far daring, to insult Yang Chen’s master, intolerable!

The Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets began to move crazily, following Yang Chen’s anger. The ten types of Spirit Power which had been calm originally, had turned into ten big dragons all of a sudden, circulating within his meridians. His eyes turned blood red and with that, a frightening killing intent, which could devour people, suddenly also appeared and passed away in a flash, being suppressed by Yang Chen.

“Chu Heng!”

Yang Chen’s loud voice filled with anger could be heard in almost the entire Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

“If I don’t kill you, then I vow that I am not a man!”

## Chapter 103 - Surely There Is A Secret

---

Originally Yang Chen wanted to use the excuse of hunting Chu Heng as a pretext of going to the Desolate Valley, but at the moment Yang Chen was hell bent on killing him. Never before had Yang Chen felt such an intense desire to get rid of this person. Chu Heng had gone too far by daring to insult his master, even a hundred deaths could not pardon his crime!

Gao Yue had never seen Yang Chen angry before, so she did not know that Yang Chen would be this frightening when he was angry. It seemed to her that since Yang Chen was calm towards Chu Heng words insulting him, he would not be angry like this. But she hadn't thought that just a single line which had been directed at her and Yang Chen would make him so angry.

But Yang Chen getting angry because of Chu Heng insulting her had given her a kind of happiness which could not be explained with words. Apart from her master, Wang Yong, Gao Yue never received this kind of concern from any other person, and Yang Chen had even remained indifferent to the abuses on himself while she herself had felt injustice at the wrongful abuse.

Although the Desolate Valley was known as a valley, it was actually not very small. In fact, the Desolate Valley was a region with huge hills, which also had abundant sand dunes. In this region, within a radius of thousand miles, the earth attributed Spirit Power was outstanding, while the Spirit Power of other attributes was repelled. Although it didn't mean they were not there at all, instead only in very small quantities.

The landscape here was boundless sand, no matter in which direction one looked, apart from sand dunes and sand hills, there was nothing visible but desert. A constantly blowing wind filled the sky with sand, it was exceptionally dry.

The time it had taken Yang Chen to set foot in this region was one month. During this time, Yang Chen had first refined that qiankun pouch and then he had gone looking for those four fellow apprentices of the Law Enforcement Hall which had been injured by Chu Heng and thoroughly investigated what had happened at that time. He realized that this matter was ten times more serious than what he had thought when he had heard about it from Gao Yue.

Apparently Chu Heng was deliberately trying to make Pure Yang Palace lose face, and using Yang Chen as pretense, trying to degrade Yang Chen into complete shambles, who had not said even one word. At that time he had the opportunity to get rid of these four disciples, but against all expectations he did not kill and only seriously injured them, and showing his arrogance, he used a few loose cultivators to carry them back to the Pure Yang Palace, not only making this public with great fanfare, but he even asked the Pure Yang Palace to provide remuneration to these few loose cultivators for carrying them back.

This certainly was a tight slap in the face of the entire Pure Yang Palace, after this joke had gotten out to the entire cultivation realm, the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace basically hadn't even been able to raise their heads in the outside world.

It is not that they hadn't sent any high level experts to catch him,

but Chu Heng was very cunning. During the one year time Yang Chen was in seclusion, several JieDan stage experts of the Law Enforcement Hall had turned the entire Desolate Valley upside down, but they weren't able to find the whereabouts of Chu Heng. Chu Heng's traces couldn't be found, even in other regions, as if his person had disappeared from the world.

If someone said that he didn't have any help of other people, nobody would believe him. This matter happened just after the Pure Yang Palace had demanded that the Greatest Heaven Sect and some other sects provide an explanation for their wrongs at the time when Yang Chen had climbed the peak of the Heavenly Stairs. At that time, several big sects had provided compensation and admitted their mistake, but this kind of thing was just too big of a coincidence to believe.

Regardless of what was said, they hadn't been able to find Chu Heng to deliver the sect's punishment for all this time and couldn't do anything to remove the shame Chu Heng had brought on the Pure Yang Palace. Not only the Pure Yang Palace, but even Yang Chen and Gao Yue were also looked down upon as a joke among daoists everywhere.

Daring to insult his master, and even insulting his sect; regarding the slanderous words against Yang Chen, Chu Heng had already forced Yang Chen into a corner. If Yang Chen did not set out alone as a formal representative of Pure Yang Palace to settle this matter, after even these events, then the Pure Yang Palace's reputation would fall by a thousand times at once. That was the reason why Wang Yong had not allowed Gao Yue to follow after him, but Yang Chen was also the most suitable person to resolve this affair.

During the one year when Yang Chen was in seclusion to concoct pills and attack the bottleneck of the foundation stage, the entire Pure Yang Palace had concealed this news from him, which clearly conveyed their intentions of supporting and protecting Yang Chen. From the Palace Master to the servants, everyone knew about this, but they didn't tell him for the fear of disturbing his cultivation, so how could Yang Chen ignore the expectations the sect had for him?

Yang Chen treaded towards the peak of a sand dune with heavy steps, stopping at the peak of the highest sand dune in his line of sight and began to look in all directions.

Yang Chen had flown on his flying sword when he had set off from the Pure Yang Palace, but after he had reached the boundary of the Desolate Valley, he had renounced travelling on the flying sword and had walked on foot into the Desolate Valley. Yang Chen had spent four days walking from the edge of the Desolate Valley to reach this sand dune.

The description by the Law Enforcement Hall's disciples made Yang Chen remember a special spell formation. In reality, if Chu Heng, a person who was restrained by the earth attributed Spirit Power of the Desolate Valley, wanted to defeat four disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall attacking together, it was simply impossible. But this impossible event had still happened, but even the four Law Enforcement disciples were not convinced by this.

Yang Chen had thoroughly investigated the circumstances at that time, the details given by the four Law Enforcement disciples had given him a general idea about the situation. He was currently

walking step by step, moving forward in order to confirm his conjecture.

After walking thousands of miles for several days, Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness had sensed the direction of the underground Spirit Power, which was in accordance with his guess. An enormous spell formation had already been placed under the gigantic Desolate Valley at some unknown time. This spell formation was so huge, that it could not be activated by using a spell formation and could only be used by cleverly exploiting the geographical position and direction of the underground vein.

Arranging this kind of spell formation was basically impossible, even after spending five hundred years. Moreover the preparations for arranging this spell required someone whose Spiritual Awareness was at least comparable to Yang Chen and he would also be using Yang Chen's current method, that was to personally sense the terrain and the direction in which Spirit Power was moving. This would require an even higher amount of hard work.

Since this Spell Formation was already completed, then it could be activated slowly from some special location, allowing Chu Heng to severely injure four cultivators who were no weaker than him. Without the assistance of this spell formation, that idiot Chu Heng could never achieve this kind of accomplishment.

In his previous life, Yang Chen hadn't paid much attention to the Desolate Valley, he was only concerned about it in this life because the Fifth Earth True Qi Secrets within the Great Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets required the fifth earth True Qi for cultivation.

The main function of the huge spell formation within the Desolate Valley was apparently only one, that was to gather fifth earth True Qi from all directions within a small region and allow people to focus on refining it easily.

After he clearly understood the function of this Spell Formation, a smile appeared on Yang Chen's face. This affair was becoming more and more amusing.

This seems to have been just the tip of the iceberg some sect had somehow discovered this fifth earth True Qi and wanted to exploit it for its own use, but the fifth earth True Qi was scattered in all directions, so they could only use this method to slowly gather it.

Moreover it was the work of a big sect, an ordinary small sect simply could not arrange such a spell. Not to mention other things, just deploying the formation required three YuanYing stage experts, not one less, how could a small sect gather such strength? Moreover the person who had deployed this rank of spell was certainly a great expert in Spell Formations.

Operating this rank of spell formation was not beyond the scope of those sects whose JieDan stage experts had tried to make things difficult for Yang Chen at the Heavenly Stairs. The biggest suspicion was naturally towards Yang Chen's old enemy, with whom Chu Heng had rushed to curry favour, the Greatest Heaven Sect, which was also the biggest sect which had admitted their wrongs for the Heavenly Stairs and had paid compensation.

On one side they had admitted their wrongs, which had decreased their reputation of being straightforward, but on the



other hand they had used Chu Heng to defame the Pure Yang Palace, so spectators would immediately judge by comparing both sides. Being open and straightforward would gain them even more acclaim and support and by defaming a trifling disciple who had been the cause of their humiliation, his future prospects would be destroyed.

The most crucial point was that, if nobody knew about the reason for arranging the Spell Formation, then after the vein of fifth earth True Qi had been refined by their people, the Spell Formation could be destroyed and then, even if it was a Great Principal Golden Immortal, he could also not find traces that a huge spell had existed there. This huge spell was arranged by relying on the natural terrain, so when the moment came. it would return to nature again, who would have proof of anything happening here?

The enemy had just incidentally made use of this Spell Formation, but the Pure Yang Palace had been drenched with sewage because of it. Even if Chu Heng was captured in the future and the sect rules were executed, they would still be unable to remove this stain. Like using grass to catch the rabbit, the enemy would not be affected in any way, only the Pure Yang Palace and Yang Chen would have to carry the burden of shame.

The plan was very sound, but unfortunately for them, Yang Chen had come. Several days was already enough for him to verify the existence of this big spell. Although the enemy wanted to silently defame the Pure Yang Palace now it would not be able to.

But this huge spell was indeed too excessive, covering an area in the radius of a thousand miles. With Yang Chen's speed, even if he

used a flying sword, it would still take two days and two nights, but if he wanted to sense clearly towards where the Spell Formation was aligned, with just one person, Yang Chen, walking to measure it, the time it would take would be more than for those people to refine the fifth earth True Qi. How could Yang Chen waste so much time right now?

Confronting this huge spell, even though Yang Chen had the knowledge of his previous life, he couldn't help but wrinkle his brows. He only knew that the fifth earth True Qi was here, but he did not know where it was scattered, so the biggest challenge in front of him was precisely the refining of fifth earth True Qi.

Not only that, the face of the entire Pure Yang Palace was on the line here, but if he could not sense the path along which the Spell Formation had been deployed, then he would also be unable to exploit it. Although he wanted to do it by himself he knew that he was unable to and for a moment Yang Chen began to feel embarrassed. In this kind of situation, since he could not do anything, he could inform the sect leader of the Pure Yang Palace about the existence of this huge spell.

But if the Palace Master knew about it, then he would surely send people of the sect to investigate, which may alert the enemy and could also lead to war. But then, obtaining the fifth earth True Qi would no longer be such an easy matter for Yang Chen. Since there was also this possibility, Yang Chen would only inform him as a last resort.

With this kind of worry, Yang Chen kept on roaming the Desolate Valley aimlessly, trying to think of some method.

Although Yang Chen had heard about this kind of huge spell, but he hadn't experienced it personally. With enough time this spell would not be a problem but currently he did not have enough time.

Sitting on the peak of a sand dune, Yang Chen was painstakingly trying to think of some method, while his gaze focused at a distant place in the desert and didn't move for long time. Several hundred threads of Spiritual Awareness, thin as silk, were scouting all activities in a radius of several hundred miles. But unfortunately this huge spell was concealed extremely well and was arranged according to the terrain, so even when scouting with his Spiritual Awareness, he was unable to investigate distant regions and could only focus on the small area around his feet.

All of a sudden, something slightly bulged inside of the sand on which he was sitting, a black sand scorpion with two claws and a sharp tail slowly took its head out of the sand and came out entirely soon afterwards.

The movement of the sand scorpion attracted Yang Chen's attention. After strutting around in Yang Chen's domain for some time, it went to another location and drilled into the sand again. Seeing this, Yang Chen's eyes began to shine brightly.

Although he was not capable of knowing the way in which the Spell Formation and fifth earth True Qi were arranged in the Desolate Valley, this didn't mean that these animals of the Desolate Valley also did not know. As long as it was in their domain, they would be very clear about the distribution of Spirit Power and as long as he could communicate with these animals and find some demonic beasts who had a huge domain, then maybe he would be

able to find the arrangement of the Spell Formation.

To communicate with demonic beasts he had no option other than to use the Beast Taming Sect's Beast Controlling Secrets. The Beast Controlling Secrets of the Beast Taming Sect could allow people to establish an even more direct connection with their beasts, thus reaching the aim of controlling their own beast. Fan Shan was a person from the Beast Taming Sect, he was even able to control beasts at the Da Cheng stage.

Within Yang Chen's mind the words of the cyan coloured ox of the Greatest Supreme Elder reverberated to this day:

"I have a remarkable ability, the Beast Controlling Secrets, which is the cultivation method of my demon race, and is a hundred times better than the methods of the Beast Taming Sect, but the requirements of learning it are harsh, see if you have the good luck or not!"

A hundred times better than the Beast Controlling Secrets of the Beast Taming Sect, how powerful would that be?

But the cyan ox had also said that it's requirements were harsh, so Yang Chen carefully recalled this remarkable ability and began to ponder over it.

It was indeed quite troublesome, this ability required to be cultivated according to the methods of the demon race, while Yang Chen was human, so this was naturally not easy for him. But after analyzing every word in every sentence with great care, he

discovered something: apparently, as long as he could settle some minor problems, he could start cultivating that remarkable ability to control beasts.

A major principle of the Beast Controlling Secret was still that the Spiritual Awareness should be higher than the cultivation realm. Although it still required the support of strong Spirit Power, the Spirit Power was only required to provide the strength to subdue the beast. Nevertheless, for genuinely connecting with a demonic beasts, a powerful Spiritual Awareness was required.

In order to establish this kind of connection, Yang Chen needed to make those demonic beasts believe that Yang Chen himself belonged to the demon race. This was the most crucial point, as long as he could solve this, the other problems could all be solved easily.

# Chapter 104 - Beast Controlling Secrets Of The Demon Race

---

Making the demonic beasts believe that he was also a demonic beast was impossible for other people, but Yang Chen was an exception, especially after he had cultivated to the third layer of the Three Purities Secrets.

The cyan ox had also given Yang Chen a copy of the final stage, so Yang Chen was completely sure that this was not the method of the Beast Controlling Sect, Yang Chen doubted it was something the cyan ox had added. The most unexpected thing was that this section was a copy of its own cultivation method for cultivating its Spiritual Awareness. This small copy of the cultivation method, although it was a method to cultivate Spiritual Awareness, it would also allow him to sufficiently imitate the smell of cyan ox himself.

The most important thing was that Yang Chen wouldn't even have been able to comprehend this method, if he hadn't cultivated to the third layer of layer of Three Purities Secrets, let alone cultivating the method. But fortunately Yang Chen had received the cultivation method of the Three Purities Secrets from the Greatest Supreme Elder, and he had also already cultivated it to the third layer.

All of this made Yang Chen feel as if it was planned beforehand, but thinking carefully this was still somewhat inconceivable. If it was the scheme of the Greatest Supreme Elder, he would not involve himself with his mount, the cyan ox, to be sacrificed. Moreover, when the cyan ox had said these words, it could not

have guaranteed that Yang Chen would obtain the Three Purities Secrets from the Greatest Supreme Elder. At that time, the Greatest Supreme Elder had allowed Yang Chen to pick his own cultivation method, if Yang Chen had picked a pill concocting method or a tool refining method at that time, then wouldn't it all have been for naught?

Regardless of whether it was coincidental or planned, for Yang Chen there were only merits and no demerits. It was always good to have multiple skills, most of all this kind of ability, which could allow him to step past the boundary of race. If he could cultivate this it would be a great tool for killing.

As he had obtained the method, he immediately hurried over to the closest big town in the Desolate Valley. There were a lot of big towns in this valley, which were normally also the places where cultivators would go for replenishing their resources. There were both ordinary people and cultivators in these towns. These towns were normally built at the side of an oasis, so that it was convenient for people to live their normal lives.

Inside of this kind of town, the security was much tighter compared to the outside, the cultivators also complied with the rules and caused very few disturbances inside. Even if anyone had a disagreement, they would generally go out into the desert to settle them. Although nobody knew who set these rules and there was nobody who forced people to abide by these rules, still nobody violated these unwritten rules.

The town was not very big and only had a few hundred households, similar to the size of a village. When Yang Chen had

hurried to the town, it was already night and once he entered, he immediately discovered that someone had used their Spiritual Awareness to examine him, but this Spiritual Awareness merely examined him and did not have any evil intentions. Yang Chen did not pay much attention to it and hurried to find a room to settle down.

Similar to the cultivators coming here, after finding a room Yang Chen immediately sat down to meditate, like almost all others. Yang Chen's behaviour was not an exception around here. But nobody knew that Yang Chen was cultivating an ability of the demon race.

To cultivate the Beast Controlling Secret, Yang Chen had to cultivate the cultivation method obtained from the cyan ox first. During the journey here, Yang Chen had already thoroughly researched the whole scripture, he had racked his brain over all of the difficult portions to find the most ideal explanation. Although he did not dare to say that he had fully grasped it, but he had almost comprehended it.

But all cultivation methods in the mortal world were like this, after all the cultivation methods were recorded with images and characters, so even if the description was written accurately, there were still chances of mistakes. The so called comprehension precisely reflected the understanding through these characters and images. If one's perception about them was high, then it could be said that one's comprehension was very profound.

Everyone would comprehend the same cultivation method differently, therefore everyone would inevitably cultivate a



different cultivation method. Perhaps, apart from the creator of the cultivation methods, no other person could say that they could comprehend the cultivation method completely. This piece of cultivation secret which the cyan ox had left behind was the same, after all the cyan ox belonged to the demon race, so when Yang Chen of the human race would ponder over it, there was bound to be some bias.

Yang Chen was a very careful and prudent person, since the cyan ox had said that the conditions required for cultivation were harsh, in all likelihood he wouldn't have exaggerated even a little. Even if he had the assistance of the cyan ox, Yang Chen had still carefully evaluated the difficulty for a long time. On the entire journey, he had carefully considered every kind of possibility and only after he reached here, had he started to test it.

Carefully manipulating his Spiritual Awareness according to the cultivation method of the cyan ox, Yang Chen started to cultivate for first time. With the foundation of the Three Purities Secrets, Yang Chen effortlessly completed the the first part, but Yang Chen quickly discovered that, while he was cultivating the next part, his primordial spirit began to split up automatically.

The last time he was cultivating the Three Purities Secrets, Yang Chen hadn't split his primordial spirit. Because Yang Chen's current cultivation was very low, splitting up the primordial spirit would definitely divide his cultivation and would also slow his cultivation speed. But currently, the primordial spirit has begun to split up on it's own, completely out of Yang Chen's control.

Seeing this, Yang Chen wanted to stop the cultivation, but he

discovered that he was unable to stop. It was as if he was already within a trap, unable to get out. This cultivation method was evil, just like devil cultivation, even if one wanted to stop, it was impossible.

Under great alarm, Yang Chen immediately made a decision, since he didn't have a way out, he might as well throw his heart and soul into the cultivation. While his Spiritual Awareness was dramatically shaking to split up, Yang Chen's consciousness appeared within his spirit sea within a flash.

The blood colored river divided the Spirit Sea in two as before, in the sky there was the image of the sun and below the blood colored river, magma was flowing, while a tree was rising to great heights, as if linking the heavens and earth, but rapidly the Spirit Sea began to change.

The faint image of two immensely huge and curved ox horns appeared on both sides of the river, together with an arched bridge across the river, connecting the two ox horns. The two ox horns were emitting a kind of wild and unruly essence, just as if a fierce and violent ox was dwelling within Yang Chen's Spirit Sea. This kind of essence gave him a sense of Deja Vu, it clearly resembled the sinister appearance of the Great Supreme Elder's cyan ox.

After the transformations in his Spirit Sea were completed, Yang Chen's consciousness also returned to his body and once again took control of it. Soon after, Yang Chen was surprised to discover that his own Primordial Spirit hadn't divided completely and only a small portion seemed to have broken away, this portion already possessed the essence of the cyan ox.

Apparently the cultivation method left behind by the cyan ox was already complete, the faint image of the two ox horns within the Spirit Sea already explained everything. According to Yang Chen's experience, the faintness was clearly because his own understanding of the cultivation method was still not deep enough. The more deeply he cultivated, the more clear the image of the ox horn would be and the essence would also be more and more similar to the cyan ox.

Since this portion was already completed, Yang Chen immediately forgot about the lingering fear and began to ponder over the Beast Controlling Secrets.

Contrary to what the cyan ox had said while giving this to him, the Beast Controlling Secrets were pathetic. Apart from the requirement of the demon race's cultivation, nothing else was complicated. Since Yang Chen already possessed the essence of the cyan ox, he immediately began to cultivate the Beast Controlling Secrets.

This was an entirely new adventure and the most fortunate thing about it was that Yang Chen had the Three Purities Secrets as a foundation, he had even succeeded in cultivating the cultivation method left behind by the cyan ox without any accidents, as if the Heavens wanted to make Yang Chen cultivate this Beast Controlling Secrets.

Within just one night, Yang Chen had already completed the initial cultivation of the Beast Controlling Secrets. After the Beast Controlling Secrets had successfully accomplished the first

circulation of the cultivation method, Yang Chen apparently sensed many types of strange breaths between the heavens and earth.

The familiar breath of demon beasts had apparently turned into a kind of smell, becoming easier to detect for Yang Chen. Yang Chen did not need to use his Spiritual Awareness, but he was still able to effortlessly distinguish the breath of any kind of demon beast in every direction and he was even able to roughly judge what category of demon beast was in which direction and determine their strength.

Even the Beast Taming Sect's people could not do these things, even if it was the YuanYing stage Fan Shan, he would also not be able to do this. Their Beast Controlling Secrets could at most allow them to establish a connection with all kinds of demon beasts, but that was only after subduing them. The Beast Controlling Secrets which Yang Chen had were entirely different, the ability of the demon race was after all an ability of the demon race, the connection it established with demon beast was somewhat deeper compared to the ability of the Beast Taming Sect.

Yang Chen had only stopped in the town for one night, the next day he departed from the town early in the morning and entered the desert. He wanted to find a demon beast and try the newly cultivated Beast Controlling Secrets.

When Yang Chen caught a sand scorpion, it kept on struggling as before, its tail fiercely trying to pierce Yang Chen's hand. But when Yang Chen activated his Beast Controlling Secrets, the sand scorpion gradually stopped struggling and soon became

motionless.

He had connected with the sand scorpion precisely in order to acquire the distribution of Spirit Power within the extent of its influence. Very quickly, Yang Chen's desire was passed into the consciousness of the sand scorpion and after that, many different kinds of fuzzy scenes started appearing in Yang Chen's mind. In these scenes, the distribution of the earth attributed Spirit Power emerged somewhat vaguely.

Success!

Yang Chen grew ecstatic, although this sand scorpion was small, it had already validated Yang Chen's opinion successfully. Currently Yang Chen hadn't informed the upper echelons of the Pure Yang Palace about the huge spell in the Desolate Valley, so, as long as he could manage it secretly, he would absolutely make the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect suffer in silence.

Now Yang Chen did not want to waste much time, god knows how long this huge spell had been maintained and to what extent the fifth earth True Qi had been gathered, if under this situation someone else reaped the benefits first, then wouldn't he regret it to death?

Carefully interacting with the breath in the surroundings, Yang Chen quickly found a big demon beast and flew towards its direction. It was actually not very difficult to distinguish the domain of a demon beast, because the more powerful the demon beast was, the bigger its domain; very simple.

In this direction was an earth attributed beast which had lived for countless years. Although its nature was mild, its strength was really powerful, so the cultivators did not provoke it easily and ordinary cultivators did not even dare to touch a hair of this huge demon beast and they lived together in harmony. Usually this earth attributed beast was concealed under a sand dune, cultivating and resting, even the people passing above did not notice it.

Because of the temperament of the beast, this area was usually considered relatively safe, so people passed through there frequently. When Yang Chen appeared there, there were also three other cultivators passing through.

“Oh, isn’t this a Fellow Daoist from Pure Yang Palace?”

A seal of Pure Yang Palace was pinned on the belt which his Great Master, Wang Yong, had refined for him and it could even be seen from far away. The youngster leading the three people immediately recognized Yang Chen’s sect from this sign and so his words were rude.

“Where is he going so hurriedly? Could it be that he is looking for the sect’s traitor, Chu Heng? Isn’t he worried after the previous incident?”

After Chu Heng had injured the four Law Enforcement Hall’s disciples and had them carried back, the Pure Yang Palace was already a target of ridicule in the cultivation world. The Pure Yang

Palace had dispatched more than ten JieDan stage experts to look for Chu Heng, but in the past year they hadn't been able to find any trace of Chu Heng. Because of this the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace had not been able to raise their heads anywhere they went.

Within Yang Chen's eyes, a bright light flashed and looking at these three people flying over, he was also not very polite. The youngster in the lead did not care at all, he casually placed his qiankun pouch, which was branded with the mark of the Greatest Heaven Sect in an area where it was easily noticeable, with the intention that Yang Chen could see it clearly. The two people behind him also complied with him and slowed down the speed of their flying swords and with a mocking gaze they looked at Yang Chen but did not say anything.

Sometimes, this kind of silent insult was most humiliating, these three people clearly had this intention. Yang Chen was only a initial foundation stage cultivator, while the the worst of these three people was at the upper foundation stage and the other two both at the peak foundation stage. No wonder they did not put Yang Chen in their eyes.

Although he did not like the three people, Yang Chen was not an impulsive person. Many times strangers meet by chance and it was not necessary that they had to kill each other on the spot. Although they were people from the Greatest Heaven Sect, Yang Chen would not kill them immediately, he was calmly waiting without saying anything. As soon as these three left, he would attend to his business.

“Oh, it’s Fellow Daoist Yang himself, could it be he has come to wipe out the shame?”

That Yang Chen did not say anything did not mean that the enemy would let him off easily, especially after the person leading them had discovered Yang Chen’s identity.

Because of Chu Heng’s matter, the name of Yang Chen, apart from the Heaven Seizing Pill and pill refining had turned into a joke at the Desolate Valley. Most of all among the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect. Because of Yang Chen, the Pure Yang Palace had demanded that the Greatest Heaven Sect admit their crimes and apologise, so how could the disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect, which was considered as the most righteous sect under the heavens endure this? Meeting with Yang Chen, how could they allow him to leave without mocking him?

“Nonsense! This Yang’s matter is not important enough for Fellow Daoist to pay attention to!”

Yang Chen coldly said in a rude way. After saying this, he did not say anything more and as before with a steady speed he flew towards his destination.

“Nonsense? How can it be nonsense?”

With a laugh, the youth leading them waved his hand and the three people started following Yang Chen with a loud laugh and while laughing, he said to Yang Chen:



“If you are seriously injured by Chu Heng, then you don’t even need to ask, we will save your life and definitely will deliver you back to the Pure Yang Palace!”

Suddenly, Yang Chen, who was also controlling his flying sword came to a stop and nimbly turned around. Facing the three disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect, without concealing the smile on his face he asked:

“Could it be that Fellow Daoists know the location of Chu Heng? Is he still within the Desolate Valley?”

# Chapter 105 - I Want To Know

---

Although Yang Chen had a questioning tone, a smile was spread across his face, and his gaze was like the tip of a blade, making the three disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect, who had kept up with him suddenly feel panic.

“How.....how can he be here?”

The leading youth evaded Yang Chen’s gaze and while speaking, he was stuttering. The two people behind him even avoided to look at Yang Chen.

A single use of the soul stunning technique lowered the defense of these three people for an instant and they involuntarily revealed their innermost thoughts. From the behaviour of these three people, Yang Chen was certain that, although these three may not know the exact location of Chu Heng, he was still hiding within the Desolate Valley.

Since Chu Heng had not been taken care off, it was like a blood colored print of a tight slap on the face of Pure Yang Palace, which could only be cleaned by using Chu Heng’s blood. Yang Chen had been shown care at the sect for two lives, so how could he allow Chu Heng to get away? Yang Chen was very clear about this point, so were Chu Heng, the people of the Pure Yang Palace and the other sects, so naturally these three people in front of him also knew this very clearly.

Yang Chen’s question made them remember some taboo. Chu

Heng was already the traitor of a sect, this was clearly an inside matter of the Pure Yang Palace, even if the Greatest Heaven Sect was very formidable and Chu Heng was very supportive towards the Greatest Heaven Sect, but as long as the Pure Yang Palace and the Greatest Heaven Sect were not openly hostile with each other, even if it was the Greatest Heaven Sect, it wouldn't dare to brazenly shelter Chu Heng.

This momentary panic had already answered many questions. Naturally, after the three people had awoken from the effects of the soul stunning technique, they realized their mistake and the first response of the youth was to directly shout 'awful' after sobering up.

Although the disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect were all aware of this kind of big deal, everyone unconsciously believed that their sect apologising to the Pure Yang Palace was not an alarming affair, but this current matter should not be brought up in front of the public. The reason why they had to apologise was that the people of the Pure Yang Palace also helped operating the Heavenly Stairs, so they knew the truth.

If this kind of matter was exposed in front of everyone, that would certainly be far from good. They had not realized this from the beginning, as definitely their cultivation was higher than Yang Chen, but nobody dared to look Yang Chen in the eye, this kind of sensation really made these people feel humiliated.

Their strong egos, together with the scare of that secret being revealed made the three of them have the same intentions. All of them glanced at each other and immediately saw that the others

also had the same idea as themselves.

This was a desolate region, far from towns, uninhabited in all directions, they also released their Spiritual Awareness and made sure that, apart from them, no other person was inside this region, it was indeed an ideal place to kill someone, especially because a powerful demonic beast lived in this region, so even if someone discovered the crime someday, everyone would just think that he had lost his life at the hands of the demonic beast and it would not be strange to anyone.

They had heard that Yang Chen was a third grade pill concocting master, so naturally he would have a lot of good things on him. After killing Yang Chen, they would all conveniently pass over to them. Let alone his other things, the belt was already enough to make them jealous just by looking at it.

When Yang Chen saw the killing intent in their eyes, he revealed a smile. He had not wanted to kill these people, but they were courting death themselves, so nobody else was to blame.

“Since it’s like this, then I will not trouble Fellow Daoists anymore!”

Yang Chen cupped his hands towards them, turned around and continued to fly on his flying sword toward the sand dune of the earth attributed beast.

Since they wanted to kill him, Yang Chen did not say much. The three people were about to attack him, but seeing Yang Chen’s

flying direction, the three became happy. They had spent a long time at this Desolate Valley, naturally they clearly knew what lied in that direction. Yang Chen was going himself, saving them the labour of transporting him.

Yang Chen in front, the three people behind, they flew for more than half a day under Yang Chen's slow speed, only stopping at the sand dune which was occupied by the earth attributed beast. This earth attributed beast never took the initiative to attack cultivators, the three people behind him were very clear about this, but seeing Yang Chen land precisely on that sand dune had alarmed them, so the three of them thought of a scheme to prevail over him. The three people divided in three directions, indistinctly surrounding Yang Chen.

Yang Chen acted as if he had become too tired: after collecting the flying sword, he sat down on the sand dune and began to rest, taking out a pouch of water from his qiankun pouch, he began to drink big mouthfuls, not guarding against the three people surrounding him at all.

The disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect looked at Yang Chen as if he were a fool, they had seen inexperienced people, but they hadn't seen someone who did not know how to guard himself. If Yang Chen had come out there to train after reaching the foundation stage, it would be a miracle if he didn't die.

The circle of the three people began to shrink towards the center. Everyone had readied their flying swords with a mutual understanding, in any case they were flying using their flying swords, so they could use them anytime, only Yang Chen, who was

not aware of the danger had put away his flying sword and was resting on the earth attributed beast's back.

Seeing the three people approach him, the smile on Yang Chen's face became even brighter, he even waved his hand at the leading youth and asked in a loud voice:

“Fellow Daoist, did you remember something and want to tell me?”

“No I didn't, we merely wanted to rest, do you mind, Fellow Daoist Yang?”

The leading youth said with the most innocent smile. His speed was not very quick, slowly flying towards Yang Chen. Behind Yang Chen's body, from two directions, the other two people were also flying at this speed, slowly coming together.

Hearing that they did not have anything to tell him, Yang Chen stretched both of his hands and yawned, while facing the leading youth. It seemed as if he did not care about them coming over to rest, both of his eyes drooped and both eyelids also closed, as if he was really resting.

“Fellow Daoist Yang, the Feng Shui of this region is pretty good!”

With their figures already approaching closer and closer, they were already only a short distance away from the edge. At this distance, the three people intended to attack at the same time, not

to mention that Yang Chen was an initial foundation stage disciple, even if he was a peak foundation stage disciple, he still wouldn't have been able to escape.

“Yes! The Feng Shui is really pretty good!”

Yang Chen raised his head to reply and seeing the encirclement in the surroundings, he nodded slightly, then he looked at the leading youth and said with a meaningful smile:

“This is making me recall a sentence which I say rather frequently!”

“Oh?”

The leading youth had already begun to store energy, but he still asked Yang Chen with a false smile:

“A frequent sentence? Fellow Daoist Yang, what is that sentence?”

“For every debt there is a debtor, we had no past grudges nor any hatred, Fellow Daoists why insist on walking this road?”

Yang Chen was staring at the leading youth, blurting out his catchphrase.

Hearing Yang Chen's words, provoking them, how could the

three not understand that Yang Chen had already seen through them. The leading youth was alarmed, not able to deal with him anymore, he said in loud voice:

“Let’s fight!”

The flying sword under his feet already separated from him and turned into a sword light, flying towards Yang Chen, who stood in front of them. Two more flying swords, from the two behind him, also flew directly towards Yang Chen’s position. In a flash, Yang Chen would be pierced by three flying swords together.

In the time it took for a flint to strike a spark, the sand dune beneath Yang Chen’s feet began to transform and in a moment rose to more than ten meters high, lifting Yang Chen with it.

The three flying swords issued three ear piercing sounds and under their masters’ control they took a huge turn within the sky and continued towards Yang Chen’s rising body to stab him.

Hou!

Suddenly from underground a muffled roar was heard, following which a huge foot with a perimeter of several meters appeared in front of them and ruthlessly swatted down from the top. The three flying swords, as if they had hit an invisible protective screen, only issued a soft tinkling sound and fell down to the ground.

At some time, an immense pressure had appeared on the three



people, as if Mt Tai was pushing down on them. Under this kind of immense pressure, the three people in the air were not able to fly and like a loose kites they started to fall to the ground.

Regardless of however the three people tried to manipulate their Spirit Power in the sky, they were unable to block this immense pressure. Three people who had never faced this kind of immense pressure, flapped with their hands and feet but heavily fell to the ground. Fortunately for them, the ground of the Desolate Valley was made up of scattered sand and the three of them had been flying just a few meters above the ground, so they weren't seriously injured by the fall. Immediately after they had fallen down and made contact with the ground, they jumped up on their feet.

But the nightmare hadn't ended, as soon as the leading youth leaped and stood up, that foot which had swatted away the three flying swords had suddenly appeared, but then another foot appeared from the sand beneath his feet.

When the other two followers saw this scene, they were greatly spooked, they did not even care to pick up their flying swords which had been knocked to the ground, only using the force of the foot to accelerate, wanting to leave this frightening region.

The speed of the follower at the peak foundation stage was very quick, but as soon as he flew slightly into the sky, he suddenly felt everything before his eyes turn black. As if he had entered a huge black hole, he was not able to see anything clearly, the surroundings had a fishy smell, but he did know where he was.

The most lucky among them was the follower with the strength of the upper foundation stage, because his flying speed was a little slow and as a result he saw his last companion burst into the huge mouth of the ferocious beast which flashed and immediately faded away.

This scene frightened this last remaining follower, who was on the verge of losing consciousness. Only now did he become clear what had happened. This was the dwelling place of a well known earth attributed beast, that one foot which had swatted down the leading youth and the large mouth which had swallowed his other companion belonged precisely to the earth attributed beast.

But didn't that beast have a reputation of not taking the initiative to attack cultivators? Then how else could everything that happened in front of him be explained? In any case, the surviving follower was scared endlessly, the sudden misfortune had already completely destroyed his ability to think. Apart from shivering with fear towards this earth attributed beast, he could not make any movements.

The cruel actions of the demonic beast, together with its frightening body had caused a great shock to him, adding onto that the powerful pressure exerted by that demonic beast, the remaining follower had already been scared out of his wits, not even daring to make any movement. But suddenly he opened both eyes with alarm and saw that the mouth of the ferocious beast was slowly approaching him, its two nostrils thicker than the person himself were blowing out a fishy stench into his face, the minor follower wanted to faint immediately, so that he didn't have to confront this kind of frightening beast.

Suddenly the figure of a person slowly appeared in his field of view and slowly started to become clear. By the time the follower could begin to focus on the person, Yang Chen had already appeared in front of him.

“Fellow Daoist, the Feng Shui here is really pretty good, isn’t it?”

In the eyes of the follower, Yang Chen was like a demon at this time, just hearing his voice made him jolt twice.

“You... you... gurgle gurgle!”

Facing Yang Chen, the follower couldn’t even speak a complete sentence in front of him. His jaw involuntarily trembled, sending out loud and clear gurgling sound.

“I want to know where the traitor of my Pure Yang Palace is.”

Yang Chen still had the same smile from the beginning, as if talking with a close friend he approached the person who was scared stiff and asked with a smile:

“Can you tell me where he is?”

“At...at...at... Desolate... Valley!”

While shivering continuously, the follower managed to say this in a bumpy voice, but he did not dare to glance at Yang Chen

anymore, let alone the huge beast, which had stopped over his head all along, incessantly dropping its thick saliva and puffing its fishy stench steam on him.

“Where in the Desolate Valley?”

Yang Chen continued to ask. This was certainly a pleasant surprise, Chu Heng was surprisingly still within the Desolate Valley, surely someone had carefully hid him, even though the JieDan stage experts of the Pure Yang Palace had searched all around for him, they had supposedly all neglected the Desolate Valley, after all, who would think that he would still dare to hide at the Desolate Valley, which was completely unfavourable to him with regards to Spirit Power? The most dangerous region was the most safe, surprisingly Chu Heng had this kind of insight and courage.

“Don’t...know... the uncle masters might know, perhaps!”

Under the huge mouth of the earth attributed beast, the follower didn’t have the smallest intention of resisting and after talking, he began to speak fluently, immediately revealing whatever he knew, fearing that if he spoke even a little slowly, he would be swallowed.

The follower was a minor person, so not knowing this kind of secret was pardonable, Yang Chen smiled towards him and turned around to walk away. The follower released a breath of relief, but immediately he sensed a heat over his head, following which a darkness spread before his eyes, and when reaching out his hand, he felt a few sharp pillars.

“Partner, please excuse me and raise your foot!”

Regardless of what was happening behind his body, Yang Chen just yelled loudly, without turning his head.

With a rumbling sound, the huge foot began to move, revealing the leading youth at his last breath within the huge footmark. After using some special techniques and swallowing a yang qi pill, the youth released a long breath, lasting for long time and began to get up slowly.

“Fellow Daoist!”

While trying to get up, the youth had just opened his eyes, when he heard Yang Chen’s voice from above his head. It felt completely unreal.

“I want to know about your sect’s arrangements at the Desolate Valley, can Fellow Daoist satisfy my small curiosity or not?”

# Chapter 106 - Looking For An Even Larger Territory

---

The peak foundation stage disciple, who was almost killed under the foot of the earth attributed beast and was at his last breath, wasn't able to hide anything when faced with Yang Chen's soul stunning technique. Yang Chen didn't even need to use his killing intent, just asking what he needed to know was enough.

The Greatest Heaven Sect had several disciples training here, most of them were wood and earth attributed, but this was not very strange as most of the cultivators who came here were wood or earth attributed. Also, since these disciples had been sent to train here, the Greatest Heaven Sect also had a few JieDan stage experts keeping watch and provide support, which was also completely logical, it was also said that there was also a YuanYing stage expert among these overseers.

On the front, everything seemed normal, but Yang Chen knew about the most important matter here. The matter related to the great spell, most likely these low level disciples didn't know anything about it.

The matter regarding Chu Heng had not been concealed by the Greatest Heaven Sect. In order to make friends with Li Chen Qian of the Greatest Heaven Sect, Chu Heng had tried to suppress Yang Chen, because of which he was expelled from the Pure Yang Palace, so most disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect were in support of Chu Heng and although the Greatest Heaven Sect couldn't support Chu Heng openly, they could still hide him at a region where nobody could investigate.

At least in the Desolate Valley, Chu Heng was living very comfortably, the Greatest Heaven Sect supplied him with everything he needed and he had also obtained their support. In these few years, Chu Heng had already become familiar with almost all disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect at the Desolate Valley. If anything happened, these disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect were the ones to notify him.

The news that the Pure Yang Palace had sent JieDan stage experts to look for him had also reached him before they arrived because of these disciples, leading to those experts returning back in failure. In addition to that, Chu Heng was properly hidden within the Desolate Valley and was also increasing his strength with the help of the Greatest Heaven Sect.

As for the Greatest Heaven Sect, they were secretly assisting Chu Heng, so that they could ruin the reputation of the Pure Yang Palace to take revenge for their previous defeat, when they had to admit their mistakes and apologise, now they could turn the Pure Yang Palace into a joke at the same time. This kind of gentle act was precisely a business where they could invest little and reap many rewards.

“Chu Heng is in the Desolate Valley, very good!”

The smile on Yang Chen’s face widened more and more, the originally incomparably arrogant youngster was lying down on the ground like an idiot, without saying anything.

Yang Chen jumped up onto the foot of the beast and lightly waved his hand to turn around and depart. The ferocious beast opened its mouth and swallowed the youth lying on the ground.

Currently the earth attributed beast had a cultivation comparable to the JieDan stage, adding onto that the strength of its body and its huge size, even human cultivators at the same stage were not its rival. Fortunately the temperament of the earth attributed beast was mild and it did not take initiative to attack cultivators. When Yang Chen was lying on its back, he was able to establish a connection with it in the first attempt.

The Beast Controlling Secrets were really a remarkable ability of the demon race. Yang Chen hadn't intended to control this demon beast and had only intended to establish a connection, so that he could obtain the information he needed. Once the link was established, the remaining matters were very easy.

The fate of the three cultivators had already been sealed after running into the demon beast. Although the earth attributed beast had a mild nature and did not take the initiative to attack, it did not mean that it lacked the strength to attack. Yang Chen had asked it for help and it had taken care of them with ease.

Soon afterward it spat out their qiankun pouches and their magic weapons as it could not refine them, before Yang Chen on the ground. These three people were earth attributed, so they were the best kind of tonic for the earth attributed beast. Naturally, Yang Chen didn't take this help without returning anything and immediately gave it a thousand year old ginseng. Although it was said that it was a thousand years old, it had actually already



matured to two thousand years, so even for the JieDan stage earth attributed beast, it was a rare item.

After giving it these benefits, Yang Chen's request to know about the distribution of Spirit Power in the surroundings and its direction was easily handled, very soon a complete map of several hundred miles radius in the surroundings appeared within his mind. The earth attributed beast had seized this place for a long time, some even said for a thousand years. A few times per year it would patrol its territory, so it was completely familiar with its surroundings, and its cultivation was also high, so it could clearly recognize the distribution of Spirit Power in the surroundings.

Such a detailed description of the distribution of Spirit Power immediately gave Yang Chen a basic foundation of knowledge over the huge spell hidden within the Desolate Valley. After all, this huge spell had to rely on the natural terrain and this area was at the corner of the huge spell, Yang Chen was already roughly able to estimate the general direction of spell, as well as the direction in which its critical points were.

His interactions with the earth attributed spirit beast were quite pleasant, and after asking about some powerful neighbours, Yang Chen quickly took his leave and flew towards another direction. If there were four or five more demon beasts as powerful as this earth attributed beast, then Yang Chen could draw an outline of the huge spell, so when the times came, everything could be covered in a glance.

The three young talents of the Greatest Heaven Sect, from the inside to the outside, from flesh to bones, they had completely

disappeared without a trace in this short time. The earth attributed beast also threw the three qiankun pouches towards Yang Chen without any hesitation, in all likelihood, it was also aware that these kind of big sects could use qiankun pouches to locate their disciples.

After seeing its intelligent actions, Yang Chen would absolutely not believe in rumors that this earth attributed spirit beast was mild in nature and did not take the initiative to attack cultivators. Perhaps this earth attributed spirit beast had established its reputation as being harmless for a very long time, but if it could make these kinds of judgements, then there was no way that it had only ever killed these three people. In all likelihood there had been many solitary cultivators going missing in this region, only nobody had paid attention and investigated it.

Yang Chen didn't care much about the qiankun pouches and neither did he care much about killing one or two people of the Greatest Heaven Sect, so he threw them into his Achievement Ring, as he didn't want to face trouble in the future.

After quickly flying to the edge of the earth attributed beast's territory, Yang Chen slowed down his speed. According to the information of the earth attributed beast, its neighbour at this side was not very friendly, not only was it extremely violent, its strength was also higher than the earth attributed beast by far. Its territory was very large, at least four to five times larger than its neighbour.

This caught Yang Chen's interest even more, this kind of powerful strength, could it be that it was at the YuanYing stage

already? The demon race were not ranked like this, this was merely used for comparison. But if it was really true, wouldn't its domain be even larger? As long as he could obtain information about the terrain of this region, Yang Chen would not have work much.

Naturally, this demon beast, Meadow Viper, was not that easy to convince. Its strength was formidable, so if they couldn't come to an agreement, Yang Chen estimated there would be some problems. Therefore, Yang Chen had to prepare properly in advance, so that he was not at a loss of what to do when the time came.

The reason which gave Yang Chen the confidence to confront the Meadow Viper, apart from the Beast Controlling Secrets, was that the speed of the Meadow Viper was slower and Yang Chen had flying sword in his collection, the speed of which was amazingly fast. Although it could not compare to the speed of a magic weapon especially made for speed, but according to the description of the Meadow Viper, fleeing from it wasn't much of a problem.

Even the earth attributed beast could escape using its earth evasion, if the affair did not go well, then Yang Chen could also flee in time to a secure region. Because of this guarantee for safety, Yang Chen had become brazen enough to go and meet the Meadow Viper after he had made enough preparations.

Compared to the mildness in the area of the earth attributed beast, in this area, a berserk breath rippled through the atmosphere. Within the Desolate Valley, there were some regions where the low levelled disciples who had come to train were not

allowed to enter by any means, this region was one of those.

Yang Chen was using the Beast Controlling Secrets to the pinnacle, requesting to establish a connection with the idea of asking for directions wrapped within his Spiritual Awareness and released it in a long range. He himself was standing on the flying sword, carefully and slowly flying forward, so that if he sensed anything abnormal, he would immediately escape.

The territory of the Meadow Viper was huge. In half a day, Yang Chen could completely traverse the territory of the earth attributed beast, but he had to spend one whole day in the territory of the Meadow Viper. It certainly also had something to do with his caution, but this clearly illustrated the magnitude of the Meadow Viper's territory.

The sky became dark and bright again; the next day appeared and the blazing sun was heating up the ground, steam was rising in the surroundings, even without a trace of moisture.

Yang Chen did not pay any attention towards this kind of atmosphere, but he had already manipulated the Beast Controlling Secrets for a whole day and night now, yet there wasn't a trace of a response, as if there wasn't any demon beast which Yang Chen could connect to within this huge territory.

This was clearly not possible, even if it was a powerful demon beast, within its own territory it still required food, so it required some coexistence on some level, otherwise, wouldn't the already lonely demon beast be even more lonely?

But in such a long time, no kind of demon beast had surprisingly established a connection with himself, clearly this was not right. There was only one possible cause: the master of this territory.

According to the description given by the earth attributed beast, Yang Chen had reached the core of the Meadow Viper's territory, but until now there hadn't been any signs of something appearing, this already indicated a lot of problems.

Finally, after this step, Yang Chen no longer moved forwards. Under the probing with his Spiritual Awareness, there was no demonic beast in his surroundings, which were dreadfully calm. Wrinkling his brows, he had only stopped the flying sword for a single moment, when he suddenly turned around and rapidly left.

As soon as he did this, an enormous pressure suddenly appeared in Yang Chen's surroundings. The sand below his feet had become similar to a flowing river and began to divide in two halves, while a huge body suddenly appeared, penetrating through the ground and started to rise steeply. The fierce demon beast rushed towards Yang Chen's direction with its mouth open, if Yang Chen had been even a little bit slower, he would have been in its mouth.

Naturally Yang Chen would not not rush into mouth of the Meadow Viper, the flying sword turned around swiftly and rushed into another direction, but after changing directions, he discovered that he had been surrounded by the body of the Meadow Viper on all sides. Regardless of where he turned, he would run into the body of the Meadow Viper everywhere.

In addition to that, at this moment, the huge mouth of the Meadow Viper was not facing towards Yang Chen, but rather rose high into the air and afterwards looked down from a height. Yang Chen was trapped between the mouth and the body of the Meadow Viper. Its two blood red eyes were as if shooting death rays, attentively staring at Yang Chen, its long tongue incessantly flicking.

Yang Chen hadn't anticipated that the body of the Meadow Viper would be so huge, after all, he hadn't had much contact with demon beasts in his previous life and even when he had, that was after ascending. The demon beasts of the Spiritual World and Immortal World were also completely different, they did not depended just on their body to fight in the least.

The long body was already more than thousand meters long, the thinnest region of its body was several tens of meters in diameter. It was coiling on the ground as if huge walls twisted around to form a confinement. The scales on its body were emitting a black halo, like a natural body protecting armour. The essence of earth attributed Spirit Power wrapped its entire body. Yang Chen was completely sure, even if he used the most powerful flying sword he had to attack these scales, he would be able to break at most ten or so scales, before suffering a critical attack from the Meadow Viper.

At this moment, Yang Chen could not retreat and could only remain hanging within the sky, motionless. But there wasn't even a trace of fear of Yang Chen's face, he was transmitting the intent to establish a connection to ask for some things using the Beast Controlling Secrets as before, his eyes staring at the two huge eyes, not swaying for even a single moment.

Yang Chen had spread his Spiritual Awareness widely, but he was not able to discover the location of the main body of the Meadow Viper. This clearly explained one thing, that the cultivation realm of the opponent exceeded his, and it was also possible that it knew a technique to hide its presence. No wonder that the frightening name of the Meadow Viper had spread far, just this technique alone was enough to make cultivators at the same realm go green with envy. It had to be known that demon beasts did not care about being honorable or sinister, confronting the enemy, their only aim was to kill the enemy, it basically did not care about the method.

“You are a Fellow Daoist from my demon race, why do you have the appearance of a cultivator?”

Within his Spiritual Awareness, a voice was suddenly transmitted with a cruel will, basically not paying any attention to Yang Chen’s intent to ask for information, as if interrogating him and moreover not tolerating Yang Chen not giving answer.

“What kind of benefits will I have by informing you?”

As long as the other person had established the connection, then there would not be any great problems for Yang Chen. Releasing the Spiritual Awareness which had passed through Beast Controlling Secrets, he rapidly transmitting his intent without opening his mouth.

Yang Chen knew that the best method to communicate with the demon beast was to get directly to the point, at this stage, they still hadn’t learned a method for tactful communication, so to

approach them, one had to be straightforward and get directly to the point. Directly expressing his intentions was the best method, which would also not create any misunderstandings.

Once it understood Yang Chen's intent, a chill flashed through the eyes of the Meadow Viper, its eyes were as if shooting blades, rushing towards the bottom of Yang Chen's heart, it had never intended to communicate with Yang Chen, it only wanted to force Yang Chen into submission.

Due to this, a formidable killing intent encased in Spiritual Awareness attacked Yang Chen, but Yang Chen didn't care at all, he widely opened his own Spirit Sea and forced this threatening killing intent to go in.

Once it entered Yang Chen's Spirit Sea, ripples suddenly emerged in the blood colored river and in a flash it turned into a huge blood colored hand, seizing this Spiritual Awareness and dissolving it completely.

The Meadow Viper immediately sensed its killing intent being dissolved. It immediately stopped its movement and, leaning its head with its gaze fixed on Yang Chen, transmitted a thread of consciousness:

“What do you want?”



# Chapter 107 - Colluding With A Ruffian

---

For demon beasts, if they couldn't probe successfully, they would change their ways, among demon beasts, there was no fight to the death if they were not fighting over territory, natural resources or prey. If there was a large difference in strength, then perhaps the powerful one would forcefully subdue the weaker one, but if the strength of both sides did not have a large discrepancy then the best method was to negotiate. The demon beasts were no fools, most of all those under the covetous eyes of the cultivators in the Desolate Valley.

Yang Chen could sense what the Meadow Viper was thinking, since he had directly swallowed its killing intent without paying any attention, naturally he was not much weaker. Since Yang Chen was merely asking for directions and did not have any intentions of harming it in any way, it naturally would not immediately attack him, it wanted to find the secret behind Yang Chen being able to turn into a human, naturally it would not mind paying some price.

Although the Meadow Viper had already learned how to hide its appearance at this stage, that was merely its innate instinct. It also hadn't learned how to hide its strength, but it was very clear about this point. Regular cultivators who were not equal to it, were intimidated by that sort of killing intent, but Yang Chen was different, that was naturally a great trouble for it.

Strength was the only way which allowed both sides to communicate with equality, since Yang Chen had continued under its threat, that naturally gave him the qualifications to communicate with it on equal terms.

“Apart from the things I want to ask, you should help me accomplish three tasks and you should also protect me when I obtain some things at the Desolate Valley!”

This demon beast Meadow Viper could hide its appearance and it was also very powerful, so Yang Chen definitely would not let this kind of hired hand slip off his hands. Regardless of whether it was collecting the earth attributed True Qi or kill Chu Heng, both tasks required this kind of powerful helper and in return, Yang Chen would just give it some simple technique to transform its appearance.

This Appearance Transforming Secrets was one of the most basic things in the Spiritual World, the demon beasts who ascended would learn this first, so basically it was not worth anything, but perhaps in this world it was somewhat precious.

Although the Appearance Transforming Secrets were marvelous, their only function was to transform the appearance and nothing more. It could allow a demon beasts to transform their appearance to a human-like appearance, but innately they were still demon beasts and since they could not cultivate through humanities methods, they also couldn't change the breath of a demon beast so even if it would spread in this world, it would not be a big problem.

The earth attributed beast only had the strength of JieDan stage expert, so it couldn't use these kinds of techniques, but the Meadow Viper had a strength of the YuanYing stage, so using this properly it could become a great helper for Yang Chen and naturally Yang Chen could pay an even higher price to rope it in.

But for the Meadow Viper, this kind of thing which could turn it into a human like appearance was exactly something it had been looking for. It could hide itself by using the Appearance Transforming Secrets, so it could conceal itself among humans, which would increase its safety from the people plotting against it, so how could it not be tempted?

“Ok, deal!”

The way how demon beasts handled affairs was really straightforward, either do or don't do, there wasn't any beating around the bush. Or possibly, they hadn't learned how to be tactical, after the Meadow Viper had heard all of the conditions, it only thought about the merits and demerits and immediately replied.

At the same time as it finished speaking, a white coloured halo flew from above the head of Meadow Viper and slowly flew into Yang Chen's body. This was the method unique to demon beasts to conclude an agreement, using a thread of the demon soul, wrapped in Spiritual Awareness, when both sides agreed, both of them had restrictions, which were returned only after the completion of the agreement. This thread of demon soul also contained the contents of the agreement between both sides, which could not be altered.

During this, the pair of ox horns in Yang Chen's Spirit Sea immediately divided to form a small trace, which turned into two very small ox horns, which were also delivered similarly. The Meadow Viper opened its mouth and Yang Chen's trace of 'demon soul' entered its mouth.

After entering the Spirit Sea, Yang Chen saw that this thread of the demon soul also had the appearance of the Meadow Viper's main body, only a lot smaller.

“So you were a cyan ox originally!”

After receiving Yang Chen's 'demon soul', the Meadow Viper immediately transmitted this, as if it had become aware of the original form of Yang Chen's real body at that moment.

“This is the Appearance Transforming Secrets!”

Yang Chen also did not say any superfluous words and immediately took out a blank jade slip. Afterwards he engraved the cultivation method of the Appearance Transforming Secrets and threw it to the Meadow Viper.

The Meadow Viper swallowed the jade slip, for the demon beasts, their bodies were the best kind of qiankun pouch, not only was it convenient, but they also didn't have to worry about losing it.

Within half an hour, the Meadow Viper read and understood the contents of the jade slip. It was at a realm where it had already comprehended many things, so it realized the underlying principle very rapidly.

The huge body of the Meadow Viper started trembling and frantically issuing sounds of pushing and pulling, as if many bones

in its body were being compressed. From the surroundings of the entire body, a white gas was coming out, but under the sun it was completely fuzzy. With those sandstorms whipping over the ground, Yang Chen's field of view was covered completely.

Yang Chen was very courteous and did not use his Spiritual Awareness to see what exactly was happening within the sand storm. Demon beasts do not wish for other people to look at them when they are vulnerable, unless they do not have a choice, so this was the minimum courtesy.

Kacha! Kacha!

After the sound of breaking the bones resounded for a long time, they began to slowly quiet down, the sandstorm in Yang Chen's surroundings also settled.

By this time, Yang Chen had already landed on the ground and collected his flying sword. Since they had already reached a deal, for the time being he was not in danger, demon beasts were much more reliable than cultivators.

After the sandstorm had dissipated, what appeared was an ordinary Meadow Viper, with a length of three meters and it did not have that kind of crazily huge body anymore. It crawled in front of Yang Chen and raised its body, erecting its head high, it confronted Yang Chen and immediately transmitted via Spiritual Awareness.

“That Appearance Transforming Technique is really effective!”

The Meadow Viper had cultivated the Appearance Transforming Technique for the first time, but its body had already been reduced in size by a hundred folds. Although it still hadn't transformed into a human, just the change in size was enough to make all cultivators confronting it loosen their guards. Although it looked just like an ordinary Meadow Viper, trying to catch it meant death.

“There is still more work to do, you require some more time to be able to transform into human shape!”

Yang Chen said, while nodding his head. Although using Spiritual Awareness was still the customary method to communicate, he was more fond of talking.

“Slowly learn to speak, alright? If you don't want to be seen through by the people at a glance, then either speak in front of them or remain completely mute!”

“Where do you want to go, I will lead you!”

On the ground, the Meadow Viper nodded its head, but its body scuttled forward, coiling around Yang Chen's leg.

This movement of the Meadow Viper did not surprise Yang Chen in the least, it was common knowledge that snake types liked to coil around things, cultivating demon beasts were no exception. But this would not make anyone suspicious, at most, people would think that it was a demon beast tamed by Yang Chen or just a pet, they would absolutely not guard against it.

Yang Chen extended his hand, allowing the Meadow Viper to rise above his arm, and asked, wrinkling his brows:

“The Appearance Transforming Secrets require at least several years before you can change shape into a human, so have you thought properly about going with me? Who will take care of your territory?”

“I have already been trapped in this region for more than a thousand years because of my body, I have never before left the Desolate Valley.”

The Meadow Viper was constantly buzzing, coiled on Yang Chen’s arm, it transmitted the thought:

“Even if I can conceal my breath, my body can still be found, previously if I had crossed this boundary I would have to fight with many cultivators who desire for territory, I want to see more places and increase the scope of my knowledge and experience.”

This was a very reasonable demon beast, Yang Chen wouldn’t have to discuss much with it. In fact, since it had already reached the YuanYing stage, if it weren’t trapped because of its body, it would have already left to travel long ago. Being trapped in a corner like this, the good thing would be that nobody would dare to provoke it in its territory, but the bad thing was, that it was trapped here like in a jail.

“These past few years, haven’t you come across a group of

experts?”

Yang Chen asked while walking with it on his side. Yang Chen wasn't formal, this was the best kind of bodyguard he could get, his concealed weapon against those who are plotting against him. In any case, he had the demon soul of the other party with him, so he did not have to be on guard against it, so what's the harm?

“Several years ago, a few experts had come here, seemingly to arrange something.”

The Meadow Viper replied simultaneously, while moving around on Yang Chen's body and continuously probing around things on Yang Chen's body. Currently it had stopped over Yang Chen's belt, saying his observation:

“After building the framework, these people immediately retreated without bothering me. Actually in the past thousand years, people have very rarely come to provoke me, all of them were experts, but they immediately walked away after doing what they came there to do, very boring.”

Several hundred years ago, Yang Chen secretly assessed within his heart, these people must have been the ones who had arranged the spell. The Meadow Viper was thinking that they had retreated because of it, but those people certainly would not have walked away because of some difficulties, since they had already laid the spell, they must have retreated after they were done.

But Yang Chen did not inform the Meadow Viper about this, he



only asked it to tell him about the distribution and inclination of Spirit Power in its territory. The Meadow Viper also had no intentions of going back on its promise, very quickly it transmitted all the things it knew into Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness.

A map of a region more than ten times larger than the earth attributed beast's appeared in Yang Chen's mind. The vastness of the area left Yang Chen staring with his mouth hanging open. This guy's territory covered a major area of the Desolate Valley and it was also touching the territory of the earth attributed beast, so it was very easy for Yang Chen to put them together in his mind. Immediately the spell diagram of the great spell of this quarter of the Desolate Valley was within Yang Chen's mind.

“Has the small guy at the southern side informed you about me being here?”

The movement in Yang Chen thoughts, especially when he joined the information with the territory of the earth attributed beast, immediately made the Meadow Viper sense something.

“That's right!”

Yang Chen did not hide anything, the earth attributed beast was able to obtain its territory at the edge of the huge territory of the Meadow Viper, so surely the Meadow Viper would not have wanted to expand its territory, otherwise, with the formidable strength of the Meadow Viper, it could have annexed it a long time ago. Moreover, the Meadow Viper had addressed that beast very intimately, so surely there was some relation between them.

“That guy knows how to be patient, most people like to walk at the side his territory, delivering themselves to be eaten by him.”

The Meadow Viper had again scuttled along Yang Chen’s other arm.

“In those days, I was not that intelligent, which had led to this situation where the people don’t dare to come here, so I didn’t get the opportunity to eat nutritious people, and I could only absorb Spirit Power.”

The Meadow Viper expressed deep regret with its Spiritual Awareness.

Yang Chen had known for a long time that the earth attributed beast was not that simple, but he still hadn’t anticipated that the Meadow Viper would give it such a high assessment. After completing what he came for, and also obtaining such a formidable helper for the time being, Yang Chen didn’t let the Meadow Viper’s knowledge go to waste and immediately asked:

“Which of your neighbours in the surroundings is easy to handle? Let’s go there to ask for directions.”

“Towards the West!”

The Meadow Viper replied without any hesitation, in any case, since it had decided to follow Yang Chen, then it also had to be

ready to leave this territory, so it didn't matter where it went, since Yang Chen asked, it would introduce them to one of its old friends, which would surely not be any trouble and in this way he could also show off in front of them.

Since the Desolate Valley was a region to train, it had to retain some of its formidable demon beasts, so that the aim of tempering disciples could be achieved. Therefore, the experts of the sects didn't mindlessly massacre the demon beasts there. Even formidable ones like the Meadow Viper could be used as an opponent to train experts, so even if someone wanted to eradicate them, a large number of people would not be willing.

This was also one the reasons why the Meadow Viper wanted to leave this region, though Yang Chen hadn't asked much, he was capable of putting this together. With the help of the Meadow Viper, Yang Chen could find out the inclination of the spell within a short amount of time, thus deducing the place where the earth attributed True Qi was being accumulated.

Those people arranging the spell would have never thought about the existence of a freak like Yang Chen, much less about such heaven defying Beast Controlling Secrets. Yang Chen had just revealed the tip of the great iceberg arranged several hundred years ago, but to whom the earth attributed True Qi would belong in the future was not certain.

When Yang Chen had found the right direction, the Meadow Viper was coiling around Yang Chen's neck, its long body coiled entirely around Yang Chen. If a normal cultivator saw this scene, where a three meter long snake was coiling around a person's

body, they would be scared out of their wits.

Naturally he would not show these kinds of circumstances in front of other cultivators. Fortunately this was the territory of the Meadow Viper, normally, other than experts, people dared to come in only very rarely. Yang Chen had intentionally slowed his speed, even giving up travelling on his flying sword and had returned to foot, so that the Meadow Viper could intensify its cultivation of the Appearance Transforming Secrets during this time.

By the time, when Yang Chen had crossed the territory of the Meadow Viper, one month had passed already. During the this time, the Meadow Viper had become extremely proficient in using the Appearance Transforming Secrets, its body had already turned from three meters long to three foot long, again decreasing more than tenfold. A three foot long snake coiling around Yang Chen's body was not very eye catching.

Once they exited the Meadow Viper's territory, the Meadow Viper started issuing a wave of hissing sounds and released its Spiritual Awareness entirely, trying to notify that old friend, whose territory they had already entered. Merely, in Yang Chen's eyes, this sounded more like issuing a challenge rather than notifying.

# Chapter 108 - Assembling The Map

---

This master of this territory was a Sand Scorpion, which had a cultivation similar to Meadow Viper and was at the YuanYing stage, the difference in their strengths was not very large. Hearing the Meadow Viper provoke the Sand Scorpion like this, Yang Chen found it very ridiculous.

Since the body of the Meadow Viper had become smaller, Yang Chen could take it along on his flying sword and travel faster. Throughout the whole journey, the Meadow Viper kept on with its arrogant provocations, as if fearing that the Sand Scorpion would not know that it had come. This kind of unbridled provocation made Yang Chen wish to stop the Meadow Viper by force.

After two hours, Yang Chen was flying on his flying sword, when he suddenly sensed a berserk pressure, crazily rushing towards his location. It didn't need an introduction, this could only be the Sand Scorpion, infuriated by the Meadow Viper, it rushed over to compare its strength with the Meadow Viper. As a response, Yang Chen immediately stopped his flying sword and landed on the ground.

Yang Chen felt that he was very unlucky, why did he bring along this kind of guy who loved to stir up trouble? Clearly he just wanted ask for directions, why was the Meadow Viper continuously provoking it? The furious Sand Scorpion, which was also at the YuanYing Stage, could get rid of Yang Chen immediately, as long as it wished. Earlier, the Meadow Viper was roaring loudly by itself, but now the furious Sand Scorpion had also joined in.

Just as he was hesitating whether or not he should leave, the choice had already been taken away from him. In a flash, the pressure of the Sand Scorpion was already in the vicinity. Although he couldn't even see its shadow, Yang Chen was sure that the Sand Scorpion had stopped in his surroundings and was observing him secretly.

Bang!

Suddenly, from behind his body, a huge mouth opened widely and a string of black pearls rushed out from within the ground with the sound of an explosion. All of a sudden a black light flashed and fiercely tried to pierce Yang Chen. This was actually no string of black pearls, this was the Sand Scorpion's tail.

Without much hesitation, Yang Chen grabbed the Meadow Viper and dodged the tail of the Sand Scorpion stinging towards him, while at the same time passing on a message with his Spiritual Awareness:

“This is your own problem, settle it yourself!”

The Meadow Viper hadn't thought of using Yang Chen as free labour, it flew into the sky, but had already restored its original shape. Its huge body directly coiled around the tail of the sand scorpion and soon after that, more than half of the hidden Sand Scorpion's body was pulled out.

A thousand meter long Meadow Viper and a several hundred

meter large Sand Scorpion, these two huge monsters were battling in the sand, twisting and turning to kill each other. A stabbing tail, fangs, large claws raising here and there, huge bodies smashing here and there, the fierceness was incomparable, leaving deep prints in the desert, with sand filling the entire sky.

Regardless of whether it was the Sand Scorpion or the Meadow Viper, both of them were earth attributed, so they felt just like fish in a pond, in the Desert Valley. Sometimes both of them used some magic techniques, their bodies were appearing and disappearing within the Desolate Valley. If it were not for Yang Chen using his Spiritual Awareness to follow after them closely, he would have already lost track of them.

Yang Chen had already risen into the sky. He could not bear to stay on the ground, while several miles of the desert had been overturned by these demon beasts. Their immense roars could be easily heard in a radius of a thousand miles. If it were not that the regions of these demon beasts were considered as dangerous regions, maybe countless people would have rushed over to take a look.

Apparently the two demon beasts had already fought with each other many times, as their fight was quite methodical and all of their attacks were aimed at the other's weak points, there was a clear pattern within their attack and defense. In addition to that, no strike was critical. Yang Chen had already been observing it for more than two hours and as before, the sounds of fight were coming through and the battlefield had already shifted to hundreds of miles away from the original location.

If it still continued until then, when would it be over? And if after such a big fight, neither side won and they both ended up getting injured, that would be quite annoying for Yang Chen, so he had no other option, but to use the Beast Controlling Secrets again and try to communicate with the two beasts in battle.

“I have only come to ask for directions, I had not thought that it would turn into a life or death battle like this, can you stop?”

Not only did Yang Chen shout loudly, he also transmitted his Spiritual Awareness using the Beast Controlling Secrets.

“Ask for directions? Which roads are even here to ask about?”

Once Yang Chen opened his mouth, the two demon beasts, which were coiled around each other, forming a ball stopped and soon after that the Sand Scorpion unexpectedly asked this. Suddenly he realized a change in the Meadow Viper, following which he began roaring at the Meadow Viper, while the Meadow Viper also began to issue hissing sound at him.

Yang Chen was very far and he hadn't entered the interaction between the two demon beasts, but seeing the Meadow Viper turning big one moment and then turn small again, using this ability to scuttle and jump, he could immediately tell that it was flaunting the recently obtained Appearance Transforming Secrets.

The Sand Scorpion in front of the Meadow Viper was also astonished at this change. While it was motionlessly observing it, from time to time, its thick carapace was sprouting fog, no one



knew whether it was due to anger or envy.

After the two demon beasts had communicated for some time, the Sand Scorpion turned towards Yang Chen and transmitted its intentions to Yang Chen through Spiritual Awareness:

“Can you pass on your Appearance Transforming Secrets to me for the same conditions?”

Was this a good thing? Yang Chen subconsciously nodded, but while he still hadn't thought about it properly, the Sand Scorpion had already delivered its demon soul, leaving the white halo hanging in front of Yang Chen.

After he had reached an agreement with the Sand Scorpion in a daze, Yang Chen suddenly realized that the demon beasts were no longer the idiots he used to think they were in past, who acted only on their instincts. These decisive actions of the Sand Scorpion and the Meadow Viper, together with the actions of the earth attributed beast, like establishing a reputation as harmless, had toppled his beliefs.

After he had exchanged a trace of the demon soul with the Sand Scorpion and had given it a jade slip containing the Appearance Transforming Secrets, the Sand Scorpion's body also disappeared within a wave of fog and changed its dimensions to a few meters.

As for Yang Chen, he had already gathered two powerful helpers by now. It seemed that his future matters could be accomplished properly and safely.

A large chunk was added to Yang Chen's map again. At last, an image of the Spirit Power's distribution across half of the Desolate Valley emerged in his mind. He had also obtained the position of half of the great spell, as long as he was able to obtain few more intact maps, he could figure out the complete location of the great spell.

The Sand Scorpion and the Meadow Viper both had the intention of following Yang Chen, but seeing these two formidable demon beasts following after him, all of a sudden a thought came to him: If he could put these two demon beasts under Pure Yang Palace's influence, then wouldn't the strength of the Pure Yang Palace increase greatly once again?

The only problems were whether the Pure Yang Palace would accept the two demon beasts or not, and if the two demon beasts were willing to enter the Pure Yang Palace.

Yang Chen decided to think about this problem later, currently Yang Chen's main concern was the great Spell Formation which had been arranged several hundred years ago by the Greatest Heaven Sect; as well as the Earth Attributed True Qi gathered by it, this task could not be given to anyone else. Then there was also the person who had humiliated the Pure Yang Palace: Chu Heng, who absolutely had to die.

After obtaining the support of the Sand Scorpion and the Meadow Viper, Yang Chen did not have to worry about his safety in the Desolate Valley. At this moment, a small Sand Scorpion was sitting on one shoulder and a small Meadow Viper was coiled

around the other shoulder, this would absolutely not raise anyone's eyebrows. Once in a while, the Sand Scorpion released a violent breath, but it faded away very quickly, it seemed very unstable.

Yang Chen did not know what kind of deal the Sand Scorpion and Meadow Viper had reached, but the Meadow Viper had taught its secret to hide its breath to the Sand Scorpion. But since it was the first time for the Sand Scorpion to learn and practice it, it was unable to control its breath properly, which led to the current situation.

One month had already passed when they appeared from the territory of the Sand Scorpion, which had become very small. Nobody among those cultivators who came to the Desolate Valley to train knew that the two formidable and violent demon beasts had both already left their respective dens. Next, Yang Chen chose another direction of the Desolate Valley to travel to.

As for 'training through battle', the Desolate Valley also had many JieDan stage demon beasts apart from the YuanYing stage demon beasts like the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion. The current direction in which Yang Chen was moving was a little more crowded by cultivators, there also weren't any YuanYing stage demon beasts in this direction, just few JieDan stage demon beast.

Seeing the two YuanYing stage demon beasts helping him, the JieDan beasts did not dare to raise any conditions and obediently told him the things they knew about. But Yang Chen hadn't been unreasonable towards them and provided each demon beast with a

thousand year ginseng, so that they also didn't have to return empty handed. But these JieDan stage beasts had gone wild with joy after obtaining these benefits.

Yang Chen was very certain that using his identity as a 'demon beast', together with these kind of benefits, they would at least not obstruct him when he is going to accomplish his job, maybe they could even provide some assistance. But those cultivators who had come here to battle would be the ones to suffer most hardships, if these demon beasts ate the thousand year Ginseng, their strength would reach at least the upper JieDan stage, so the level of the battles would also increase.

Yang Chen had already completed three fourths of the Desolate Valley's map within one month. Currently Yang Chen's objective was precisely the remaining fourth.

This region had the highest number of cultivators and the lowest amount of demon beasts. The most powerful demon beasts were at the initial jieDan stage, majority were at foundation stage and also the number of the foundation stage cultivators maximum here.

Since there were many cultivators, naturally there would be many towns for replenishment. During the journey, Yang Chen met many cultivators, including loose cultivators and disciples of every sect. When they met with Yang Chen they saw the mark on the qiankun pouch hanging on his waist, after which all of the cultivators noticed that he was a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace.

After the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall of the Pure Yang Palace had met with that accident here, it had become a matter of

ridicule. For more than one year no people of the Pure Yang Palace had come there, so when they saw Yang Che, they were all astonished.

“What business has that disciple of the Pure Yang Palace to come here? Haven’t they already lost enough face?”

There were always some people who enjoyed chaos, as well as people who wished to prove their existence by stepping on other people. When Yang Chen entered the small village, he was immediately met with this kind of ridicule.

Hearing the tone of the speaker, the people in the surroundings started laughing wildly. Everyone had been tired due to their battles while training, so when a person like Yang Chen, whom everyone was ridiculing, came over, everyone became happy. Who cared whether Yang Chen had the entire Pure Yang Palace at his back? Everyone was laughing without any restraint, but the people who were laughing most loudly was precisely a group of disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect.

Confronting the ridicule of these people, Yang Chen only smiled, but did not say anything. These people were not worth getting angry over. Although the Greatest Heaven Sect were very happy right now, when the great spell prepared by the elders of their sect, which took several hundred years to be laid, would be used by Yang Chen to obtain the earth attributed True Qi which they had gathered for so many years, would they still be laughing like this? Even for those people who were jeering at the Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen had a method, which was to get rid of Chu Heng, which would be like a tight slap on the faces of these laughing people.

The Sand Scorpion and the Meadow Viper also heard the laughter, but they did not know the circumstances, they only knew that these people laughing at Yang Chen were not friendly. With the strength of the two demon beasts, they could raze this entire town to ground within few moments, but they were forcefully stopped by Yang Chen.

“The world of humans is not as simple as the world of demon beasts, you both can look and observe as much as you want, but you must not casually expose your status, otherwise you will not be able to go anywhere and will be locked in the desolate valley.”

Yang Chen could only use this reason to make them aware of the rules of the human world.

Yang Chen had underestimated the wisdom of these two demon beasts. They used to sit on Yang Chen's body and only used Spiritual Awareness to communicate never opening their mouths, but they carefully observed the people in the surroundings, so that they could make preparations to integrate with the human race. Any YuanYing stage expert should never be underestimated.

The territories of the demon beasts in this region were not very big and were actually small territories they shared. Moreover many low level demon beasts were killed frequently, their territories would change frequently, but on the because of that, the natural resources available for cultivators were not very good there.

But as for Yang Chen, who already had a map of the distribution in eighty percent of the Desolate Valley, it was not very difficult for him to get a map of the remaining region by walking on foot. The two demon beasts also took favours from the low level demon beasts from time to time, so Yang Chen very quickly had a complete map of the Spirit Power distribution.

After obtaining the complete diagram of the Spirit Power distribution, the great spell arranged by the Greatest Heaven Sect was laid bare before him. By calculating the flow of Spirit Power, Yang Chen was able to find the location where the fifth earth True Qi was being accumulated. If possible, Yang Chen wanted to go there immediately and collect it.

But how could the great spell, which had taken several hundred years to arrange, be left unguarded at this critical moment? There would surely be some great expert guarding the core of the great spell, and that core was precisely the location where the earth attributed True Qi was gathered, so it would be guarded even more strictly.

“I want to know what is the situation there.”

At last, Yan Chen made his first request to the Meadow Viper:

“You can conceal your breath, and your body has also become a lot smaller, can you infiltrate that region and find out the situation inside?”

# Chapter 109 - Setting The Stage For A Good Show

---

For the Meadow Viper, this was not a difficult task, it had already transformed its body to the size of a young Meadow Viper and concealed its entire breath. It could crawl to the inside, but nobody was able to discover him. Previously when Yang Chen had been silently surrounded by the Meadow Viper, he also wasn't able to discover it.

After entering the small town, Yang Chen immediately found a place to stay and started training in it. He currently already knew the arrangements of the enemy, so what was left, was to think of a way to handle it.

“Tell me, which is better: should we go and fight over what the enemy has guarded for several years, or is it better to steal it secretly?”

Sitting upright, Yang Chen consulted the Sand Scorpion crawling over his body. He had never treated these YuanYing stage demon beasts as idiots and his current inquiry was still honest and sincere.

“What goal will you achieve by doing that?”

The Sand Scorpion transmitted back.

“Do you only want to obtain something, or do you want to obtain those things while giving the enemy so much pain that they wish



to die?”

“First of all, seizing it will make the enemy suffer the greatest amount of pain.”

Yang Chen hadn’t anticipated that the Sand Scorpion would have such ideas, but seeing this he was delighted and immediately continued communicating with him.

“Although fighting over things can really be pleasurable for you for a while, to vent out all of your anger, it can lead to many inconveniences.”

The Sand Scorpion’s words made Yang Chen view the demon race in a new light.

“But if you can steal it and run away secretly, without the people guarding it knowing the reason why and who had stolen it, then they will have to suffer from the pain of losing something while also being infinitely confused, that is the most painful.”

Sensing the thoughts of the Sand Scorpion, a scene flashed within Yang Chen’s mind all of a sudden: the entire Greatest Heaven Sect looking for the fifth earth True Qi, which had disappeared without any trace in an unfathomably mysterious way. Their hard work of several years, destroyed without any reasonable explanation, the spell, which had used up a great deal of the sect’s natural resources: turned into dust. It may even give rise to internal strife and doubts among themselves, this kind of conclusion made Yang Chen feel even happier.

If the traitor of the Pure Yang Palace, Chu Heng, could make the reputation of the Pure Yang Palace reach rock bottom so easily, then what if some of the Greatest Heaven Sects YuanYing experts started quarrelling because of this matter? What kind of situation would occur?

Since the Greatest Heaven Sect had already made the first move regarding Chu Heng, Yang Chen also did not mind making the last one. What was most surprising to Yang Chen was that Yang Xi, who had been the cause of misfortunes in his previous life, surprisingly had not made his appearance. Could it be that this guy still had to stand out in the Greatest Heaven Sect?

For the time being, he decided to put Yang Xi's matter to the back of his mind, currently Yang Chen needed to observe two people, first was one, who knew the arrangements of the surroundings perfectly and then another one, who knew the location of Chu Heng. Because of the consideration shown by the Greatest Heaven Sect, Chu Heng had concealed himself extremely well at the Desolate Valley, so finding him would still require help from the enemy.

“In addition, even if you want to snatch it, how will you do that?”

The Sand Scorpion transmitted the thought, meaning to mock him.

“The Meadow Viper can sneak in secretly but your current

strength is a little bit lacking.”

The Sand Scorpion had judged Yang Chen’s strength based on his Spiritual Awareness, but since Yang Chen’s current level of Spiritual Awareness was only at the peak JieDan stage, the Sand Scorpion did not think that Yang Chen could be the opponent of an expert comparable to it.

This was a blow to Yang Chen, but he did not tangle with this problem for a long time. In fact, Yang Chen had already picked the path of stealing it sneakily. Seeing the difference in strength, he knew that forcefully snatching it was not possible.

The Meadow Viper’s speed was very quick, and within the short period of three days, it had completely investigated the surroundings of the spell’s core noiselessly. When it returned to Yang Chen, a detailed map of the spell’s core appeared within Yang Chen’s mind.

The spell’s core was very valuable to the Greatest Heaven Sect and had at least three YuanYing stage experts keeping watch over it. But most of the time, they were cultivating in the centermost region and were disturbed very rarely. The surroundings also had several JieDan stage experts as well as batches of Foundation stage disciples, thus this region looked like a town.

The defence was very strict, but it seemed like nothing was out of ordinary, only one thing was different, this was a small town exclusive to the disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect. Apart from disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect, other people couldn’t enter. Yang Chen had wanted to enter sneakily, but there was absolutely

no possibility of him being able to do so.

“We two together can take care of at most three experts, as for the rest, you are not their opponent!”

The judgement of the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion was completely identical, completely not giving any face to Yang Chen.

“They will not go easy on us, as we are demon beasts, so you must not recklessly enter!”

According to the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion, Yang Chen was just a Cyan Ox which had transformed into a human, his strength was not really formidable and they had been lenient with him for a long time.

“Certainly, I haven’t the required qualifications to break in!”

Confronting the worries of the Meadow Viper, Yang Chen smiled innocently. The main aim of the great spell arranged several hundred years ago was precisely to guide the fifth earth True Qi in the Desolate Valley to the spell’s core, so that someone from the Greatest Heaven Sect could refine it later.

The reason why they had to spend so much effort to manipulate the fifth earth True Qi was that it was very difficult to guide around. Even after several hundred years, the fifth earth True Qi hadn’t completely converged according to the wishes of the Greatest Heaven Sect’s people, who had deployed the spell.

According to the distribution of Spirit Power which Yang Chen had obtained from the demon beasts, he could even figure out the current condition of the earth attributed True Qi's distribution. Sure enough, the fifth earth True Qi was being canalized towards the center of the spell's core, but even after several hundred years, it hadn't converged, but was only on the path of convergence.

This gave Yang Chen an opportunity, since the fifth earth True Qi still hadn't converged, then those people foolishly defending at the core of the spell, aren't they just waiting for the True Qi to be intercepted along the way?

Even though the two demon beasts had lived here for several years, they still couldn't detect the fifth earth True Qi, after all their knowledge was limited. Let alone these two demon beasts, even after some unknown expert had given the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect some advice about the fifth earth True Qi being here, they still hadn't been able to cover up the Desolate Valley spreading over a radius of just a thousand miles and find those thin as silk strands of fifth earth True Qi, and could only rely on the this kind of spell formation to gather it.

But Yang Chen was not the same, he had the experience of a Great Principal Golden Immortal, adding onto that he also had a description of the True Fifth Earth Secrets, so he could easily detect the things he needed.

His only apprehension was that the time required to collect the fifth earth True Qi was not small. Yang Chen had to collect all of the fifth earth True Qi before the eyes of these people, yet he

should not be discovered by them, this was precisely the greatest problem.

“When a tiger does not show it’s might, you all take it as a sick cat! I will allow you to increase your knowledge about what a spell formation really is!”

Yang Chen had the intention of subduing them after hearing their continuous scornful assessment, even if he could not defeat them, he had to prove that their knowledge in other fields was insufficient, this was very beneficial regarding roping in the two beasts to enter the Pure Yang Palace.

The huge spell of the Greatest Heaven Sect was very large and it was also arranged according to the natural terrain, an extremely skillful work. But this was not a problem in Yang Chen’s eyes, he only required the detailed distribution of Spirit Power to be able to calculate the direction of the Spell Formation to where the fifth earth True Qi was flowing.

After all, the Greatest Heaven Sect had arranged it sneakily and did not dare to brazenly make their claim on the fifth earth True Qi. Frankly speaking, this Desolate Valley was indeed not in the range of Greatest Heaven Sect’s influence, but rather belonged to another big sect, the Five Phases Sect. But because the earth attributed Spirit Power here was strong, the Five Phases Sect had generously allowed other fellow cultivators to train here, but this also did not meant that the Greatest Heaven Sect could forcefully seize the fifth earth True Qi there.

Thinking about it like this, the Greatest Heaven Sect was also

stealing, but it was doing it with a little obscurity. Yang Chen was sure that the Greatest Heaven Sect would not dare to publicize it, so he had a possibility of cheating them with ease.

This was a Spell Formation relying on the natural terrain, other than people who had thoroughly researched Spell Formations, nobody would know about it. Yang Chen doubted that in this realm, apart from the Spell Formation experts of the Greatest Heaven Sect, there were any other people who could comprehend it.

Perhaps, the Greatest Heaven Sect had thought it to be absolutely safe, but this Spell Formation had a fatal flaw: because the Spell Formation was arranged using the natural terrain, modifying it was not a difficult matter, especially not in the eyes of Yang Chen, a former Great Principal Golden Immortal.

“You want to modify this Spell Formation?”

Since the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion naturally knew about the existence of this Spell Formation, Yang Chen did not hide it from them. When they heard that Yang Chen could still modify the Spell Formation, the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion could not help but be shocked.

All demon beasts are born by receiving the spiritual influence of heaven and earth. Absorbing the essence of sun and moon and spiritual influence of Heaven and Earth to grow more powerful. Their cultivation was just based on instinct. But this ‘cyan ox’, Yang Chen, surprisingly not only knew about the Spell Formation, but also knew how to modify it, and moreover he had things like

the Appearance Transforming Secrets, all of this made Yang Chen's origins even more mysterious.

Yang Chen precisely wanted this result, he had to make the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion curious towards him being able to use Spell Formations, refine tools and concoct pills, so that he could pull these two powerful beasts into the Pure Yang Palace afterwards. In any case, Yang Chen still knew many cultivation methods for demon cultivation in this realm, at least the Beast Controlling Secrets could make demon beasts unable to stop themselves, as long as he could find a powerful mount, his strength would immediately double.

“When the Greatest Heaven Sect arranged the spell, they had explored this region for at least several hundreds of years, in order to sense the direction of Spirit Power.”

Yang Chen smiled and explained the objective that he wanted to accomplish:

“As long as I can modify the direction of Spirit Power at many crucial points, it will expose the fifth earth True Qi, at that time, the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Five Phases Sect will provide us with a good show, then we will slowly wait and see!”

Implicating people, this kind of thing; although the Meadow Viper and Sand Scorpion had also done it before, they had never done it at such a large scale, implicating whole sects. The two demon beasts were even more excited than Yang Chen, all of these years people had been treating them as targets for training, when would they ever get a chance like this, to vent their anger, again?



Furthermore, they would make these people destroy each other, without being involved in it, so the two demon beasts were urging Yang Chen to begin his modifications.

Naturally, altering such an enormous spell was not an easy matter. Even with Yang Chen's current knowledge of Spell Formations, he still had to shut himself in his room for a full two months to be able to find a way.

The Sand Scorpion and the Meadow Viper were certainly tyrants among tyrants, not to mention anything else, at least within their huge territories they could find the crucial points even with closed eyes. Yang Chen had given them directions for their assignment within their respective domains, and in less than twenty days, under the forceful interference by the formidable magic of these two YuanYing stage demon beasts, the direction of the underground veins was forcibly altered.

Although it had only slanted for ten or so meters, it was fatal for the Spell Formation arranged by the Greatest Heaven Sect. Just finding the region where the Spell Formation had become disordered, would make them go crazy.

The two demon beasts were very intelligent, they had not only transformed the underground veins within their territory, but also many outside of their territory, covering the entire Desolate Valley. Following Yang Chen's plan, these underground veins would have been broken in regions over which fights to acquire them frequently happened between both demon beasts, so they had been broken due to the explosions. Some regions had been nearly exhausted by the medicine garden's bottle and there were

still more regions where, by his plan, some disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect, who did not know about the Spell Formation, would discover the benefits by some opportunity and afterwards everyone would swarm around it. In some regions they would lay Spell Formations or use magic weapons to sever the flow of Spirit Power in the region. In short, there were far too many patterns.

Following this was Yang Chen's task, to go to some region and by means of the original materials used to lay the Spell Formation, slightly modify it and thereby moving the original core of the spell, where the fifth earth True Qi was converging, ten miles away so that the fifth earth True Qi starts converging at another place.

Destruction was always easier than creation, especially in the case of such a spell. The less they wanted other people to know, the more traces they should hide.

Yang Chen basically did not care about anyone knowing: as long as he was able to refine a part of the fifth earth True Qi, combine it with the True Fifth Earth Secrets afterwards and cultivate it, the fifth earth True Qi would become a lot stronger, it would basically will not require him to cover it up. Yang Chen also knew that other people would not recognize it, so he had to leak the information of the fifth earth True Qi after refining it.

Then at that time, the Greatest Heaven Sect which had made efforts for several hundred years, would not easily give it up. But the Five Phases Sect also had earth attributed cultivators, so it would also not spare any effort for contesting over the treasure found in its domain and at that time, Yang Chen could enjoy a wonderful battle between two giants.

Certainly, this was the result of guiding the fifth earth True Qi for several hundred years, but they were careful enough not to reveal any traces of deploying such a spell. Yang Chen on the other hand did not care about them at all, he simply moved the Spell Formation using all of his strength as far as he could. In the brief period of one month, an extremely pure earth attributed Spirit Power began to erupt from various regions, which quickly gave rise to the attention of many people.

During this time, Yang Chen was safely sitting in a proper underground location and began to prepare for refining a trace of fifth earth True Qi he gathered already.

“People cannot be too greedy, wanting to eat everything alone can lead to bad stomach!”

Yang Chen, as if trying to encourage the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion, smiled and said:

“You two, protect me while I absorb this trace of fifth earth True Qi! As soon as I have refined it, it will be your turn!”

“What about other regions?”

The Meadow Viper, clearly unwilling to share the gains of their exhausting work with other people, transmitted this thought.

“Regardless of whoever refines it, if you like them, allow them to

keep it. And if you don't, then kill them and seize it!"

Yang Chen's words, plainly expressed his own thoughts.

# Chapter 110 - You Are Not A Demon

---

Very soon, a portion of exceptionally pure earth attributed Spirit Power appeared in the Desolate Valley; this pure fifth earth True Qi quickly gave rise to the attention of all cultivators training within the Desolate Valley. The most unfortunate thing was that this fifth earth True Qi could only be refined by using some special methods, which left a lot of cultivators disappointed, but this news had already begun to spread frantically.

During this time, a large number of earth attributed cultivators of the Five Phases Sect had rushed into the Desolate Valley, including many high level experts. After appraising this pure earth attributed Spirit Power, the conclusion they reached was that this was unexpectedly fifth earth True Qi.

This news spread wildly through the cultivation world. On the day the Five Phases Sect received this information, they immediately proclaimed that this fifth earth True Qi belonged to the Five Phases Sect, other sects were not to try to dip their fingers! Simultaneously the disciples of the Five Phases Sect began to seal off other locations.

Several years of their work, intended to collect and refine this fifth earth True Qi under the noses of the Five Phases Sect without letting them notice, had suddenly been wasted, how could the Greatest Heaven Sect be willing to accept this? Before the Five Phases Sect had become active, they had quickly occupied some regions where the fifth earth True Qi was releasing. But there were a large number of such regions, it was also impossible for them to forcefully seize all of them.

Fighting over territory with the people of the Five Phases Sect within their own domain? This was just a tight slap on the face of the Five Phases Sect, but at this point it didn't matter much anymore. Originally the Greatest Heaven sect had prepared to collect the fifth earth True Qi, after the preparations had been completely adequate, they had begun to collect the fifth earth True Qi forcefully at some places.

Although they didn't have any suitable cultivation method for refining it at this moment, it could first be collected in a proper vessel and be refined afterwards, when they had a suitable cultivation method. Because the Five Phases Sect had been unprepared for this incident, the Greatest Heaven Sect had already crazily collected fifth earth True Qi from at least four places. But by the time they were done, they discovered that the experts of the Five Phases Sect had already encircled the surroundings, there was a strong chance of a fight breaking out immediately.

The Five Phases Sect had directly dispatched six YuanYing stage experts, including two people who were occupying two sites and the additional four to surround the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect.

The other loose cultivators at the Desolate Valley had already realized that this matter, which included two great sects, was not something which they could participate in, all of them had cleverly hid themselves to watch from afar. There had been no major event in the cultivation world in the past hundred years, the confrontation between these two sects would absolutely be a unique and great show.

The upper echelons of the two big sects quickly began to negotiate: this fifth earth True Qi had been found in the territory of the Five Phases Sect and although they had not attached a lot of importance to this region before, currently, after this kind of treasure had appeared, they were naturally not willing to back down even an inch. Even the fifth earth True Qi which had been collected by the Greatest Heaven Sect had to be completely returned.

How could the Greatest Heaven Sect agree? Several hundred years of their work, of which they could have reaped the harvest after just a few more decades, but suddenly this kind of matter had occurred, how could they be willing to agree? Naturally they had to contend for it strongly!

But the situation was already like this and the Greatest Heaven Sect knew that they couldn't secretly monopolize the benefits, maybe they would only receive a small portion of these benefits, after all this was the territory of the Five Phases Sect and both of these sects were top notch Great Sects. If the fire rose, wouldn't the whole country rebel? Both sides did not want such a powerful enemy and could only sit down to negotiate.

Soon both sides reached a compromise, everyone mutually took a step back, but at the time of the compromise, a Spell Diagram suddenly appeared, due to which the harmonious atmosphere instantly vanished.

This was indeed a centuries old Spell Diagram, on top of which were the complete Spirit Power distribution of the Desolate Valley,

together with the complete map of a huge spell, arranged by using the natural terrain. This Spell Diagram had been obtained by some disciples of Five Phases Sect by some lucky coincidence, it was seemingly lost due to carelessness of some individual and by lucky coincidence it was obtained by them.

When the sect leader of the Five Phases received this Spell Diagram, he immediately convened the elders and within one day, they determined the validity of this Spell Diagram, and with the power of the Five Phases Sect, they quickly inspected it and immediately authenticated the existence of this huge spell. If it were not for that the terrain had been modified due to some recent lucky coincidences, this huge spell wouldn't have been revealed.

Arranging this kind of huge spell in their own backyard was already not giving any face to the Five Phases Sect, instead it was like drawing their blood silently. Once they thought about how their own things were being stolen for several hundred years like this, the chests of everyone in the Five Phases Sect, from top to bottom, were filled with rage.

It was actually very easy to guess which sect had deployed this huge spell. In these past several hundred years, which sect had entered with the largest number of disciples into the Desolate Valley? This sect was of course not some random sect, it was precisely the Greatest Heaven Sect, which had been fighting for the fifth earth True Qi with the Five Phases Sect recently.

Enough was enough. Both of them were big sects, normally they would assist one another in different matters, but to go as far as to steal the things from their own backyard and still deploy such a



large spell sneakily, if it were not for the recent events which revealed the fifth earth True Qi, then wouldn't the Five Phases Sect be unable to even obtain one strand of this fifth earth True Qi after few more decades?

The Five Phases Sect immediately called off the negotiations and all disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect in the Desolate Valley were detained; no one was allowed to leave. The situation was just on the verge of turning into a battle, both sides were at their final last control juncture, but nobody wanted to be the first one to throw a punch. Under this kind of circumstances, only a spark was needed to turn the situation into a full fledged war.

The upper echelons of the Greatest Heaven Sect were hard pressed, originally they were the only sect which had grasped the secret, but suddenly everyone knew about their secret and they had also offended the Five Phases Sect, which had always assisted them in the past. Originally their property, which didn't have any master, had suddenly turned into the property of someone else, stealing the property of an allied sect so brazenly, this was the greatest sin in the cultivation world.

This time, the reputation of the Greatest Heaven Sect had taken a large hit. Other sects even began to investigate if disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect visited frequently, if they had to be concerned about anything within their sect. Some sects had even issued a diplomatic letter to the Greatest Heaven Sect, asking if the Greatest Heaven Sect fancied something within their territory and if there was, then they had to state it clearly, so as to avoid ruining the relationship between both sects.

The only one to blame was the position of Desolate Valley, which was located at the edge of the Five Phases Sect, this was the reason of the dispute. If it was a region without any master, then nobody would have said anything. It was unfortunate that such a thing had happened, from heroes, they had transformed into villains.

Now there were only two paths in front of the sect leader of the Greatest Heaven Sect, one was to offer an apology and hand over the complete fifth earth True Qi to the Five Phases Sect, but this not only meant that their hard work of several years would go to waste, they would also have to admit their mistakes, so from then on their heads would always be lowered when meeting with the Five Phases Sect. Another path was not handing it over, regardless of anything. Both sides would go to war and suffer terribly, this path did not have any logic, and it also gave showed them being rude and unreasonable to all the other sects.

On one side were the benefits and on the other was their face; a truly difficult choice.

As for the one who had single handedly directed this show, Yang Chen, at that moment, he simply did not pay any attention to the matters happening around him. He was residing at the boundary shared between the territory of the Sand Scorpion and the Meadow Viper, cultivating the True Fifth Earth Secrets without the disturbance of anyone and refining the fifth earth True Qi.

This region was ideal, the territory over which two YuanYing stage demon beasts were fighting in for countless years, ordinary cultivators with a weaker cultivation would not even dare to approach there. In addition to that, two powerful sects were

confronting each other at this moment, so who could also manage to pay attention to this region?

Of course, the most important thing was the fifth earth True Qi escaping there was not as dense as other regions, under Yang Chen's refining, the people on the outside could not sense anything here, allowing him to cultivate without any disturbance.

The True Fifth Earth Secrets was a cultivation method within his Great Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, it was the most powerful fifth earth cultivation method among all the ones Yang Chen had heard about and the conditions required for cultivating it were harsh: the first requirement was this fifth earth True Qi, without having this fifth earth attributed origin Spirit Power, it could basically not be cultivated.

A postnatal full earth Spirit Root, the complete cultivation secrets as well as a sufficient amount of fifth earth True Qi, Yang Chen already satisfied all of these conditions. Yet he still had to face many difficulties when he started cultivating the True Fifth Earth secrets.

After all, in his previous life, Yang Chen was a fire attributed cultivator and did not have a thorough understanding about the cultivation methods of other attributes. He had spent almost an entire month only that he could cross over the required threshold.

Yang Chen refined and absorbed one thin trace of fifth earth True Qi and assimilated it with his body. This fifth earth True Qi was indeed worthy to be known as the fifth earth attributed origin Spirit Power: once it entered his meridians, it immediately began

to replace the entire fifth earth Spirit Power in his body. Like a flame, it was quickly assimilating the original fifth earth Spirit Power.

Speaking of assimilating, this trace of fifth earth True Qi had still not equally displaced the original fifth earth attributed Spirit Power. But this dilution was accompanied by some slight transformation in the fifth earth True Qi.

The fifth earth Spirit Power which Yang Chen had, was already refined with the Reverse Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets when he had reached the Foundation stage, but the sudden assimilation of fifth earth True Qi was as if soft topsoil had been tightly pressed with enormous strength and thus turned into a rock; within a moment, the originally abundant fifth earth Spirit Power had directly been compressed to one tenth of its original amount, not even able to fill the meridians.

But this was still not the purest fifth earth True Qi, after all only a few months had passed after modifying the Spell Formation, the fifth earth True Qi distributed in the Desolate Valley, when condensed did not only contain fifth earth True Qi, but also ordinary earth attributed Spirit Power. But even like this, it was enough to increase the quality of Yang Chen's fifth earth Spirit Power by several times.

The following step was simple, after crossing this threshold, Yang Chen only had to continue absorbing sufficient amounts of fifth earth Spirit Power; after there was a sufficient qualitative change, Yang Chen's fifth earth Spirit Power would completely transform to fifth earth True Qi.

There was no time for cultivation, while Yang Chen was fully concentrated on cultivating these True Fifth Earth secrets, he couldn't even feel the passage of time until the moment when a sufficient amount of fifth earth True Qi had been absorbed by him and rapid transformations began to occur.

Bang!

Yang Chen's consciousness entered his Spirit Sea once again. Huge transformations began to occur within the Spirit Sea. On both sides of the long, blood colored river, many layers of solid land covered the entire Spirit Sea.

The Spirit Sea had clearly divided into layers, with the blood colored river and the fifth earth as reference, it had been completely separated from top to bottom. The Geocentric Flame and the Real Sun Fire residing at the bottom and the top separately. The PengLai Divine Wood which initially connected the heaven and earth, had also finally taken roots at this moment. A thick and solid network of roots was extending into this fifth earth soil, thriving vigorously.

This time, although the Spirit Sea had not expanded again, it had become more firm. With this fifth earth soil acting as the foundation, regardless of whether it was the blood colored river or other things, all had a solid base. This was more than comparable with expanding the Spirit Sea. With this one step, Yang Chen could say that his Spirit Sea was at the point of transforming his JinDan into ying, perhaps with some opportunity or with the continued cultivation of the Three Purities Secrets, Yang Chen's Spiritual

Awareness was already at the YuanYing stage while he was only at the Foundation stage.

Finally among the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, one had changed into origin Spirit Power. When Yang Chen managed to become clear headed and examined himself, he immediately found that his strength had been increased by several times. The one hundred and eight threads of fifth earth Spirit Power had entirely switched to fifth earth True Qi, increasing his power by several times.

One relaxed punch in the underground space on Yang Chen's location, created a sound as if a huge bomb had gone off, the entire space was squeezed into a spherical shape because of the suddenly released fifth earth True Qi, with Yang Chen's fist as center, spreading everywhere. The size of the space had expanded by several times.

“Such ferociousness?”

After having been together for so many days, the Sand Scorpion and the Meadow Viper were basically clear about Yang Chen's strength and felt that compared to them he was really very weak. But sensing this punch, both demon beasts jumped excitedly at the same time. This had also increased their expectations towards the fifth earth True Qi.

Yang Chen had already told them that he didn't plan to use all of it alone, the two demon beasts were both earth attributed and could instinctively sense the fifth earth True Qi, but because of their previous discussions they had agreed to be Yang Chen's

protectors and were resisting the temptation of the fifth earth True Qi with great difficulty. But currently Yang Chen had already finished and both of the demon beasts had the opportunity to sense the ferociousness of the fifth earth True Qi.

The bodies of demons had a lot of diversity compared to humans. Yang Chen had to use the True Fifth Earth secrets to be able to absorb and refine the fifth earth True Qi, but it had directly burst into the bodies of the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion and began to frantically strengthen their bodies and transform the Spirit Power inside of their bodies. The two demon beasts only had to go into hibernation and wait for their bodies to be cleansed by the fifth earth True Qi, even Yang Chen envied their exceptionally advantageous conditions.

But this strengthened Yang Chen's resolve to pull these two demon beasts into the Pure Yang Palace even more. Two YuanYing stage beasts with their bodies conceiving fifth earth True Qi, they could certainly strengthen the Pure Yang Palace by several times.

Their absorption lasted for two months, only then did both demon beasts wake up from hibernation. After being cleansed by the fifth earth True Qi, their strength had been increased to another level, they even became able to use the Appearance Transformation Secrets to transform into human shape for some time, but it was not completely stable yet, and after a moment they were transformed into their original forms again.

“You are not a demon, nor are you a cyan ox!”

After waking from hibernation, the first thing Meadow Viper did

was to transform into human shape and ask Yang Chen, using shaky words:

“You are a human cultivator, aren’t you?”

When the Meadow Viper was asking this question, on the other side, the Sand Scorpion had also woken up and transformed into a middle aged man wearing gray coloured armour. He was looking towards Yang Chen with killing intent filling his eyes.



# Chapter 111 - To Find You

---

The Meadow Viper also transformed into a middle aged man, but he had a somewhat tender appearance, compared to the Sand Scorpion he seemed a little bit young. On his body was an armour made up of his scales, creating an impression of being much gentler than the Sand Scorpion.

The look in the eyes of the Meadow Viper was not very good and the Sand Scorpion was the same, the two demon beasts seemed to be dissatisfied over being cheated by Yang Chen. Previously they can't see, but the manner of absorbing the fifth earth true qi of Yang Chen was completely different from them, this made them realize.

“Yes, I am a human cultivator!”

In this situation, Yang Chen did not hide anything about himself

“I am Yang Chen, inner disciple of Pure Yang Palace! Here I once again greet you two seniors!”

“Why do you have the breath of my demon race?”

The Sand Scorpion which had transformed into a huge person asked while glaring at him like a tiger watching its prey. His entire outer carapace had transformed into an armour, covering his entire body, which completely fitted him, even his tail had disappeared, completely giving him the appearance of a human.

“Naturally I have some relation with a demon beast!”

Yang Chen smiled and gave a simple reply, he could not just reveal everything clearly.

The demon beasts had no doubts about this, the breath of a Cyan Ox on Yang Chen could not be faked and he even had a demon soul, but he was a human, this completely puzzled these two demon beasts. The reason why they were interrogating him like this, was also because they were still resentful towards him for hiding his identity before.

But although the demon beasts looked at him angrily, they hadn't raised their killing intent, as in front of Yang Chen, nobody could hide their killing intent. He did not need to be worried about the two demon beasts attacking him, if they had wanted to attack, they would have already done it while he was refining the fifth earth True Qi, why wait until now? Moreover, during their association in these days, everyone was extremely delighted, the two demon beasts had also seen many things they had never seen before and also obtained fifth earth True Qi, so they wouldn't just attack Yang Chen.

“You two seniors, surely you would like to take a look at this big world, why not follow the younger generation to leave?”

Yang Chen invited them, seizing this opportunity.

“My Pure Yang Palace will surely welcome the arrival of two

seniors!”

“A sect of human cultivators will receive us two demon beasts?”

The Meadow Viper wrinkled his brows, the Sand Scorpion was also completely confused. Although Yang Chen’s words were very tempting, the deep rooted notion that humans and demon beasts were enemies made both demon beasts unable to accept it immediately.

“I don’t dare to speak for any other sects, but my Pure Yang Palace can give it a try.”

Yang Chen was not being arrogant and conceited, but in reality most big sects’ sect mountains are guarded by such guardian spirit beasts. With the strength of the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion, the Pure Yang Palace would also not degrade under the protection of these guardian spirit beasts. As long as they would abide by the rules, and with Yang Chen’s efforts, they would certainly be allowed to possess a place at the Pure Yang Palace.

The Meadow Viper and Sand Scorpion looked at each other as if trying to come to an agreement. But still they hadn’t come to any agreement, they only looked at Yang Chen and gave an ambiguous reply:

“We will first go take a look, perhaps if we have the chance we may give a try!”

Yang Chen knew that this was not a matter where success could be achieved overnight, but there was no need to be anxious. Since they had promised to give it a try, when the time came there would be no lack of opportunities. The two demon beasts had already agreed to go, so he just had to take them with him.

Naturally, the two demon beasts could not just leave without attracting some attention, so under Yang Chen's suggestion, a huge pretend-war broke out between the two demon beasts, alarming all people in the Desolate Valley. Soon afterwards both demon beasts appeared to have suffered losses and disappeared without any trace, so after that event, people guessed that they must have found some fifth earth True Qi at the edge of their territories, which must have lead to the war, but these were all guesses, in reality both beasts had vanished from then on, without leaving any trace.

But before leaving, Yang Chen still had to take care of one more matter, the traitor of the sect, Chu Heng hadn't been executed until now. Since Yang Chen knew that he was still in the Desolate Valley, he would naturally not let him slip by.

Yang Chen had taken four months to refine the fifth earth True Qi, the two demon beasts had spent two more months, during this time Yang Chen was unaware of the situation going on outside. The two great sects were in a state of mutual hostility, the atmosphere in the Desolate Valley was bad, if they hastily rushed out, maybe it could lead to some unexpected disaster.

Luckily, apart from these two sects, there were also many other sects coming to gather information, numerous loose cultivators

also had intended to wait and watch, in order to see if they could have a part of the action, so Yang Chen's appearance was not that eye-catching. Most of all, Yang Chen had still come here under the pretense of killing Chu Heng, as long as he did not plan to obtain fifth earth True Qi, nobody would care about this Foundation stage youngster.

Finally the Five Phases Sect and Greatest Heaven Sect made their moves, three months ago, a few juniors of both sects had run into each other and while talking they happened to have some disagreement, and it goes without saying, both sides could not cope up with it and finally the fight burst out. The casualties of their talented juniors had lead to the detonation of the accumulated resentment on both sides. After several YuanYing experts entered the fight, the situation really got out of hand.

The sect leader of the Greatest Heaven Sect finally paid the price for his hesitation, originally he had wanted to delay for the time being, at least until they could collect some more fifth earth True Qi under the noses of the Five Phases Sect and hand over a part afterwards, which would satisfy everyone and end this matter.

Although his plan was very good, this plan couldn't keep up with the changes. Because of the disharmony, in the end it smashed his chickens before they ever hatched. Within the brief period of two months, a YuanYing expert of the Five Phases Sect was seriously injured and two were lightly wounded, on the Greatest Heaven Sect's side, a YuanYing stage expert had died and two had escaped with some slight injuries, as for the low level disciples, they were a complete mess. At this stage, losing a YuanYing stage ancestor made the Greatest Heaven Sect feel regret to death.

The affair of these two great sects was not only their affair at this moment, if the war expanded to wanton massacre, maybe the void would give a chance for the Devil Sects to enter and at that time people certainly would be in a terrible situation. Therefore, some great sects quickly combined together and tried to mediate between the two sects to reconcile.

Although the Greatest Heaven Sect was very overbearing, it still couldn't ignore the combined pressure of the other sects, moreover in this case it was clearly the fault of the Greatest Heaven Sect, by trying to steal stuff from the territory of the Five Phases Sect, so it was not exactly a glorious matter for them. At this stage, the Greatest Heaven Sect could only swallow the blood and could not speak of their grievances and accept the mediation of the other great sects.

As for the ownership over the fifth earth True Qi, which was a focal point of the dispute between both sects, it would belong to the Five Phases Sect and in order to compensate both sides for their losses, they still had to show consideration to all sides at the same time. This time the Greatest Heaven Sect estimated that, apart from bowing their head and admitting their mistake, they would also have to pay a hefty compensation. 'Trying to steal a chicken only to end up losing the rice', perfectly described the situation.

Yang Chen had appeared at the time of a ceasefire between both parties, although the hostility between the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Five Phases Sect had completely moderated, nobody easily dared to start a conflict. At least when Yang Chen had appeared at the small town again, those disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect didn't have the drive to ridicule Yang Chen anymore.

“Where should we go to find that guy you were talking about?”

The Sand Scorpion and Meadow Viper currently hadn't stabilized their transformation into humans, so they were still in their original shape, allowing Yang Chen to carry them as before.

Their method of hiding their presence was very exceptional, even when they were right next to others, people could not discover their strength, at most they thought that these were two small demon beasts captured by Yang Chen at the Desolate Valley.

“The Greatest Heaven Sect's minor disciples all knew that he was hiding in the Desolate Valley, most likely the people above them know where Chu Heng is concealed.”

Yang Chen smiled, proud of his evil schemes to get achieve his goal.

But both demon beast's eyes contained another sort of light, as they remembered the promise to take care of three requests by Yang Chen. Until now only the Meadow Viper had taken one request, so apparently this mission would also fall on their heads.

“Don't worry, as long as you can capture the man, the task of extracting a confession is mine! I believe that a JieDan stage expert has to know about it!”

Yang Chen still had that meaningful smile on his face, hardly

caring to conceal it. He had already calculated all of this long ago.

“But until we get the whereabouts of Chu Heng, this can be considered as another request!”

Two demon beasts who were at the YuanYing stage in the Desolate Valley, a region where the earth attribute was dominant, cooperating to capture a JieDan stage expert. This was as easy as taking candy from a toddler. According to Yang Chen’s plan, they secretly took away a single JieDan expert of the Greatest Heaven Sect without any real trouble. Who would expect that, at a time when the other great sects were mediating, someone would attack a JieDan expert of the Greatest Heaven Sect?

Creating a hidden base underground was not a problem for Yang Chen or the two YuanYing stage beasts. For convenience, Yang Chen had also laid down a minor Spell Formation to conceal their presence, so that other people would not discover him and interfere while he was extracting the confession.

The two demon beasts were carrying the unlucky JieDan expert into the hidden cave. Being seized by these two, that pitiful person lost all strength to resist and alarm spread across his face. How could he have expected that peacefully patrolling this region would lead to such a situation?

When he saw the mark of Pure Yang Palace on Yang Chen, this JieDan expert apparently realized something, but with his powers sealed, he was unable to do anything, even when facing a trifling Foundation stage cultivator like Yang Chen.



“You are Yang Chen of the Pure Yang Palace!”

There was only one disciple of the Pure Yang Palace at the Desolate Valley, the JieDan expert immediately discovered Yang Chen’s identity. After vigorously struggling for a few moments, he suddenly started abusing Yang Chen:

“So the Pure Yang Palace has been colluding with demon beasts from the start, you really are the dregs of a Devil Sect!”

“Whether or not we are the remnants of a Devil Sect, that has no relation to you!”

Yang Chen smiled and without caring about him he walked forward and placed his own head on the forehead of that person, who was unable to dodge.

“What are you trying to do? My Greatest Heaven Sect will not let you go!”

Even the soul of the JieDan expert trembled, Yang Chen had surprisingly colluded with demon beasts, maybe he had some kind of underhanded method. When he thought that such a trick would be used on him, even though he was already at the JieDan stage, he could not help but be afraid.

“Whether the Greatest Heaven Sect will let me get away or not, I don’t know”

Yang Chen's fingers were already pressed onto that person's BaiHui acupoint. He faintly smiled and continued:

“But you can trust me, I will absolutely not let the Greatest Heaven Sect get away!”

After speaking, he initiated his soul stunning technique.

This time, the soul stunning technique was also mixed with the full strength of the blood river within his Spirit Sea, and directly rushed into into the expert's Spirit Sea through the BaiHui acupoint.

Not wanting for Yang Chen to use this method again, a flash of alarm went through the eyes of that person. The expression on his face was as if he had seen the most frightening thing, his mouth only making sounds of agreement and soon his head went askew, both eyes opened widely and he became breathless.

“Hey, hey!”

Yang Chen was completely surprised by this, he hastily slapped the cheeks of this unlucky expert, but discovered that he had completely stopped breathing. Unexpectedly, he had been scared to death by the attack of the blood river.

The Meadow Viper and Sand Scorpion hadn't directly confronted Yang Chen's soul stunning technique, but seeing these

circumstances, the two demon beasts glanced at each other and a slight sense of danger was apparent within their eyes. Even if they could easily capture the JieDan expert, they could still not scare the JieDan expert to death just by using their Spiritual Awareness.

“Sorry, my behaviour wasn’t appropriate, it seems I will have to trouble you to make one more trip!”

Yang Chen spread his hands, acting completely innocent:

“How am I to know that this JieDan expert could not even endure just this small amount!”

The two demon beasts did not say anything and just turned around and walked away to look for another unlucky person. Seeing the disappearing figures of the two demon beasts, a smile made its way on Yang Chen’s face. Some things have to be instilled through underhanded manipulation, they will certainly not escape their fate of joining the Pure Yang Palace.

When the second unlucky person appeared in front of Yang Chen, this time, Yang Chen had learnt his lesson from last time and only used a little bit of the blood river, which made the JieDan stage expert lose his mind. Yang Chen asked and he replied, without hiding anything.

All along Chu Heng had been helped by the Greatest Heaven Sect, even when the disciples of Pure Yang Palace’s Law Enforcement Hall had come to look for him, the Greatest Heaven Sect had already assisted Chu Heng in getting rid of them.

Last time, the region where the four disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall were injured by Chu Heng, there was a small Spell Formation within the huge spell arranged by the Greatest Heaven Sect, which was used to assist a person occupying some special region in dealing with enemies. Chu Heng had only defeated the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall with the support of this, otherwise, how could he, who was water attributed, resist all four together within the Desolate Valley.

Currently Chu Heng was hiding within this Spell Formation, cultivating and thinking of a solution to this problem. Hiding for a lifetime was not a good solution, the Greatest Heaven Sect had apparently wanted to make some changes to his face and let him enter the Greatest Heaven Sect, although the result could work, the preparations were not complete, that's why it had been dragging on until now.

Naturally, the current time was not suitable, the Greatest Heaven Sect did not even have the time to settle its own affairs, how could they spare any efforts for him. Without the protection of the Greatest Heaven Sect, he did not dare to go anywhere and obediently hid within this Spell Formation, waiting for the situation outside to settle, so that he could enter the Greatest Heaven Sect.

“A good plan indeed, completely changing the face and entering another sect.”

Yang Chen sneered, his voice made even the Meadow Viper and Sand Scorpion to tremble. Completely changing him... Chu Heng

and Greatest Heaven Sect wanted to make the Pure Yang Palace lower their heads for all eternity, the maliciousness of their plan was plainly obvious from this.

“Daring to insult my master, I must take your head!”

While speaking, Yang Chen broke the neck of the JieDan expert who was under his control.

# Chapter 112 - The Traitor Receives Death

---

Chu Heng felt that his life had a lot of twists and turns: just because of an insignificant youngster named Yang Chen he had surprisingly turned into a traitor of the sect from a person who had boundless prospects and was the successor disciple of Luminous Moon Hall's master. He was really unable to accept this huge reversal.

Everything was because of that damned Yang Chen! If it were not for Yang Chen, how could Chu Heng have ended in the current situation? Once he recalled that repulsive face of Yang Chen, Chu Heng was unable to restrain himself from clenching his fists.

After he had turned into a traitor and the Law Enforcement Hall had come looking for him, Chu Heng did not want to be captured helplessly. If he was taken back, there was only one option for him: death. Because Yang Chen had helped Elder Wu refine the Heaven Seizing Pill, Yang Chen's importance vastly surpassed Chu Heng at the Pure Yang Palace.

Therefore his master Liang Shao Meng had secretly notified him that he had to properly hide himself and was not to be captured by the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall. Fortunately, his friends at the Greatest Heaven Sect had been loyal to him, they had agreed to cover for him and even offered him a hideout.

His Fellow Daoist Li had even guaranteed that, as soon as the medicine for changing his appearance was successfully refined, it would immediately be given to him to use and from then on, he could enter the Greatest Heaven Sect with a new identity and

finally sleep peacefully.

This had been Chu Heng's greatest desire and was also the reason why Chu Heng had supported him all along. Unfortunately, because of the matters these past few days, the Greatest Heaven Sect had become the target of public criticism, they were too busy to look after themselves, so Chu Heng's matter had been suspended for the time being.

Chu Heng also knew what was important and what wasn't, therefore he didn't dare to press the issue and could only wait. This time the Greatest Heaven Sect had clearly landed in a lot of trouble, they had even lost a YuanYing stage ancestor, so the conflict between Five Phases Sect and the Greatest Heaven Sect would surely not be resolved in a short time.

Apart from hiding within this Spell Formation, Chu Heng did not dare to go to any other place. Regardless of wherever he went, people of the Pure Yang Palace would be looking for him, because he had injured four disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall and also because of his way of delivering them back to the Pure Yang Palace. If anyone found him, he would surely die, there was no other possibility. The most unfortunate thing was, that he was a water attributed cultivator, so he couldn't use his abilities properly in this region.

There was a sound at the entrance of the Spell Formation, but Chu Heng didn't pay much attention to it, as he thought that it was surely a disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect and he concentrated on his cultivation again. Although earth attributed Spirit Power was denser in the Desolate Valley, under his diligent training, his

cultivation base was still slowly increasing and he had already reached the peak of the Foundation stage. As long as he had a suitable opportunity, maybe he would be able to congeal his dan.

This Spell Formation was the masterpiece of the Greatest Heaven Sect, although Chu Heng did not know the complete appearance of the Spell Formation, just this portion where he was possessed an extreme strength. He, a water attributed cultivator, had resisted and even defeated four enemies at the Desolate Valley. That was enough to illustrate how terrifying this Spell Formation was.

If you were not a person of the Greatest Heaven Sect and didn't understand this Spell Formation, then you could not enter this Spell Formation. Chu Heng had also learned this after being guided properly. The entering person was someone from their side, so Chu Heng did not stop his cultivation for the time being. Greeting him later would still not be too slow.

But a gaze that made him feel thistles and thorns in his back, made him completely nervous, it was as if a butcher was attentively watching his prey. This sensation made him feel completely ill at ease.

Chu Heng hastily stopped his training and stood up, turning around to greet that person, but he met with an extremely familiar face.

This face, even in his dreams, Chu Heng wanted to cut the owner of this face into a thousand pieces, to vent out his hatred. Thinking about Yang Chen always made him feel an urge to kill people.



But when Chu Heng looked at Yang Chen right now, he only felt a wave of chills spreading all over his body. This was a strategic location of the Greatest Heaven Sect, how did Yang Chen enter here?

According to common sense, Yang Chen, who had just recently reached the Foundation stage and did not have much contact with Spell Formations and other such things could certainly not enter there just by himself. The only possibility was that someone of the Greatest Heaven Sect had revealed the method for entering the Spell Formation and at the same time leaked Chu Heng's whereabouts.

This was the reason Chu Heng had felt chills all over his body, could it be that he had already been abandoned by the Greatest Heaven Sect? In order to settle this matter, maybe the Greatest Heaven Sect had made a compromise with some small sects who they did not put in their eyes previously. Pure Yang Palace's strength was not weak, could it be that he had been sacrificed to obtain the support of Pure Yang Palace?

Who could have sold his whereabouts? It had to be known that only JieDan stage experts or higher knew about Chu Heng's location, ordinary disciples did not know that a person called Chu Heng was here. Forcing a JieDan stage expert to cooperate with him? Yang Chen was just a Foundation stage expert, Chu Heng basically did not think that Yang Chen had this kind of strength.

A wave of cold sweat seeped out from his back, this time Chu Heng had realized the pain of betrayal. Most of all, the sensation of

being stabbed in the back by those he called allies directly broke his heart. At this moment, Chu Heng wanted to interrogate everyone in Li Qing Chen's family, without exception.

Could it be that it was his fate to be captured? Chu Heng took a step forward with great difficulty, his gaze sizing down everything around him, wanting to discover the people that had followed Yang Chen in. But no matter how much he looked, he could not find any people of the Greatest Heaven Sect.

But this didn't ease Chu Heng's mind, to the contrary: it increased his worries, since he could not sense any person, then wouldn't this mean that those who came were at least at the JieDan stage or above?

Fortunately, after Chu Heng probed around with his Spiritual Awareness once, he was surprised to find that the Spell Formation hadn't lost its effectiveness and was still working. Moreover his location was not that far from the core of the spell, so, as long as he could position himself above the spell, Chu Heng would not even have to mind a joint attack of many people who had the same cultivation as him.

"We have met after a very long time, Senior Disciple Chu, it seems as if you are very comfortable!"

Yang Chen stopped on one side but did not make any movement and basically did not pay any attention to Chu Heng slowly moving once and again, merely when his shyness became increasingly difficult to deal with, he opened his mouth:

“The Palace Master has issued a command. You have betrayed the sect by attacking a fellow disciple, so your cultivation base must be abolished and then you will be evicted from the sect!”

“If you want to cripple my cultivation base, then help yourself!”

Chu Heng was already one step above the core of the Spell Formation and had completely steeled his heart. The people of the Greatest Heaven Sect still hadn't appeared, giving Chu Heng a slight hope: maybe they did not intend to appear personally and were only allowing the people of the Pure Yang Palace to settle their own dispute? If this was true, then apparently the Greatest Heaven Sect was still slightly inclined towards Chu Heng.

“That was the punishment for you given by the Palace Master, not me!”

Yang Chen sneered:

“Since you wish to kill me, then I will also not be polite anymore, Chu Heng, receive your death!”

“Just by yourself?”

Chu Heng burst into loud laughter and, pointing his finger towards Yang Chen, he sneered:

“Do you really think this is just a personal matter?”

“Cut the crap!”

Yang Chen did not pay any attention to Chu Heng’s laughter. With the Immortal Executing Blade [\[1\]](#) in his hands, he rushed towards Chu Heng while speaking coldly:

“For every debt there is a debtor, Chu Heng, accept your fate!”

“Yang Chen, go to hell!”

Chu Heng shouted loudly and activated the Spell Formation. Suddenly, a gigantic Spirit Power wall, made of earth attributed Spirit Power, pushed towards Yang Chen.

“Insignificant tricks!”

Yang Chen coldly snorted, basically not paying any attention to the Spell Formation, holding the Immortal Executing Blade in a reverse grip, his eyes stared fixedly at Chu Heng’s figure, as he rushed towards him.

Chu Heng was relying on the Spirit Power wall released by the Spirit Formation with which he had previously defeated the four disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall, but in front of Yang Chen it seemed to be nonexistent. Under Chu Heng’s astonishment, that Spirit Power wall was divided in two in front of Yang Chen,

making a small gap, just large enough for Yang Chen to pass by.

How was this possible? Looking at this scene, Chu Heng's eyes were opened so widely that they almost came out. Apart from the serious fight with the four disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall, Chu Heng had still compared notes with disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect here, with a hundred tests and a hundred successes. How could this situation happen?

Yang Chen was just a few steps away from Chu Heng now, Chu Heng could not believe his eyes, but he immediately changed the alignment of his feet and substituted the formation secret in his hand and all of a sudden, an arrow of Spirit Power began to be released from beneath his feet. Following which, Chu Heng raised his finger towards Yang Chen and hundreds of Spirit Power arrows, made of earth attributed Spirit Power, flew towards Yang Chen.

But what made Chu Heng even more terrified was that these Spirit Power arrows, numbered more than a hundred, all seemed to have been chopped in two as Yang Chen slashed his blade, as soon as they had started flying towards him. Since the time when Chu Heng had comprehended this Spell Formation, this kind of situation had never happened before.

Although the Spell Formation had been unable to harm Yang Chen, Chu Heng was not even a little nervous, this Spell Formation still had one more ability, that was, when he was standing at the core of the spell, it could offer Chu Heng an unending flow of Spirit Power to support him. Although it required the earth attributed Spirit Power to be changed into water attributed Spirit Power, in

this huge Desolate Valley, even if more than half was lost, it was still enough for Chu Feng to use without drying up.

“A few years ago, if it was not that I had been lenient, would you still have lived until now?”

Chu Heng roared and showed a trace of regret at the same time, if he had known earlier, then he would have already taken care of Yang Chen at the Ye Xiu Manor. Why should he have to face this kind of trouble? But complaining now was too late, Chu Heng could only hope that Yang Chen’s cultivation base was not too high and he could kill him by relying on the strength of the peak Foundation stage.

“Allow me to examine you, who has assisted Elder Wu in refining a pill. How much progress have you made?”

Following Chu Heng’s words, his blue colored sword soared and rushed towards Yang Chen. Yang Chen had been attentively watching Chu Heng and without looking anywhere else, he gripped the Immortal Executing Blade tightly in his hands, raised it and slashed it fiercely.

Ding!

A clear sound echoed and Yang Chen’s blade slashed at Chu Heng’s flying sword. At the same time as the flying swords struck each other, Chu Heng suddenly sensed a shiver run through his heart, surprisingly he had suffered some pain. In great shock, he hastily tried to recall his flying sword. Once the flying sword

returned to him, Chu Heng immediately discovered that his flying sword, with which he had overcome all difficulties, surprisingly had many small nicks.

Unexpectedly the flying sword had been ruined by Yang Chen in one slash. Chu Heng felt both regret and dread at the same time. The Pure Yang Palace had gone as far as to be willing to part with a lot of their hard earned savings, otherwise how could they have allocated such a high grade flying sword to Yang Chen, who was just a Foundation stage disciple?

After just a few attacks like this, Yang Chen had advanced forward and was not too far from Chu Heng. He rushed towards Chu Heng while coldly smiling:

“I thought you would be much more difficult to deal with, but you had relied on this Spell Formation to defeat those four fellow disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall all along, no wonder! Be careful of the blade!”

The raised the Immortal Executing Blade and chopped down towards the nearby Chu Heng.

Dang!

A loud sound echoed once again and Chu Heng had once more wielded his flying sword to to parry Yang Chen's slash. But parrying was parrying, his fated flying sword, which had been linked with Chu Heng's thoughts after passing through innumerable refinings, had surprisingly broken into two under

Yang Chen's slash.

“Ahhhhh!”

Chu Heng issued a blood curdling sound as blood started spraying from his mouth. His fated flying sword had been destroyed, so Chu Heng felt an incomparable pain within his mind, which took away his ability to remain standing. How could he have expected that a single slash of Yang Chen could actually be this fierce and would surprisingly break his flying sword instantly?

Despair shrouded Chu Heng. How could he have imagined that in front of Yang Chen, he wouldn't even be able to resist one slash. But Chu Heng could absolutely not resign himself to death, he manipulated the Spirit Power in his body and launched a fist towards Yang Chen.

“Be assured, I will make you welcome death!”

In an instant Yang Chen shifted the Immortal Executing Blade to his left hand and also launched a punch towards Chu Heng.

Yang Chen himself had renounced his advantageous position, he surprisingly had launched a punch towards him. Chu Heng sneered in his heart, the Spirit Power of the Spell Formation, together with his own Spirit Power, charged towards Yang Chen with a loud rumble.

Bang!



The fists of these two people collided at the same place and the nasty grin on Chu Heng's face still hadn't dispersed as an enormous Spirit Power without equal rushed towards Chu Heng's fist. This proved that Chu Heng's Spirit Power was very weak in front of Yang Chen, Chu Heng's Spirit Power had become completely disordered.

Yang Chen was not moved from his original position, but Chu Heng had been thrown backwards by at least ten meters. The fist he used in this attack had broken into pieces and that powerful strength still followed along Chu Heng's arm, rushing towards his shoulder. His arm also issued a wave of fracturing sounds and the acute pain informed Chu Heng that his arm had been completely wasted.

Chu Heng simply couldn't believe that he had encountered all of this. Yang Chen was clearly at the initial Foundation stage, how could one punch be so destructive? But unfortunately, the severe pain in his arm reminded him that it was not a dream. He, a peak Foundation stage disciple, had his arm completely destroyed by Yang Chen, a youngster at the initial Foundation stage.

What alarmed Chu Heng even more was that he suddenly realized that he could not put up even the slightest amount of resistance against Yang Chen. Looking at Yang Chen standing in front of him, brandishing his Immortal Executing Blade, Chu Heng fell down onto the ground while shouting:

“You cannot kill me, this place belongs to the Greatest Heaven Sect! If you kill me, the Greatest Heaven Sect will surely not let you

get away with it and dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!”

“You think that the Greatest Heaven Sect still has time to look after you at this time?”

Yang Chen revealed a trace of a disdainful smile on his face, looking at Chu Heng, who had fallen to the ground and was even unable to move, mercilessly.

“Who was the one who betrayed me!”

Chu Heng didn’t know who had betrayed his trust, so after struggling for a long time, he said:

“Allow me to die peacefully!”

“No one betrayed you!”

Yang Chen said while brandishing his Executioner’s Blade with one hand. With the other hand he took out two qiankun pouches with the mark of the Greatest Heaven Sect on them:

“They just started their journey one step faster than you! Chu Heng, be on your way!”

Suddenly seeing the qiankun pouches of two JieDan experts he had met before, Chu Heng was astonished, but Yang Chen did not

give him any more time. Raising his arm, he slashed down.

Chu Heng only felt that he was suddenly flying very high and the world seemed to become more and more distant, more and more dark.

---

[\[1\]](#) The Sword Box transformed into an executioners blade

# Chapter 113 - Great Trouble For The Greatest Heaven Sect

---

A Spell Formation deployed by the Greatest Heaven Sect had been discovered by some random chance at this place, when a YuanYing stage senior together with some guests of another sect which had mediated in the war, were passing through there and were attacked by the Spell Formation.

An attack on the guests of the Five Phases Sect was a direct provocation to the authority of the Five Phases Sect. The YuanYing stage ancestor had directly attacked and broke down the Spell Formation in his bottomless fury, even getting rid of a JieDan expert of the Greatest Heaven Sect. Simultaneously they seemed to have also killed a Foundation stage junior, who was found decapitated and was not a disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect.

All of the dead bodies were discovered at the scene and the Spell Formation was in a complete mess. Nobody knew why the two JieDan experts had attacked this YuanYing stage ancestor of the Five Phases Sect at this time, the body of that Foundation stage cultivator was also a riddle, but one thing was absolutely clear: the Greatest Heaven Sect was in great trouble this time.

This was not just trouble but very annoying trouble. All this time the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Five Phases Sect had practiced a lot of self control. After some big sects had mediated, everyone had intended to talk some sweet words and shake hands, and the conditions had all been discussed properly, but this one attack had wasted all of their previous efforts.

This was certainly a case of trying to dodge responsibility by saying that there was no proof of anything, but it was not enough. The people who were attacked belonged to various sects, including two sects which were allies of the Greatest Heaven Sect. The attack being launched from the ground was conclusive evidence, there was definitely no possibility of not taking responsibility.

On top of the already leaked Spell Diagram of the Greatest Heaven Sect, there was also a natural attack Spell Formation. Although everyone knew about the spell diagram, they were not clear about the internal controls to it. Apart from the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect, others were not familiar with controlling this Spell Formation in the least, so pushing the responsibility to other people was not a possibility. Here the suspicion was only on three people, two JieDan stage experts of the Greatest Heaven Sect and one unknown Foundation stage junior of some other sect. In any case, that junior was not a disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect. The question was why he was with the Greatest Heaven Sect.

The two great sects had once again resumed a state of mutual hostility and anything was possible at the moment. This time, regardless of whether it was those mediating sects, or the disciples of the two great sects, even disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect felt hatred towards these two JieDan stage disciples who had attacked first without permission.

For the Five Phases Sect, this was an unprecedented shame. The Greatest Heaven Sect had not only deployed a spell to steal the Fifth Earth True Qi from under their noses, but also after they were discovered they had also attacked a YuanYing stage senior, during the time the other sects were mediating the situation. This had already crossed the limits of provocation, it was like whipping

their face with a bloody palm.

The slap was not only on the face of the Five Phases Sect, but also on the face of those big sects who were trying to reconcile them. The Greatest Heaven Sect absolutely did not care about the honor of anyone. These big sects were previously scared that, due to the strife between these two sects, a void would be created and Devil Sects could enter, but who could have thought that the Greatest Heaven Sect which was usually known as the most upright sect, could surprisingly cause this kind of matter.

This action had pushed those big, mediating sects towards the side of the Five Phases Sects, even those two allied sects of the Greatest Heaven Sect also supported the Five Phases Sect because of the attack on their own disciples. When the experts of the other few sects received this news, they also rushed towards the Desolate Valley at lightning speed. The general atmosphere was towards uprooting the power of the Greatest Heaven Sect from the Desolate Valley, even the territory under the Greatest Heaven Sect's influence was no longer calm.

How could the person in charge of the Greatest Heaven Sect who was responsible for the matters of Desolate Valley dare to neglect it? He hastily ran towards the scene. Without saying anything more, he first apologized in order to pacify everyone, and then he asked about the details of the matter. The Sect Master of the Greatest Heaven Sect also rushed there as soon as he received the news, without caring much about the face of a Sect Master. If this matter was not handled carefully, then, although it wouldn't go as far as the extermination of the Greatest Heaven Sect, it would certainly turn more than half of the cultivators in the world into their enemies.

That one Foundation stage junior with an unknown identity was also recognized by some people, surprisingly this was the sect traitor, Chu Heng, who the Pure Yang Palace had been looking for all along. His dead body had already been dismembered into a few parts by the angry YuanYing stage ancestor, but his face was fortunately still clearly recognizable. A lot of people in the Greatest Heaven Sect knew Chu Heng, at this moment, who would hide the identity of that traitor of the Pure Yang Palace, Chu Heng?

If it was just Chu Heng's identity then it was still not much, but this was the region where Chu Heng had defeated four disciples of the Pure Yang Palace's Law Enforcement Hall. But when they thought about the Spell Formation which had previously attacked the YuanYing stage ancestor, everyone immediately realized that Chu Heng had the assistance of this Spell Formation, only then could he, a water attributed cultivator, have defeated the four Law Enforcement disciples of the Pure Yang Palace.

Everything was revealed clearly, it was not that the Law Enforcement Hall's disciples were not powerful enough, it was because the traitor had gotten external help, moreover the assistance of one of the most powerful sects. Against this kind of enemy, losing was not shameful, but the Greatest Heaven Sect on the contrary had shielded Chu Heng, which made the people hold them in contempt from the bottom of their hearts.

But the revelation of Chu Heng's identity gave the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect a way out of this embarrassing situation. The attacker on the Five Phases Sect and the few mediators had immediately turned into Chu Heng. Although shielding a traitor of Pure Yang Palace was an extremely shameful matter, and they

would even have to bow their heads to Pure Yang Palace again, when comparing offending a second tier sect such as the Pure Yang Palace, to offending the Five Phases Sect and other big sects, the Sect Master of the Greatest Heaven Sect clearly knew which was more important.

After working out this huge excuse, everyone felt that they had been given face. Because Chu Heng was good friends with a disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect, the Greatest Heaven Sect had offered him shelter when the Pure Yang Palace was hunting him, but they also hadn't anticipated that this traitor Chu Heng had such greed, that he was willing to go so far as to cheat that good friend disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect, and after gaining his trust and grasping the method of controlling the Spell Formation, he used it to defeat the Law Enforcement Hall's disciples and even went as far as to attack the YuanYing stage senior of the Five Phases Sect by manipulating this Spell Formation.

They were even speaking about the two JieDan experts at the scene, how couldn't they stop a minor Foundation stage junior? There was not much of an explanation, other than them also being cheated by Chu Heng. These JieDan stage experts must have been careless and so on, giving a variety of reasons for this calamity. Moreover, these two JieDan stage expert had already paid the price with their lives.

Apparently this was the most satisfactory explanation for all sides and at the same time was also the explanation for which they would have pay the smallest price. Although this explanation still had many loopholes, it allowed everyone to get out of an embarrassing situation while keeping their face.



Under the tacit approval from all big sects, the Greatest Heaven Sect had no option but to submit all of their harvests from the Desolate Valley this time and simultaneously compensate the damages of all parties. This explanation was also recognized as the official explanation by everyone.

From the beginning of the attack, nobody noticed that a very small Meadow Viper and a small Sand Scorpion were roaming around in that region. They both only appeared as ordinary animals who had hastily buried themselves in the sand after the attack happened and covered their presence. They slowly departed from the scene and soon afterwards they appeared in another region, where nobody could sense them.

That region was at the edge of the Desolate Valley, several hundred miles away from the scene. Yang Chen was waiting there to rendezvous with those two demon beasts. At this distance, nobody could implicate that Yang Chen had any relation with what happened on that scene.

“The affair is settled?”

Sitting upright, Yang Chen didn’t even turn his head, but mysteriously said this.

“I am extremely curious, how are you able to discover us?”

The Meadow Viper’s voice appeared from behind Yang Chen and soon afterwards both demon beasts appeared behind him.

If the distance was a little farther, then Yang Chen also didn't have any way to sense the Meadow Viper's breath. He clearly understood this point from his first contact with the Meadow Viper. But as long as the Meadow Viper entered within a region of two meters, then no matter how deeply the Meadow Viper had concealed its breath, Yang Chen was capable of discovering it, this had puzzled the Meadow Viper all along.

“It is nothing strange, if you approach me a little closer, you will be discovered.”

Yang Chen did not explain this very clearly. Regardless of whether it was the Meadow Viper, the Sand Scorpion or any other person, he would not reveal all of his secrets.

Everything that had happened was according to Yang Chen's expectations. The Greatest Heaven Sect's hard work of all these years had turned into an arduous and thankless task and they had no other option than swallowing it down, apart from compensating the Five Phases Sect and the other sects to maintain their relations and give them face, the most important thing was precisely that they would have to apologize to the Pure Yang Palace again.

If the traitor Chu Heng had been shielded by a sect hostile to the Pure Yang Palace, then there would have been no problems, since they were already enemies, it would have actually united the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace. But the Greatest Heaven Sect would not do that because, to everyone on the outside, the Greatest Heaven Sect was the Mt. Tai in terms of being upright, and moreover the Pure Yang Palace was also a sect famous for being

upright, so the two sects shouldn't be hostile and instead had to have friendly relations.

Since it was like this, shielding the traitor of Pure Yang Palace and even the attack against the disciples of Pure Yang Palace's Law Enforcement Hall was precisely brazenly injuring fellow cultivators. Perhaps some disciples would think about killing others, but they would never voice those thoughts in public. The problem with the Greatest Heaven Sect was that, if they did not admit that their own sect's disciple had given asylum to Chu Heng, it would mean they had admitted to attacking the Five Phases Sect.

Among both the evils, the Greatest Heaven Sect could only clench their teeth and admit to lesser evil. Since they had admitted their mistakes and moreover had acknowledged this in front of the Five Phases Sect and the other mediating sects, they had no choice other than to compensate them.

The Greatest Heaven Sect was the example of trying to gain an advantage only to come off worst at that moment. They had tried to decrease their losses by using excuses, but in reality, the compensation that they had to pay was still huge.

Leaving aside the compensation they had to pay to the Five Phases Sect and the Pure Yang Palace, even their hard work of several hundred years had gone to waste and all of the fifth earth True Qi had been handed over to the Five Phases Sect. Adding onto that the death of a YuanYing stage senior and two YuanYing stage cultivators being severely injured, this was not just a damage to their face. After all of this, even the Sect Master of the Greatest Heaven Sect who was at the Da Cheng stage could not help but spit

out blood.

But if they were honest, all of this was their own fault. Who pulled Chu Heng in? Who had wanted to use Chu Heng to defame the Pure Yang Palace? This current matter, even if it was blamed on Chu Heng entirely, these people would still have to endure the blame of disciples who didn't know the whole story. This was a big mess.

When Yang Chen left the Desolate Valley, everything had been sorted out: The traitor, Chu Heng, had attacked the people of the Five Phases Sect and other big sects, so the Greatest Heaven Sect had to pay compensation to the Five Phases Sect for stealing the fifth earth True Qi and not handling Chu Heng's matter properly. This compensation would be delivered to their sects in a few days, which also included Yang Chen's home, the Pure Yang Palace.

“The fifth earth True Qi that you wanted to obtain has already been taken by those people, don't you feel regret?”

As they were departing the Desolate Valley, the Sand Scorpion on Yang Chen's shoulder asked him this question. Currently the Sand Scorpion and the Meadow Viper had learnt to say a few words, so they hadn't transmitted their thoughts and had asked him directly.

“Regret?”

Yang Chen shook his head:

“What use is regret? This is not the only place in the world where fifth earth True Qi exists. I will seize what I deserve, what about regret? If I regret something, it is that the small amount that I had was also absorbed by you!”

The Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion had also absorbed fifth earth True Qi, but they were different: they were demon beasts, even without using any cultivation method they were able to directly absorb this fifth earth True Qi.

“They are not like the both of you and neither do they have the True Fifth Earth Secrets. Even if they have the fifth earth True Qi, refining it would require at least several hundred years of time, so they will just be wasting it slowly!”

As long as the Greatest Heaven Sect did not obtain it and the Five Phases Sect got the fifth earth True Qi, Yang Chen did not care much. In any case, following this, he had to try to slowly drive a wedge in the relationship of the Greatest Heaven Sect and the other big sects, as well as increase the Greatest Heaven Sect’s number of enemies. This would indeed assist him.

Yang Chen’s generosity allowed the Sand Scorpion and Meadow Viper to consider many things. On the road, when Yang Chen was rushing back to the Pure Yang Palace, the Meadow Viper suddenly asked Yang Chen:

“Yang Chen, if we enter your Pure Yang Palace, what kind of conditions will we have there? What kind of benefits can we gain?”

“There are a lot of benefits, naturally!”

Yang Chen smiled and explained while hastening his journey:

“The most obvious one is that, from when you enter my Pure Yang Palace, you will have a backer. If anyone wants to attack you, then they must consider the consequences of infuriating my Pure Yang Palace. If you maintain your identity of a demon beast and go out, then it should be very likely that a group of masters would hunt you. Loose cultivators are not all very good, other demon beasts even less so.”

“Then what sort of conditions do I have to follow?”

The Meadow Viper wanted to know this clearly and although the Sand Scorpion did not say anything, it was also calmly listening.

“Conditions? Basically, for YuanYing stage experts like you, there won’t be any conditions, only one thing, you will have to comply by the rules of the sect, that’s all.”

Yang Chen smiled.

“These are precisely that you cannot randomly kill people, you cannot do this, you cannot do that, isn’t that right?”

Although the Meadow Viper had a good temper, this time anxiousness was clear in its voice.

“Kill people?”

The smile on Yang Chen’s face widened even more:

“Do you think I kill a small number of people? The main point is that whoever you kill, you must not allow them to get any information that can be used against you. Most of all, you both, you are demon beasts, so you must be even more careful and by all means must not allow anyone to regard you as a target to get rid of, like a devil and to defend traditional values.”

# Chapter 114 - The Palace Master's And Great Master's Shock

---

Not to mention other places, Yang Chen had killed at least seven to eight people just at the Desolate Valley: a few at the place of the earth attributed beast, another two JieDan stage experts, one was Chu Heng, all of this was not unknown to the demon beasts.

Hearing Yang Chen's reply and thinking about Yang Chen's actions, the two demon beasts apparently realized everything and didn't nag much about the question of killing people. Regarding the matter of killing people, Yang Chen had certainly not said any false words.

But Yang Chen's last words made them think about this carefully. As demon beasts who had lived for a long time at the Desolate Valley, they knew better than most people about how demon beasts were looked at by human cultivators. If it was not that they were determined as targets, so that the disciples could temper themselves and given a fixed territory, in all likelihood, they would have been killed already.

So after entering a sect, they completely wouldn't have to worry about those things anymore. Yang Chen had clearly explained this point. The two demon beasts also began to consider entering the sect because of this explanation.

Naturally, the recent occurrences in the Desolate Valley had also left a profound impression on them. Due to the the conflict between the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Five Phases Sect, the whole advantage of being in a sect was revealed to them, regardless



of whatever the people in the front had done, the people in the rear would support them without saying anything, this kind of thing was never seen among demon beasts.

Demon beasts liked to cultivate alone, therefore they became the target of cultivators very easily. Only in those regions where people generally didn't appear, they had a chance to become formidable. This was also the major sorrow of demon beasts: in the world of demon beasts, the notion of cooperation appeared very rarely. Even the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion, had strived for territory all along. If they had not met Yang Chen, the two demon beasts basically wouldn't have such friendly relations.

“Apparently the strength of the Pure Yang Palace can't compare to sects like the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Five Phases Sect?”

The Sand Scorpion suddenly said:

“Should we not look for a stronger sect to rely on?”

“Against my expectations you are very clever!”

Yang Chen was not very polite with the demon beasts, although the two demon beasts were higher than Yang Chen by a lot, whether in terms of age or cultivation, Yang Chen had never had an attitude of being very respectful and he absolutely did what he wanted.

Only after praising him, did Yang Chen shake his head and say:

“You can go take a look and see if the Five Phases Sect or the Greatest Heaven Sect will accept you!”

Even without being told by Yang Chen, the two demon beasts could clearly see the answer from the treatment they have received from cultivators at the Desolate Valley.

“Then how are you so sure that the Pure Yang Palace will accept us?”

The Meadow Viper immediately asked, completely coherent.

“I also cannot guarantee.”

Yang Chen hadn’t told them any lies regarding this question, but he immediately followed up with an explanation:

“But you have met me, this should be more than simple coincidence, don’t you think so? You can always choose to go to try and enter another sect, you will immediately be attacked by powerful elders who want to get rid of you!”

“Does the Pure Yang Palace have cultivation methods for the demon race?”

The Meadow Viper asked again. He was very envious towards human cultivators for having all sorts of cultivation methods, and

these demon beasts could only bitterly watch as their cultivation was mostly based on instinct, which was time consuming and required them to do a lot of hard work. Perhaps, this was another important reason why the Meadow Viper wanted to enter a sect.

“For the time being, no!”

Yang Chen directly shook his head:

“But as far as I know, some things like Spell Formations and Refining tools can be used by everyone to gain enlightenment, you can also try concocting pills. The Appearance Transforming Techniques that demon beasts possess are also more powerful compared to humans by many times. If you enter and adding onto that the things that I know, maybe you can create an unprecedented cultivation method for demon beasts.

The Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion were both emotionally moved, they did not doubt Yang Chen’s words even a little. After all, in so many years, the only one who had connected with them was Yang Chen and he had not captured them and forcefully broke their will after connecting to them using some inferior beast controlling secrets, this already clearly explained that Yang Chen had good things on him.

“Reputation or other things, we don’t really care.”

The Meadow Viper suddenly cut in between to explain his aim:

“I am only interested in those refining tools and other things that you have mentioned, I just want to test whether I have gained luck by following you!”

The Sand Scorpion didn't say anything, but also didn't leave. This already explained everything clearly. All of this had happened two days after they had left the Desolate Valley and on the flying sword. After spending a short time of just ten days, they had returned to the Pure Yang Palace.

Around this time, news of the Desolate Valley had already reached the Pure Yang Palace, because of Chu Heng's execution. No matter who had done it, the traitor had finally been executed. Moreover, the Greatest Heaven Sect had already admitted their mistake and the entire Pure Yang Palace felt as if they had vented their anger and again would not have to continue to feel humiliation when they went out.

When Yang Chen returned to the the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, he just happened to come at a time when his master Gao Yue had come out of seclusion. Seeing Yang Chen, Gao Yue was joyous. Because of Yang Chen's questions disguised as "seeking guidance", Gao Yue had once again gained an enlightenment regarding her cultivation, and was in seclusion since that day, still trying to improve until this date.

But Yang Chen was not very happy at this kind of progress. Gao Yue had a postnatal water attributed full Spirit Root, but Yang Chen had not gotten the opportunity or the justification to convince her of his words. She had a very high level in fire attributed cultivation, that implied that in the future, when she

would cultivate a water attributed cultivation method, she would be required to overcome even more difficult problems.

But as it turned out, Yang Chen could only look helplessly at Gao Yue increasing her cultivation, even more so because of his influence. This kind of cognitive dissonance made Yang Chen not know what to do. Perhaps he could only allow her to increase her cultivation even higher first, this would at least give her some more security.

“How did things go at the Desolate Valley? I heard that place was very lively!”

When he met Gao Yue, after performing his salutations, Gao Yue asked Yang Chen about the circumstances at the Desolate Valley. Because the matter regarding Chu Heng had been settled, Gao Yue was also happy for Yang Chen and also for the Pure Yang Palace. Only for some reason, she had heard it was not settled by Yang Chen himself, so she felt some slight regret. This regret she had concealed very deeply, but it was seen through by Yang Chen in a glance.

“Master!”

Yang Chen did not want to repeat this affair several times, therefore he made a request to Gao Yue:

“Can you invite the Palace Master and the Great Master? This disciple will recount all the matters of the Desolate Valley!”

“Is this necessary?”

Gao Yue was very confused, why did Yang Chen want to do this with such fanfare, even wanting to invite the Palace Master, but then she remembered when Yang Chen had told her about the matter of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, so according to her instinct, something big must have happened this time again.

“You must only notify the Palace Master and the Great Master, other people must not be allowed to know anything!”

Yang Chen did not want to warn Gao Yue again and again.

Seeing Yang Chen so serious about this matter, Gao Yue didn't say anything about this again and immediately went to invite Wang Yong and the Palace Master, according to Yang Chen's request.

“What is this?”

Looking at Yang Chen place some items on the table, the Palace Master and Wang Yong asked, wrinkling their brows, Gao Yue was also confused when looking at the three flying swords. They suspiciously looked at Yang Chen.

“I'm making a report to Palace Master and Great Master!”

Yang Chen replied very respectfully:

“This is the flying sword of the sects traitor: Chu Heng; and these are the flying swords of the two JieDan experts who had been killed by the senior of the Five Phases Sect on the scene, as well as some marked things and their qiankun pouches!”

Those marked things were a few jade slips Yang Chen had acquired from the unlucky JieDan experts, some of them had the cultivation method of the Greatest Heaven Sect, still some were about what they had learned by themselves during cultivation.

Once they heard this reply, both the Palace Master and Wang Yong were gobsmacked and almost stood up at the same time. Without thinking much, Wang Yong directly put up some restrictions outside the room, disconnecting everything that was being spoken in this room from the outside world, after which he carefully confirmed that there was no place in the room which could leak anything, only then did he sit down again.

The Palace Master made a gesture with his hand and the three flying swords flew directly into his hand and he began to inspect them. After inspecting them for a long time, he gave them to Wang Yong and returned to his own seat, but endless astonishment was flashing through his eyes. Those few jade slips were inspected by him and he immediately confirmed whether they were genuine or fake.

“This is a technique of the Greatest Heaven Sect and this sword really has the mark of Liang Shao Meng’s technique.”

Wang Yong also nodded after inspecting the flying sword. After looking at the jade slips Yang Chen had given them, there was no more room for doubt.

Gao Yue was standing on one side with her mouth hanging open, not daring to believe that this was true. In reality, other than Gao Yue, even the Palace Master and Wang Yong were shaken, but they hadn't expressed that as clearly as Gao Yue.

The news about the Desolate Valley had already reached Pure Yang Palace, the YuanYing stage ancestor of the Five Phases Sect had already taken care of Chu Heng and two JieDan stage experts from the Greatest Heaven Sect, this matter was not hidden, but the question was, why did Yang Chen have all these things?

“What’s going on here?”

The Palace Master asked while tapping his finger on the armrest of the chair. Three pairs of eyes concentrated on Yang Chen waiting for him to answer.

While standing in front of these three, Yang Chen began to report about the matters of the Desolate Valley. The part where he discovered the Spell Diagram, was falsified however, to make it seem as if it had been found by the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion. The events after discovering the Spell Diagram were very rational and clearly structured, after modifying the Spell Diagram and with the assistance of the two YuanYing stage demon beasts, he got rid of the JieDan experts, killed Chu Heng and shifted all of the blame on the Greatest Heaven Sect. The three people hearing this were all extremely shocked.



Who could have thought that Yang Chen, a Foundation stage disciple, had been so brazen, easily manipulating two big sects and messing with them? Who could have thought, that Yang Chen could accomplish what more than a hundred people of the Law Enforcement Hall's disciple had been unable to accomplish?

“This! This! This!”

After hearing that his capable grand disciple was so capable, Wang Yong was so shocked that he could not even say anything other than these three words.

Gao Yue only now understood why he had only called for the Palace Master and Wang Yong. This kind of matter, if disclosed to other people, for instance someone like Liang Shao Meng, who had good relations with the Greatest Heaven Sect, he would certainly disclose this information to the Greatest Heaven Sect. Who knew whether he had something to do with Chu Heng getting the information that the disciples of Law Enforcement Hall are coming for him or not?

But Yang Chen's experience was really extremely mysterious and extremely adventurous. If it were not for the things on the table as proof, who would dare to believe that whatever he said was actually true?

“Good!”

The Palace Master looked at Yang Chen, but with another

attitude. This kind of brave and scheming and also being able to find the solution at the most crucial point; such a disciple was worthy of receiving proper praise.

This act of Yang Chen's had not only given Chu Heng the punishment he deserved, but it also made the Greatest Heaven Sect, which had shielded Chu Heng, pay a hefty price and at the same time taken the revenge for the Law Enforcement Hall's disciples and wiped the shame off the face of Pure Yang Palace, allowing the sect to vent their anger. Originally the entire Pure Yang Palace was somewhat vexed, their own matters had been settled with the assistance of Five Phases Sect, but currently it seemed that their own disciple also had some contribution in this, how could the Palace Master not be content?

The Palace Master's attitude also affected Wang Yong. Originally he had believed that the Palace Master would punish Yang Chen for being so daring, but hearing the praise from the Palace Master, there was no need to worry about this, so he also burst out laughing. His own grand disciple's hard work and determination would clearly increase his own face!

Gao Yue was also happy, a disciple's actions were his master's face. She completely hadn't anticipated that, after showing that sort of anger in front of her, he had gone out and surprisingly accomplished such a feat. Once she thought that Yang Chen had chopped Chu Heng's head off with his own hands and taken the revenge for the insults Chu Heng had launched at her, Gao Yue was unable to stop that kind of happiness born from the bottom of her heart.

“When you took these things, didn’t the people of the Five Phases Sect and Greatest Heaven Sect discover anything?”

Under the extensive joy, Gao Yue suddenly discovered something troublesome and hastily asked.

“For one strike of a YuanYing stage senior to destroy some flying swords and a few other things, isn’t that normal?”

When Yang Chen had taken these things, he had already thought of an escape route, so he carelessly said:

“Moreover, even if they hadn’t been destroyed, at that time there were many people there, who would have dared to investigate who had taken some low grade flying swords?”

“Then how come your attack didn’t allow the YuanYing stage senior to sense anything?”

Gao Yue immediately asked. The Palace Master and Wang Yong had already thought of these doubts, but it was most suitable for Gao Yue to ask about these.

After killing them, I arranged everything on the scene properly and afterwards I asked the two demon beast seniors to launch the attack.”

Yang Chen smilingly explained:

“Their ability to conceal their presence is exceptional, even the YuanYing stage senior could not discover them. As soon as the Spell Formation was broken due to his attack, they escaped, taking advantage of the confusion. No one had any way to catch them!”

Yang Chen clearly had to explain these doubtful points, otherwise he would not get the deserved praise from the Palace Master and his Great Master, Wang Yong, and they would also continue to remain doubtful. Yang Chen was certain about this, therefore he clearly explained it to them.

Everything within this seemed to have worked because of the presence of the two YuanYing stage demon beasts. Therefore, there was only one doubt remaining, about which Gao Yue asked:

“How did you make two YuanYing stage demon beasts agree to cooperate with you?”

“This disciple has incidentally obtained a copy of a cultivation method for demon beasts, the Appearance Transforming Method, within the Immortal Falling Well.”

Yang Chen smiled again, showing off his heaven defying luck in the face of these elders:

“This is the copy of the cultivation method, which I exchanged with the demon beast seniors in return for their cooperation. They not only helped me in this matter, but also followed me on my return, wishing to enter the Pure Yang Palace and become

disciples!”

# Chapter 115 - Hall Of Eccentrics

---

This small piece of information gave rise to shock on the side of the Palace Master and his Great Master, Wang Yong. These continuous few bits of information were already something that they were not able to believe. Just a moment ago, they were feeling happy that their own disciple had prevailed over everything, but this matter about the two demon beasts wanting to enter the sect, could the Heavens really drop such a meat pie into their laps?

“If demon beasts enter my sect, won’t the people think that my Pure Yang Palace has some relations with demon beasts?”

Wang Yong was experienced and knowledgeable, he immediately called this into question. But his tone was not going against Yang Chen, rather wanting Yang Chen to overcome some barriers, or possibly wanting Yang Chen to justify these things.

The Palace Master also creased his brows, this question, if not settled properly, would be a huge annoyance. Although he and Wang Yong did not care if Yang Chen had relied on these two YuanYing demon beasts to resolve this matter, in case people became aware that Pure Yang Palace was colluding with demon beasts, it would give rise to a great controversy. Let alone other people, the Greatest Heaven Sect would not let go of this opportunity and would try to retrieve some honour from the Pure Yang Palace.

“Palace Master, my Pure Yang Palace also doesn’t have any guardian spirit beasts for defending the sect mountain. They also are at the YuanYing stage, what could outsiders say?”

Yang Chen had already thought of a solution to this problem.

It was not like only the Pure Yang Palace had guardian spirit beasts for defending the sect mountain. Other sects also had them, moreover in order to illustrate the might of the sect most of them would raise some formidable demon beasts to keep up appearances. But demon beasts were demon beasts in the end, only if they were raised from childhood, could they be raised to be powerful, otherwise, if they were captured halfway, they would absolutely not allow the demon beasts to become very formidable.

Yang Chen's statement, directly increased the chances of the demon beasts entering the sect. Guardian Spirit Beasts with a high cultivation entering the sect, wasn't that a good thing? If it was possible that other people still dared to take pry into Pure Yang Palace's internal matters, then shouldn't the guardian spirit beasts attack and get rid of them to protect the sect's honor? Speaking of the Pure Yang Palace, even if it was a minor sect, other people would not do anything regarding this kind of matter, at most others would be envious of their luck.

The Palace Master's eyes shone, if two YuanYing stage demon beast experts were raised, wouldn't it be a major event at any sect? Since they had this kind of method to settle the problem, then wasn't it taking good advantage of the current situation?

“Senior disciple, if the demon beasts enter our sect, then which hall would be most fitting for them?”

The Palace Master turned towards Wang Yong and consulted him.

Because of Yang Chen's actions or maybe because of some other reason, Wang Yong's whole self showed formidable confidence, related to this, even his cultivation had greatly increased within these ten years, originally he was just a common elder, but in the last ten years he had entered the top three most powerful elders. His power and prestige had greatly increased, the Palace Master also consulted with Wang Yong many times, whenever there was some matter.

Apart from Gao Yue and Yang Chen, nobody else knew the reason for such a transformation in Wang Yong. In fact, Yang Chen had all along believed firmly that one's confidence was the most important thing during cultivation. Regardless of whether it was the Heart's Devil or confusion, it would always affect the cultivator's mentality, making them unable to clearly see the road ahead, which would give rise to sufferings and even could influence their cultivation.

Currently Wang Yong absolutely didn't have this kind of obstruction, he possessed the Heaven Seizing Pill, which meant his ascension was just around the corner, that powerful confidence he had allowed him to have a formidable cultivation determination and so his power had increased by leaps and bounds, precisely because of this reason.

Wang Yong began to consider the question the Palace Master had raised. Demon beasts were after all demon beasts, regardless of whichever hall they were placed in, it would probably cause



annoyance. After much deliberation, he couldn't settle on any arrangements for them, so while hesitating, he looked at Yang Chen standing in front of him and quickly asked him:

“Yang Chen, what do you suggest?”

“Reporting to Palace Master and Great Master!”

Yang Chen respectfully replied:

“This disciple believes that no matter which hall they enter, it will be unsuitable. It would be better to allow them to establish an independent hall by themselves, to be called as the Hall of Eccentrics, using the Appearance Transforming Technique, some refining tools, pill concocting techniques, Spell Formations and cultivation methods as their foundation. This will also not give rise to the ire of other halls and will attract many more talented people to enter the sect!”

“Appearance Transformation Secrets? Hall of Eccentrics?”

The Palace Master was not the Palace Master for no reason, he immediately discovered an opportunity within the subject of using the Appearance Transforming Secrets' cultivation method and having demon beasts entering the Pure Yang Palace.

They were two YuanYing stage demon beasts, but still wanted the Appearance Transforming Secrets, this meant that the Appearance Transforming Secrets held an incredibly attractive

force towards other demon beast experts. Then if the Pure Yang Palace used the Appearance Transforming Secrets, wouldn't it be able to attract an even larger number of demon beast experts?

“They're not our race, humans won't accept them!”

While the Palace Master was thinking about it, Wang Yong shook him out of his dreams, apparently many things had to be taken care off. Only when all parties were satisfied could it happen.

“In case other sects are dissatisfied about this, then what should we do?”

“The guardian spirit beasts of the sect mountain would have to defend the mountain faithfully for a thousand years and have at last earned their reward, so the sect will show their gratitude to the outside world and bestow them titles as disciples of the sect, in this way it will be completely reasonable and completely fair. Who could say that this is not right?”

Facing the question by his Great Master Wang Yong, Yang Chen spoke with complete confidence, as if he had already practiced:

“Moreover, the Hall of Eccentrics also will also scrupulously abide by the rules of the sect and display utter loyalty and responsibility. So what could outsiders complain about?”

“But these guardian spirit beasts of the sect, let alone outsiders, even many people within the sect have not seen them, how can we

stop the multitude of running mouths?”

The Palace Master had thought about it in great detail and asked a new question again.

“This disciple also hasn’t seen, but only heard about the secret pavilion of the sect, which is very heavily defended. Apart from Palace Master, no other person knows its location, or what kind of defence it has.”

Facing the Palace Master’s question, he happily replied:

“Wouldn’t it be possible that these two seniors were protecting the secret pavilion?”

“If we establish the Hall of Eccentrics, won’t it slowly absorb other unusual people, so how come my secret pavilion has so many guardian spirit beasts?”

The Palace Master also smiled when hearing Yang Chen’s reply and continued with another question.

“Since the two seniors had laboured very hard to establish the Hall of Eccentrics, naturally they must have looked for other guardian spirit beasts. So why can’t there be many eccentrics?”

Yang Chen was fooling around without even caring that the Palace Master and his own Great Master were sitting in front of him.

“Other sects certainly also have guardian spirit beasts, then why isn’t their cultivation as profound as the ones of my sect?”

The Palace Master asked again, looking at Yang Chen who had a smile all across his face, as if this question was a joke.

“The Sect Master of my sect has a method to increase the cultivation of demon beasts, which can only be used by guardian spirit beast who had guarded my sect for a necessary amount of time, to honor their hard work. Even if other people know about this, what can they say?”

Yang Chen again jokingly replied:

“This is my sect’s classified secret, other than people forcefully taking it, how would it be possible that anyone knows?”

“If a sect rule is violated by the eccentrics of the Hall of Eccentrics then wouldn’t the other sects not let it go?”

Wang Yong asked supportingly from the side.

Perhaps this was the question that had made these people anxious all along, after all these were demon beasts, moreover with a high cultivation. If they really violated a sect rule, then it would indeed be a great annoyance. The Palace Master was also hesitating because of this question, only he hadn’t asked it yet.

“The situation of the demon beasts is very difficult, even loose cultivators are comparatively better off.”

Yang Chen knew that this question didn't have a reasonable solution, this affair was also very difficult to manage, putting away the smiling face, he replied with great seriousness:

“The benefits of entering the sect are many and we aren't compelling them, they must think about the consequences of betraying the sect themselves.”

“Additionally, the demon beasts also have great oaths on their Heart's Devil, as well as others. Then, when entering the sect, they can be restricted by some great oath, based on a time limit or cultivation limit.”

Yang Chen had first clearly analysed the merits and demerits, continuing on he offered a method of restriction and finally he said:

“Moreover, even if there are still some traitor disciples, so what?”

“How can you speak these words?”

The Palace Master immediately questioned. Shouldn't this be another huge worry?

“Which sect doesn't have a few cultivators who betrayed the

sect?”

Yang Chen again replied with a smile:

“Whoever comes to ask this, first ask him if he didn’t have some traitor in his own sect before!”

Since things like sect rules existed, surely the people who violated these rules also existed, otherwise there was basically no significance to sect rules. Just as Yang Chen said, which sect didn’t have a few traitors? Even if the Hall of Eccentrics of the Pure Yang Palace had some traitors, that was still a very ordinary matter. Whoever came to blame them, shouldn’t he first check if they have their own skeletons in their closets?

This act was shameless, but it was reasonable, and had no loopholes. As it turned out, although the Pure Yang Palace was not regarded as a big sect as weighty as Mt.Tai, it was still considered as a sect worthy of mention. As long as they had proper reasons, other people would not be able to use these reasons to attack the Pure Yang Palace.

Increasing the number of YuanYing stage cultivators would also increase the strength of Pure Yang Palace, to the Palace Master it seemed that this was a worthwhile matter. Moreover, as long as they set this precedent, they would have two eccentric existences later, and using these two powerful eccentrics, they would also be able to rope in even more YuanYing stage demon beasts. As for those JieDan stage demon beasts willing to be the guardian spirit beasts of the Pure Yang Palace, they would be endless.

Currently there was a huge opportunity in front of the Palace Master, but at the same time also a great challenge. If they were able to cross over it, then within a few short decades, the strength of the Pure Yang Palace would take a huge leap. If they were not able to cross it, then it would certainly be a huge loss for them.

“Elder brother!”

The Palace Master turned towards Wang Yong and consulted him:

“Should we also invite the other elders to discuss about this?”

Wang Yong didn't say anything and only nodded, but his gaze still was on Yang Chen. Seeing that Yang Chen still wanted to say something, he raised his chin, hinting him to speak.

“Palace Master, Great Master!”

Yang Chen cautiously said:

“Regarding the exact details of the Appearance Transformation Secrets, as well as the exact detail of the two eccentrics, they still have to be kept secret. Within the sect, there is no lack of people serving the interest of outsiders, this Appearance Transformation Secrets can only be passed from mouth to mouth. The best is that Palace Master and Great Master also not know it, allowing the two eccentrics to control it!”

Yang Chen words contained an impolite message, going as far as to say that the Palace Master also should not learn about the exact details of the Appearance Transformation Secrets; how could the Palace Master endure this? But after thinking about this properly, he had to agree that Yang Chen's words had some reason. If everyone was able to learn about the Appearance Transforming Secrets and then somebody leaked it, wouldn't that mean that the big sects would become even stronger?"

Naturally, the identity of the demon beasts would also have to be kept as a secret, this was a huge matter involving the war between the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Five Phases Sect. If people knew that the main culprit was Yang Chen and the two demon beasts, then Pure Yang Palace would certainly have to take the consequences.

Since it was already like this, then they also require a reasonable argument for the fifth earth True Qi in the body of the two demon beasts. The best method would be that the Palace Master stepped in personally and exchanged some fifth earth True Qi from the Five Phases Sect. After this, everything would seem to make perfect sense.

"Naturally, they are currently still guarding the secret pavilion!"

The Palace Master thought clearly about this and immediately made a decision. But immediately following that he asked Yang Chen with a smile:



“Yang Chen, can you let us meet with these two future eccentrics of the sect?”

Yang Chen smilingly accepted and soon after that, he turned around to walk. Wang Yong removed the restrictions one by one and Yang Chen rapidly ran off outside of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. After a short while, he returned, and the Meadow Viper and the Sand Scorpion entered Gao Yue’s room.

After being refined by the fifth earth True Qi, the two demon beasts, now two eccentrics could already maintain their human appearance for some time. After entering the room, they immediately assumed their human shapes and towards the Palace Master and Wang Yong they immediately introduced themselves:

“Disciple, She Kui(Xie Sha), pays his respects to the Palace Master and the Elder!”

She Kui and Xie Sha were the human names chosen by the two, but these names made Yang Chen very irritated. They had merely switched around a few characters in Meadow Viper and Sand Scorpion, really they have no imagination.

The two demon beasts changing their appearances into humans gave a scare to the Palace Master and Wang Yong. Surprisingly, even with their level of cultivation, nobody could sense their presence, at most it would seem that they were an ordinary Meadow Viper and Sand Scorpion, even taking them for demon beasts was out of the question. No wonder they were able to easily play tricks under the nose of the YuanYing stage ancestor of the Five Phases Sect, since they had this kind of method all along.

This would solve a lot of problems, at least at a time they were hidden, nobody would be able to discover anything about them and at most believe them to be two ordinary people.

“So, you two should follow after me, to act as guardian spirit beasts for the time being!”

The Palace Master had wanted to understand the behaviour of the two demon beasts, so after giving a meaningful signal to Wang Yong, he instructed them.

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen had already explained many rules to them during the journey, this was the first time the two of them had actually tried to act decently. After replying, they even immediately took the oath that, before they reached the Da Cheng stage, they would absolutely not violate rules of the Pure Yang Palace nor do anything against the interests of Pure Yang Palace. This kind of approach made their true intentions clear, which made the Palace Master feel very satisfied.

“Yang Chen, you have done all of this, what kind of reward do you want?”

After finding a place for the two eccentrics, the Palace Master evaluated the merits to bestow his reward:

“This time, you were in the wrong, so you cannot be publicly praised and can only be rewarded secretly, if there’s anything you want, don’t hesitate to ask!”

While Yang Chen still hadn’t said anything, a purple colored light direct flew towards the Palace Master from the gate of the sect. The purple colored light was a signal to mark the arrival of an important guest, so Wang Yong immediately removed the restrictions and allowed the light to enter, which then flew towards the Palace Master’s hand.

After sweeping the light with his Spiritual Awareness, the Palace Master immediately showed an astonished expression and suddenly issued a command to the entire Pure Yang Palace:

“An important visitor has arrived, all disciples get in formation for a welcome!”

After issuing this command, he turned towards Yang Chen and slowly said:

“Elder Wu has visited the mountain!”

# Chapter 116 - I Don't Think They Are Feeling Good Now

---

Everyone knew who Elder Wu was looking for. Apart from Yang Chen, the entire Pure Yang Palace didn't have anyone who had caught the eyes of Elder Wu.

Seeing this, there was no need to ask, this was surely a courtesy visit before ascending. Originally the status of the Pure Yang Palace was not sufficient for Elder Wu to show his appreciation, but because of Yang Chen, everything was different.

The main gate of the Pure Yang Palace was opened widely and all inner disciples were in formation. An extremely long greeting line was formed from the main gate extending all the way to the main hall.

The Palace Master and a group of elders also came out to welcome him. After the younger generation's ceremony to pay their respects to Elder Wu, they lead him to the main hall of the Pure Yang Palace very respectfully and invited him to take the seat of honor.

Although Elder Wu was a rogue cultivator, he had an extremely seniority, and as for his cultivation, his ascension was just around the corner, so he was considered one of the most powerful men in the mortal world. Adding onto that the fact that he had been the overseer of the Immortal Falling Well for many years, the disciples of almost all sects and schools looked up to him. Within the mortal world, his prestige had already reached the limit.

For the Pure Yang Palace to be able to be graced with Elder Wu's presence was like bringing light to their humble dwelling. Just this one visit from Elder Wu was sufficient to increase the Pure Yang Palace's level by a grade, from a second tier sect to a first tier sect.

From top to bottom, the entire Pure Yang Palace knew the reason for Elder Wu's visit, but this did not stop the disciples from throwing gazes filled with incomparable respect at Elder Wu. At the same time they couldn't help themselves but enviously stare at Yang Chen.

Naturally, Yang Chen's current status was not high enough to enter the main hall of the Pure Yang Palace and he could only look at it from a distance while following Gao Yue, but Yang Chen also knew that Elder Wu would surely meet him alone, so there was no need to be anxious.

His master Gao Yue on the contrary, let her face reveal nervousness on one hand, while on the other it also showed excitement, as if she was going to meet her idol, completely different from that sort of calm which Yang Chen remembered. Perhaps it was because she currently still hadn't taken responsibility or maybe because she still hadn't experienced the painful process of maturing.

Yang Chen would rather prefer his master like this, pure and not having to think about any darkness in this world. All her responsibilities, Yang Chen would carry them together with her. But Yang Chen was also aware that this was not reality, if she did not gain these experiences, she would forever be unable learn

from these experiences and thus would be unable to increase her cultivation. Yang Chen could only do one thing, that was to reduce the dangers she would have to face as much as he could.

Just as expected, after some sort of high class discussions, Elder Wu inevitably raised the request to meet with Yang Chen.

The entire Pure Yang Palace was well aware of the situation, everyone knew who had brought this honor of Elder Wu's visit just before his ascension, so how would anyone try to obstruct this? Who would have the guts to try to offend not only Elder Wu but also the Palace Master and the group of elders?

Originally this was supposed to be a private meeting between Yang Chen and Elder Wu, but Yang Chen also wanted to allow his master to face some of the scene, the result was that in the meeting between Elder Wu and Yang Chen, the number of attendees had increased by three. These three people were naturally the Palace Master, his Great Master Wang Yong, as well as Gao Yue, who had been in Gao Yue's room earlier, discussing about the events in the Desolate Valley, only the stage had then been changed by Yang Chen to the room for receiving visitors of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

“Are the two waiting on the outside your friends?”

Against expectations, immediately after entering the room and sitting in front of Yang Chen, Elder Wu asked this question.

The two waiting on the outside were naturally She Kui and Xie

Sha. Even if they could hide their presence and to the Palace Master and Wang Yong appear as an ordinary Meadow Viper and Sand Scorpion, Elder Wu could make out their true strength with just one glance. His ascension was imminent, and he had already experienced the wind tribulations, so Elder Wu's eyesight exceeded ordinary cultivators by far.

Elder Wu had said this very lightly, seemingly he did not find anything strange at Yang Chen being able to make friends with YuanYing stage demon beasts. All this time, Elder Wu had properly understood the ways of the world and even he himself had benefitted from conversing with Yang Chen, therefore he did not find it even a little strange. Since Yang Chen was able to make good friends with him, a Da Cheng stage expert, then making friends with two demon beasts was really just a normal thing.

“Precisely, they are recent friends which this junior has made.”

Yang Chen did not hide anything from Elder Wu, even in front of the Palace Master and Wang Yong, he did not hide the plan of the Pure Yang Palace to establish a Hall of Eccentrics, wishing to hear Elder Wu's opinion.

“What can happen in the worst case?”

After hearing all the merits and demerits, Elder Wu waved his big hand:

“To be able to restrict these demon beast experts, this is something many people are looking for, who would oppose it? I am

in support!”

Hearing these words from Elder Wu, the Palace Master and Wang Yong were even more determined, originally they had thought through this approach properly, but after gaining Elder Wu’s support, there wasn’t any problem.

Following which, Yang Chen also introduced his master, Gao Yue and his Great Master, Wang Yong to Elder Wu. Elder Wu was very earnest towards both of them and didn’t have the slightest amount of contempt for their cultivation, most of all towards Gao Yue, he was incomparably respectful.

“Good fortune, Fellow Daoist Gao!”

Elder Wu even directly said these words to Gao Yue:

“But accepting younger brother Yang as disciple, Fellow Daoist Gao will also need to take care of many things.”

These sort of words, complimenting while also jesting, made Gao Yue so happy that she almost started jumping. It took a long time and a lot of willpower to control herself so that she wouldn’t lose self control.

“As for He LianYun, I have found him the Real Moon Fire, which is the counterpart of his previous flame, so it would surely take him around a hundred or so years to absorb it.”



Facing Yang Chen again, Elder Wu told him this news. This was presumably a warning for Yang Chen about the counterattack from He LianYun after he recovered.

Yang Chen did not care much about it; He LianYun wanting to absorb and refine the complete opposite of the Real Sun Fire, the Real Moon Fire was absolutely not possible. Yang Chen understood what was going on with He LianYun's cultivation: his control over the flame and his comprehension was finite, so a hundred years was a very valuable time for him.

“This time, I just happened to be caught up with the trouble between the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Five Phases Sect, this old man also was a mediator of sorts.”

After speaking about the matter of He LianYun, he changed the topic to the events at the Desolate Valley:

“They had gifted me with a bottle of fifth earth True Qi, then I remembered that the Spirit Power of the five phases in your body is not weak, so I intended to gift it to you, but looking at you now, it seems that wasn't necessary!”

Elder Wu's eyesight was really penetrating, in just a moment that he had spent with Yang Chen, he had immediately discovered the transformation in Yang Chen's body. Under the propulsion of the Real Fifth Earth Secrets, the fifth earth True Qi had already transformed to the most pure and most natural Spirit Power among the five phases in Yang Chen's body, Elder Wu determined all of this at a glance.

“Eh!”

Yang Chen had been anxious about where to get fifth earth True Qi so that She Kui and Xie Sha could openly appear in front of all people, but Elder Wu currently had one bottle, how could he miss this kind of opportunity? He hastily extended his hand:

“Useful! Useful! It is extremely useful!”

“Since you want it, then younger brother Yang, shouldn’t you explain about the matter of Desolate Valley clearly?”

Beaming with smiles, Elder Wu reached within his clothing to take out the jade bottle of fifth earth True Qi and threw it towards him.

If other people did not know, then they would certainly think that what Elder Wu threw was a bottle of something useless. Looking at him casually throwing it away, as well as subsequently staring at Yang Chen and demanding him to speak, the Palace Master, Wang Yong as well as Gao Yue all had their hearts in their throats.

Seeing Yang Chen and Elder Wu surprisingly speak in this way, made the three spectators extremely scared. The three people were very nervous that Yang Chen had angered Elder Wu because of this. This kind of cheekiness, nobody knew when it could offend people.

But they hadn't expected that Elder Wu didn't care about it, and was instead staring at Yang Chen, beaming with smiles, after giving him that jade bottle sealed by a Spell Formation, only then did he say:

“Tell me, wasn't this your crafty plot?”

These words, made the hairs on the bodies of the three people stand up. Unexpectedly Elder Wu had seen through Yang Chen's mischief, didn't this mean that they had to suffer extermination now?

“It's not a big deal, the Greatest Heaven Sect had secretly shielded a traitor of my Pure Yang Palace, Chu Heng. This Chu Heng wanted to kill me all along, naturally I would not let them have an easy time!”

Yang Chen causally replied, without caring about the horrified expressions of the three people on the side, calmly added:

“I think they should not be well now!”

“That's why you had caused such a huge loss of people?”

Elder Wu did not express any opinion, only asked while frowning.

“Shielding Chu Heng, seriously injuring four Law Enforcement Disciples of my sect and furthermore returning them to the sect with great publicity, he humiliated my Pure Yang Palace, naturally I will also have to repay the favour.”

Yang Chen did not care much, he was convinced that Elder Wu was not someone who would betray his friends to earn glory, and what kind of favour could he want at that moment?

“They tried to suppress my Pure Yang Palace and so I made several years of their work go to waste! They had injured four disciples of my sect, so I made them lose one YuanYing stage expert and two JieDan stage experts, while also killing the sect’s traitor!”

While saying this, a smile had already made its way up Yang Chen’s face, looking at Elder Wu he asked:

“They made the first strike, I made the last, isn’t it justified?”

After Yang Chen had finished speaking, the scene was shrouded in deathly silence. The Palace Master, Wang Yong and Gao Yue did not dare to make a sound, but Elder Wu was firmly staring at Yang Chen, as if trying to see the truth within his words.

“You are indeed quite fierce, youngster!”

After a long silence, Elder Wu suddenly smiled and extended his thumb towards Yang Chen:

“No wonder, you are enjoying so much prosperity and success, when this old man was your age, I didn’t have your courage and fierce strength.”

After hearing Elder Wu, the three people sitting on the side, loosened a breath, only then did they discover, that their legs had surprisingly become soft. Even though the Palace Master and Wang Yong were YuanYing stage experts, they had also broken out in cold sweat because of Yang Chen’s daring act just a moment ago. If Elder Wu, who had the strength of peak the Da Cheng stage, had acted violently, then it would have absolutely been a nightmare for the Pure Yang Palace.

“Can you tell me in detail about what you have done?”

Seeing the situation while he was mediating, he had already somewhat realized what was going on, but he had no way to confirm the details. With great difficulty he had caught the main culprit, Yang Chen, so he naturally had to ask him, to know about this matter clearly.

“Elder Wu, even you haven’t understood it clearly?”

Yang Chen suddenly turned his eyes towards him, and asked with a smile:

“If this junior tells you, then how will he benefit?”

# Chapter 117 - Both Happy And Scared

---

Once these words came out of Yang Chen's mouth, it immediately gave rise to nervousness on the part of the three other people. How could he speak with Elder Wu in this kind of tone? Elder Wu had agreed to hear him, that was already heaven defying luck, but still going so far as to haggle over the price? Even if everyone in the entire Pure Yang Palace was counted, nobody would have any doubt that Elder Wu was extremely clear about what he wanted!

Elder Wu's complexion was formal, his gaze as cold as ice, glaring at Yang Chen. A noiseless pressure appeared and shrouded Yang Chen.

Even though it did not spread to the other people, the Palace Master, Wang Yong and Gao Yue still felt a chill. The pressure exerted by a peak Da Cheng stage expert, even if it was them, they would still be frightened stiff.

“Senior, please be lenient!”

Gao Yue herself did not know what she was thinking, surprisingly daring to yell at this critical moment, but even she could not understand her own voice, as her voice had already started trembling.

Although the Palace Master and Wang Yong heard it, they could also only helplessly worry but could do nothing, anxiety clearly visible on their faces. Facing Elder Wu's formidable pressure

regardless of their identities, they didn't say anything. If really they had said something at this moment, especially the Palace Master, that would mean that the dust had settled and that there would be no other option than becoming hostile.

What made everyone astonished was that the person bearing this pressure directly, Yang Chen, seemed as if he hadn't sensed anything and still had the same mischievous smile as before, not even sweat had broken out on his face or body, as for trembling, such a thing never happened. Elder Wu, who was sitting in front of him, releasing his pressure, was apparently just a guardian of his in Yang Chen's eyes, so he could act shamelessly and moreover he had to act shamelessly in front of him.

“Senior, even if you can't give a reward, there is also no need to be angry!”

With this sentence, he woke up everyone from their stupor, but at the same time he made the three people from his sect feel gloomy within their hearts.

“Good! I want to listen to you first, and see if your version is worthy of reward!”

Elder Wu smiled, throwing away the angry aura, and then burst out laughing. Towards the Palace Master, Wang Yong and Gao Yue, he nodded his head:

“Can you three please step back a little, I must see what he has to say!”

“Senior, Yang Chen is only a little mischievous and naughty.....”

After seeing that Elder Wu still had some traces of that anger, Gao Yue immediately got panicky in her head, unable to deal with the fear, she opened her mouth again to make a plea for leniency.

“Don’t worry, this old man knows how to act properly, I will not bother much with a junior!”

Elder Wu waved his big hand and after that, the three people were unable to utter even half a letter and their bodies involuntarily, as if being pulled by an invisible arm, were dragged out through the door at lightning speed.

The door was closed from the inside and soon afterwards, powerful restrictions had sealed off Yang Chen’s room. The Palace Master, Wang Yong and Gao Yue looked at each other in dismay, feeling extremely anxious within their hearts. Just now Elder Wu had dismissed them with a wave of his hand and these three people didn’t even have the strength to protest. This kind of might made the three of them feel despair.

“Good, there isn’t anyone here now, if you want to say anything, speak freely!” After laying down the restrictions, Elder Wu had again become amiable and was not as imposing as earlier. He had just received some hint from Yang Chen’s words, so he could only put up such an arrangement.

But Elder Wu was still slightly astonished that Yang Chen was



able to endure his pressure. In the mortal world, even if it was a YuanYing stage elder, facing Elder Wu's pressure with full strength, they would also not be able to remain nonchalant like this, but just a moment ago, Yang Chen had surprisingly played down the gradually increasing pressure of Elder Wu and dismissed it very skillfully, how could Elder Wu not be amazed?

“Your master is not bad, wanting to save her disciple at such a crucial time, you have good taste!”

Even in great astonishment, Elder Wu did not forget to praise Gao Yue. Although Gao Yue had also faced the same pressure just a moment ago, she hadn't thought about abandoning her disciple, which was indeed rare.

“Of course, whose master do you think she is?”

Yang Chen immediately became filled with pride, puffing up his chest.

“Tell me about that matter now!”

Elder Wu could not bear to see Yang Chen proud like this and directly interrupted his arrogance and had him immediately get to the point.

“Elder brother, your ascension is just around the corner, I have some words for you!”

Yang Chen nodded his head and directly went to the seat on his left hand side to sit down and started explaining:

“From the beginning we were talking like strangers, so it is not good to start talking but now if we do not speak, in the future we will no longer have an opportunity.”

“You speak, I will listen!”

Elder Wu faintly nodded his head. Although he had hit it off with Yang Chen, it was just a friendship based on the refining of a Heaven Seizing Pill from the beginning. But actually, after parting with Yang Chen, he was able to comprehend many things from the discussions he had with Yang Chen, this only increased the value of Yang Chen in his mind.

“Elder brother, after ascending, if you encounter people with this mark; if you can avoid offending them, then you must not offend them; if you can make friends with them, then you must do it, it will have many advantages!”

While speaking, the Achievement Ring on Yang Chen’s hand shone brightly. In reality, at this moment the Achievement Ring was just a tattoo on Yang Chen’s finger and did not have the appearance of a ring, only its design was quite unique.

“What is this?”

Elder Wu’s eyes opened widely, he attentively stared at the

design that had appeared on Yang Chen's hand and within his heart he couldn't help but be astonished. From where did this design appear? He surprisingly couldn't sense anything. With his cultivation, even if Yang Chen took out something from his qiankun pouch, he would still be able to discover it, yet he was unable to see how the Achievement Ring had emerged.

“This is the mark of the people I have mentioned.”

Yang Chen could not tell him everything, he only gave him some slight awareness. In any case, Elder Wu's ascension was imminent, so those people would surely have prepared for all of this and would be waiting for him with a commander and a few servants, so Yang Chen did not have worry about it and he did not care much about letting him know.

Hearing Yang Chen's words, Elder Wu complexion was overwhelmed with shock, he could not help but extend his hands towards the sky:

“Above?”

“En!”

Yang Chen nodded, although in a tacit understanding he hadn't told him any names, but had admitted to Elder Wu's guess.

Again when he looked at Yang Chen, Elder Wu's gaze was filled with shock and simultaneously also filled with some sudden

understanding, no wonder Yang Chen did not care about his pressure, no wonder Yang Chen knew how to handle the last step of the Heaven Seizing Pill, no wonder Yang Chen could do such earth shattering acts, he surprisingly had such an exalted status.

“But you also must maintain your distance, it may possibly cause some unnecessary troubles.”

Yang Chen again warned him, he feared that if Elder Wu walked too close with them, then at the time when he had to set about on his task, it would not be good if Elder Wu was pressed from both sides.

Elder Wu only nodded, but his face was filled with expectation, to be able to know about things of Spiritual World before ascending, this was just an opportunity which could only be found by luck and not by looking, if he passed up on this opportunity, then he would not be Elder Wu.

“I got it!”

Elder Wu replied like a child listening to an elder.

“Knowing too much about the matters of the next realm is also not good.”

Yang Chen naturally knew that Elder Wu wanted to know more, but he would not say much, lightly warning him was enough:

“Only, when you have just ascended, don’t be too arrogant, remain a little low key, you should act and do things as a youngster, so that you don’t lose face!”

Elder Wu only nodded, he had been mentally prepared for this fact, all people went to the Spiritual World after ascending, those people who had ascended first were definitely seniors. Although he had been accustomed to acting as an elder in the Mortal World, at the Spiritual World he was not even worth a sneer, he was bound to remain low key for a period of time.

Naturally, it’s not like he didn’t have the confidence that, with his powerful strength, after passing the calamity he would be able to spread his name in the next realm, but apparently such a thing was clearly not that easy. With Yang Chen’s formal words like this and with Yang Chen’s identity, Elder Wu also didn’t dare to have any big ideas.

“Your Heaven Fleeing Shuttle must also be fused with a suitable immortal cave only then can it be upgraded by another level, I just happen to have such a suitable region.”

Yang Chen had also previously spoken about the flaws of the Heaven Fleeing Shuttle, but wishing to fuse the Heaven Fleeing Shuttle together with some Immortal Cave, the resources it would take up were basically unimaginable, it could only be accomplished in the Spiritual World.

Within Yang Chen’s mind, there were many immortal caves left behind by people which were sufficient for him. With the friendship he had with Elder Wu, he could easily gift one to him.

Moreover, after being grateful for his kindness, Elder Wu could also be considered as Yang Chen's forerunner in the Spiritual World, then when the time would come, he would have a place to rely on. This kind of investment in the future, no other person would be more proficient in it than Yang Chen.

“The directions to the immortal cave are...”

After telling the directions to Elder Wu, which he properly remembered, he clapped his hands:

“When you ascend, first fuse with this Immortal Cave, afterwards you will have some assets to get out of a predicament. If you want to cultivate, you can have a place to cultivate, if you want to flee, you can have a magic tool to flee, then being a little arrogant is also not a problem.

“Younger brother, you.....”

Elder Wu's words seem to be stuck in this throat, not knowing anything proper to say. He wanted to know Yang Chen's identity, opening his mouth he could only say younger brother, but after that could not even utter a word.

“As for my identity, after you ascend, perhaps you will be able to guess.”

Yang Chen smiled while waving his hand, but he didn't explain anything to Elder Wu. This kind of matter, in any case he would

obtain a lot of information, but Yang Chen did not want to reveal everything to Elder Wu right then.

“A great favour cannot be thanked by words, younger brother, I request to pay my respects to you!”

Elder Wu, a person who meets gains or losses with composure, also no longer questioned him closely; standing up towards Yang Chen, he cupped his hands in submission.

Yang Chen hastily tried to evade, but was unable to resist against Elder Wu's strength, so he received the ceremony. He understood Elder Wu's gratitude. Many little pieces of information could be life saving at the right time.

“Why are you looking at me, do you still want me to reward you?”

After paying his respects, Elder Wu again resumed the attitude of an elder, doing what he wanted. His ascension was already imminent, his nature was magnanimous, so he basically did not care about some false friendships and also did not care much about saving face among seniors and juniors, doing what he wanted.

“This youngster wants your cultivation experience!”

Yang Chen actually was not even a little modest, directly extending his hand towards Elder Wu he said:

“I require some things to quell the pressure from my sect, elder brother, you must not also be too attached to things!”

“Hold this then!”

Elder Wu directly fished out more than ten jade slips from his qiankun pouch, but he had prepared this long ago. Elder Wu was a loose cultivator, he cultivated very diligently, but he had failed to take in a disciple, let alone a successor disciple. These things were originally set aside for people who had been brought together by fate, but since Yang Chen had asked for them, how could Elder Wu deny him?

“Now I will have a good explanation for the sect.”

Yang Chen raised his brows in delight, seeing the jade slips within his hand, he was rejoicing and tossing it up and down. Although Yang Chen’s experiences were not very different compared to Elder Wu, Elder Wu provided him with a very good pretense, so when the time came, many of his cultivation gifts could be blamed on Elder Wu.

By this time, the private conversation between them had already finished under the eyes of the Pure Yang Palace’s Palace Master, Wang Yong and Gao Yue who were outside, waiting to enter. If Yang Chen had some ideas, he could just claim it came from Elder Wu. Having a source like this, who would get suspicious?

For these reasons, Yang Chen had even deliberately extended his meeting with Elder Wu. While inside of the room, he was just



drinking tea on one hand, while on other hand he was chatting about Elder Wu's path of cultivation. Elder Wu was a well known person in the Spiritual World, but he had taken a detour on his path of cultivation, Yang Chen had just wanted to tell him about the proper path earlier, believing that, with Elder Wu's support, he would quickly be able to rise above others in the Spiritual World.

Listening to Yang Chen, Elder Wu was just feeling as if he had met a heavenly being. Many things which he hadn't thought off or probably couldn't even figure out were mentioned in a few sentences by Yang Chen and often gave him a sudden insight. His happiness couldn't be described in words. Even if Elder Wu's ascension was imminent and he was already past showing expressions on his face, he could still not help but show his excitement with a smile.

Time passed at lightning speed, two people were feeling happy while chatting, but on the outside four long hours had already passed. Thinking about the time, Yang Chen opened the room to the three people waiting outside.

While Elder Wu and Yang Chen were chatting, outside, the Palace Master was restlessly waiting with Wang Yong and Gao Yue, afraid that Yang Chen's sentence had provoked Elder Wu's ire and the Pure Yang Palace had drawn the misfortune of sect extermination. But they didn't know what was happening inside, surprisingly there hadn't been any sound of people from the inside, but they also did not dare to attack the restrictions and could only bitterly wait on the outside.

When Yang Chen opened the door, the smile on Elder Wu's face

entered the eyes of the three people. Looking at Elder Wu's smile, the three people finally heaved a sigh, Yang Chen had seemingly settled the dispute.

Originally they still wanted some benefits from Elder Wu, but Elder Wu no longer intended to help everyone, he burst out laughing and walked away from the sect, and raising his thumb he began to praise Gao Yue:

“Good, young lass, you dared to protect your disciple in front of me, very good!”

After he finished praising Gao Yue, Elder Wu greeted the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace:

“Sorry for the inconvenience today, and many thanks for your troubles. This Wu is going to ascend soon, so I will return now!”

After he finished speaking, regardless of what other people thought, he took out his Heaven Fleeing Shuttle, which disappeared in a flash with a ‘Xiu’ sound.

The three people looked at each other in dismay, then Palace Master looked at Elder Wu's figure until he disappeared. Only then did everyone shout towards Yang Chen's room. Soon after that they immediately set out on the task of cutting down the restrictions, then they asked Yang Chen:

“What did you and Elder Wu discuss?”

“Elder Wu thought disciple was worth cultivating, so he had given disciples some pointers regarding cultivation.”

Yang Chen did not hold back even a little bit in flaunting himself as a disciple worth cultivating, and he was also not afraid that Elder Wu would deny this in someone’s presence.

Seeing the three elders still have lingering fears because of the trauma, Yang Chen smiled and produced the jade slips:

“Before leaving, Elder Wu had given this disciple some cultivation insights, disciple did not dare to use them without authority, so I ask Palace Master to make a decision!”

Once these words came out, the three people’s eyes shone brightly, with their gazes fixed on those jade slips.

# Chapter 118 - Isn't Instant Cultivation Amazing?

---

Insight into Elder Wu's cultivation? This was the entire cultivation experience left behind by a Da Cheng stage expert who was just about to ascend! This would be considered as a treasure among treasures at any sect, even if someone wanted to exchange it for a rare cultivation method, obtaining it was still impossible.

But Elder Wu had set it aside for Yang Chen just before ascending? The three were staring at the jade slips like people who hadn't eaten and were seeing a meat bun. Being shocked to the extreme, they could not even dare to believe it.

“This, is it really Elder Wu's?”

Gao Yue was the person with the lowest cultivation among the three and also the most impatient one, naturally she was the first to ask.

“That's right, master!”

Yang Chen nodded his head with complete confidence and afterwards he did something which surprised everyone.

Yang Chen divided these jade slips in three parts, handing over one to the Palace Master and Wang Yong:

“Palace Master, Great Master, this is the experience of the YuanYing and Da Cheng stage.”

“Master, this is about the cultivation at the JieDan stage!”

Yang Chen also gave an introduction while delivering them to Gao Yue.

Yang Chen placed the remaining one in his qiankun pouch:

“The remaining one contains the experience of the Foundation stage, after this disciple has studied it for a few years, I will hand it over to the sect!”

Even though he said things like this, they were copies which Yang Chen had made in front of Elder Wu. Elder Wu was a metal attributed cultivator and Yang Chen just happened to require knowledge of this field. This kind of knowledge he would absolutely never leak, Yang Chen did not want to obtain these things through the consent of some elder.

The Palace Master and Wang Yong were ecstatic when holding their portion of jade slips. They were YuanYing stage cultivators and although their attribute of the five phases was different from Elder Wu’s, the destination was the same, so with the help of Elder Wu’s cultivation experience, they would also obtain new insights about their cultivation, saving them from taking many detours in their cultivation.

“This!”

Wang Yong absolutely hadn't anticipated that Yang Chen would surprisingly be so generous, the things that Elder Wu had privately set aside for him, he was surprisingly contributing it for the benefit of the sect. According to the conclusion of the previous discussion between the elders and the Palace Master, there was absolutely no need to hand over one's personal possessions.

“Good! Good!”

The Palace Master was so excited that even his hands started trembling. It wasn't that the Pure Yang Palace didn't have any senior who had ascended, nor was it that they hadn't left behind their cultivation experiences previously, but Yang Chen being so considerate of the sect, how could it not excite him?

If he previously purely used to think of Yang Chen's development potential and the future possibility of him becoming a high level pill concocting master, taking proper care of him for that just reason, then currently it could be said that he was extremely satisfied with Yang Chen and intended on cultivating him from the bottom of his heart. If this kind of disciple was not developed properly, then should an ingrate like Chu Heng be developed instead?

What made the Palace Master was most excited by, was that Elder Wu was a metal attributed cultivator and he himself was also metal attributed. The cultivation experience contained in the jade slip was simply a great assistance for him.

“Yang Chen, this time you have established a great merit again. I don’t know how to reward you.”

The Palace Master’s mood just could not be described with words at that moment. He was also increasingly kind towards Yang Chen:

“Name anything, if you want it, as long as the Pure Yang Palace can obtain it, it’s yours!”

Honestly speaking, Pure Yang Palace’s little legacy was really not much in Yang Chen’s eyes, but since the Palace Master had already said so and moreover had made the promise so happily, Yang Chen definitely didn’t want to go against the Palace Master’s wishes, otherwise wouldn’t he just spoil the fun?

“Disciple once again seeks the opportunity to enter the Secret Pavilion!”

Yang Chen spoke up, the Secret Pavilion of the Pure Yang Palace contained many good items, but one could only enter for a fixed amount of time, Yang Chen had no other option than to fight for a few chances.

“Twice!”

The palace master extended two of his fingers in front of Yang Chen without any hesitation:

“Your contribution this time is too big, so you will be allowed two chances, adding onto that the one chance of last time for a total of three times, you can enter the Secret Pavilion!”

“Many thanks, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen hastily expressed his thanks, even Wang Yong couldn't get this type of opportunity several times, while Yang Chen had already gotten three such chances. Gao Yue standing on the side was also very happy for him.

“Yang Chen, why did Elder Wu give these things to you?”

After receiving the items, the Palace Master made a meaningful signal towards Wang Yong and then asked Yang Chen. First grabbing the benefits, then asking for the problems, the Palace Master was actually quite a pragmatic person.

“I listened through Elder Wu's ranting: Elder Wu was full of complaints and hatred, it just happened that we were talking to each other and we really hit it off, there he had saved some things as a gift to me!”

Yang Chen casually passed on this lie, without stuttering even a little.

It sounded like a trifling matter, but in the eyes of the Palace Master and his Great Master, Wang Yong, this was something completely different.



“Elder Wu really is generous!”

On the side, Wang Yong deeply sighed:

“Speaking of gifts, he really gave you such a huge gift, he is truly all-knowing, I am vastly inferior! Ah!”

Gao Yue still couldn't make sense of what she was hearing, but the Palace Master nodded, his heart full of distress. Not sticking with this question, he changed it for another:

“It seems that the Hall of Eccentrics can be established at Pure Yang Palace openly!”

The earlier obstructions to this were no longer obstructions. Having the support of Elder Wu and adding the fifth earth True Qi, even if everyone figured out that She Kui and Xie Sha had fifth earth True Qi, it would still not draw anyone's suspicions. Since the sect disciples had not researched a method to use this hard earned treasure of Pure Yang Palace, using it for demon beasts was also acceptable. In addition to that, the merit of guarding the Secret Pavilion was quite high, thus if they didn't do this, then maybe other demon beasts would not receive the news and come?

Elder Wu had come suddenly and also left very quickly, the majestic welcoming ceremony had only ended just a few hours ago, he didn't even enjoy a decent meal at the Pure Yang Palace and had already departed hurriedly. Apparently the Pure Yang Palace was still lacking in proper manners, but luckily that one sound from

Elder Wu before leaving had already informed everyone, so the other elders quickly came to the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

These few elders didn't have any relation with Yang Chen and Gao Yue, so they thoughtfully didn't go to Gao Yue's room. These elders then went to the official business hall of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, where the Palace Master was waiting for them to discuss the earlier incident.

Naturally, the matters of the Desolate Valley were confidential and they could only discuss about the Hall of Eccentrics and the things that Elder Wu had left behind. Once they heard that Elder Wu had left behind a bottle of fifth earth True Qi and his cultivation experiences for Yang Chen, these elders were astonished. Although it was known that Yang Chen had good relations with outsiders, they hadn't anticipated that his friendship with Elder Wu was so deep.

Regarding the reward, nobody dared to question it. This time, the one questioning it would not only offend the Palace Master, but also offend Yang Chen's Great Master, Wang Yong. Who would be such a fool?

At Gao Yue's room on the other hand, another scene was happening.

It was not Yang Chen's first time here, but Gao Yue had an unprecedented coldness spreading across her entire face. Facing Yang Chen, she started berating him:

“Yang Chen, do you not know that the things you do have a lot of risks?”

Her own disciple had done so many earth shattering things which could not be talked about, so it was not that Gao Yue was not very happy, but once she thought of the risks of these, Gao Yue couldn't control her anger.

Facing her own disciple, Gao Yue was at a loss for words. From the time she had accepted him as a disciple, Gao Yue had sensed that Yang Chen was certainly unique, but she had never heard of someone who had been so emotionally stirred at the time of accepting a master that he had started crying. With Yang Chen's constant daring acts, him shedding tears was just an impossible matter, but this had happened before her own eyes.

After Yang Chen such a thing happened, apart from giving her pointers in cultivation, he had apparently always worked incessantly, seeking benefits for Gao Yue. This made Gao Yue very happy but at the same time also very concerned. The things that Yang Chen did were very risky, if he slipped up, he would not be let off.

Even the matters regarding Desolate Valley, if even a little bit of the truth was leaked, then Pure Yang Palace would surely have their sect exterminated by others, and Yang Chen himself, he would be hunted crazily by a few big sects. But Yang Chen actions were completely considering Pure Yang Palace's benefit, so she also didn't have any reasons to say anything to him about it and could only berate him using this reason.

“Master, I am very clear about what I am doing!”

Facing Gao Yue’s reprimand, Yang Chen was absolutely calm, he knew that she was doing this for his own good, but for some matters he had no choice but to act:

“But master, Chu Heng dared to insult you, then he must die. Any people who insult you must not be left alive!”

“You!”

Gao Yue wanted to say something, she couldn’t say anything. The anger of Yang Chen after he had heard Chu Heng’s words was something Gao Yue had seen with her own eyes, she could tell real from fake. Such a protective disciple, Gao Yue couldn’t feel anything but sweetness in her heart. She did indeed not know how to reprimand Yang Chen anymore.

“In the future, I will not allow you to do such things, even if it is for me, you should still not!”

Gao Yue had no choice other than putting on the face of a master and command very seriously:

“A few words, cannot hurt you, so why should you get angry over it? This also affects your cultivation!”

“Yes, master!”

It was Gao Yue's command, so Yang Chen had to reply positively. Even if he did not accept it as true, in front of her, he would not disobey and immediately promised his master.

"I have already begun to refine your flying sword, but it will still require two years to be completed."

Gao Yue knew that with her cultivation she could not help Yang Chen much, but what she could do was provide Yang Chen with additional assistance. She still warned him very seriously:

"You have just reached the Foundation stage and still haven't had much time in consolidating it, you must at least dedicate yourself to it for two years. You cannot be greedy and advance prematurely. The road of cultivation is not a highway, you must not try to rush! Bear this in mind, bear this in mind!"

"Yes, master!"

These words were priceless wisdom, of course Yang Chen would remember them, and at that moment he was also following them. After reaching the Foundation stage in the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, he had directly went to cultivating. Even after receiving the fifth earth True Qi he had not tried to rashly increase his cultivation, but rather had remained at the Foundation stage.

But after Gao Yue had spoken about advancing prematurely, Yang Chen suddenly recalled a matter which would happen not too long in the future.

After two years, a type of accelerated cultivation method would spread in the cultivation world: the Long Tai Spirit Supporting secrets. This type of cultivation method would rely on something known as a Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal and would rapidly increase the realm of cultivators. This kind of a cultivation method would spread very quickly in the cultivation world after someone had started offering Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystals in large numbers.

People would use this Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal and this cultivation method and quickly increase their cultivation. Moreover, this Long Tai Spirit Supporting cultivation method was not divided into five attributes and simply increased the Spirit Power, which would attract countless people to cultivate it.

But what people didn't know was that this was huge conspiracy. The originator of this evil practice was a devil cultivator known as Lin Cheng He, and the so called Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal was a type of spirit object, which was formed from a trace of Lin Cheng He's soul which is used in his devil cultivation method known as Great Mother Devil Tai cultivation secrets within the Grand Maternal Devil Tai method, the Long Tai Spirit Supporting secrets were actually the Grand Child Devil Tai method's cultivation secrets.

As the name implied, the Grand Maternal Devil Tai method's cultivation, precisely used the Grand Child Devil Tai method's cultivation to produce Spirit Power, but the Spirit Power produced by the Grand Child Devil Tai method's cultivation had the relationship of a child to his mother, that meant that efforts of those people who painstakingly used the Heavenly Meteorite Heart

Crystal and Long Tai Spirit Supporting secrets to increase their cultivation, would instead entirely be shifted to Lin Cheng He.

After the cultivation of this Long Tai Spirit Supporting secrets, because of the use of Heavenly Meteorite Heart Crystal, the cultivator was basically unable to control his own Spirit Power in the end, and after Lin Cheng He thought the time was ripe, that painstakingly cultivated Spirit Power would be turned into Lin Cheng He's cultivation, while the that person's cultivation was crippled to the extreme. An extremely evil cultivation method.

This kind of cultivation method, which was used to harm others for one's personal benefit, naturally could not be tolerated by the cultivators of the righteous path. But by the time everyone discovered this, Lin Cheng He's situation had already changed and he had already reached the Da Cheng stage. At that time, in order to exterminate him, all of the big sects had to invest their full strength.

Only after paying a price of two Da Cheng, and several YuanYing stage cultivators, was Lin Cheng He devoured by the devil method and died. Luckily he could not refine and purify the heterogenous Spirit Power in time, otherwise the consequences would be too horrible to imagine. Even under this condition, there had been a loss of two Da Cheng and several YuanYing cultivators, which also greatly decreased the strength of sects on the righteous path, which couldn't be restored even after several hundred years.

At that time, the Pure Yang Palace had lost three Yuanying stage cultivators, so when facing against the Greatest Heaven Sect, they didn't have the strength to hit back, which was also part of the

cause of that tragedy. How could Yang Chen allow this to happen again in this life?

“Master, if really a type of common cultivation method appeared, and even other people also confirmed the cultivation result, would you also cultivate it?”

Yang Chen began to rack his brain, thinking about how to draw the discussion to this topic. This time he also did not want to get the limelight for himself, instead he wanted his master to establish a great merit.

“Where can I find this type of cultivation method? If there really is such a cultivation method, then wouldn’t it fall under the category of the devil path?”

Gao Yue wrinkled her brows, suddenly asking Yang Chen:

“Yang Chen, do you know something? Why did you suddenly bring up this kind of question?”

“It is not me, master, it was Elder Wu who told me!”

Yang Chen suddenly thought of the ultimate excuse, known as Elder Wu, on which any matter could be blamed:

“Elder Wu has found some signs, only he still wasn’t particularly clear about it.”



# Chapter 119 - What About A Water Attributed Method?

---

“An instant cultivation method, regardless of the results in cultivation would certainly bring unsteadiness to your mind.”

Gao Yue shook her head:

“The shallower the cultivation, the more serious the heart’s devil. Cultivating quickly leaves behind many dangers, thus the losses do not make up for the gains. This is certainly a cultivation technique of the devil path and you must not be infected by it by any means!”

“Elder Wu had only said there had been some development regarding this matter, but didn’t tell me anything specific.”

Yang Chen was using ambiguous words as much as possible to speak about this matter:

“Do not support the Palace Master’s suggestions regarding this matter, in the future, if this kind of thing appears, try to restrict the disciples of the sect from such a cultivation method by any means, ok?”

Yang Chen’s aim was to make Gao Yue get the Pure Yang Palace out of a predicament. In his previous life, Gao Yue was the Hall Master of the Fierce Yang Hall, but unfortunately she died an untimely death. In this life Yang Chen had to make her the most

influential person in the Pure Yang Palace. He had to make Gao Yue aim for being the sect leader of the Pure Yang Palace. But to accomplish this, she had to constantly increase her prestige.

Gao Yue firmly believed Yang Chen's words, most of all after Yang Chen had revealed the secrets about those matters of the Desolate Valley, she felt that Yang Chen had no reason to lie to her or deceive her, adding to that the effect of the ultimate excuse, Elder Wu, Gao Yue's trust towards him increased even more.

“This is not the right time, if this matter comes out now, then surely the Palace Master would be burdened many troublesome but trifling issues.”

Gao Yue was not a person person who pandered to others, otherwise she couldn't have become the Hall Master of the Fierce Yang Hall in his previous life. Now she had begun to slowly ponder the general situation and started thinking thoroughly about handling these affairs:

“Since this is not very urgent, I will speak about it with the palace master in three to five months, at that time it will still be your achievement.”

Gao Yue hadn't thought about coveting Yang Chen's credit for herself from the beginning, so Yang Chen sighed gloomily, but then again, if it were not that Gao Yue had shown such concern and care for him in his previous life, why would he have done everything while keeping Gao Yue in mind? Handling it like this was also good. In any case, the future was still far, Yang Chen had no need to be anxious.

“Master, this disciple has a presumptuous request, but I don’t know whether master will approve.”

Yang Chen suddenly thought of a possibility and carefully raised it.

“A presumptuous request?”

Gao Yue glanced at Yang Chen very oddly, and smirked at him:

“Since you know it’s a presumptuous request, how can you raise it?”

“Disciple asks for forgiveness for being rash!”

Yang Chen sighed in his heart with disappointment on his face. But his master speaking with this kind of expression made Yang Chen remember her tenderness increasingly clearly.

“But since you are being so careful, there is no harm in telling me about the matter.”

Seeing the disappointed expression on Yang Chen’s face, Gao Yue put on a very calculative appearance and returned to the topic of discussion, rolling her eyes as if teasing Yang Chen:

“If it is not a very difficult matter, maybe I can also help you.”

“Master!”

Yang Chen raised his head because of that pleasant surprise and looking at Gao Yue’s crafty gaze, he couldn’t help but smile.

“Speak, what is the matter?”

Gao Yue coughed once and again assumed a serious face, allowing Yang Chen to talk.

“Master, can I request you to cultivate another cultivation method?”

Yang Chen carefully arranged his wording and proposed it to Gao Yue:

“Such as... a water attributed cultivation method!”

“Cultivate a water attributed cultivation method?”

Gao Yue scowled and she immediately realized something:

“You are thinking of making me experience other attributes by myself to improve my fire controlling arts?”

Yang Chen was caught off guard with this, but he immediately

remembered that he had duped a lot of people using this reason and now even his master completely believed this reason. But this was also good, at least this was an acceptable reason. Thinking about this, Yang Chen earnestly nodded his head.

“I have thought about it, but actually this path of cultivation is not very suitable for me.”

Against Yang Chen’s expectations, Gao Yue surprisingly flat out refused Yang Chen’s proposal:

“You concoct pills, therefore trying to perfect your control over fire is understandable, but I am not the same, I can’t concoct pills, neither am I very good at refining tools, there is no need for me forcefully improve my fire controlling ability.”

“Master!”

Yang Chen hastily called, but before he could say anything, he was forcefully interrupted by Gao Yue.

“I know what you want to say.”

Gao Yue shook her head towards Yang Chen with a smile:

“Although you and I are master and disciple, you have your path, I have mine. What’s suitable for you might not be suitable for me. I want to cultivate like a spirit of raging flames, which would break rather than bend and not gracefully control flames like water, do

you understand?”

With Gao Yue's nature, she would indeed rather die than submitting, otherwise she would not have chosen that kind of option under the Greatest Heaven Sect's pressure. Currently, Yang Chen had no way dissuade her and could only sigh with regret in his heart. It seemed that this time's probe had already been defeated.

Fortunately, Yang Chen knew that Gao Yue was not someone who could be easily persuaded. Until he revealed the secret about her postnatal water attributed full spirit, Gao Yue would absolutely not agree to cultivate a water attributed cultivation method. Yang Chen intended to continue to hide this secret for the time being, until he could find some more powerful people to be recruited for the Pure Yang Palace.

This topic was a casual discussion between a master and disciple and hadn't strained the relationship between them. Yang Chen asked Gao Yue some questions as before and afterwards left her by herself to ponder, and returned to his room.

The elders had long ago departed from the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, so he had a lot of free time. Finding the time, Yang Chen went to take a look for other people at the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. Regardless of whether it was Du Qian, Shangguan Feng or Wang Yuan, everyone was diligently cultivating. Such a great cultivation environment like the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard was occupied by these people, every one of them knew the preciousness of this opportunity.

Yang Chen's four servants had also performed pretty good. Within the time they spent in the Second Fierce Yang Hall, they had cultivated even more painstakingly; and within a period of just two years, they had vigorously forged ahead in their cultivation. Every one of them had stepped into the seventh qi layer. Looking at this trend, within ten years, they would surely reach the Foundation stage.

As for Yang Chen, he had stayed in the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard to consolidate his current realm properly. All ten types of Spirit Power at the Foundation stage required a substantial amount of Spirit Power each day for cultivation. Every day, apart from using Profound Yang Fruits, he still required a large amount of the Di Mai's abundant Spirit Power at the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

But Yang Chen had only cultivated in the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard for one month when suddenly he recalled an important matter.

A cultivation talent in his previous life, the one who had already sowed karma with Yang Chen at the execution ground, Sun Qing Xue, apparently also had cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets. Since fate had already made them meet and Sun Qing Xue moreover had a favourable impression of Yang Chen, Yang Chen did not mind stopping her from following the same disastrous road again.

Wanting to cultivate quickly, Sun Qing Xue had cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets, but fortunately her cultivation at that time was quite shallow and only had just reached the

Foundation stage. So although it was completely wasted, after spending ten or so years, she was already able to build her foundation again. The lesson she learned had actually tempered her deposition and in the future she turned into an immortal whose name shook all three realms.

But because of this incident the innate qi in her body became insufficient. Although her natural talent was enough to make countless people go green with envy, she still couldn't compare to Shi Fairy.

Currently Yang Chen was hesitating about whether to let her go through that torment once again, which would resolve her heart, or to prevent this, allowing her to maintain that innate qi, so that she could press towards the peak of the cultivation world.

After much pondering, Yang Chen decided it would be better to prevent it. The trials in life could be encountered another time, but it was not easy to recover one's innate qi. Moreover, in Yang Chen's perspective, if he could have formidable assistance who would have heavenly achievements in the future, he naturally wished to have the most powerful assistance possible.

In this life, he had luckily been able to meet Sun Qing Xue before she could become immortal, and Sun Qing Xue was moreover grateful towards Yang Chen. This kind of opportunity had to be grabbed firmly. Previously he wasn't able to go out easily because he was at the qi layer, but he currently did not have that kind of restriction. This was just about the time when Sun Qing Xue should have been expelled from the Green Jade Immortal Island and before she would enter the Clear Sky School.



But before he left, Yang Chen did not forget to refine all of his magic weapons once at the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. Last time, just after he had reached the Foundation stage in all attributes, he had heard about the matter of Chu Heng insulting his master, so in his anger, Yang Chen hadn't even refined his magic weapons and directly left for the Desolate Valley.

The Profound Spirit Furnace, the Immortal Executing Blade, these two had to be refined. Currently Yang Chen's fifth attribute Spirit Power had been completely changed to fifth earth True Qi, and the first wood attribute had also assimilated the formidable properties of the PengLai Divine Wood. After refining this time, the crazy growth of these two magic weapons would be visible to the naked eye.

Adding onto that, the Profound Spirit Furnace had already absorbed a portion of Profound Cyan Metal Crystal, its resistance against fire could astonish anyone. Pouring in the formidable fifth earth True Qi again, the Profound Spirit Furnace had a completely different appearance after four layers of the Heavenly Stars secrets and Six layers of the Earth Fiend secrets had been refined.

At this moment, Yang Chen could finally proudly claim that the Profound Spirit Furnace was a middle grade magic tool. Compared to the time when he had obtained it, it had been upgraded by an entire realm. It had two types of flames inside, which allowed Yang Chen to refine even more powerful and higher grade elixirs, and was furthermore not limited to pill concocting.

The Immoral Executing Blade was put into the Profound Spirit

Furnace, the Cyan Profound Metal Crystal could not be refined so easily, it could only be refined by using a powerful flame like the Real Sun Fire. Again, one tenth of the Cyan Profound Metal Crystal was added into the Immortal Executing Blade, making its grade rise even higher.

After the four layers of the Heavenly Stars secrets and six layers of the Earth Fiend secrets were refined, one hundred different paths of Yang Chen's thousand and eighty Spirit Threads were already illuminated, almost ten percent. Although Yang Chen was currently consolidating his realm and hadn't tried to increase his cultivation, his attack and defense had improved considerably.

It took two months until all of this was complete. During this time, the Greatest Heaven Sect had also delivered the compensation to the sects.

The Five Phases Sect had obtained the complete Fifth Earth True Qi, and the Greatest Heaven Sect not only had to give compensation to the Five Phases Sect, but also had to offer an apology. As for the losses of the Greatest Heaven Sect in the war, nobody raised that topic. Who asked them to go against reason and steal someone else's belongings.

The few sects, as well as Elder Wu, who had mediated between the two sects, had also received their respective benefits. At least Yang Chen had known that Elder Wu had received a bottle of fifth earth True Qi from the Five Phases Sect before it was over. As for the compensation given by the Greatest Heaven Sect, that was every sect's secret, nobody made it public, but it was sure that everyone had obtained some benefits, because tightly holding on to

things and not releasing would probably be a deadly offense for the Greatest Heaven Sect.

The Pure Yang Palace had also received compensation and an apology from the Greatest Heaven Sect because of Chu Heng's matter. The Greatest Heaven Sect had to take care of this matter with extreme care if it wanted to maintain its previous position as an upright and honest sect.

The four gravely injured disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall, who had been carried back, had received four Lingzhi Gyokuro Pills in addition to a defensive magic tool. This could be considered as a huge price, even for the Greatest Heaven Sect. One Lingzhi Gyokuro Pill could heal any kind of injury for cultivators under the YuanYing stage, as long as he was not completely crippled. This was certainly a precious object which could not even be bought at an extreme price. The four Law Enforcement Hall disciples could be said to have profited from this disaster.

The apology for the Pure Yang Palace was even more generous: a cultivation method for each phase after the Foundation stage, five recipes for pills and at the same time also materials for refining various sorts of tools, but it just so happened to be enough for all Hall Masters, the Palace Master and the elders' use.

When receiving these things, the Palace Master was not happy, instead his face was absolutely grim. The Greatest Heaven Sect surprisingly did not even need to ask what kind of materials the elders needed and had taken everything out easily, apart from a compensation, this was also a demonstration of their power.

Everyone was clear about the underlying meaning, we know everything you want and what you can't find, we can easily give to you, regardless of whether it was public knowledge or inside information, the Greatest Heaven Sect was something to which a measly Pure Yang Palace could not compare. They should just take these things, shut up and understand their position.

Naturally, since they had admitted their mistake, the disciples who had committed the crime would be punished. The two pitiful JieDan disciples who had already died were made into scapegoats and all the blame was pushed onto them, including the matter of Chu Heng. Teaching him to manipulate the Spell Formation, leading to Chu Heng attacking the YuanYing stage ancestor of the Five Phases Sect, everything was the responsibility of the two deceased people.

Since the attack was done by Chu Heng, that greatly reduced the blame on the Greatest Heaven Sect, this was counting chickens before they had hatched and also stopped all sects who received their compensation from being able to say much.

Although crisis had been averted for the time being, the Greatest Heaven Sect had bled a lot this time. Several years of their hard work had gone to waste, and the losses on their side were disastrous, which had injured their overall strength. Recovering to their previous grandness would take at least ten years.

When the Greatest Heaven Sect was clearing up its mess, Yang Chen had happily stepped on the path of looking for Sun Qing Xue. But his good intentions did not persist for a long time and were completely destroyed by the female cultivator of the Blue Green

Jade Island of Immortals who was responsible for receiving the visitors.

# Chapter 120 - Today's Disgrace Must Be Repaid

---

“You are Yang Chen of the Pure Yang Palace?”

That female disciple of the Green Jade Immortal Island had a huge change in her complexion after hearing Yang Chen's name. She wanted to confirm whether he really was Pure Yang Palace's Yang Chen.

This time Yang Chen did not want to cause any trouble, he only wanted to cultivate peacefully and had come here to meet with Sun Qing Xue<sup>1</sup> while passing by, to warn her not to covet a quick increase in her cultivation by cultivating that Long Tai Spirit Supporting Method. This was his only concern..

On the whole journey Yang Chen was entirely content by himself, on one side observing everything and sensing the changes in heaven, earth and natural laws, and on the other side, hastening on his journey.

In order to show his respect for the Green Jade Immortal islands, Yang Chen didn't even use his flying sword to cross the sea and instead employed a fishing boat and personally showed the way to the Green Jade Immortal Islands.

Since its name was Green Jade Immortal Islands, naturally it was located on an island, cut off from the rest of the world, but with plentiful Spirit Power. An exceptionally good location for cultivation. Strictly speaking, the area of the island was not that

big, but the countless small islands in a thousand miles radius were all under the influence of the Green Jade Immortal Islands.

On almost all of these small islands, disciples of the Green Jade Immortal Islands had immortal caves, some high level experts had even established their water mansions below the sea.

Yang Chen was hurrying precisely to the small island nearest to him. This small island was also the gate of the Green Jade Immortal Islands to the outside world. If someone had come for a formal visit, then they had to first be admitted to this small island.

The Green Jade Immortal Islands stressed more on taking in female disciples, almost ninety percent of the disciples were female, so the person responsible for receiving a visitor was also female.

Normally speaking, Yang Chen who had slowly ferried over there and hadn't even used his flying sword in the area of influence of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, was already giving more than enough face to the Green Jade Immortal Islands, but this female disciple seemed to think of Yang Chen as a personal enemy. If it were not that she was responsible for receiving visitors, maybe she would have already attacked him.

“Precisely that is myself!”

Yang Chen was very puzzled, he had clearly stated his identity just a moment ago, but this female disciple still had to ask again. Could it be that all disciples of the Green Jade Immortal Island

were forgetful like this?

“The Green Jade Immortal Islands does not welcome you, get lost!”

After hearing Yang Chen confirm his identity, that female disciple revealed her anger and shouted towards Yang Chen standing at the gate.

In this life, Yang Chen was not that benevolent and forgiving. How could Yang Chen endure this female disciple, whom he had never met before, pointing her finger at him and insulting him?

If it was any other person getting this kind of treatment, he would have first definitely stormed out and then argued. But Yang Chen was not like that. That female disciple wanted Yang Chen to get lost, but Yang Chen did not make any movement, sitting upright at the same place and coldly snorted towards that female disciple:

“Has the Green Jade Immortal Island issued any kind of decree, that among all the people in the world, this Yang must not be allowed to enter?”

The female disciple did not dare to fabricate a rule of the Green Jade Immortal Island. Although she actually wanted to affirm this, she couldn't say anything and only glared at Yang Chen, full of rage, as if staring at her mortal enemy.



“If the Green Jade Immortal Island hasn’t decided this, then this Yang is just a guest, but you haven’t even offered a cup of tea. Is this how the Green Jade Immortal Island treat their guests?”

The other party was fuming with rage but unable to tell any underlying reason, so Yang Chen immediately realized that there had to be some ulterior motive. Then he sat even more casually, putting one leg over the other and began to argue about etiquette:

“You shouldn’t talk like this, even if we were mortal enemies. But still, I paid my respects to your sect, shouldn’t the Green Jade Immortal Island return basic courtesy like other big sects?”

Sparks were coming out of the female disciple’s eyes, but what each word Yang Chen had said was spot on. She had no choice but to accept that what he was saying was correct. But she had been receiving visitors for many years now and was extremely experienced in this matter and immediately thought of a proper response:

“This is the territory of my Green Jade Immortal Island, it’s not in the hands of an outsider like you to teach my sect about treating guests. The Green Jade Immortal Island does not welcome you, please leave!”

The female disciples tone was extremely polite and she had even used the word ‘please’, but the intention of a strong refusal was clearly conveyed. This time, if Yang Chen didn’t leave, he would certainly be the shameless one.

Standing up, Yang Chen turned around to leave. Although Yang Chen was baffled about the attitude of the people of the Green Jade Immortal Island towards him, this was their sect. Investigating too much was not proper.

Wanting to meet Shi Shan Shan was perhaps not possible for today.

Even if Yang Chen's temperament was even better, he still couldn't have suppressed the anger of being insultingly driven away by the people of the sect without any good reason. Sitting at the edge of the island, at one moment, Yang Chen had even intended to release the blood colored river within his Spirit Sea and use it to scare all people of the Green Jade Immortal Island.

“Ehh? Grandmaster Yang?”

A sudden cry of surprise reached Yang Chen's ears from not too far away, and when he looked at the direction of the sound, he saw a familiar male on a flying sword.

Addressing him as Grandmaster Yang could only be someone from the Immortal Falling Well. Yang Chen pondered about it again and immediately determined the person's identity, he was precisely the first person who had asked Yang Chen for these two foundation stage pills, Heavenly Sword Villa's Foundation stage disciple, Yong Zhu.

“So it was Fellow Daoist Yong!”

Yang Chen stood up at his position, calmly waiting for Yong Zhu<sup>2</sup> to fly over.

“What happened, Grandmaster Yang?”

Seeing that Yang Chen’s expression was not good, Yong Zhu was completely puzzled and curiously asked.

“I have been driven away by these people!”

Yang Chen did not care about anyone looking at his embarrassment, in fact until now he hadn’t fully understood what the matter was.

“What?”

Yong Zhu turned his head around to look at the gate of the Green Jade Immortal Island and that female disciple was still fiercely glaring at Yang Chen, as if she would only let the matter go after Yang Chen left. After turning back, Yong Zhu asked with astonishment:

“Grandmaster, how have you offended the Green Jade Immortal Island?”

“How should I know?”

Yang Chen shook his head, he was unable to make heads or tails

of this mystery and didn't know where to release the anger he was holding. Yong Zhu's question only added hail to the snow.

“Could there be some misunderstanding?”

Yong Zhu wrinkled his brows; even after much deliberation he couldn't think of anything. After Yang Chen had come out of the Immortal Falling Well, apart from the incident involving Chu Heng, his name had not come up a lot, he did not even have any kind of relationship with the Green Jade Immortal Island, so why was he driven away by them?

Since Yang Chen had come here, he had to have some matters to attend to, so Yong Zhu immediately found an opportunity and hastily said:

“Grandmaster Yang, wait here for a moment, I will go and make some enquiries, perhaps there is some misunderstanding.”

“No need!”

Yang Chen shook his head:

“This Yang will not go as far as to insist on this, this day's insult is certainly a great lesson. Fellow Daoist Yong if you want to, assist me in making some enquiries about the situation of a person which Shi Fairy had brought back ten years ago, Sun Qing Xue.”

He still hadn't entered the sect but was driven away, he hadn't

provoked or angered anyone, so how could Yang Chen swallow this insult. But the Green Jade Immortal Island was one of the big sects, Yang Chen could also not be too arrogant and start killing people at another sect.

But killing people was not the only way of exacting revenge against a sect. Yang Chen had plenty of methods for this. Just like the loss of the Greatest Heaven Sect at the Desolate Valley, if they would have known earlier that it was because of Chu Heng, they would absolutely have been ready to exchange ten Chu Heng's if it would stop the incident from occurring.

Turning his head around to take a last look at the gate of the Green Jade Immortal Island, Yang Chen stepped on his flying sword and departed at lightning speed. Leaving behind Yong Zhu by himself, and that female disciple of the Green Jade Immortal Island in the distance still giving him angry looks.

Making Yang Chen go away without paying any attention to rights and wrongs, this kind of insult was something Yang Chen had to pay back and moreover make the Green Jade Immortal Island bleed to the soul, but still be unable to say anything. If they knew who did it, they could take their revenge, but if they didn't know who did it, they would be forced to suffer in silence. That was the most depressing thing.

Flying on the flying sword for a while, Yang Chen's anger still hadn't dissipated when he was looking at the great ocean with violently surging waves beneath his feet and he suddenly thought of something. Unable to bear the urge, he steered the flying sword to turn around and flew towards another direction.

The Green Jade Immortal Island was located in the ocean and a place Yang Chen remembered was not very far from there. To be more precise, approximately two thousand miles away. Yang Chen rushed the flying sword with all of his strength and only had to spend three or four more days. This was nothing much, the flying sword which Yang Chen was using currently did not have a very fast speed.

These few days, Yang Chen had almost stuck to flying near the surface of the sea, originally there were many rogue cultivators in the vicinity of the Green Jade Immortal Island, but after Yang Chen had flown one thousand miles, there wasn't any signs of human presence. By the time, he had flown two thousand miles, apart from Yang Chen, only seabirds were present.

He continually released his Spiritual Awareness to look for the signs of human along the journey. The whole journey was several hundred miles long, only after finding small reef shapes did Yang Chen stop.

These several reefs illuminating the ocean surface was precisely the location he had been looking for. Yang Chen again confirmed that nobody was present and then he removed the flying sword from below his feet and directly fell into the ocean, disappeared beneath it in a flash.

After entering, Yang Chen used his Tenth Water Spirit Power; Tenth Water was precisely ocean water. Yang Chen was just like he had returned home, even within the water he was just like walking on ground.

This area of water was absolutely clear, but when one went down the sea far enough, it would turn as dark as night, nothing would be visible. From time to time, a loud, violent noise could be heard, most likely the roars of some unknown sea beasts.

Yang Chen's entire body was as if it had turned into seawater, blending in with the seawater, submerging effortlessly. He did not even have to make any movements, the Spirit Power in the surroundings was frantically rushing towards him, so for just this trivial action, he absolutely did not need to use any Spirit Power.

With this speed, Yang Chen estimated that the seabed would be around thousand meters ahead. What was even more baffling was that, when Yang Chen was travelling in this water, apart from a few small fishes or some lobsters and such, no formidable sea beasts appeared.

Once he stepped on the seabed, Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness had already explored everything long ago, this was precisely the region which Yang Chen had remembered. After he noticed a few oddly shaped sea rocks, a smile was at last revealed on Yang Chen's face.

“Right here!”

Talking loudly to himself, Yang Chen did not pay the attention to that pressure bearing upon him with the immense weight of a huge chunk of iron, and directly rushed towards that region.

A series of Spell Formations were formed by Yang Chen's hands and together with the Tenth Water attributed Spirit Power, these Spell Formations acted upon the tens of meters long cliff in front of Yang Chen.

“Begin!”

At the center of the cliff, not far from Yang Chen's feet, an entrance suddenly appeared and a beam of light from the entrance appeared in front of him.

Just at the instant the entrance appeared, Yang Chen had already entered it. Soon after Yang Chen had disappeared within the cave, the traces of the cave entrance disappeared at lightning speed and it transformed into a sea rock covered with huge coral again, nothing strange about it.

Within the cave's entrance was a long corridor, completely packed with huge rocks. Along the cave walls, some sort of symbol language was twinkling with radiance. Yang Chen remembered something, these were some sort of ancient language, if he had not used the trick just a moment ago to open the cave entrance, these characters would immediately have turned into sharp weapon which would have demanded his life.

After passing through the corridor, he came across a huge open space. The huge space was completely covered with bright floor tiles. The surrounding area was filled with huge night pearls. The light was completely reflected by the floor, so the entire region was well lit, even more so than during the day.



Yang Chen stopped at the edge of that large open space. Within his memories, he went over all of the fine details about it and soon after that he launched a series of signal Spell Formations, together with some Tenth Water Spirit Power to attack the open space.

Immediately some changes began to happen with the bright open space, it no longer had that bright and smooth appearance but in its place a huge Nautical Map appeared. If a high level expert looked at it from high above, he would surely discover that the huge Nautical Map in front of Yang Chen was precisely a Map of this ocean.

On top of the huge Nautical Map, the blue colored sea surface, as well as the islands were extremely clear. With the region below his feet as the center, the entire ocean in the surroundings was included entirely within this huge Nautical Map. All of the Green Jade Immortal Island's several hundred islands only occupied a very small fragment within this huge area.

On this huge Spell Formation, there were several, continuously extending, bright spots;, some big, some small. The Green Jade Immortal Islands were precisely these bright and small spots, flickering continuously.

Yang Chen simply did not care about anything else and directly walked to the region of the Green Jade Immortal Island and fished out the bottle of the Medicine Garden. Because of the PengLai wood trees last time, the remaining Spirit Power was only one tenth of the original.

He bent down and placed the bottle on the brightest spot and soon after that extended his hand again to form another Spell Formation.

“Without any grievances or hatred, without any cause or reason, you insulted and drove me away, Green Jade Immortal Islands.”

The Spell Formation within Yang Chen’s hands entered the brightest spot.

“I am not a pushover, as revenge I will take away ten years of your Spirit Power, Green Jade Immortal Islands!”

---

[1](#) Introduced in chapter 33

[2](#) Introduced in Chapter 69

# Chapter 121 - The Treasure At The Dragon King's Palace

---

This cave at the seabed was a secret treasure house which the Dragon King had told Yang Chen about, when he was beheading him. This huge open space at the bottom of the sea was also a magic tool to control the ocean within the palace of the Dragon King at the bottom of the sea, the East Sea Nautical Map.

The East Sea Nautical Map was able to illustrate all mountains or creeks above the sea bed, even including the topography of the sea bed. On top of it was the distribution of formidable ocean beasts and at the same time also the distribution of Spirit Veins within the ocean.

Those bright spots were precisely the distribution within the East Sea, every bright spot meant a Spirit Vein and the size and illumination showed the Spirit Power concentration of the Spirit Vein. The larger and the brighter, represented clearly how much more Spirit Power the Spirit Vein had.

The Green Jade Immortal Islands were within the territory of the East Sea, naturally they had to accept the control of the Dragon King of the East Sea, but the Dragon King of the East Sea [1](#) had long ago concealed this place, so even the currently acknowledged Dragon King didn't have this treasure.

This Nautical Map of the East Sea furthermore had a very important use, that was that the person controlling it could move the Spirit Power within the East Sea Territory however he wished.

Yang Chen thoroughly understood how to control the tricks of this treasure and he could extract and move the Spirit Power within these Spirit Veins at all times.

Placing the Bottle of the Medicine Garden on top of the area representing the Green Jade Immortal Island, Yang Chen began to exhaust the Spirit Veins from the Nautical Map of the East Sea.

The region occupied by the Green Jade Immortal Island was indeed a region with abundant Spirit Power: a large number of their veins were enough to rival the master vein of the Pure Yang Palace. These formidable veins had also contributed to the countless experts of the Green Jade Immortal Islands and also made the Green Jade Immortal Islands one of the top sects.

Without caring for any of these, Yang Chen was solely engrossed in controlling the Nautical Map and began to extract the Spirit Power of that region. Immediately, only slight traces of the hundred, previously bright, spots remained, and a thin thread of Water Essence had congealed in the surroundings of the bottle and started entering it.

The congealing speed greatly astonished Yang Chen. The bottle which had required a whole year to be completely filled at the Immortal Falling Well had already been filled by so much within such a brief time, at lightning speed. If this continued, then it would only be a matter of a few hours before it was filled completely.

This was moreover the purest type of tenth water Spirit Power, it basically did not require any kind of transformation and could be

absorbed by the bottle of the Medicine Garden directly. Such a great thing, where else could he find it?

What made Yang Chen most happy was that this enormous amount of Spirit Power, was already sufficient to allow him to refine the bottle of the Medicine Garden. What Yang Chen had been able to do previously was at most to receive the medicine garden and lay down an imprint of his Spiritual Awareness, so that the defending sword spell would not attack him, but refining it properly was a completely different matter.

The refining would allow the Medicine Garden to become even more formidable as well as become a treasure intimately bound to Yang Chen. This Medicine Garden was such a luxurious natural resource, how could Yang Chen not treasure it?

The Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets were unleashed at lightning speed and began the first layer of refining. Previously, because his cultivation was not sufficient and he did not have an enormous supply of Spirit Power, he could not have done anything about it. Even at the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard Yang Chen was not willing to thoroughly extract the Spirit Power of that Di Mai for this kind of thing.

But currently, after the female disciple of the Green Jade Immortal Islands had insulted and driven away Yang Chen without any cause or concern, how could Yang Chen still be courteous? He directly extracted about half of the Green Jade Immortal Islands' Spirit Power. The enormous amount of Spirit Power was enough to allow Yang Chen to completely refine the medicine garden to the first layer.

But the grade of Medicine Garden was very high, refining it forcefully was just barely enough and he needed to fully concentrate on this. This region of the ocean was completely deserted, with only Yang Chen present so he could concentrate fully on refining and had no need to be vigilant.

Even if Yang Chen was already at the Foundation stage and moreover all attributes of the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets were at the Foundation stage and he was also already able to use the fourth layer of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets, in front of the Yang Mountain Medicine Garden, he could only refine the first layer of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets.

The Medicine Garden had transformed into a bottomless pit for Spirit Power and began to crazily absorb the Spirit Power, which was also purifying its main body, under Yang Chen's control, allowing it to become even more purified. This process lasted for a whole twenty days. Only then was the first level of the cleansing by Spirit Power completed.

Following this, it was permeated by all types of Spirit Power, each of them inserting the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets trace by trace, as if demanding to completely absorb the entire Spirit Power within Yang Chen's body. The Spirit Power transmitted by the Nautical Map was crazily transformed into Yang Chen's Spirit Power, which allowed him to sustain the consumption by the medicine garden.

Even though it was hard work, Yang Chen did not stop for even

for a moment; whether it was day or night, he continued to refine. The Spirit Power of other attributes was still not bad, but when the fifth earth True Qi began its refining, small changes suddenly appeared in the bottle of the medicine garden.

The soil in the Medicine Garden was apparently just crudely selected and refined afterwards, but after suddenly receiving the nourishment of the fifth earth True Qi, with this kind of origin Spirit Power, the soil began to transform quickly.

It seemed as if dark oil was added in the yellow soil, frantically absorbing and transforming. A part of the ground had already turned black. Those cultivation resources growing on it were also as if they had received some nourishment and began to grow quickly.

Immersed in the refining, Yang Chen couldn't even sense the passing of time. The Spirit Power within his body was crazily used up, leaving none behind and afterwards, Spirit Power entered from outside of his body and transformed at lightning speed. Then it was used up again, once again leaving nothing behind. This cycle continued for a long time.

After Yang Chen had reached the Foundation stage, what he needed to do was to consolidate his realm. What was meant by consolidating the realm was precisely to allow him to get completely familiar with the conditions of the meridians in his body, allowing him to get familiar with the cultivation of this realm and the consumption of Spirit Power, so that he would be able to adapt and not lose a realm due to the backlash after consuming an enormous amount of Spirit Power.

The most simple method for this was training for a long period of time. But what Yang Chen was doing currently was precisely something which could be described as that kind of enormous consumption of Spirit Power. But the most fortunate thing was, that his body had an unending stream of Spirit Power, so he didn't need to worry about being unable to absorb Spirit Power, or that perhaps his Spirit Power absorption rate was not sufficient, leading him to lose a realm of cultivation.

The Green Jade Immortal Islands and Yang Chen had no hatred in his previous life, therefore Yang Chen would not do such a thing as destroying their foundation. But Yang Chen was also not someone who allowed others to insult him for no reason, so he had to teach them a lesson.

When the soil within the Medicine Garden had transformed into fertile black earth, which was full of fifth earth True Qi, the bottle of the medicine garden shook once and then produced a brilliant white light, signifying that the first layer of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets had already been refined completely.

At this moment, Yang Chen was counting the time that had passed since he had started refining on his fingers and two months had already passed. Within these two months, the Green Jade Immortal Islands would have probably sunken into chaos.

The Spirit Power emitting rate of the Spirit Veins previously filled with Spirit Power had suddenly slowed by many times, and the Spirit Power rushing forth had also become thinner by much. Any person who was cultivating could sense this situation clearly.



Originally the people had believed that the Spirit Power in the Spirit Vein at their location had dried up and that's why this was happening, but when the news was reported to the higher ups, the elders of the Green Jade Immortal Islands discovered that this kind of situation was happening throughout the entire Green Jade Immortal Islands.

In the end, nobody knew what had happened. Several YuanYing stage expert immediately began their investigation and even a Da Cheng stage expert in seclusion was disturbed, but even after one month of thorough investigation, no results were obtained.

The Green Jade Immortal Islands was as if facing a huge enemy. Everyone knew what the drying up of their Spirit Veins implied. Everyone who knew about this matter, was asked to seal their mouths. Countless disciples were ordered to go out and look for any suspicious signs in a radius of two thousand miles.

Since such a big affair had happened, those female disciples at the gateway were also called back and investigated regarding what had happened recently. Who had come, what did they want, every single piece of information was thoroughly inquired about. Maybe something among this information was related to this affair.

Everyone knew how critical this situation was, so nobody dared to hide anything and told them about who had visited and regarding what happened very clearly one after another, allowing the higher ups of the sect to analyze them.

When the time of Qi Yun Rou, the one who was responsible at the time when Yang Chen had visited, she told them very clearly about everything, but was hesitating whether or not to tell them regarding Yang Chen's matters, but having been seen through by the elder responsible for the investigation, he asked her strictly:

“Are you still hiding something?”

“Disciple does not dare!”

Qi Yun Rou hastily replied and afterwards, clenching her teeth, began to speak about the matter of driving Yang Chen away.

“He had come for an official visit, why did you drive him away?”

The investigating elder deeply wrinkled his brows, his eyes fixed on Qi Yun Rou, he suddenly asked:

“Do you have some hatred towards the Pure Yang Palace?”

“No, elder!”

Qi Yun Rou hastily replied.

“Then do you have any hatred towards this Yang Chen?”

The elder asked again, he had to clearly inquire about this

matter, maybe something important was concealed in this.

“I do not, elder!”

Qi Yun Rou replied by shaking her head.

“That youngster, Pure Yang Palace’s Yang Chen, did he show proper etiquette or was he arrogant?”

The elder wrinkled his brows even more, the questions also became more and more pointed.

“He was not, elder!”

Qi Yun Rou was feeling wronged all of a sudden, why was the elder asking her these things?

“Then how did he come, you must know, right?”

The elder had already loosened his brows, but nobody among the female disciples responsible for receiving visitors in the surroundings dared to make any sound. They all knew about this elder’s temperament, the angrier he was, the friendlier he seemed. Even when his brows were not wrinkled, he was clearly a little angry.

“He had come in on a boat.”

Qi Yun Rou remembered everything very clearly, from the time Yang Chen had landed on the coast to the time he had been at the gate.

“Then what do you think, could he use a flying sword or not?”

The elder asked again, nicely.

“He could, elder!”

Qi Yun Rou didn’t dare to be neglectful and replied quickly:

“When he was departing, he left using a flying sword.”

“Oh, so it was like this!”

The elder nodded his head, he seemingly recalled something suddenly and he asked with a consulting tone:

“Qi Yun Rou, what do you say, since he could use a flying sword, why did he use a boat to come here?”

It was not like nobody had come using a boat before, so Qi Yun Rou naturally knew the reason. Currently she had a faint feeling that things were far from encouraging, but she also had to reply to the elder’s question and could only reply, bracing herself:

“He had come using a boat, to convey his respects for my Green Jade Immortal Islands!”

“Yes, he wanted to convey his respects to my Green Jade Immortal Islands, therefore he came by boat!”

The elder nodded his head, using a tone as if he had suddenly gained enlightenment. Suddenly he said:

“But unfortunately, you had no grievance or hatred towards him and the Pure Yang Palace hadn’t provoked you and the Pure Yang Palace had also not offended my Green Jade Immortal Islands. Someone else’s disciple came to visit us in good faith, but you have driven him away. Is this how my Green Jade Immortal Islands treat fellow daoists of the same path<sup>2</sup>?

The elder’s tone was very kind, but Qi Yun Rou did not dare to remain standing anymore and hastily knelt down on the ground, knocking her head against the ground, not daring to lift it up anymore.

The Green Jade Immortal Islands was one of the big sects, so it had to pay clear attention to these etiquettes. As the disciple responsible for greeting visitors, going so far as to neglect a visitor, not just neglecting, simply insulting the visitor, this was precisely throwing away the face of Green Jade Immortal Islands.

Let alone Yang Chen being a fellow daoist, even if he was a mortal enemy, since he had given them respect, they also had to respect him back. Even if they had to fight a huge battle, they still

had to wait until the situation had changed. But Qi Yun Rou had gone too far handling the matters like this, how could the elder not be angry?

“Elder, junior apprentice sister Qi has just recently joined the outer disciples and does not understand all of the rules! I request elder to to be lenient in her punishment!”

The responsibility of receiving visitors was naturally not only with Qi Yun Rou, one person of the other senior and junior apprentice sisters on duty said this, and immediately they all kneeled on the ground, pleading for leniency over Qi Yun Rou’s matter.

“Qi Yun Rou, you give me a good reason. If your reason is justifiable, then I will also not punish you!”

The elder was not someone who did not allow people to speak their reason, glancing at everyone kneeling down asking for leniency for her, his gaze rested on Qi Yun Rou again.

“This disciple... disciple... had heard that he had used despicable means to climb to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, thus surpassing senior apprentice sister Shi’s record. The troubled senior apprentice sister Shi has been in seclusion, cultivating painstakingly ever since the news had come through.”

Qi Yun Rou lifted her head and explained to the elder in a pitiful tone:

“He made senior apprentice sister suffer through that sort of hardship, therefore, this disciple thought...thought...”

“In your opinion, is your senior apprentice sister Shi someone who can’t accept a defeat?”

The Elder said this in one breath and then slowly asked:

“My Green Jade Immortal Islands also can’t accept a fair defeat, is that right?”

“Disciple does not dare!”

Qi Yun Rou hastily kowtowed again:

“Disciple only thought that he had cheated to climb the Heavenly Stairs and he had also used Senior Apprentice Sister Shi’s name to abuse people in the Pure Yang Palace before, he even made the Merit Transferring Disciple let him leave when he just at the qi layer, therefore.....”

“Therefore you thought of teaching him a lesson, is that right?”

Affection or tenderness had already appeared on the elder’s face and his tone was also gentle.

“Yes, elder, this disciple only thought of teaching him a lesson, that’s all!”

Qi Yun Rou did not dare to lift her head again, nor could she look at the elder's expression and replied while kowtowing.

“How did you know that he used despicable and shameless means to climb to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs?”

The elder continued to ask while shaking his head:

“And moreover how do you know that he used the name of your senior apprentice sister inside the Pure Yang Palace to oppress people?”

“This disciple was told by Greatest Heaven Sect's Fellow Daoist Li.”

This time Qi Yun Rou didn't dare to hide anything and revealed everything:

“Last time when Fellow Daoist Li had come to visit Senior Apprentice Shi, he said this.”

---

[1](#) The Dragon King is the ruler of the East China Sea in traditional Chinese literature

[2](#) The same path as in devil path or righteous path



# Chapter 122 - Can Only Look But Not Collect

---

“He said this, but have you seen this with your own eyes?”

As if the elder had intended to give Qi Yun Rou a lesson for a lifetime, he asked about every detail clearly.

“No, elder!”

Qi Yun Rou knocked her head on the ground again, not daring to make any movement, only able to drop her head in response.

“Then you must have confirmed it from various sides and not just dismissed him by listening to just one side, right?”

The elder again asked.

“I haven’t, elder!”

Qi Yun Rou also did not dare to say any useless words, and replied at lightning speed.

“Then I will tell you the truth!”

The elder took a deep sigh and slowly said:

“You say Yang Chen has used shameless and despicable methods

to climb to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs. At that time, Cheng Wen Cai of the Greatest Heaven Sect also had questioned this, so afterwards he gathered ten JieDan experts to initiate the Heavenly Stairs again, but Yang Chen was yet again successful in climbing the Heavenly Stairs, Cheng Wen Cai and other nine on the other hand had decided to go against the established precedents and had attacked Yang Chen and thus suffered backlash.”

“He didn’t cheat, only, before he became a cultivator, he was an executioner. He had killed many people, so the land of illusions were unable to affect him.”

The elder who clearly knew about all the details spoke quickly.

“As for you saying that he had used your Senior Apprentice Sister Shi’s name to bully the Merit Transferring Disciple...”

The Elder paused.

“Although I don’t know the exact details, but that Merit Transferring Disciple betrayed the Pure Yang Palace and became the sect’s traitor.”

“Surely you would remember the Greatest Heaven Sect’s matter at the Desolate Valley? They harboured evil intentions towards the Five Phases Sect. The reason this matter had come out was precisely because of that traitor, Chu Heng.”

The Green Jade Immortal Islands was one of the big sects which

had personally stepped in to mediate between the Five Phases Sect and the Greatest Heaven Sect, therefore he was extremely clear about this matter:

“Moreover, this Chu Heng was a close friend of Li Qing Chen of the Greatest Heaven Sect. That Fellow Daoist Li you were talking about would probably be him, right?”

“Yes, elder!”

Qi Yun Rou completely hadn’t anticipated that there would be such a deep backstory. She had been painstakingly cultivating all this time, so she had paid no attention to outside matters, how could she know so many matters had occurred?

“Only relying on Li Qing Chen’s opinion, you have driven away Pure Yang Palace’s Yang Chen.”

The elder suddenly smiled:

“Previously, Yang Chen had come using a boat for the visit. When that Li Qing Chen had come, did he also use a boat?”

“He did not, elder!”

Qi Yun Rou was almost at the point of weeping, how could she have thought that a trifling person like Yang Chen would make her incur the elder’s rage like this?

“Since you don’t understand the ways of the world and don’t know how to distinguish between right or wrong, making a mistake is difficult to avoid.”

The elder had finally made a decision:

“Fine then, you can go to the Law Enforcement Hall yourself to receive your punishment! Seal half of your cultivation base and go to a city to temper yourself, when you start understanding the world, you will be able to open your seals and come back to the island for cultivation at that time!”

“Yes, elder!”

Qi Yun Rou did not dare to say anything more and obediently replied.

The punishment for Qi Yun Rou was merely a minor disturbance, which was quickly engulfed in the major matter of the drying up of the spirit veins. After the first two months of great chaos at the Green Jade Immortal Island, the Spirit Power of the Spirit Veins suddenly returned to normal again, as if nothing had happened in the last two months.

At this time, Yang Chen was holding the Bottle of the Medicine Garden within his hand and was laughing loudly. The bottle within his hand had been passed through the first layer of refining by the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets. Adding onto that the nourishment by the fifth earth True Qi, its grade had risen

greatly.

The size of the Medicine Garden's space had increased by several tens of hectares, but the growth of those herbs within the garden made him even more happy. Under the nourishment of the fifth earth True Qi, although they hadn't matured much, their quality had increased greatly, with at least a thirty percent increase in their medicinal efficacy.

Under the nourishment of the enormous amount of Spirit Power and fifth earth True Qi, the original piece of master root that had been cut off by Yang Chen had already been completely restored and all of the PengLai Divine Wood branches had grown a lot taller compared to before. Originally it was only three meters tall, now it had increased to more than six meters. The thickness of the trunk, which was only thigh thick initially, had also changed to being as thick as a waist, which made him very happy.

The bottle had been completely filled with Spirit Power, recovering its azure color. The bottle's lid was similarly full of golden Spirit Power.

The more Yang Chen looked at it, the more delighted he became. There were numerous Spirit Veins in this ocean, all of them scattered completely, but if Yang Chen wanted to, he could find sufficient Spirit Veins for cultivation.

This was only one use of the magic tool 'Nautical Map of the East Sea'. Actually the huge rock in which Yang Chen was concealed was a treasury left behind by the Dragon King of the East Sea.

The riches in the palace of the Dragon King were something coveted by everyone. As the Dragon King, he had no option but to carefully conceal all of the most precious items as he could not arrange them brazenly at his palace.

This was the treasury where the real treasures of the Dragon King were hidden. The items there were absolutely not as low-quality as the publicly displayed giant machete or the 3600 catties nine pronged trident, or the 7200 catties Heavenly Halberd, or the 13500 catties stick and so on, placed in the open to scare people.

Things that only rely on weight to scare people are certainly not any high grade material, not even worth looking at for Yang Chen. Those things, apart from changing shape, didn't have any other use. They were also only suitable for people who depend only on brute force.

The Nautical Map of the East Sea was the first treasure within the treasury. Walking past this huge space which formed the Nautical Map of the East Sea, was a lofty palace. The palace was a dazzling sight, richly ornamented and had an aura of treasures soaring to the heavens. Not to mention other things, just this palace alone had surpassed any other palace in the mortal world. Even compared to the Heavenly Palace in Yang Chen's memory of his previous life, this palace did not lose by much.

Walking to the center of the palace, he saw two huge jaden gold scallop shells, arranged on the broad throne at the center of the palace hall. The mouth of shell was widely opened and within the center of the shell an extremely bright pearl was placed. From the

pearl a wave of Dragon Qi was being emitted, which could make anyone shiver. Even Yang Chen needed to release a little bit of his blood colored Spiritual Awareness to resist it.

This was a pure Dragon Pearl, the number one treasure within this palace hall. Within the entire palace hall, apart from the Dragon Throne directly facing the gate, there were still eight tables in the surroundings. On top of each was a different type of thing, every one of them was releasing a bright treasure aura, which dazzled people and stunned them, and making them feel an urge to continue even if they didn't want to.

One picture scroll, one long rope, one bottle gourd, one pointed shuttle, two forks like a pair of antlers, one small golden ball and a cup filled with water, on top of the eight tables, these eight things were placed. All of these things seemed extremely delicate, but all of them were at most two feet in size. The difference from the Dragon Pearl was that these things weren't emitting any sort of presence.

Before his rebirth, Yang Chen hadn't seen even one of them. Because in his previous life, these things were too far from his reach. But in this life they would all belong to him.

Although the appearance of these eight objects was ordinary, Yang Chen knew that, since the Dragon King had concealed them there, these were absolutely great treasures which could make anyone drool. Compared to these, those things with just a lot of weight and a big and mysterious appearance were just garbage.

Completely ecstatic, Yang Chen directly rushed into the main

palace hall. Naturally, bearing the brunt of his greed was that large dragon pearl. But as soon as he reached the region three meters in front of the Dragon Throne and tried to take a step forward in his excitement, a barrier of light suddenly appeared, barring his way. Regardless of whatever method he tried, Yang Chen was unable to step forward.

The Dragon King of the East Sea had once raised this point: the concealed treasures within the Palace of the Dragon King, all of them had a cultivation restriction. Only if their cultivation could support it, could people break through the Spell Formation and enter the main hall.

There was another way for this too, that was to refine the entire treasury of the palace into one's own magic tool. But this method was even more difficult than the previous one. At least before Yang Chen reached the YuanYing stage, he could not even think about it.

Although Yang Chen could only look at these things, this did not dampen his excitement. These were the concealed treasures of the Dragon King! These tightly hidden goods were already the finest kind of magic tools in the mortal world. So many precious treasures were placed there, waiting for Yang Chen to collect them slowly.

The Dragon Pearl was clearly the core treasure of the palace hall, but Yang Chen had no way to collect it. Having no other option, Yang Chen turned to other regions. Yang Chen attempted all of the jade tables once, but apart from one, he was unable to access the others. The only one which he could access was that one pointed



shuttle.

With great excitement, Yang Chen quickly went to the edge of the table and picked up the pointed shuttle and delicately sized it up.

This pointed shuttle seemed to be made of gold but was not gold, seemed to be made of jade but was not jade. For some time Yang Chen was unable to determine which material it was manufactured from. Both of its ends were pointed, as if two speed boats had been fitted together.

His Spiritual Awareness explored the pointed shuttle, inside there was no trace of the original master's Spiritual Awareness, surely it was the Dragon King's concealed treasure. With ease, Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness laid down an imprint of his own Spiritual Awareness at the core of the Pointed Shuttle. For the time being, this was enough to add the pointed shuttle to Yang Chen's possessions.

A moment after becoming its master, Yang Chen immediately discovered the use of this pointed shuttle. This pointed shuttle was a flying tool, comparable to Elder Wu's Heaven Fleeing Shuttle. But what made it more formidable compared to Heaven Fleeing Shuttle was that not only could it rapidly fly in the sky, it could also move at high speed within water. What surprised Yang Chen even more was that it could still move effortlessly on land, only compared to the sky and water, the speed was a little lower.

This kind of precious item was just a well timed assistance for Yang Chen. Among Yang Chen's flying swords, there was none

specialized in speed. The speed of controlled swords was pretty ordinary and he lacked a magic tool which could fly at high speeds. Who could have thought he would find it among the treasures hidden within the Dragon King's Treasury?

This pointed shuttle didn't have any name, so according to its properties, Yang Chen thought of an extremely simple name: Flying Shuttle. For Yang Chen, this was only a tool for flying nothing more. It wasn't worth choosing a dominating name, like Nine Heavens Tenth Earth Magical Fleeing Shuttle or something like that, absolutely pointless.

With a thought from him, the Flying Shuttle turned into a huge sailboat. This was another form of the Flying Shuttle, which was used to float on water. The speed could be controlled by Yang Chen just by his intentions. Although it was a sailing boat, this appearance was merely an ornament, for actually moving it still required Spirit Power. Naturally, when truly exhausted, it could also make use of the natural winds, but at that time the Flying Shuttle would only be like a normal sailboat.

The Flying Shuttle had already been refined by the Dragon King, so with Yang Chen's current level it was unthinkable for him to continue refining. Being perfectly satisfied with receiving the Flying Shuttle, Yang Chen began to move towards the backside of the palace. He had already received so many surprises in the front, what would the backside have?

At the back there was a huge group of palace halls, manufactured in accordance with the Dragon King's palace's style. All kinds of living facilities were available inside, everything that one could

think of. Yang Chen knew that this hidden treasury was originally another palace prepared by the Dragon King for himself, though it was unknown whether it was a plan to fall back on it in times of need or just a golden house to keep his mistress. In any case, currently all of this would help Yang Chen.

These halls formed a confinement, on the inside, it had bedroom, a kitchen, a study, a drawing room and so on. All of the facilities were installed completely, and all of the things inside could dumbfound anyone. Any random item, even a teacup or a tray, if it was shown off to any imperial palace of this mortal world, it could easily make the emperor die from shame.

This was simply a natural cultivation cave and moreover an immortal cave with extremely abundant Spirit Power. Compared to Yang Chen's Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, it was more formidable by multiple times. The only unfortunate thing was that Yang Chen could not collect it for the time being and could only hide this region, so that when his strength had sufficiently increased, he could come back again.

After walking around once through the Dragon King's palace, the more Yang Chen saw, the more he grew fond of it. In his previous life, until he had died, he did not own a decent immortal cave, the irony being that, in this life, he could possess the best immortal cave in the mortal world after a short while.

After resting for some time in the immortal cave, Yang Chen estimated that after the chaos for two months, the Green Jade Immortal Islands would have discovered that the Spirit Veins had returned to normal again. He departed from the palace of the

Dragon King and, using the Flying Shuttle, directly rushed to the entrance of the Green Jade Immortal Islands.

Within the Flying Shuttle, Yang Chen happily discovered that this Flying Shuttle was so perfectly refined, that Yang Chen did not even need to input Spirit Power, as long as he entered enough Spirit Stones, it was capable of extracting the Spirit Power from the Spirit Stones and use it for flying. Without much hesitation, Yang Chen directly put one of the top grade Spirit Stones, which he had obtained from the Mountain God's place, into it and started enjoying the sensation of flying on the seabed.

The circumstances on the outside could be clearly seen from the inside, but currently, deep within the sea, where everything was pitch black, the surroundings could only be probed by Spiritual Awareness. In his path, every kind of sea beast started to appear, from extremely formidable to very weak. Several powerful beasts also sensed the existence of the Flying Shuttle and wanted to attack it, but in front of the extremely fast speed of the Flying Shuttle, they could only give up.

While coming there from the Green Jade Immortal Islands using his flying sword, Yang Chen had to spend several days, but using the flying shuttle, he only needed a few hours to reach the area.

Collecting the Flying Shuttle, Yang Chen rushed to the surface of the sea and once again used his flying sword to reach the beach outside of the entrance gate. He had entrusted Yong Zhu with the matter of making enquiries about Sun Qing Xue. At that time, they hadn't agreed about the meeting place, so Yang Chen could only try his luck.

## Chapter 123 - A Confrontation It Is Then

---

Yang Chen had underestimated his position within Yong Zhu's mind, as soon as his figure emerged on the beach, he immediately heard Yong Zhu's surprised voice.

“Grandmaster Yang! Myself has waited for you for two whole months!”

Just as Yang Chen had put away his flying sword, Yong Zhu's voice reached his ears. Immediately looking over, Yong Zhu's figure appeared in his view.

“Sorry for the troubles, fellow daoist Yong!”

Yang Chen smiled, this Yong Zhu had waited for him, so this much courtesy was normal. Although Yang Chen had killed a lot of people, he was still not someone who did not understand the ways of the world.

“Grandmaster, when you were not here, a lot of things happened.”

Yong Zhu lamented. At that time the Green Jade Immortal Islands had suddenly taken on a vicious temper and called all loose cultivators and fellow daoists of the same path together and imprisoned them. Every person was asked in detail why they had come to this place, as if they were some kind of thieves. This had really given them a scare.

One of the few big names in the Mortal World suddenly showing such menace made them keep quiet in fear. Nobody dared to say anything and they obediently accepted the arrangements of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, with nobody daring to rebel.

Fortunately, Yong Zhu was considered as an acquaintance, he had friendly relations with some disciples of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, so his situation was a lot better when compared to others. Taking advantage of the opportunity that came from being investigated, Yong Zhu who had known nothing, had quietly asked about the whereabouts of Sun QingXue.

Yang Chen was astonished to find out that the Green Jade Immortal Islands didn't have any disciple by the name of Sun QingXue. Hearing this, Yang Chen was at loss. Could it be that Shi ShanShan hadn't taken Sun QingXue to the Green Jade Immortal Islands? Sun QingXue had a postnatal full spirit root, even though the innate spirit root was different, how could it be possible that she could not fancy the Green Jade Immortal Islands?

But regardless of what was said, the Green Jade Immortal Island didn't have any disciple named Sun QingXue. If he wanted to find her whereabouts, Yang Chen had to look for Shi ShanShan and ask her about it clearly.

If he wanted to find Shi Shan Shan, maybe he would have to go through last time's embarrassment again. Yang Chen wrinkled his brows, he was pondering if he was rushing in trying to establish friendly relations with Sun QingXue. Although he had sown karma with her, and the feeling from that time was moreover pretty

good, but if he had to be disgraced by that female disciple of the Green Jade Immortal Islands again, then Yang Chen was not again willing to go through that.

While he was hesitating, somebody had already seen Yang Chen. She was also a female disciple of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, responsible for receiving visitors, moreover she was also there at the time when Qi Sun Rou had embarrassed Yang Chen, only she had not interfered personally.

After Qi Sun Rou had been punished by the elder, she had her cultivation sealed and had been sent to a city to temper her nature. These female disciples didn't dare to be neglectful, seeing Yang Chen, she hastily rushed over there and slightly bowed to him:

“Could it be fellow daoist Yang? Since Sire honored us with his presence, how may I help Sire?”

This exchange left Yang Chen puzzled, could it be that his extracting of spirit power really had an effect on them and they changed their behaviour? But since the other party had asked him, Yang Chen would also not hide. In any case, he had already said that last time, this time he didn't need to say many things, even if he didn't succeed, Yang Chen would remain indifferent.

“Myself is looking to meet with your sect's Shi Fairy, to ask about someone.”

Since the other person was polite, Yang Chen would also be polite and revealed his goal.

“Let me first invite fellow daoist Yang! I will immediately notify Senior Apprentice Sister Shi!”

This female disciple responsible for receiving visitors hadn't even led Yang Chen to the lounge and had already replied. Her reaction puzzled Yang Chen even more, not knowing how such a switch from arrogance to deference had come.

But this was also good. Since the attitude of the Green Jade Immortal Islands had suddenly changed, Yang Chen would also not let the previous incident affect the relationship between him and Sun fairy.

Yang Chen settled himself within the visitor's residence of the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Yong Zhu didn't care much about appearances and immediately followed after Yang Chen. He would become a joke if he missed any opportunity to become friends with a pill concocting master who could refine a second grade foundation stage pill while he had just reached the Foundation stage himself.

While waiting for Shi ShanShan, Yang Chen was thinking about her life carefully. She had been a cultivation genius all along, whether it was within her sect or after her ascension to the Spiritual World or the Immortal World, being cold and without any mate, she had obtained the nickname of snow plum fairy.

Last time when he had seen her, Shi ShanShan was already at the peak of the Foundation stage and travelling outside. This time, she



should have already reached the JieDan stage.

The manner of the Green Jade Immortal Islands had been very proper, they didn't let Yang Chen wait for long. On one side they properly settled Yang Chen, on the other side they immediately sent a summoning flying sword back to inform the sect. The disciple there immediately informed Shi ShanShan, who was in the middle of cultivation.

“Yang Chen? Pure Yang Palace?”

Shi ShanShan basically didn't have any impression of Yang Chen. Frankly speaking, at that time at the execution grounds, meeting an ordinary executioner, although the things he had said had some impact on her, she hadn't asked Yang Chen's name at that time, so naturally she did not remember him.

But after it was mentioned that Yang Chen was from Pure Yang Palace, Shi ShanShan immediately recalled Yang Chen's identity. The Greatest Heaven Sect's Li QingChen had admired Shi ShanShan for many years and had frequently tried to get in her good graces. While talking with her, he had also mentioned some new cultivation talents and Yang Chen's name was one among them, but the comments regarding him were not particularly good.

Moreover, when Yang Chen had climbed to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, his name had greatly resonated. Naturally it had also passed to Shi ShanShan's ears. But she had only heard the name of Pure Yang Palace's Yang Chen. As for who the specific person was, she absolutely did not think of the ordinary

executioner she had met at the execution ground.

But thanks to Li QingChen, Shi ShanShan knew that Yang Chen was precisely that executioner she had met previously. When she heard that Yang Chen had wanted to meet her, Shi ShanShan was extremely baffled, but hearing that Yang Chen only wanted to know about a person's whereabouts, Shi Shan Shan immediately realized that Yang Chen wanted to know about the whereabouts of Sun QingXue.

Shi ShanShan didn't have a bad impression towards Yang Chen. An executioner kills people, although he had killed many, Yang Chen's words from that time, 'Every debt has a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, executing orders, please pardon me!', told that investigating the reason was not Yang Chen's responsibility.

But, even without caring about Li QingChen's words, Yang Chen's reputation in her mind was not very good.

Most of all, Shi Fairy had recently heard that one of her junior apprentice sisters, Qi Yun Rou, who had yet to congeal her dan had been punished because she had been driving away Yang Chen, by an elder. Although Shi ShanShan also felt that Qi Yun Rou had to travel outside to train, Yang Chen being the fuse had caused her to loathe him.

"Just when the sect is in troubled times... Fine, I will meet him and tell him about the whereabouts of Sun QingXue and immediately ask him to beat it!"

Shi ShanShan made her decision and rapidly flew towards the visitors' residences.

From Shi ShanShan's cave to the sect's visitors' residences, it was at least several hundred miles. Shi ShanShan was a core disciple, so her cave was located within the depths of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, but apparently she had a very fast flying sword. After just one night had passed and the sky turned bright, Shi ShanShan had already arrived there while Yang Chen was chatting with Yong Zhu.

Yang Chen was chatting with Yong Zhu in full swing. Yong Zhu was fond of travelling, he knew more about some recent matters than Yang Chen, which he was ecstatically explaining to him, while making gestures with his hands and feet. On the other side, Yang Chen was also concentrated on listening and nodded in agreement from time to time.

Suddenly Yang Chen made a gesture with his hand to stop him and his gaze turned outside. Yong Zhu was also startled, then he also hastily turned his gaze to the outside and saw a white figure flash through the sky. In the next moment, Shi ShanShan's cool and elegant face appeared in front of the two of them.

Nobody had had said anything when Shi ShanShan had already turned towards Yang Chen's face. Only after glancing at him for few seconds did her gaze turn again, to Yong Zhu's body this time. When looking at Yang Chen, there was nothing in her gaze, but when looking at Yong Zhu, a trace of shine flashed through her eyes.

A portion of the formless pressure of a JieDan stage expert pressed upon Yong Zhu, who was at the peak of the Foundation stage. He immediately realized that he was wedged between Shi Fairy and Yang Chen and had perhaps was causing some inconvenience.

“Ah, Myself has suddenly remembered something, I still haven’t paid a visit to a good friend of mine, that won’t do, I will immediately hurry over to meet him!”

Facing the cold as frost Shi Fairy, Yong Zhu immediately understood his wrongs and using the pretense of meeting a friend, he immediately rushed out of there, not even daring to turn his head.

Shi Shan Shan’s gaze turned to Yang Chen again, but the recent pressure which was put on Yong Zhu wasn’t removed, instead it was pressing on Yang Chen with even greater intensity.

Yang Chen did not care much about this kind of pressure, but seeing that Shi Fairy still hadn’t said anything and was pressuring him, Yang Chen couldn’t help but feel anger and said to her:

“Shi Fairy, I am an executioner, who has killed many without feeling any guilt. What I am completely unafraid of is precisely this kind of killing intent. Shi Fairy, if you have something to say, say it clearly.”

While speaking, Yang Chen was sizing up Shi Fairy’s body

without even blinking.

Shi ShanShan's appearance hadn't changed much compared to when he had met her all those years ago. In this realm, as long as Shi Fairy did not cross half of her life expectancy, her appearance would basically remain the same. But Yang Chen was unconsciously somewhat amazed by this.

If it were not for finding Sun QingXue, Yang Chen would never have taken the initiative to provoke the cool and elegant snow plum fairy of later generations.

“Why did you want to meet with me?”

Shi ShanShan coldly asked. Seeing Yang Chen wantonly gaze at her body, Shi ShanShan became more and more convinced that Yang Chen was not a good person, but since Yang Chen had properly visited her, Shi ShanShan would also not become hostile.

“I want to know the whereabouts of Sun QingXue!”

Yang Chen did not have anything in common with Shi Fairy. If he was allowed to pick, he would rather prefer people like Yong Zhu, who were entertaining to converse with and moreover knew the ways of the world. Therefore, Yang Chen's manner was not very good and he had directly asked his problem. As long as he received his answer, Yang Chen planned to immediately turn around and leave.

“Little Sister Sun has already been arranged to go to the Clear Sky Sect!”

Shi ShanShan hadn't concealed any information, even after seeing such an attitude of Yang Chen. Hearing her words, the relationship between her and Sun QingXue relationship was not that shallow, since she had used 'little sister' to address her.

Yang Chen was startled, originally he had believed that in this life, since Sun QingXue had been taken away by Shi ShanShan, would not enter her original sect, but he hadn't anticipated that, although the affairs of life were not constant, she had still entered the Clear Sky Sect.

What had truly happened was something Yang Chen could not know. It could only be assumed that he would find out the truth after he could find Sun QingXue. Thinking this, Yang Chen immediately stood up and cupped his hands towards Shi ShanShan:

“Many thanks, I will take my leave!”

Concise and compact, without any nonsense, he directly walked towards the gate of the visitors' residences, intending to leave immediately.

“Yang Chen!”

Shi ShanShan hadn't wanted to stop him. Initially she had only

wanted to take a look at this person who had used her name to bully others, but at the same time, when Yang Chen brushed past her, she suddenly thought of something and called him.

“What’s the matter?”

Yang Chen was also not in a good mood, Shi ShanShan had been coldly staring at him the entire time, as if he owed her some kind of gratitude and her tone of speaking was also very rude.

“In the future, never use my name!”

Shi ShanShan threw this sentence and directly turned around, not caring whether Yang Chen had heard her or not. Now, even after the words had been said, if Yang Chen still continued to be stubborn, she wouldn’t mind teaching him a lesson.

Shi ShanShan wanted to leave, but this time Yang Chen did not ignore her. Turning around, he directly obstructed her path:

“Wait a minute, Shi Fairy, explain your words. Who said that I used your name for my affairs?”

“You should know about the matters you did yourself!”

Shi Fairy’s tone had already become cold to the point which could make people tremble. Surprisingly Yang Chen had still denied it. This person had already entered the list of names with whom she would never associate.

Li QingChen was very skilful with his words. The matter regarding Yang Chen and Chu Heng had been expressed very tactfully. Within Shi ShanShan's mind, it was already an exception for the Pure Yang Palace to accept Yang Chen, who was an executioner, but Yang Chen had still used her name to bully his teacher. This was simply the greatest sin below the heavens.

Normally, from where would Yang Chen, an ordinary mortal, learn cultivation, if not from the Merit Transferring Disciple? But who would have thought that Yang Chen would force Chu Heng out of the Pure Yang Palace and even made him a traitor? This was simply not loyal or filial, but he still had the nerve to act puzzled.

“Explain your words!”

As if the air in Yang Chen's lungs had exploded, the blood colored river within his Spirit Sea came out as a huge wave, a formless killing intent came out and attacked Shi ShanShan:

“Although this Yang Chen is not a great talent, I still haven't degraded enough to use another's name to handle my affairs!”

Suddenly the scenery before Shi ShanShan's eyes turned dark. The huge curtain of frightening killing intent was completely submerging Shi ShanShan. Even though she was at the JieDan stage, at this moment she could not bear Yang Chen's wrath. At this moment Shi Shan Shan was feeling as if she was within an ocean of blood, unprecedented fear was making her body shiver uncontrollably.



But Shi ShanShan was stubborn and hadn't completely lost her persistence. Under the onslaught of Yang Chen's killing intent, biting her teeth tightly, Shi ShanShan firmly stood her ground in front of Yang Chen's killing intent. After facing this round, Shi Shan Shan forced herself to say:

Don't tell me that one of the successor disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect is accusing you wrongly? Do you dare to have a confrontation with him?"

"Good! A confrontation it is! You should ask that son of a bitch to meet me in the Pure Yang Palace. I will keep him company to the end!"

Yang Chen, in his fierce anger, threw this line, then he turned around to step on his flying sword and disappeared in a flash.

## Chapter 124 - Let's See Who Is Faster

---

Yang Chen was so angry that he wanted to leave immediately, but he had forgotten that this was the territory of the Green Jade Immortal Islands. The killing intent he had released without any restraint just a moment ago had alarmed the experts of the Green Jade Immortal Islands.

Because of the anomaly last time regarding the Spirit Veins, the Green Jade Immortal Islands had arranged for elders to guard even the inside of the sect. The killing intent which had suddenly been released by Yang Chen had made the elder, Guan Yueying, who was overseeing the gate of the sect angry.

“Who dares to behave so atrociously at Green Jade Immortal Islands?!”

Her loud voice resounded over the entire island.

Just as Yang Chen had used flown to the seaside, that voice resounded in his ears. Not only the voice, even the formidable Spiritual Awareness contained within the voice exploded within his ear.

Bang!

Yang Chen's Spirit Sea suddenly erupted and clashed with the formidable Spiritual Awareness, but in the end, Yang Chen's cultivation was still too shallow. Even though he had formed his Spirit Sea, it was also only at the level of a peak JieDan stage

expert, how could it compare to the Spiritual Awareness of that other person, who had cultivated for several centuries? Just merely clashing with the Spiritual Awareness immediately made a shock pass through his mind, as if his consciousness was hit by a huge hammer, and he directly fell off the flying sword.

While his body was still in the air, Yang Chen could not help but spit out a mouthful of blood. Nevertheless, in his ear, a faint gasp of surprise resounded.

Yang Chen did not dare to be careless and just before he was going to fall into the water, he had stopped the chaos in his spirit sea from increasing with great difficulty and tried to ease up the acute pain rampaging in his body; calling back his flying sword, he wrapped himself in his Flying Shuttle. The Flying Shuttle formed a perfect parabola and rapidly advanced into the sea surface headlong.

“Where are you going!?”

A loud sound resounded within his ears again, but this time it was not an attack through Spiritual Awareness, but rather elder Guan Yueying personally chasing behind him on her flying sword. In the clash just moments ago, she had already left behind a Spiritual Awareness imprint on Yang Chen’s body. How could she tolerate a youngster escaping in front of her eyes?

Although it was true that the Green Jade Immortal Islands was passing through troubled times, it was still not so bad that a junior could behave atrociously at the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Yang Chen had gone too far releasing his killing intent. Who did he

think he was? Most excessive was that, after committing the act, he had still thought of running away, as if it was such an easy matter.

In Guan Yueying's eyes, if they allowed Yang Chen to depart just like that, then it would certainly be a slap on Green Jade Immortal Islands' face. No matter why Yang Chen had come, no matter which sect Yang Chen belonged to, since he had dared to provoke the Green Jade Immortal Islands, he had to receive his punishment!

Initially she had believed that just the loud shout containing his Spiritual Awareness would be enough to make Yang Chen lose consciousness and then he would be easily captured and dealt with. But she hadn't expected that Yang Chen surprisingly would clash his Spiritual Awareness with her and even more surprisingly, that the blow would be able to distract her.

Over these past years, her words had been of enormous weight in the Green Jade Immortal Islands, she had already forgotten the last time someone had dared to ignore her commands, but currently Yang Chen wanted to flee in spite of everything, which was extremely ludicrous to her.

With her command, her flying sword flew out chasing after Yang Chen within the sea. Elder Guan Yueying was water attributed, but surprisingly Yang Chen still thought that he could flee from her within the sea, truly laughable.

Guan Yueying did not want to kill Yang Chen immediately, she had only thought of teaching him a lesson. With her control over

her flying sword, she absolutely did not have to worry about Yang Chen's life. But just a moment after she had urged on to chase after Yang Chen, she surprisingly discovered that Yang Chen's speed was quicker than hers.

Within the sea, the Flying Shuttle hadn't lost even a bit of its speed. And moreover, since Yang Chen had already put in a top grade spirit stone, even if he couldn't use even a trace of spirit power at this moment and was seriously injured, it was still capable of fleeing at high speed according to Yang Chen's thoughts.

Yang Chen had still not lost consciousness and although Elder Guan Yueying's Spiritual Awareness was formidable, Yang Chen's spirit sea had erupted with unfathomable strength and had firmly blocked the attack of the peak YuanYing stage elder and he had only spat out a mouthful of blood, but still without losing consciousness.

So long as Yang Chen was awake, he was capable of using the highest possible speed. This time he had no other alternative than rushing towards the direction with the most open area. Desperately rushing the flying shuttle onward, he did not even dare to turn around.

Yang Chen knew how bad the contact between the Spiritual Awareness' was just a moment ago. Not to mention the Green Jade Immortal Islands, even at the Pure Yang Palace, such a capable person would certainly be considered carefully. At that time, he was so angry that he forgot to restrain his breath, the consequence of which was the current situation.

The anger of a YuanYing stage expert was absolutely not something which Yang Chen could endure. Apart from desperately running away, he had no other option. Fortunately, as long as Yang Chen himself could control the flying shuttle without using spirit power, he would get enough time to heal.

Yang Chen knew who the person chasing him was. Elder Guan Yueying was famous for her fiery temper, if Yang Chen had not run away at that time, he would first have his cultivation crippled, everything else would be left for later. Apart from fleeing with all of his might, he had no other way.

The collision between the Spiritual Awareness' had turned his spirit sea into an earth shattering mess. Although Yang Chen had tried to resist with great difficulty, it was still out of sorts. First he swallowed a healing medicine, slowly restoring the injuries in his body, then he sat down in the posture of Five Hearts Towards The Heavens and began to cultivate the Three Purities Secrets. In this realm, what could be a better way to nurse his Spiritual Awareness than the Three Purities Secrets?

While Guan Yueying pursued him with all her might, Yang Chen began to silently treat his injuries within the Flying Shuttle. In any case, the Flying Shuttle had already been set in a definite direction. Covering several thousands of miles would take at least several days, even with the high speed of the flying shuttle. Until Yang Chen controlled the flying shuttle and stopped it, the Flying Shuttle could only rush forward.

Currently Yang Chen had discovered that although Guan Yueying's speed was not quicker than him, Guan Yueying had left

an imprint of Spiritual Awareness on him. Before his Spiritual Awareness hadn't recovered completely, he could not throw Guan Yueying off his trail, so he might as well just heal calmly.

The more Guan Yueying chased, the angrier she grew. She was a peak YuanYing stage expert, an elder whose words had enormous weight at the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Even within the entire cultivation world, let alone the 'righteous path alliance', if someone among the devil disciples of the devil path confronted her, they would also be considered extremely foolish even among their brethren.

But right now, she had been thoroughly infuriated because of Yang Chen. Other than behaving atrociously at the gate of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, he was surprisingly still daring to flee under her nose? If Yang Chen was allowed to escape, how would the Green Jade Immortal Islands raise their head among sects of the same path again?

The quicker Yang Chen's flying shuttle fled, the angrier Guan Yueying became. She had even used some cultivation secrets to increase her speed and had exchanged the ordinary flying sword under her feet and began to chase in the direction in which Yang Chen was fleeing. On the sea surface, she left behind a long, white mark, as if a sharp blade had streaked across it.

With one heavenly circulation of spirit power, the extreme chaos within Yang Chen's spirit sea eased up by a lot. Swallowing a second grade healing pill, Yang Chen began to analyze the circumstances.

The damage caused to the spirit sea by Guan Yueying's first attack made Yang Chen admire the strength of these old timers, but he himself had also not done too bad. For a person who had just reached the Foundation stage not too long ago, to be able to resist the attack of a YuanYing stage expert and merely sustaining a few injuries and even being able to escape, this was not any humiliation, instead it was an achievement!

Once he thought of other party's chase, Yang Chen could not help but turn around to take a look. The Flying Sword was at the seabed and the darkness around him made him unable to see anything. Guan Yueying had left a trace on Yang Chen's body and was not worried about losing him, even if he escaped to the ends of the world. She was flying above the surface of the sea without any intention of entering.

Although Yang Chen could not see the force chasing after him, he was clearly aware of the approaching danger. This kind of faint sensation was constantly on his mind, making Yang Chen feel nervous and uneasy at all times.

Even Guan Yueying hadn't anticipated that Yang Chen would be capable of sensing how near she was. Yang Chen's spirit sea was formidable and Gao Yueying was chasing Yang Chen from the trace of spiritual awareness she left on his body. But from the trace, Yang Chen could also sense her proximity, even though Yang Chen's spirit sea was still rummaging about.

This was completely out of his expectations. All along he had believed that apart from releasing killing intent and imitating demon beasts, his spirit sea only had a formidable strength, but he



hadn't anticipated this kind of pleasant surprise.

Although the condition of the spirit sea had become better, Yang Chen was not able to suppress the anger within his heart. Shi ShanShan this woman, how highly did she think of herself? 'I, Yang Chen, need to use your name to handle my affairs?'

Clearly Shi Shanshan did not know how to conduct herself. Though she herself had not investigated this matter, she surprisingly wanted Yang Chen to have a confrontation with the instigator, Li QingChen. Could there be anyone more foolish in the world?

Demanding a confrontation with Li QingChen clearly explained that, after Li QingChen had 'informed' her, she had betrayed him. After anyone heard about that, who would dare to be at ease and tell her anything?

In addition to that, demanding a confrontation in someone's presence was a mistake within mistakes. Leaving aside the question whether Li QingChen would agree or not. At that time, if Shi ShanShan was unable to gather them successfully, that would certainly cause great damage to her reputation. Even if she was able to gather them successfully, from where would Li QingChen gather evidence of Yang Chen using her name to handle his affairs?

In case this happened, Shi ShanShan's criticism towards Yang Chen would be completely fruitless and she would moreover leave behind an impression an egomaniac who heard what she wanted to hear. The Green Jade Immortal Islands certainly did not educate its disciples properly, if this kind of talented disciple did not know

how to handle even this simple kind of matter.

Another person who made Yang Chen angry was the elder Guan Yueying who was pursuing him relentlessly. She did not go to ask the disciple of her sect about the matter and instead stubbornly chased behind Yang Chen to maintain the face of her Green Jade Immortal Islands. Yang Chen was also not someone who would go down without a fight.

Only because of a trifling matter like this, she had left all major affairs she was responsible for as an elder and was still pursuing him relentlessly. Whether for good or bad, Yang Chen still possessed his memories as a Great Principal Golden Immortal. This was the first time in this life that someone had put him in such a sorry state.

The more he was forced, the more stubborn Yang Chen became. ‘Do you want to chase me? I will allow you to chase me! In any case, since you can’t even catch me within the sea, how could you even hope to do so in the sky?’

Guan Yueying’s cultivation base of the peak YuanYing stage couldn’t make Yang Chen bow down, instead evoking his fighting spirit. He had enough top grade spirit stones to insert into the flying shuttle for several years. If one piece was not sufficient, he still had eight more. If Guan Yueying, a peak YuanYing stage expert was ready to chase after a Foundation stage expert for nine years, then she should bring it on!

On the surface of the sea, a marvelous scene could be seen: Green Jade Immortal Islands’ elder Guan was controlling her flying

sword and could be seen flying towards the East China Sea. Elder Guan was fuming with rage, which could be seen on her face, and nobody knew the person who was responsible for provoking her to this extent.

Guan Yueying also couldn't help her anger. She had already been chasing after Yang Chen for a full twenty hours and not only had she not caught him, she had also chased him for a long distance. Normally, a Foundation stage junior flying with all of his strength, being able to maintain this speed for such a long time under the pressure of a peak YuanYing stage expert was already an extraordinary achievement, but not only had Yang Chen persisted for such a long time, he wasn't showing any intention of stopping, which made Guan Yueying even angrier.

When had a trifling Foundation stage cultivator forced a peak YuanYing stage expert to chase with all her speed for such a long time? Moreover this was also when Yang Chen was injured and had already spat out blood, if this matter came out, what would remain of Elder Guan's face? What would remain of the Green Jade Immortal Islands' reputation?

Both of them were extremely stubborn, none willing to bow first. Moreover in Yang Chen's case, he had no other choice. If he stopped, he would be immediately captured by Guan Yueying, which would mean that at least his cultivation would be abolished, to maintain Green Jade Immortal Islands' reputation. How could Yang Chen be ready to become another sect's stepping stone? Most of all the sect of a haughty person like Shi ShanShan.

After this chase had lasted for three days, in the Flying Shuttle:

Yang Chen's injuries had already stabilized and his spirit sea was also not that chaotic anymore, having begun to restore to its original state.

Because of this time's damage to the spirit sea, Yang Chen had made a pleasant discovery, the long blood river within his spirit sea and the fifth earth soil, together with PengLai Divine Wood had formed a strong framework. Regardless of how many injuries the spirit sea received, all of them would be supported completely and it would not collapse because of them. This was certainly a nice surprise for him. If it were not for the injuries this time, he would also not have discovered that his spirit sea was so formidable.

The alleviation of the spirit sea's injuries allowed Yang Chen to have an even greater ease in fleeing. Very quickly after he had finished the cultivation of the Three Purities Secrets, he discovered a dot of light within his spirit sea.

That was precisely the trace of Spiritual Awareness which Guan Yueying had left within his spirit sea. Above this dot of light, an extremely thin thread could be seen, barely connecting the rear of the Flying Shuttle with some other region. Yang Chen knew that this was Guan Yueying's spiritual awareness pursuing him.

The extremely small trace of spiritual awareness had raised great interest in Yang Chen. Under the effect of the Three Purities Secrets, the spirit sea hadn't suffered any critical injuries and had almost healed. Currently, Yang Chen could already use about eighty percent strength of his spirit sea and he could begin to deal with this spiritual awareness mark.

What gave Yang Chen some headache was if he should completely refine this mark, which would make Guan Yueying lose his trail or if he should seize the opportunity and make Guan Yueying suffer something of which she could never speak of?

## Chapter 125 - Want To Die? I'll Help You!

---

Within the sky, Guan Yueying did not have to face any attack from formidable sea beasts as, first, they would be unable to catch up with Guan Yueying's speed, and second, attacks from the water could not reach Guan Yueying within the sky, so throughout the entire journey she hadn't received any attacks from sea beasts.

The most formidable sea beasts did not come above two hundred meters within the sea and Yang Chen flying speed was even more rapid than Guan Yueying. At the same time, the Flying Shuttle was also able of concealing its traces, so his path within the ocean was even less obstructed.

In the end, Yang Chen still hadn't restored his spirit sea to the state before the spiritual awareness mark was made. In his previous life, Yang Chen had patiently bore everything, so in this life Yang Chen could also endure facing such a powerful enemy.

After three more days had passed, Yang Chen sensed that, within six days, he had already fled several thousands of miles, but Guan Yueying was still chasing him. Although the distance between them was continuously increasing, she had the spiritual awareness imprint to show the way and hadn't stopped for even one moment.

Finally Yang Chen's spirit sea had recuperated properly. At that time, Guan Yueying had struck suddenly and hadn't caused any irreparable damage to his spirit sea. Under the formidable recovery ability of the Three Purities Secrets and after six days of recuperation, his spirit sea was finally restored to the same state as before.

According to Yang Chen's perception, the restored spirit sea had become even tougher and stronger compared to before. The frame of fifth earth true qi, the blood river and the PengLai Divine Wood trees had become even more robust. Although there was no large improvement in the overall amount of spiritual awareness, the quality had still slightly improved this time.

Guan Yueying was still persevering in her chase. She had also sensed that Yang Chen was relying on an exceptionally good magic tool to escape from her and his injuries still hadn't healed completely. But fleeing continuously for six days, without stopping had already won some admiration in Guan Yueying's heart. There was no Foundation stage junior who could persevere with Guan Yueying chasing them for a full six days and six nights.

Suddenly, Guan Yueying discovered that her spiritual awareness imprint on Yang Chen's body had been accessed by someone and a voice suddenly appeared within her mind:

"Senior, you and I have no past hatred, is it absolutely necessary to go all out?"

Actually Yang Chen had just used the Beast Controlling Secrets to penetrate that marking with his own spiritual awareness, as, in simple terms, it could be said to be an ability for people to exchange their thoughts and was similar to the time when Yang Chen had communicated with She Kui and Xie Sha in the beginning.

At first, Guan Yueying was greatly startled. She had never before thought that someone could unexpectedly communicate through the spiritual awareness imprint she had made and that it would moreover happen directly within her mind. This sudden shock made this peak YuanYing stage expert cry out in fear.

But after the initial shock had passed away, the only thing left behind was the suppressed anger. Not only had Yang Chen behaved arrogantly in the territory of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, afterwards he had also escaped, fleeing punishment and was now going as far as asking her about going all out. Thinking about this, Guan Yueying hated that she could not capture Yang Chen immediately and teach him a lesson to the bones.

“You have behaved arrogantly at my sect’s gate, but I am ready to forgive you for this chase, as long as you agree to seal your cultivation and kowtow at the gate of my sect for one month as a warning for others. Then I am ready to let go of this matter!”

Guan Yueying was an elder of the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Although she was enraged, she had not forgotten the appropriate behaviour as an elder in these kinds of matters. Yang Chen’s crime was not as serious to get him a death penalty and as a cultivator who had cultivated for so long, she would not change her principles just because of a minor offence. She hadn’t thought of killing Yang Chen from the beginning, only capturing him.

Yang Chen completely believed elder Guan’s words, he was convinced that, as long as he sincerely and obediently knelt at the gate of the Green Jade Immortal Islands for one month, the higher ups of the Green Jade Immortal Islands would not look into the



matter. But believing her words was a completely different matter from following them.

“Sorry, I am very busy and have no time to delay over here!”

Yang Chen’s intentions were passed on within Guan Yueying’s mind and clearly expressed his rejection.

“Then I will not only capture you, but after capturing you, I will contact your sect and ask them what your master has been teaching you!”

Yang Chen’s refusal made Guan Yueying angry again. This time, even Yang Chen’s sect was implicated.

Guan Yueying hadn’t anticipated that her words would have completely offended Yang Chen. Hearing that Guan Yueying would cause trouble for Gao Yue in the future, Yang Chen exploded with anger and immediately made his resolve.

“Since you have not given me face!”

Yang Chen’s thought, filled with threatening menace was directly passed on through Guan Yueying’s spiritual awareness imprint:

“Then you must not blame me for being impolite!”

The Flying Shuttle suddenly turned around and started rushing towards Guan Yueying's direction. Hearing Yang Chen's words, Guan Yueying was also furious. A trifling foundation stage youngster was daring to be impudent in front of a YuanYing stage ancestor? Who did he think he was?

“Youngster, you are courting death!”

Naturally Guan Yueying did not care about Yang Chen's threat, but since Yang Chen had turned around and was rushing towards her, she had no need for chasing him, she could easily capture him now.

Her fated flying sword immediately flew out. This time, Guan Yueying did not plan on giving Yang Chen any opportunities. The main problem was Yang Chen's flying tool. Guan Yueying absolutely could not tolerate Yang Chen running away in front of her again and again. When they come into contact, Guan Yueying had to destroy that flying tool first.

At this moment, Yang Chen was also extremely enraged. He had no great hatred with Guan Yueying. If she tried to find the whole story, she could easily see that this incident was caused by Shi ShanShan, but she was hell bent on making Yang Chen kowtow and apologise. But if this could be tolerated what could not? If Guan Yueying was not so deeply settled on teaching him a lesson, Yang Chen would also not have talked in this tone.

The distance between the two people was diminishing very quickly. Originally the distance between them had stretched to several hundred miles in six days and six nights, but with Yang

Chen and Guan Yueying's speed, the distance between them had now almost dropped to zero.

Guan Yueying had already prepared properly. She had to teach this youngster, who did not know the immensity of heaven and earth, a good lesson and make him know that that Green Jade Immortal Islands were not something which anyone could casually insult.

Without waiting for Guan Yueying to respond, Yang Chen had already controlled Guan Yueying's spiritual awareness imprint and threw it into the blood river.

Bang!

That unbounded killing intent which could make even a Da Cheng stage expert frightened stiff, directly invaded Guan Yueying's mind through that spiritual awareness imprint.

Although Guan Yueying was already a peak YuanYing stage expert, at this moment, she was no different from the people Yang Chen had already killed. This killing intent could scare even the immortal officials of the Heavenly Court, compared to them Guan Yueying was just a mere YuanYing stage youngster of the mortal world, who absolutely didn't have the power to resist. After an instant of alarm, she immediately lost consciousness.

Elder Guan was flying at high speed, her body still on the flying sword, but she had already lost consciousness. Her natal flying sword suddenly lost control and automatically entered her body.

Her white clothes made her seem like a Immortal, forming a beautiful parabola in the sky, similar to the time Yang Chen had entered the sea at the Green Jade Immortal Islands.

Fortunately, by this time, Yang Chen's Flying Shuttle had also hurried over there and had caught Guan Yueying's body before falling into the sea. Otherwise, even if Yang Chen had not attacked, Guan Yueying's body would have been completely devoured by sea beasts. It was not like she would have woken up by falling into water after having been stunned by Yang Chen's killing intent.

Now a YuanYing stage ancestor was lying not too far from him. The space inside of the Flying Shuttle was big enough for Guan Yueying to lie down.

Although she had already lived for hundreds of thousands of years, she still had a young face. It had to be said that the Green Jade Immortal Islands pay good attention when picking disciples. This elder Guan Yueying would be considered a gorgeous woman at any sect.

But at this moment, Yang Chen was certainly not in the mood for looking at a beautiful woman. He was thinking about how to resolve this matter.

Guan Yueying was not an ordinary person, she was an elder of the Green Jade Immortal Islands and a famous person in the cultivation world. The Green Jade Immortal Islands was a big sect, comparable to the Greatest Heaven Sect. Yang Chen certainly could not offend the Green Jade Immortal Island at this time,

otherwise, maybe the sect extermination would happen even earlier.

If he killed Guan Yueying, it would clearly mean that he had become hostile to them. Yang Chen did not want to create troubles for Pure Yang Palace and Gao Yue, but unfortunately, Guan Yueying who was currently lying in front of him, would certainly be difficult to deal with.

Not to mention about dealing with her, how would he manage Guan Yueying after she woke up? He could not kill her, but how could he make her abandon her investigation? That was the most important matter.

Yang Chen had already completely taken care of the spiritual awareness mark made by Guan Yueying. With Guan Yueying captured, things would be much easier.

When Guan Yueying woke up, the first thing she saw was not Yang Chen, but rather a sharp flying sword pointed between her eyebrows, the pointed end already slightly pricking her skin.

After some slight movements, the color of Guan Yueying's face changed. She could not use even a trace of spirit power as if her cultivation had been sealed by someone. This made Guan Yueying completely terrified. Nobody would like the sensation of being taken advantage of.

Now, she started remembering that, before she lost her consciousness, there was a sea overflowing with blood. It still gave

her a shiver. What sort of person could have that sort of killing intent? Surprisingly even a peak YuanYing stage expert like her couldn't withstand it?

“I don't want to kill people!”

Yang Chen's voice echoed in her ears. Afterwards he appeared in front of her, looking at Guan Yueying:

“But I am not afraid to kill people! Do you believe me?”

Nodding her head, although she was a little panicky looking at Yang Chen, Guan Yueying was after all a peak YuanYing stage expert. She had seen a countless number of such spectacles and had also seen many battles. After her initial panic, she quickly regained her calm.

But for some unknown reason, Guan Yueying suddenly thought that the youngster in front of her was very frightening. This was not her logical judgement, it was a reaction from her body.

Guan Yueying's body suddenly started trembling, that sort of unconscious tremble. Even when meeting a Da Cheng stage expert, she never had this kind of sensation. In front of Yang Chen, she was feeling fear out of instinct.

She absolutely did not think that Yang Chen was just bragging. Just relying on the killing intent which had made her lose consciousness, if Yang Chen wanted, creating a massacre on the

Green Jade Immortal Islands was not a difficult matter at all. As for whether Yang Chen was afraid of killing people, if a person possessing such a terrifying killing intent was afraid of killing people, then who wouldn't be?

“Who are you? How have the Green Jade Immortal Islands offended you?”

Although she was still frenetic within her heart, her body still trembling as before, Guan Yueying still clenched her teeth to ask these questions. Since Yang Chen had not killed her when she was unconscious and instead said this to her as soon as she woke up, it clearly explained that this matter could still be saved.

“Myself is Pure Yang Palace's Yang Chen, initially I did not have any grudges with your sect, but your sect has tried to bully me, whether it was insulting me or trying to kill me without any cause, do you think this Yang is so easy to bully?”

Although Yang Chen was sitting in front of Guan Yueying, he did not remove the flying sword pointed between her eyebrows.

“This is a misunderstanding!”

Hearing Yang Chen, all kinds of rumors flashed through Guan Yueying's mind. Afterwards she immediately thought of the matter regarding Qi YunRou driving away Yang Chen, but at the same time she also became clear about everything and hastily said:

“Regarding the matter of Qi YunRou driving you away, I have already punished her and sealed her cultivation and sent her to live in Fang city to temper herself!”

“That is the internal matter of your Green Jade Immortal Islands, it has nothing to do with me!”

Yang Chen looking at Guan Yueying, slowly said:

“I am also ready to overlook the matter of you injuring me, but, there is one condition, next time you shouldn’t provoke me!”

“Are you threatening me?”

In any case, Guan Yueying was also an elder of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, Yang Chen’s words really didn’t give her any face. Guan Yueying couldn’t help but be angry:

“Do you want to make an enemy of my entire Green Jade Immortal Islands?”

“I never do these meaningless matters.”

Yang Chen shook his head:

“If you want to silently disappear, I can help you accomplish that!”



“Kill me. Do you believe you can escape the Green Jade Immortal Islands’ hunt?”

Guan Yueying was fighting for the Green Jade Immortal Islands’ face. Even if she was facing someone she was afraid of, she did not change her intentions.

“You think your Green Jade Immortal Islands have someone who would believe that you, a peak YuanYing stage cultivator have been killed under the hands of an initial Foundation stage cultivator like me?”

Yang Chen bluntly pointed out the flaw in Guan Yueying’s plan:

“Let alone believing this, would those great experts of your Green Jade Immortal Islands be willing to admit that you, a peak YuanYing stage cultivator have been killed by me?”

“But in the end, I have gone missing after I have started chasing you, isn’t that so?”

Guan Yueying already knew that she did not have any support, but she was still trying to appear strong.

“When they find me, I will just say I don’t know!”

Yang Chen gently laughed:

“If worse comes to worst, I can just say that you had caught me and I had promised to kowtow as apology and afterwards you disappeared. Tell me, wouldn’t they believe these words, or would they think I am lying after killing you?”

“Weren’t you against kowtowing and apologising?”

Guan Yueying got even angrier after hearing this. If Yang Chen was ready to kowtow and apologise, what was this chase for?

“Killing a peak YuanYing stage expert of Green Jade Immortal Island would be a great matter, kowtowing is just kowtowing. Not such a great punishment.”

Yang Chen sneered.

“It looks like elder Guan has already planned on dying. Even if you are an elder of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, you are still an elder in my possession. Decide how you want to die and I will help you achieve it!”

# Chapter 126 - You Are My Heart's Devil

---

Seeing the indifferent attitude of Yang Chen, Guan Yueying had finally realized that the pressure of the Green Jade Immortal Islands didn't work in front of Yang Chen. Disappointed, she gave up struggle and unwillingly asked:

“What do you want?”

“I have already said, if you don't want anything, don't provoke me!”

Yang Chen said, closing his eyes:

“From the beginning, you didn't have the intention of killing me, that's why I am giving you face, but by all means, you must not think that I am afraid to kill people!”

Speaking until here, Yang Chen stretched out his hand.

Whoosh!

The flying sword which had been pointed between her eyebrows suddenly disappeared. Immediately after that, Guan Yueying discovered that the spirit power in her body was no longer restricted and she had turned into the omnipotent peak YuanYing stage expert again.

But this time Guan Yueying didn't retaliate against Yang Chen. Even though, with her strength of the YuanYing stage, she would easily be able to control a Foundation stage disciple like Yang Chen.

It was not simply because of those words about renouncing all hatred which Yang Chen had said just a moment ago, instead it was because Guan Yueying had suddenly discovered that, the instant Yang Chen had stretched out his hand to take back the flying sword, a black imprint had appeared on Yang Chen's finger. Moreover that imprint clearly had an extremely strange design.

Although Guan Yueying's cultivation was not high enough to notice that Yang Chen had not stored that flying sword into the qiankun pouch on his belt, but rather in that imprint. But that imprint on Yang Chen's hand was really extraordinary. Guan Yueying had some vague recollection of such an imprint.

The Green Jade Immortal Islands was a famous sect which had an enormous influence, even in the Immortal Realm. Although passing news from an upper levels to lower level was extremely difficult, some crucial information was still passed down. The design on Yang Chen's finger was also among that.

A person of the upper realm? Guan Yueying did not dare to judge this, but when she thought of Yang Chen's achievements, she also couldn't think of anything else.

If he was not a person from the upper realm, how was he capable of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill at the Foundation stage? If he was not someone from the upper realm, then how could he restrict

a peak YuanYing stage expert such as her? If he was not from the upper realm, how could he have a magic tool which even a peak YuanYing stage expert, chasing with all her might, couldn't catch? If he was not from the upper realm, then how could he have that sort of killing intent?

The more Guan Yueying thought about it, the more certain she became, but she didn't dare to be completely certain. Transferring even a little information from the upper realm to a lower realm needed a big sect like the Green Jade Immortal Islands to invest a price which made even them feel bitter. How difficult would it be to transfer a person from the upper realm? Even if the Green Jade Immortal Islands used their entire strength, they still wouldn't be able to achieve it, but then which sect would have such resources to spend? The Pure Yang Palace? Was that even possible?

Therefore, regardless of any evidence, Guan Yueying did not dare to be completely certain that Yang Chen was someone from upper realms. Regardless of whether he was or not, there were still a lot of mysteries which didn't have an explanation. The person of Yang Chen was becoming more and more mysterious within Guan Yueying's mind.

What baffled Guan Yueying most was that, all this time after freeing her, Yang Chen hadn't taken any precautions. These two people sitting so close in front of each other, if she wanted, she could capture Yang Chen in a moment.

Guan Yueying had not been able to understand this matter from the beginning, it had to be known that, in the beginning just by the attack of her spiritual awareness, Yang Chen had sustained injuries

and fallen down. Then why... Could it be that he was not worried that Guan Yueying would become hostile again?

“In any case you are an elder of the Green Jade Immortal Islands!”

As if Yang Chen had seen through Guan Yueying’s doubts, he faintly smiled:

“By all means, do not allow me to think that the words of the Green Jade Immortal Islands’ elders are not in good faith!”

The harder a person tried to defend their sect’s reputation, the more he cared about the sect’s reputation. Clearly, Guan Yueying was such a person, otherwise why would she have chased after Yang Chen for several days and several nights, just to make him kowtow and apologise?

“The people of my Green Jade Immortal Islands do not eat their words!”

Guan Yueying coldly snorted, no longer saying anything. She started looking around herself, but was amazed to discover that she was on a sail boat, travelling on the surface of the ocean.

“This is a small world, we will surely meet again!”

Discovering this, Guan Yueying wasn’t in the mood for staying any longer and greeted Yang Chen. Then, calling out her flying

sword, she disappeared without a trace.

But even Guan Yueying herself had not discovered that she had already stopped treating Yang Chen as a Foundation stage junior and was instead using proper etiquette and words which she used when dealing with people on the same level.

Seeing Guan Yueying's disappearing silhouette, Yang Chen released a long sigh. As he did not want to kill someone who didn't have any intentions of killing him, he only had two options: either entice her or scare her, but his status as a Foundation stage disciple of the Pure Yang Palace would rather make her laugh than scare her, so he only had the option of being a fox to exploit tiger's might and used this method to create more mystery.

Fortunately, Yang Chen knew that the Green Jade Immortal Islands had people in the upper realm, who passed on crucial information to them and moreover, as elder, Guan Yueying knew information like that. The mystery provided Yang Chen with a lot of unspoken arguments.

Estimating that, for the time being, he wouldn't have a lot of problems from the side of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, Yang Chen took the control of the Flying Shuttle and adjusted its direction, hurrying towards the coast. He still wanted to go to the Clear Sky Sect to find Sun Qing Xue.

Guan Yueying was using her flying sword again. Spending several days, she quickly returned to the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Carefully investigating the circumstances at that time, she finally knew that Yang Chen had communicated with Shi ShanShan and

Shi ShanShan had returned to the inner islands to cultivate. There was no need to mention it, Guan Yueying immediately hurried to the inner islands and found Shi ShanShan, questioning her closely about what kind of matter had actually happened.

Hearing about the circumstances of Shi ShanShan making the appointment with Yang Chen, Guan Yueying stood dumbly on the spot. These kinds of groundless accusations, Shi ShanShan had surprisingly believed them to be true and moreover had still demanded that Yang Chen confronted Li QingChen in her presence?

Suddenly Guan Yueying understood the reason for Yang Chen's anger at the sect's gate. If it were any other person, they would also not feel better when accused of such actions. At the same time, while she understood Yang Chen's behaviour, she also felt great despair about her sect's most talented disciple.

“ShanShan!”

Guan Yueying's tone had become extremely gloomy, but the meaning within her tone leaked an unspeakable undertone:

“Do you think that our Green Jade Immortal Islands is already an unparalleled sect in the whole world and everyone will give us face at all costs?”

“No, elder!”



Shi ShanShan still had that cool and elegant look on her face, she hadn't even changed in front of her sect's elder.

“Then do you think that your reputation is sufficient to give rise to reverence within some sects?”

Guan Yueying asked again:

“Can Yang Chen, using your name, command the entire Pure Yang Palace, which has more than ten YuanYing stage elders and hundreds of JieDan stage experts?”

“Disciple does not dare to say that!”

Shi ShanShan's face still hadn't changed.

“Then why do you think that Yang Chen could use your name to run rampant in the Pure Yang Palace and moreover still get away with it?”

Guan Yueying could not understand this point. Could it be that the disciples cultivating within her sect did not understand the ways of the world?

Guan Yueying was extremely furious. If it were not for Shi ShanShan being so stupid, she would not have gone to chase and provoke an enigmatic person such as Yang Chen.

“Because of the words of a clansman of elder Li Yunyu, Greatest Heaven Sect’s fellow daoist, Li QingChen.”

Shi ShanShan continued to answer calmly.

“Do you think everything elder Li’s clansmen say is absolute?”

Guan Yueying did not know what to say anymore.

“Everything he says is completely false!”

As soon as Shi ShanShan opened her mouth this time, it immediately confused Guan Yueying even more.

“No matter what he says, like the many other people pursuing me, saying that I am a fairy, a heavenly talent and so on, I will not be influenced by it.”

“Then why did you still want to make Yang Chen confront Li ChenQing in your presence?”

Guan Yueying immediately realized that Si ShanShan had some other plan in mind and asked her with a frown.

“Li QingChen is elder Li’s relative and elder Li was helping him trying to make me his Dao Companion. He comes frequently to bother me and disciple hasn’t found any suitable reason to refuse him!”

Shi ShanShan's complexion hadn't changed even now. All along, she had that cool and elegant face.

"If he was exposed in his confrontation with Yang Chen, he would not have any face to come and bother this disciple. As for Yang Chen, disciple will apologise to him at that time!"

In reality the reason why Li QingChen hated Yang Chen to the core was because, whenever Li QingChen came to meet Shi ShanShan, at some appropriate moment, she would bring up the topic of Yang Chen. It was not like she had taken much fancy to Yang Chen, instead she only wanted to know about how Yang Chen, the executioner whom she had given a body refining pill, had been fairing recently.

Each and every time, Li QingChen had smile on his face but hatred in his heart. Whenever he replied to Shi ShanShan, he used the most offensive and shameful words to describe Yang Chen. His cultivation was the lowest among the lowest, his character was inferior among inferiors, he spared no efforts in striking at Yang Chen's image, but because of this, fellow daoist Li's character had been clearly revealed.

Shi ShanShan had also become extremely vexed, but unfortunately, because of his relationship with Li YunYu, she was unable to do anything and could only emptily agree. But Li QingChen continued to harass her, he even enticed the senior and junior female disciples in her surroundings, who incessantly praised him, leaving Shi ShanShan with no other choice. In order to completely eradicate this trouble without any after effects, she

could only use this kind of method.

Hearing Shi ShanShan's reply, Guan Yueying had been speechless for a long time. Li QingChen was a relative of Li YunYu, in reality an offspring of one of his later generations. Having such a powerful grandmother, he could come to the Green Jade Immortal Islands anytime and anywhere. Shi ShanShan was not just extremely beautiful, her cultivation talent was also exceptional. Just right for a dao companion in some people's mind. For this, Li YunYu would naturally like to see one of her offspring become a dao companion of Shi ShanShan.

Shi ShanShan did not have any good defence, since Li QingChen had Lin YunYu's support, so she was basically unable to break away from his constant nagging. Refusing frankly would have incurred Li YunYu's anger, so the best method would be to make him withdraw by himself.

Meeting Yang Chen was a good opportunity for Shi ShanShan, with the premise that Shi ShanShan and Li YunYu's relationship would not be damaged, this situation could be resolved perfectly. The only somewhat inappropriate thing was that this matter involved an outsider, Yang Chen.

Qi YunRou was a person roped in by Li QingChen, that's why she had driven away Yang Chen without thinking of right or wrong. But she was also Shi ShanShan's junior apprentice sister, who had been punished because of Yang Chen. Although it was not Yang Chen's fault, in the end Shi ShanShan also put some blame on him, so when she saw Yang Chen, after the proper business was finished, Shi ShanShan meticulously laid out this plan.

If she had not met Yang Chen, Guan Yueying would have supported Shi ShanShan in handling matters this way. Li Qingchen would withdraw, elder Li would have nothing to say and the relationships between everyone would not be damaged. But after meeting and knowing Yang Chen's mysteriousness, Guan Yueying thought Shi ShanShan had made a mistake.

After being exploited by Shi ShanShan, what use would an apology be? Not to mention the fact that Yang Chen would not only have to face Li QingChen and the Greatest Heaven Sect behind him, but at the same time also offend Green Jade Immortal Islands' Li YunYu. Even if one forget about these people, why would he let him exploit himself? Shi ShanShan was really taking him for granted too much.

After speaking about all of her apprehensions, Shi ShanShan had gone quiet. Only after a long time did she raise her head and said:

“If you think what disciple is doing is not good that is appropriate, but what has been done cannot be undone, there is no method to change it. Once this matter has been resolved, disciple will offer her humble apology to Yang Chen and ask for punishment!”

“What if Yang Chen asks for you to be his dao companion?”

Guan Yueying gloomily sighed and deeply asked:

“Wouldn't that just be like having resisted the tiger in the front

door while the wolf had entered from the back?”

Apparently Shi ShanShan had not thought about such a possibility. After hearing this, she was rooted to the ground, as if suddenly thinking about what she could do.

“Ai!”

Guan Yueying gloomily sighed again:

“Even if Yang Chen does not raise this kind of request, ShanShan, don’t you think that doing something like this is extremely selfish? We are cultivators. The greater our desires are, the more serious the tribulation is. Using such methods after all is said and done...”

In an outsider’s eyes, Green Jade Immortal Islands’ Shi ShanShan was a pretty good talent, but in Guan Yueying’s eyes, this elder of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, she was only a talented youngster. Admittedly, her cultivation gift could alarm people, but her nature had always been a problem.

“Elder, how should disciple...?”

Guan Yueying saying these words in this way made Shi ShanShan break out in cold sweat. These few sentences made her realize the problem with her method. If it had only brought some trouble for Yang Chen, it was still a trivial matter. At worst, she could simply cancel the confrontation and offer him an apology, but the main

problem was that Shi Shanshan herself had developed Heart's Devil because of this matter.

Since she could settle the dispute, Shi Shanshan was unable to cross over this threshold all along, this was certainly not a problem which could be solved just by tempering herself, training outside. Since this had some relationship with Yang Chen, then it didn't need to be said that the solution could only come from Yang Chen.

Guan Yueying knew this point clearly, but she did not express it to Shi ShanShan. Some things one had to realize by themselves and only then could they get the best results. Since Shi ShanShan had already reached the JieDan stage by relying on her good innate talent, then, one day, she would surely think of this. If she called her attention at this time, Shi ShanShan would not be satisfied.

But Guan Yueying was still somewhat anxious, even when she had confronted Yang Chen, she had been incapable of making sense of anything and Shi Shanshan was a cold and detached person. When the time came, how would she confront him?

“Whoever hung the bell on the tiger's neck must untie it!”

Guan Yueying mysteriously said, taking her attention once. At least she had given her a hint, but she had not told her the exact details. In reality, she also did not know how to undo this situation, but it didn't need to be said that they had to take every step carefully.

Shi ShanShan's clear vision had seemingly also become

somewhat blurred, not knowing what she wanted anymore.



## Chapter 127 - A Genius With Inferior Perception?

---

Yang Chen did not encounter any trouble on the way to the Clear Sky Sect. Flying on his flying sword, he also hadn't seen any people until he had entered the region under the influence of the Clear Sky Sect.

The Clear Sky Sect was also situated near a major city, only it was still in a mountain area. In the opinion of these common people, the Clear Sky Sect was at most an ordinary cultivation sect.

Yang Chen hadn't thought that he would meet the Snow White Fairy, famous in the future, under such circumstances.

The shy expression was just like the one Yang Chen had seen at the execution ground, which could make anyone behave tenderly towards her. When Sun Qing Xue saw Yang Chen at the gate of the visitor's courtyard, her eyes started shining and she immediately ran towards him, showing a pleasantly surprised smile on her face.

“Elder brother, is that you?”

Initially Sun QingXue was baffled. She had no connection with anyone from the Pure Yang Palace, so why had someone asked for her? But the instant she saw Yang Chen, she immediately remembered him:

“I have looked for you for a long time, but I haven't been able to

find your whereabouts!”

All these years, Yang Chen’s appearance hadn’t changed much, so Sun QingXue recognized Yang Chen, her gleam of hope when she had given in to despair. That warm feeling had permeated into Sun QingXue’s days of cultivation.

“I was just passing by, so I came to see you!”

When Yang Chen looked at Sun QingXue, his heart was also filled with joy. Discarding formalities, Yang Chen very much admired Sun QingXue’s gratified nature, especially when he was the one receiving the gratitude.

“Are you happy at the Clear Sky Sect?”

Yang Chen casually asked, looking at Sun QingXue happily preparing tea for him. His eyes constantly staring at her merry figure.

Hearing Yang Chen’s voice, which was still gentle and soft like on the execution ground, Sun QingXue suddenly stopped for a moment, then, adjusting her mood again, she started mixing the tea plants. Afterwards she sighed again and slowly sat down, facing Yang Chen. Looking at Yang Chen having an expression of being wronged across her entire face, she slowly asked:

“Am I stupid?”

For a time, Yang Chen couldn't understand what she meant. What kind of question was this? So he could only ask her suspiciously:

“What happened?”

“I know I am very stupid!”

Sun QingXue slightly drooped her head, as if she was losing face, even tears had started coming out of the corner of her eyes:

“I have followed master to cultivate, but in ten years, I have only been able to reach the ninth qi layer and have no way to rush towards the peak qi layer, let alone the Foundation stage. Elder brother, what do you think, am I not stupid?”

Hearing Sun QingXue's words, Yang Chen didn't know what to say. The famous Snow White Fairy of the later generations, Sun QingXue, an extraordinary cultivation talent, surprisingly questioned whether she was slow in cultivation. This dumbfounded Yang Chen completely.

Seeing that Yang Chen did not say anything, Sun QingXue's head drooped down even more, with emotions choking her voice she said:

“I know I am very stupid, but at that time, whether it was older sister Shi or my master or Great Master, all have said that my innate talent was very good and I am a rare cultivation talent. I

have failed to live up to their expectations!”

These words, made Yang Chen clearly realize Sun QingXue’s distress. Surprisingly, Sun QingXue originally had such complications regarding cultivation and didn’t have any confidence.

Although the case was clear, Yang Chen still was at a loss of words. Sun QingXue was definitely a cultivation talent, there was no need to doubt this, but from the time she had been carried away from the execution ground, around thirty four years had passed and her cultivation was only at the ninth qi layer; it was really strange. According to reason, thirty four years were already enough time for Sun QingXue to successfully reach the Foundation stage, why was she still at the upper qi layer and hadn’t even reached the peak qi layer?

Carefully remembering his previous life’s memories, Yang Chen was convinced that there was nothing like that in his memories. Sun QingXue was such a famous fairy, how could Yang Chen know her mistakes in his earlier life? How then could the current situation be explained? Could it be that Sun QingXue had deviated at the time when she had begun her cultivation?

“That should not be!”

Muttering to himself, Yang Chen suddenly could not help but think aloud.

Yang Chen’s voice made Sun QingXue very surprised, raising up

her head, she suddenly asked:

“What should not be? Elder brother!”

“You should better call me Yang Chen or perhaps Elder Brother Yang!”

Yang Chen was attentively watching Sun QingXue. First correcting her address of him, then he put his sights on Sun QingXue and began to size her up. On one side he was sizing her up, while saying on other side:

“I am saying that your cultivation speed should not be slow like this.”

“Why, Elder brother Yang?”

Sun QingXue was completely submissive and directly turned changed her address to elder brother Yang. Moreover, Yang Chen’s words gave Sun QingXue a new hope, similar to the time on the execution ground, when Yang Chen had informed her that she would certainly not die. Sun QingXue seemingly already blindly trusted Yang Chen.

“Your cultivation should certainly not be so slow!”

Yang Chen declared his judgement again very certainly, soon after that he reached out his hand:

“Come, let me hold your wrist, I will check your pulse to see what the problem is.”

For cultivators, using spiritual awareness to examine was a simpler method than checking her pulse and the results were also far better, but Sun QingXue was a woman, Yang Chen could not use an unbridled method, such as using spiritual awareness, to examine Sun QingXue's body. This was a problem because of being male and female and was not related to cultivation.

If it was an enemy, Yang Chen would not have paid any attention, but Sun QingXue was a friend. Yang Chen wanted to help, so this was basic courtesy.

“Elder Brother Yang, do you think my body has some problems?”

Sun QingXue didn't refuse Yang Chen even a little and directly extended her snow white hand:

“But master has said that my body has no problems!”

Yang Chen closed his eyes and started inspecting Sun QingXue's pulse. Just from the information from the pulse, Sun QingXue's body didn't have even the slightest problem and was absolutely fine.

“Could you find anything?”

Sun QingXue was very nervous and asked in a low voice.

Hesitating for a moment, when Yang Chen looked at Sun QingXue's face which was full of expectations. He released a low sigh within his heart and then opened his mouth:

“I want to use spirit power and spiritual awareness both to thoroughly inspect your body. The premise is, you have to release your spiritual awareness and must not try to move any spirit power, allowing my spirit power and spiritual awareness to enter your body.

Hearing Yang Chen's words, Sun QingXue's face flushed red. Completely releasing her spiritual awareness and spirit power, this clearly meant that her body didn't have any reservations in front of Yang Chen, she was a girl, how could she not blush?

Previously, even her master and great master had also done this, but they were elders and in addition to that they were also female, Sun QingXue would naturally not resist. But Yang Chen was male and at a similar age, how was this even doable?

In reality, Sun QingXue was living under privileged conditions at the Clear Sky Sect. At the time, she had entered to formally become disciple, she was discovered to have an almost-full wood spirit root. This kind of cultivation talent was rarely seen. The Clear Sky Sect immediately gave the green light to this kind of greatly talented disciple: not only was she given a master who had already reached the JieDan Stage, but also all the resources she needed.

Because of this, Sun QingXue felt even more pressure. Even after cultivating for 34 years she had only reached the ninth qi layer. This was completely unsuitable with her extremely high cultivation talent. The only possible explanation was that, although Sun Qing Xue's spirit root was good, her perception was extremely bad, otherwise she would not have such bad performance.

Sun QingXue's hesitation was perfectly normal, otherwise Yang Chen would not have asked such a question. Although Yang Chen wanted to help Sun QingXue to settle her problem, some things Yang Chen also had to pay attention to. In case something went bad, it would certainly not remain a matter between Yang Chen and Sun QingXue and could even involve the entire Pure Yang Palace and Clear Sky Sect. Yang Chen had already learned this from the incident regarding the Green Jade Immortal Islands.

“Little Xue, this fellow daoist of the Pure Yang Palace has good intentions, but he has only reached the Foundation stage not too long ago, so you need not trouble him!”

Sun QingXue still hadn't made her decision, when suddenly a tranquil voice was heard from outside the door.

“Master!”

Sun QingXue's body suddenly jolted, apparently she hadn't anticipated to hear her master's voice there.



Following Sun QingXue's call, an extremely beautiful woman slowly walked in from outside of the gate. Looking just around twenty four or twenty five years old, she was composed and dignified, a silent pressure being emitted from her body. After entering, she swept a glance at Sun QingXue and then her gaze shifted to Yang Chen and she started sizing him up.

“My respects to senior!”

Yang Chen also had to respect Sun QingXue's master, so he greeted her according to the rules of respecting one's elder.

Zhou Sulan was completely satisfied by Yang Chen's etiquette, even though Yang Chen was Sun QingXue's old friend, his courtesy made her treat Yang Chen in a completely new light.

Zhou Sulan was Sun QingXue's master, so she was very clear about Sun QingXue facing such pressure. But no matter what kind of inspection she did, she couldn't find any problem in Sun QingXue's body, which left behind only one possibility: that Sun QingXue's perception was insufficient.

Initially Zhou Sulan had not intended to appear personally, she cherished Sun QingXue very much and after these few decades she even considered her as her own child. But hearing Yang Chen wanted to do such an inspection on Sun QingXue, she became afraid that Sun QingXue would lose hope again, so she immediately stopped it. If it was just not effective, that was a trivial matter, but if such an inspection gave her other worries, then the losses would certainly not make up for the gains.

“I have checked little Xue’s body many times, there were no problems with it.”

Zhou Sulan sat down in front of Yang Chen. She did not assume the airs of an elder in front of Yang Chen and instead directly occupied the seat Sun QingXue had occupied just a moment ago and pulled her towards her side.

Sun QingXue, taking advantage of the opportunity, directly snuggled into her body. She was good to Sun QingXue and Sun QingXue also liked to snuggle up to her.

“There is definitely some problem, senior!”

Yang Chen knew that Zhou Sulan was just worried that his actions would increase Sun QingXue’s worries, so he continued:

“Little Sun is like my younger sister, I request you to let this junior be slightly impudent, maybe I can find a solution.”

“Elder Wu’s Heaven Seizing Pill, were you the one who refined it?”

Zhou Sulan didn’t reply directly and instead asked an unexpected question.

“This junior had only participated in it. The refining was done by

other people!”

Yang Chen naturally would not reveal everything in front of other people. But Zhou Sulan didn't seem to believe that.

Pondering by herself for a moment, Zhou Sulan turned to Sun QingXue and asked:

“Little Xue, do you believe fellow daoist Yang?”

“I believe elder brother Yang!”

Sun QingXue had a trust in Yang Chen which couldn't be expressed in words. Hearing her master's question, she slightly bit her lip and replied, nodding her head.

“Fine then, you can inspect little Xue!”

Perhaps it was Sun QingXue's trust, or perhaps it was Yang Chen's achievement of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill which stopped Zhou Sulan from insisting. Infact, she also wanted Sun QingXue to break away from this trap. This last decade, Sun QingXue had truly stopped speaking much.

Completely releasing her spiritual awareness, releasing her spirit power and ignoring Yang Chen's spirit power and spiritual awareness entering her body... Even if Sun QingXue knew that this was for her diagnosis, her face still had completely turned red. This was even more shameful than letting Yang Chen see her

naked.

When a cultivator wanted to examine someone, he could only do it as long as the other party was willing. If not, it could not be done thoroughly. But Sun QingXue was in the end a woman, so even if she knew that Yang Chen was doing this for her own good, she could not help but feel shy.

But at this moment, Yang Chen was not concerned with her expression. He was wholeheartedly immersed in examining Sun QingXue's body. From top to bottom, he left no stone unturned, he was inspecting her very thoroughly. A cultivation talent unexpectedly thought herself to be slow, then surely there had to be some problem with her body.

What made Yang Chen even more apprehensive was that he still couldn't find any problems with her body. Surely her master and great master would have also researched this and with Yang Chen's confirmation, this point became even more clear.

A weak perception? Nonsense! Otherwise there wouldn't have been the Snow White fairy in his previous life. But even in his previous life, Sun QingXue was indeed not very famous in the beginning, only after the incident with the LongTai Spirit Supporting Secrets had she risen to fame, so could it have some relation with the LongTai Spirit Supporting Secrets?

So only after her cultivation had been crippled, she had become an overnight success? What kind of problem was this? Yang Chen suddenly seemed to think of something and suddenly grabbed Sun QingXue's hand:

“Pass some spirit power to me, I will take a look!”

Sun QingXue passed a trace of spirit power without any hesitation. Yang Chen quickly discovered that, the spirit power passed on by Sun QingXue surprisingly contained both the first wood and the second wood attributes at the same time and not just first wood.

“How many cultivation methods have you cultivated to lay your foundation?”

Yang Chen seemed to have grasped something and asked again. He had only asked how many and not which cultivation method, so that he did not seem to steal them.

“One!”

Sun QingXue glanced at her master and only then answered:

“Master said not to bite off more than I can chew, there I have practiced only one cultivation method.”

“Who taught this cultivation method?”

Yang Chen’s gaze turned to Zhou Sulan, he had already determined that the problem laid with this cultivation method.

# Chapter 128 - How Can I Make You Believe Me?

---

“It was me, why?”

Zhou Sulan was startled, she hadn't thought that Yang Chen would call the cultivation method of the sect in question. But this matter concerned her favourite disciple, so she did not care that much about Yang Chen's tone, which lacked the proper courtesy and she asked him with knitted brows:

“Why, is there some problem with this cultivation method?”

“First wood is first wood, second wood is second wood. Senior, aren't you making Sun QingXue bite off more than she can chew? What about not making her cultivate many cultivation methods? Why are you making her cultivate a cultivation method which contains both first wood and second wood together?”

Yang Chen turned around and asked Zhou Sulan in an extremely discontent tone.

“Cultivating first wood and second wood together? How is that possible?”

Zhou Sulan asked with great alarm:

“This clearly is a first wood cultivation method!”

“It is?”

Yang Chen watched attentively while staring at Zhou Sulan, extremely suspicious of her. He even believed that Zhou Sulan was doing it on purpose, deliberately using such a cultivation method to destroy Sun QingXue. Or maybe she just didn't understand, but how was this possible? How could a JieDan stage expert not understand the difference between first wood and second wood spirit power?

“Little Xue, pass me your spirit power for me to see!”

Yang Chen's gaze made Zhou Sulan feel extremely insulted, she could not put up with this youngster, who had just reached the Foundation stage and was questioning her knowledge and experience. But this also made her think: previously, apart from checking Sun Qing Xue' body, they hadn't checked her spirit power and cultivation method, because according to her, how could there be any problem with sect's cultivation method?

Sun QingXue gripped Zhou Sulan's hand tightly and began to slowly pass spirit power, but after a moment, Zhou Sulan's complexion turned deathly white. Just as Yang Chen had predicted, she was a wood attributed JieDan expert and clearly knew the difference between first wood and second wood spirit power. Inside of Sun QingXue's spirit power both first wood and second wood were mixed, nobody could deny this fact.

Since she was a new disciple, it was was pardonable that Sun

QingXue didn't know the difference. From the beginning she had only practiced one cultivation method, training in it all the time. Whenever she found a problem, she consulted her master, but her master and the people of the sect called her comprehension into question, which had created a lot of pressure on her, leading to the current situation where she had no self confidence.

Indeed, she had been Zhou Sulan's disciple for more than ten years, but surprisingly the problem was with her disciple's cultivation method, which needed an outsider, a youngster who had only recently reached the Foundation stage to point out. This was simply an extraordinary shame.

“Senior, have you personally chosen this cultivation method?”

Taking that opportunity, Yang Chen began to question Zhou Sulan. He and Sun QingXue didn't have any relationship in their past life, but since they have intersected in this life, naturally he had to allow her to have an even better development.

“Yes, Uncle Master Mo has chosen it personally, saying that it was the most suitable cultivation method for little Xue!”

At this moment, Zhou Sulan had been shocked by the discovery on Sun QingXue's body and completely hadn't realized, that currently her thoughts were completely in Yang Chen's hands. She was even replying to any question asked by Yang Chen without hesitation.

“The cultivation method is not much of a problem, as long as



little Xue stops it and is taken to some senior for examination.”

Yang Chen smiled, so as to ease up the mood, but he immediately asked:

“This Uncle Master Mo, does he have some disciple or grand disciple, who has some talent and is considered valuable within the sect?”

“Uncle Master Mo’s grand disciple Zhu Yanchun had reached the Foundation stage five years ago and was the one who had the best talent among the disciples of that generation and was also considered to be the number one disciple among the official disciples.”

Following Yang Chen’s train of thought, Zhou Sulan quickly answered.

After she had finished speaking, Zhou Sulan suddenly thought of something. Opening both of her eyes widely, an unimaginable expression spread across her face. Staring at Yang Chen like she was looking at a ghost, she stammeringly said:

“You...you...”

“I haven’t said anything, it’s just that I have seen things like this many times!”

Yang Chen faintly shook his head. No wonder that Sun QingXue’s

power had exploded only after her cultivation had been crippled in his previous life. Inside of a big sect, everyone was like a huge family, so there were bound to be many scheming matters. Even if the person was an immortal, he would also be like this.

“But, Uncle Master Mo, she.....”

Zhou Sulan only said these words, but could not continue. She was that much of an idiot, that she wouldn't understand the relationship between them even now. But Uncle Master Mo destroying a talent like Sun QingXue just in order to get her own grand disciple out of a predicament, this kind of thing was too much for her to accept.

“I think, as fast as possible senior should have a discussion with the sect leader of your sect about this matter! With senior's status, you alone can not solve it.”

Yang Chen faintly smiled and called this to Zhou Sulan's attention.

At this moment, Zhou Sulan was completely shocked, she was agreeing to anything Yang Chen was saying, after all, if this kind of matter came out, it would really shock people. It didn't need to be said, she could only go to the sect leader for guidance.

“What should I do?”

Sun QingXue also understood everything. Looking at her master

and Yang Chen, she asked in a low voice.

“Abandon your cultivation progress, change your cultivation method to a proper one and start anew!”

Yang Chen had finally become clear about why had Sun QingXue’s talent had exploded only after it had been abolished by Lin Cheng<sup>1</sup>, as her spirit power was not pure initially.

Yang Chen’s words made Zhou Sulan and Sun QingXue go dumb. Sun QingXue knew she had a problem, but she hadn’t expected that it would be so big. She would even have to dispose of her cultivation and start anew.

Zhou Sulan had wanted to refute and was just about to open her mouth, but she suddenly discovered that she didn’t have anything to say. Sun QingXue’s currently accumulated spirit power was heterogenous, which could not be changed just based on cultivation. But abandoning a few decades of cultivation progress was really pitiful.

The knowledge of the two people wasn’t sufficient, initially Sun QingXue was very happy hearing that the reason had been found, but hearing this information, both master and disciple didn’t know what to do.

Yang Chen didn’t believe that Sun QingXue’s cultivation could be saved, so he had already begun pondering about how to abandon her cultivation progress without injuring her innate qi. It had to be known that, in the previous life, because of cultivating the

LongTai Spirit Supporting Secrets, Sun QingXue's innate qi was damaged and that's why the Snow White fairy could not match the Snow Plum fairy's cultivation. In this life, Yang Chen would certainly not let that matter happen again.

This was the main intention of Yang Chen finding her. He wanted to warn her to not cultivate the LongTai Spirit Supporting Secrets, but since he had found the reason for her cultivating that cultivation method, there was naturally no need to be anxious about future matters.

After pondering a lot, Yang Chen found a method and that was precisely to use seventh metal and eighth metal spirit power to consume the heterogenous spirit power in Sun QingXue's body and then afterwards break her meridians down to make her incapable of using the original method to restore it.

Naturally, it should be just right, although it was destruction, her dantian could not be damaged. This required an expert, but Yang Chen was sure that with the influence and power of the Clear Sky Sect, there had to be many people capable of doing so.

“Little Sun, listen to your master's plan, if you still have further complications with your cultivation, then I have something for you!”

While saying this, Yang Chen took out a third grade Foundation stage pill, containing the essence of the PengLai Divine Wood and gave it to Sun QingXue.

“What is this?”

Sun QingXue didn't have as much knowledge and experience as the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace. Although she knew that it was a precious pill, she did not dare to be certain what it exactly was.

“This is a third grade wood attributed Foundation stage pill!”

Yang Chen very confidently replied:

“As long as you are able to cultivate to the peak of the qi layer, it will definitely allow you to reach the Foundation stage!”

When Yang Chen had taken out the pill, Zhou Sulan had already opened her eyes widely, but because of the formidable first wood spirit power, she did not dare to say anything. Hearing Yang Chen speak with such confidence, she was amazed and happy beyond measure at the same time.

“With this thing, little Xue does not need to abolish her cultivation!”

Zhou Sulan immediately said that. Since it was capable of guaranteeing the Foundation stage, then there was no need for abolishing her painstakingly accumulated cultivation progress.

But Sun QingXue heard another meaning from Yang Chen. Yang Chen had clearly expressed that if there was another serious

complication in her cultivation, that meant that her current cultivation would certainly have to be abolished. This was completely different from Zhou Sulan's opinion. Sun QingXue looked at Yang Chen and then looked at Zhou Sulan again, really not knowing how to make the decision.

On one side was her own master, on the other was her elder brother, who had already brought hope into despair not once, but twice by now. Sun QingXue was sure that both were thinking good for her, but they clearly had different opinions.

Hearing Zhou Sulan's words, Yang Chen deeply sighed within his heart. She didn't think far enough, the level of Sun QingXue's master was ordinary. No wonder, she couldn't find the cause for several decades.

“About whether to dispose or not dispose of your cultivation, you must ask your sect's elders!”

Yang Chen did not want to dispute Zhou Sulan on this question, so he pushed it onto the elders. Naturally Sun QingXue's own wish also had to be taken into consideration:

“Additionally, also see what little Xue wants!”

Zhou Sulan wasn't someone who had her own fixed views, so hearing Yang Chen's words, she did not raise any objections. With the elders making the decision, she also would not have to make any efforts. Just when Sun QingXue was about to leave, Yang Chen smiled towards her and said:

“Senior, this junior has not met with little Xue for so many years and still has many things to talk about, what do you say...”

“Actually I was the one who had forgotten her manners!”

Zhou Sulan awkwardly smiled, Yang Chen had come and hadn't talked much with Sun QingXue, but she had directly followed behind her. The concern she had for her disciple was indeed real, but she was really looking after her very tightly. She turned around to instruct Sun QingXue:

“Little Xue, you reminisce with fellow daoist Yang, I will go and find master to make a report!”

Following Zhou Sulan's disappearing figure with her eyes, Yang Chen stood at the gate. All of a sudden, he said to Sun QingXue:

“Little Xue, don't blame me for blabbering, but this master of yours is mediocre. Her achievements are finite, do not delay yourself for her.”

Hearing these words, Shu QingXue only glanced at Yang Chen and didn't refute, only said bowing her head slightly:

“Master is very good to me!”

“Her vision is finite. Although abandoning your few decades of

cultivation can save innumerable years of future, she can't even see this and could only see a few decades of hard work and could not even make out other people's schemes. I am very worried."

Yang Chen pulled Sun Qing Xue back to the visitor's courtyard to sit:

"If you are not happy, I will give some pointers to you!"

"Master is very good to me!"

Sun QingXue repeated these words. Apparently, apart from Zhou Sulan's achievements being finite, she had shown a lot of concern to this disciple, otherwise Sun QingXue would not have emphasized this.

"Then you take care in the future!"

Yang Chen did not push this topic any longer and only warned her repeatedly:

"You are someone born at an official's home. You must have seen many scheming fights in your house. The cultivation world is not so different from the secular world. When you stick out, other people will try to conceal you, so that they are not engulfed in your limelight and you can only fight with them. There are fights between sect but there are also fights within the sect. You must take care!"



Glancing at Yang Chen's figure, Sun QingXue nodded heavily. At this moment she was completely able to sense Yang Chen's concern for her.

"If your foundation is not good, everything in the future will be shaky."

Yang Chen continued to speak:

"There is no method to purify heterogeneous spirit power, other than cultivating again. You must not distress over a few decades of cultivation, don't dwell on what can't be changed. Cultivators must be clear about what they want, their vision must be long-term."

Nodding her head again, Sun QingXue had already made her decision. Regardless of how much her master insisted, she had to dispose of her current cultivation and cultivate again. Yang Chen had not come this far to harm her, she was extremely clear about this point.

"You must not allow other people's opinion to influence your confidence!"

Yang Chen emphasized this point gazing fixedly towards Sun QingXue:

"You are a cultivation genius, even a Great Principal Golden Immortal cannot deny this. You must always keep this point in

mind.”

Yang Chen’s words were absolutely not empty. There were not just one or two Great Principal Golden Immortals who had died at the hand of Sun QingXue in his previous life, this was a clear cut fact.

“Am I really not bad?”

Sun QingXue had really formed some kind of mental barrier at the Clear Sky Sect. The sneering of the people for such a long time, has possibly led to a hit on her confidence.

“Believe me, as long as you are willing, there will be no one who can surpass you in wood attributed cultivation!”

Yang Chen heavily nodded his head:

“You absolutely can!”

“Elder brother, can I trust you?”

Sun QingXue had as if again turned into the shy little girl at the execution ground, her two eyes some blurred.

“Do I have any reason to lie to you?”

Yang Chen smilingly asked.

“No you don’t!”

Sun QingXue said this, but lowered her head and clearly still hadn’t completely believed these words of Yang Chen. This made Yang Chen feel frustrated. If Sun QingXue didn’t have any confidence, then it will prove to be a big hindrance in her cultivation. What is a heart’s devil? This is exactly an example of a heart’s devil.

“Speak, little Xue, what do you need in order to believe that you are not stupid, compared to them?”

Yang Chen also knew the root cause, but frankly speaking, it was his first time enlightening someone, so he basically didn’t know how to do it and could only use the method of directly provoking her.

“You have a fire attributed spirit root, but if you can also cultivate wood attributed spirit power, I will believe you!”

Whether unconsciously or deliberately, Sun QingXue had raised this seemingly impossible request.

“Are you sure you want this as the proof that you are not stupid? To make a person with a fire attributed spirit root cultivate a wood attributed cultivation method, is supposed to prove that you are a wood attributed heavenly genius?”

Yang Chen asked this, not knowing whether to laugh or to cry.

“Are you not asking me to believe you? As long as you can achieve it, I will completely believe you, big brother!”

Sun QingXue nodded without the slightest hesitation, clearly stating her line of thoughts.

---

[\[1\]](#) The person behind the LongTai Spirit Supporting Secrets

# Chapter 129 - You Have To Change Your Master

---

Although releasing wood attributed spirit power was no big problem for Yang Chen, Yang Chen didn't do this. Currently Sun QingXue didn't have any confidence, but she was a person with a full wood attributed spirit root. If she really saw a fire attributed cultivator releasing wood attributed spirit power, then maybe her pathetic confidence would take an even greater hit.

“Give me a good reason!”

Yang Chen shook his head while speaking to Sun QingXue.

Yang Chen's gaze made Sun QingXue lower her head, as if not daring to be face to face with Yang Chen. Just when Yang Chen sighed, Sun QingXue raised her head again and, looking towards Yang Chen, earnestly said:

“Elder Brother, you are right, my master's vision is indeed limited, other than being good towards me, she doesn't have any other merit.”

As long as Sun QingXue had said anything, Yang Chen would have been able to accept it. Hearing that Sun QingXue had perfect knowledge of her current situation, Yang Chen was completely satisfied.

“Master has gone to look for someone to discuss, she will

certainly return without any results.”

Sun QingXue slowly shook her head, her mood was very gloomy:

“With this matter, it is still unknown if I will be able to reach this level again after I had abolish my cultivation, even my life is not guaranteed. I do require some kind of miracle to happen to increase my confidence.”

“As long as you want, any kind of miracle can happen!”

Yang Chen clearly understood Sun Qing Xue’s desire. What she needed at that moment was not confidence in her cultivation, but rather the self confidence to keep moving forward, regardless of whatever happened.

A vigorous and robust spirit power suddenly rose in Yang Chen’s hand. Within a moment, after Yang Chen had moved, Sun QingXue sitting in front of Yang Chen immediately sensed the extremely pure essence of first wood. She could not help but open her eyes widely, looking at Yang Chen as if looking at a monster.

“Carefully study it, this is pure essence of first wood spirit power!”

Yang Chen immediately pulled Sun QingXue’s little hand and passed the first wood spirit power through it, making her experience this properly.

Sun QingXue was still in shock that a fire attributed cultivator like Yang Chen could produce wood attributed spirit power like this, when Yang Chen pulled her hand. She didn't respond and just looked at Yang Chen as if she was looking at a monster. Her small mouth opened slightly, as if not daring to believe that she was seeing.

Yang Chen slightly fluctuated the spirit power he was emitting, to rouse Sun QingXue from her shock. After waking up, the first thing Sun QingXue did was to use that other hand, which hadn't been grabbed by Yang Chen to cover her small mouth because of her surprise.

“What are you doing?”

Sun QingXue was not only extremely shocked but also terrified. Yang Chen was a fire attributed cultivator, a person with a fire attributed spirit root had suddenly produced such pure wood attributed spirit power, which was even more pure than hers, who was purely a wood attributed cultivator. How could it not make her extremely shocked?

“Just the miracle you need!”

Yang Chen smiled and continued to placate her:

“Carefully sense it, this is pure first wood attributed spirit power.”

At this moment, Sun QingXue had finally gotten over her shock and begun to slowly experience it. Actually, even Zhou Sulan could have allowed Sun QingXue to sense first wood spirit power, but Yang Chen's was different. His first wood spirit power contained the essence of PengLai Divine Wood and was thus many times more formidable than Zhou Sulan's. Allowing Sun QingXue to experience it would have many benefits for her.

“So pure first wood spirit power is like this!”

Sun QingXue muttered after sensing it for a long time. Compared to her current heterogenous spirit power, Yang Chen's spirit power was much more formidable.

“No need to be discouraged, as soon as you abolish your current cultivation and cultivate from the start, when you use the wood attributed third grade foundation stage pill, you can also have similarly pure spirit power.”

Yang Chen consoled her. He could see that Sun QingXue had already come out from the depression she was in just a moment ago, apparently allowing her to look at this trick had really provided her with great encouragement.

With regards to this, Sun QingXue was very clear about her current situation, but the most painful thing was that her master was not of much use. It was even possible that if Yang Chen hadn't come, she would have never even found the problem with her cultivation method.



But this was also good. At least knowing where the problem was and trying to find the method to solve it was many times better than confused people who did not know what they had to do.

“This is second wood spirit power, you should also sense this, but it is not as formidable as the first wood spirit power.”

Yang Chen was someone who perfectly understood his cultivation. The first wood spirit power had been refined by the PengLai Divine Wood's essence, but the second wood spirit power was absolutely ordinary, maybe it would even be inferior to Zhou Sulan.

But Sun QingXue was very grateful. Zhou Sulan had never instructed her like this before. She very carefully, even greedily, experienced the spirit power Yang Chen was passing over, her two beautiful eyes closed shut.

Sun QingXue was someone whom Yang Chen had to try to rope in with vigor. He even had to help her cultivate, but the current situation didn't allow Yang Chen to feel relieved. But when he was saying that his second wood spirit power was inferior, a thought suddenly flashed within his mind.

“Have you thought about changing masters?”

Yang Chen suddenly asked.

“Changing my master?”

Sun QingXue was startled. After she had been shocked by Yang Chen's body possessing both first and second wood spirit power, Yang Chen's every word was like an imperial edict to her. The matter of changing her master had caught Sun QingXue off guard all of a sudden:

“How is that possible?”

“Even a person who has a fire spirit root like me can cultivate wood attribute spirit power, then why can't you change your master?”

Yang Chen used Sun QingXue's own argument to refute her own question. Since even the most impossible of matters had happened in front of her, then why were other matters impossible?

Sun QingXue was startled again, but suddenly a smile emerged on her face. This was the kind of smile that appeared after all pressure on her had been released. Yang Chen had already allowed her to look at an impossible miracle, so if he said that anything was possible, then it had to be.

“Your words are correct, your master will certainly return without any good results.”

Yang Chen smiled:

“Her temper is really weak, in the future you will continue to get

bullied. Exchange her for a master who is a little bit more powerful. Only then can you establish yourself firmly. Rest assured, I will take care of this matter. With this I will also solve the problem related to my second wood spirit power.”

As for Yang Chen’s words, the first ones were still normal, but the later ones did not make any sense. Sun QingXue was puzzled. How could changing her master have any relationship with Yang Chen’s second wood spirit power?

But he did not explain Sun QingXue’s doubt anymore. Yang Chen still remembered the goal he had come here for:

“In the future, if you run into a cultivation method which allows rapid progress and is applicable for all attributes, by all means, do not cultivate it! You must never spoil your foundation.”

After he finished saying this, Yang Chen suddenly thought of something. Sun QingXue had been so shrewd, could it be possible that in her previous life, she had deliberately cultivated that cultivation method? But there was no way to verify this.

“I know, elder brother!”

Sun QingXue replied, just like a meek wife.

“The cultivation method has no problem!”

Zhou Sulan who originally had gone in a rage had returned

dejectedly, her behaviour while facing Yang Chen was also not very good:

“You evil person made me go back for no reason and make such a slanderous accusation!”

Looking at her behaviour, she had already been convinced by someone and had conversely begun to blame Yang Chen and Sun QingXue. She certainly cherished Sun QingXue a lot, so the majority of her hatred was towards Yang Chen.

Such a person who could change what she was insisting on so easily... It would only be a miracle if she could instruct Sun QingXue properly. Even if Sun Qingxue was a heavenly talent, being taught by a mediocre person would also make her a mediocre person. Looking at this situation, Yang Chen was even more sure of his decision to convince Sun QingXue to change her master.

If separating her from the Clear Sky Sect was not a bigger problem, Yang Chen would have wanted to take Sun QingXue back to the Pure Yang Palace. But unfortunately, Sun QingXue had already been apprenticed there for more than ten years, she absolutely could not quit.

Yang Chen was even more resentful towards Shi ShanShan now for pushing Sun QingXue into this living hell. Although Sun QingXue had been in the Clear Sky Sect even in his previous life, the occurrences before the tragedy still hadn't changed.

“Senior. Junior's cultivation experience is finite and

shortsighted, so mistakes are unavoidable!”

Yang Chen politely apologized, the following matters still required Zhou Sulan to act as a middleman, which could not be done without eliminating her anger.

Zhou Sulan was in a very bad mood, but Yang Chen had himself admitted his error, so she had no reason to flare up. Yang Chen was a guest who had come from far away and had never said that he had a vision like her, a JieDan stage expert. Moreover, Sun QingXue’s spirit power really was the problem, so Yang Chen saying that there was some problem with her cultivation was not false at all.

“Don’t mind it, don’t mind it!”

Zhou Sulan helplessly shook her head.

“Ai, little Xue’s comprehension is really very weak, she can’t even comprehend the most basic of the cultivation methods!”

“Senior, apart from taking a look at little Xue, this youngster still has one more favour to ask.”

Hearing that Zhou Sulan had again concluded that the problem was with Sun QingXue’s comprehension, Yang Chen did not talk with her about it and started talking about his other aim, which he had thought of a few moments ago.

“What do you still want?”

Zhou Sulan again her brows again. What a shameless person, he still wanted to open his mouth.

“Junior wants to read in the Clear Sky Sect’s library.”

Yang Chen smiled while stating his request:

“Senior must not misunderstand, junior is definitely not asking for those books related to cultivation of the juniors of the Clear Sky Sect, only those which are not important. Junior just wants to increase his experience.”

Yang Chen reputation of reading everything in the library of the Nine Earth Manor had also spread along with his reputation of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, so this requirement was completely consistent with his behaviour.

But Zhou Sulan was not in support of this. Yang Chen’s shortsightedness had caused her to suffer humiliation in front of her master and the sect leader. If it were not for the face of her cherished disciple Sun QingXue, she would have never seen Yang Chen again.

“Why do you want to read the collection of my Clear Sky Sect?”

Although Yang Chen’s request was in accordance with his nature, it was not in the interest of the Clear Sky Sect, even if the material

Yang Chen wanted to read had no relation to the cultivation of the Clear Sky Sect.

“Junior is willing to invest a sufficient price.”

Yang Chen said very honestly:

“I’m exchanging this for things the Clear Sky Sect requires.”

“You are a trifling Foundation stage cultivator, what kind of things can you take out, which can catch the eye of my Clear Sky Sect?”

Zhou Sulan said disdainfully. The Clear Sky Sect had as many as thousands of JieDan experts, so why would they be interested in anything a trifling Foundation stage expert like Yang Chen could offer? Yang Chen was really someone who did not know his place.

“Junior has a method to deal with the blood phantom vine, but I don’t know if it will be sufficient to gain me the qualifications to enter the library?”

Yang Chen said with a smile as if he hadn’t seen Zhou Sulan’s complexion. At the same time, he also gave a reassuring glance to Sun QingXue.

“The blood phantom vine?”

A tremor passed through Zhou Sulan's entire body. Luckily she was a JieDan expert, so she was able to control her mental state in time. But the instant Yang Chen had said these words, she almost jumped on the spot:

“You know a method to deal with the blood phantom vine?”

Zhou Sulan could not help being terrified: A peak YuanYing stage expert of the Clear Sky Sect, Hua Wanting, was suffering from the complications caused by the blood phantom demon. His situation had already continued for many years now and initially Hua Wanting had been the most promising person for rising to the Da Cheng stage in the past hundred years, but the last time he had gone out to train, he had been attacked by a blood phantom vine and afterwards had fallen asleep to this day and had never woken up. If Yang Chen really knew a method to deal with a blood phantom vine, that would just be like sending charcoal to the Clear Sky Sect in snowy weather.

Yang Chen hadn't intended to raise Hua Wanting's matter so early. Although the complications received by the blood phantom vine had been too many, because of the constant struggle with the blood demon vine for a hundred or so years, Hua Wanting's cultivation was also crazily improving. In his previous life, when Hua Wanting had forcibly won the struggle with the blood demon vine and thrown it away, he had directly entered the Da Cheng stage after waking up.

This matter was something that would happen after 20 years. Yang Chen had planned that he would go back after ten to fifteen years and then rescue Hua Wanting and gain the friendship of a Da



Cheng stage expert, but since this had already been shifted to an earlier date, Yang Chen was no longer sure if Hua Wanting's cultivation would still be able to attain the Da Cheng stage.

But because of Sun QingXue, Yang Chen decided to shift Hua Wanting's rescue to an earlier date. Although he could completely free himself without any help from Yang Chen, how could Yang Chen let go of such a matter which didn't cost him anything? Perhaps, by some mystery, Hua Wanting may not be completely unconscious and if Yang Chen saved him only after ten to fifteen years, he may say that he had already done most of the work. Moreover, saving him currently may just be the right time.

Sun QingXue completely didn't know what had happened. When she had heard Yang Chen say the words 'blood phantom vine' and had seen Zhou Sulan's reaction afterwards, it made her completely suspicious, but nobody explained anything to her.

At this time, how could Zhou Sulan remember that she had an apprentice waiting for an explanation? She directly took a step forwards and fixed her attention on Yang Chen:

“Is what you are saying true?”

“Senior, do you think junior would make a fun using this matter?”

Yang Chen rhetorically questioned. Who would dare to make a joke of a matter concerning the elder of the Clear Sky Sect. Not to mention Yang Chen, perhaps even the palace master of the Pure

Yang Palace would not dare to speak about this matter casually.

“So many experts do not know, how can a junior at the Foundation stage like you know?”

Zhou Sulan was still somewhat skeptical, the entire Clear Sky Sect couldn't find a method, but suddenly a Foundation stage youngster appears, saying that he could resolve this, how could someone not be skeptical hearing this?

“At the time of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, there wasn't anyone who believed that we could refine the Heaven Seizing Pill!”

Yang Chen revealed a mysterious smile:

“Junior has already said that this junior is fond of reading miscellaneous things and has also read a lot, so it is completely normal that many times I know things that others do not!”

# Chapter 130 - The Price For Renegotiating Is Certainly Higher

---

Using the Heaven Seizing Pill was the best retort. Especially since Yang Chen's reputation of reading books was very well known, but this also saved him from having to explain too much.

“You really know how to deal with the blood phantom vine?”

After experiencing the problem regarding Sun QingXue's cultivation method, Zhou Sulan was extremely cautious and asked again to confirm.

“I had come this time mainly to read the library collection, I had no previous knowledge of little Xue's matter.”

Although he did not give a direct answer, Yang Chen made Zhou Sulan understand that he was completely earnest.

Zhou Sulan had some confidence in her heart that, since it was just the library, there wouldn't be much of a problem. Sun QingXue's matter was indeed unexpected and Yang Chen had never before come to the Clear Sky Sect. It was his first time, so it was completely possible that he did not know Sun QingXue's circumstances.

Although, Zhou Sulan was relieved, she also intended to report Yang Chen's matter to the higher ups. She had made up her mind, but it still depended on the higher ups. She was only a JieDan stage

expert and still didn't have the influence to make decisions for a peak YuanYing stage expert.

Very soon, Yang Chen was led to the main visitor's courtyard of the Clear Sky Sect, in the front of the Clear Sky Sect's sect master and a few YuanYing stage experts. After completing the proper salutations, Yang Chen put forth his plan of dealing with the blood phantom vine in exchange for a large number of miscellaneous books, which did not have any relation with the Clear Sky Sect's cultivation.

Since this matter concerned the life and death of a YuanYing stage elder, even the sect master of the Clear Sky Sect did not dare to be careless. Even if Yang Chen's words were a deluge of heavenly flowers, they still had to be checked seriously, and so she asked him clearly:

“This technique is something only this junior can perform.”

But Yang Chen would remain silent to death. What a joke, if he told them the method first, then what would be his use?

“Then how can you prove that you can handle the blood phantom vine?”

The mood of the sect master of the Clear Sky Sect was not good. A trifling Foundation stage youngster surprisingly dared to be impudent in front of her. If it were not for Yang Chen's skill, she would have already made people teach a good lesson to this arrogant youngster. Naturally, she would make other people do

this. This youngster did not have the qualifications to make her do it herself.

“Junior can experiment on the blood phantom vine surrounding Senior Hua’s body for senior to look, without getting in contact with Elder Hua.”

Yang Chen knew that, if he could not show them something, these people would not believe him. Using this method would not deepen Hua Wanting’s injury but it would prove his skill.

As expected, after Yang Chen proposed this method, the sect master of the Clear Sky Sect also began to exchange glances with the few elders in order to communicate. The elders were also present on the scene and had heard Yang Chen’s method, which appeared to be a dependable and feasible method, so all of them silently nodded towards the sect master.

“You only want large number of books from the library in return?”

The Sect Master was attentively watching Yang Chen’s eyes, as if wanting to find something from Yang Chen’s reply.

“Sect master must not underestimate these scrolls.”

Yang Chen replied with a smile:

“Perhaps in the eyes of seniors, these books are of no use, but for

this junior they are the best method to expand my horizons. Last time, when refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, I had obtained the required inspiration precisely from the hoard of miscellaneous books of my master. This time, when referring to dealing with the blood phantom vine, occasionally I will have to refer to these.”

“What else do you want?”

Although Yang Chen had already stated his request indirectly, the sect master was still not convinced. How could the life of a peak YuanYing stage expert, extremely close to Da Cheng stage, be this cheap?

“If senior really thinks this is too little, then can you grant this junior the qualifications to participate in the Clear Sky Sect’s auction?”

Against what they had expected, Yang Chen was not even a little formal. Since they thought he was asking for too little, Yang Chen did not mind getting more. But the things he wanted had no relation with substituting Sun QingXue’s master.

Sun QingXue was really a girl with a rich background. From the beginning she had accompanied Yang Chen there, she had not even batted an eyelid, as if only treating Yang Chen as an acquaintance. She hadn’t even opened her mouth.

“Since you can find the method from the books, then someone among the thousands of disciple of my Clear Sky Sect can surely also find a method!”

This time, the sect master hadn't said anything. Instead it was an elder sitting behind her, with her tone completely blunt.

"Oh, then forgive this junior for being rash, I will take my leave now!"

Yang Chen apologized, beaming with smiles. Saying his goodbyes, he turned around to depart, not dragging his feet in the least.

If they could have found a method, they would already have found it long ago, why drag it out until now? Yang Chen departing like this made the elder of the Clear Sky Sect remain dumbly rooted to the same place. Who could have thought that he would depart as soon as he said his goodbyes, without even explaining anything, how could he do this?

Originally the elders and the sect master had planned that one person would play the hero and one would play the villain and first grasp the method that Yang Chen knew. Although it was without success, the sect master did not care, but the elder felt somewhat wronged and wanted to haggle a little more over the price. She had only thought of suppressing Yang Chen's arrogant attitude a little to make him know that he was not the only one who could haggle, but who would have imagined that, against all expectations, Yang Chen would not fall for his trick.

Yang Chen leaving so swiftly was against the expectations of the upper echelons of the Clear Sky Sect. Although they were

desperate to know, they also had to maintain their demeanour. They also could not be too overbearing towards a junior who had come as a guest, most of all a junior who was someone whom Elder Wu regarded as important. And Elder Wu still hadn't ascended.

The sect master hastily sent a meaningful glance towards Zhou Sulan. At this moment, only Zhou Sulan and Sun QingXue were suitable to call back Yang Chen. If other people present on the scene did this, what would remain of their face?

“Wait a minute, Fellow Daoist Yang!”

By the time Yang Chen had already departed to the door, Zhou Sulan hastily urged him, simultaneously also hinting towards Sun QingXue to step forward to stop Yang Chen.

“Elder Brother Yang, Elder did not truly think like that, you must not misunderstand.”

Sun QingXue also cleverly showed off in front of the Sect Master and the other elders, while at the same time also acting like a spoiled child, making Yang Chen loosen his guard:

“She was only worried about Elder Hua, that's all.”

“Yang Chen, with regards to the Pure Yang Palace and the Clear Sky Sect, both are on friendly terms, if anyone wants to say anything, they can say without any restrictions, it should never go as far as departing because of one wrong sentence from one side!”



The Clear Sky Sect's sect master had never thought before that, one day, she would talk to a Foundation stage junior with such amiable and friendly tone and moreover it was just her first time confronting Yang Chen.

The elder who had opened her mouth just a moment ago had already retreated behind the sect master's body, not daring to say anything anymore. Her head had been dropping a little, but while nobody was paying attention to her, a trace of discontentment flashed through her eyes.

“Since you have already found the method, we will not need to spend the strength.”

On the sect master's face was a sincere smile:

“Moreover, in accordance to what you have said, if you are able to deal with the matter of the blood phantom vine, you will get ten thousand books and the qualifications to the auction.”

“Senior, forgive this junior for being impudent.”

On Yang Chen's face was a smile which seemed even more joyful compared to the sect master:

“Those were previous conditions, now it is twenty thousand books and the qualifications to the auction.”

Yang Chen, with a smile all across his face was just like a cunning profiteer at that moment. The kind of profiteer who didn't mind making a counter offer when haggling, the kind of profiteer that any honest person would want to throw to the ground and kick to death.

The problem was, that the thing that they needed was in the hands of this profiteer and the starting price of that profiteer was moreover not that high, but when the Clear Sky Sect wanted to raise the price they had to pay even more.

Since they wanted to haggle with Yang Chen, this meant they had to accept Yang Chen's conditions. For the Clear Sky Sect, the life of a peak YuanYing stage expert who was going to break through to the Da Cheng stage was worth far more than twenty thousand books. This was one of the reasons Yang Chen had dared to increase the price.

Regardless of whether Hua Wanting was tormented by the blood phantom vine and his cultivation entered Da Cheng stage, just Hua Wanting's cultivation experience was equal to ten times the price asked for by Yang Chen. If the sect master of the Clear Sky Sect let this matter slip, let alone speaking of her face on the outside, just the voices of blame and reproach in the Clear Sky Sect would be too much for her to withstand.

"Twenty thousand books, I will immediately have someone prepare them!"

The sect master of the Clear Sky Sect who met losses and gains with equanimity, knew that their previous conduct definitely was

not in accordance with a big sect's style, so to prevent Yang Chen from increasing the prices again, she directly agreed to Yang Chen's request:

“At what time, can we see the results of the tests you said you will conduct?”

“You can see it at any time!”

Yang Chen spoke directly, but within his heart, he was full of praise with regards to Sun QingXue's behaviour just a moment ago. With just a sentence, she had been tactful enough to allow everyone, most of all that elder, to get out of an embarrassing situation and was moreover still able to show her concern for Hua Wanting. These few favours would surely benefit her in the future.

“And what if you are not able to resolve the blood phantom vine?”

The elder who had spoken just a moment ago, suddenly lifted her head, her two eyes intently watching Yang Chen. Together with the formidable pressure of the YuanYing stage bearing down on him. She wanted to see whether Yang Chen would lose his self control and be alarmed, otherwise she would not have said said anything again.

The sect master was a little late in stopping her, the elder's pressure had already come out, so she had no alternative other than releasing her own pressure to cut it off at midway. But unfortunately, she was a little late. The elder's pressure had

already reached Yang Chen's body.

Just when the sect master and the other elders started lamenting in their hearts, believing that Yang Chen would be witlessly scared and lose his mind, they suddenly discovered that Yang Chen was just the same as normal. He basically did not care about the elder's pressure and replied with a smile:

“If this junior cannot resolve the blood phantom vine, then be assured the blood phantom vine will be directly sucked in my body and I will die, what else can I say. All seniors, is this agreeable to you?”

Being ignored like this was like a tight slap on the face of the elder sitting behind the sect master, her whole face was flushed red. If it were not for the sect master and the other elders sitting in the room, maybe she would have already attacked him in rage. Allowing a Foundation stage youngster to ignore her like this, was seriously a little too hard for her to handle.

“This junior was formerly an executioner, so I'm innately not affected by killing intent or anything like that.”

While Yang Chen explained with a gentle laugh:

“Afterwards I had climbed to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs twice, so I am even less worried about any pressure pushing on me. Seniors should not jest with me!”

Once Yang Chen's words came out, the elder who released the pressure was even more embarrassed, but she was unable to say anything. Her face had thoroughly turned red due to her embarrassment. She did not even intend to continue waiting for the results and directly left the room disappearing completely.

Once she walked out, apparently everyone's mood relaxed. Yang Chen had already said clearly that if he was not able to resolve the blood phantom vine, it implied that the blood phantom vine would kill Yang Chen. Everyone clearly knew about this point, who in the room did not know the ferociousness of the blood phantom vine? Even a peak YuanYing stage ancestor had been tormented by it, then what about Yang Chen, who was just a minor Foundation stage youngster?

Sun QingXue knew for the first time that the blood phantom vine could be terrible like this. If Yang Chen was not able to resolve it, he would have to pay with his life.

She wanted to stop Yang Chen, that he should not do this by any means, but in front of the sect master and the other elders as well as her master, how could she have any chance to speak? She could only continue to worry within her heart and at the same time feel warm towards Yang Chen.

That one person was willing to risk his life by himself to assist her in changing her status in the sect. This kind of feeling was something she had never before come across in this sect. Even if her master loved her dearly, it was not to the extent of risking her life for Sun QingXue. How could Sun QingXue not be moved?

The sect master together with the elders did not dare to be careless with regards to the matter of Hua Wanting and immediately led Yang Chen to the gate of Hua Wanting's courtyard. Everyone had a tacit understanding with each other and stopped at the doorstep.

After the blood phantom vine had coiled around Hua Wanting, she had rushed back to the sect with all of her strength. The blood phantom vine was extremely dangerous, even to the extent that the entire area in the vicinity of elder Hua Wanting's courtyard had been sealed. People did not dare to go near it for a reason. Even if it were these elders or the sect master, they also did not dare to come in contact with him without the restrictions of a few spell formations.

Just outside of the innermost restriction, everyone could see the situation inside clearly. The entire courtyard was similar to a sea of blood. The red coloured vine covered up the entire area within everyone's field of view. In the center of the courtyard, a figure was sitting upright, but it was already covered entirely by the blood phantom vine and the exact situation could not be seen.

Only one thing was sure, that it was elder Hua Wanting. Apart from any special circumstances, the blood colored vine required a large amount of spirit power and blood to survive. That the blood colored vine was thriving in this way clearly illustrated that Elder Hua was still alive and enduring the torment.

The sect leader and the elders did not feel good seeing this scene. It was also the first time for Zhou Sulan and Sun QingXue seeing such frightening circumstances. Zhou Sulan could still tolerate it,

after all she had much more knowledge and experience, but Sun QingXue was forced to close her eyes.

“Elder Hua is inside.”

The sect master said, pointing towards the motionless silhouette with a gloomy tone. But she also gave Yang Chen a chance to retreat:

“Yang Chen, if you don’t have assurances, then you must not risk your life, I will not look into the words you said previously.”

After all, Yang Chen was someone Elder Wu thought very highly of and while Elder Wu had still not ascended, nobody wanted to be responsible for Yang Chen’s death.

“Senior, this junior has never withdrawn his words!”

Yang Chen smiled and afterwards, in accordance with the sect master’s instructions, he opened the first layer of restrictions and entered. After entering the final barrier, Yang Chen did not stop for one moment and directly rushed to enter that courtyard in large steps.

Once Yang Chen’s figure appeared in the courtyard, the blood phantom vine was like a hungry, carnivorous beast, which had seen fresh food. It directly rushed towards Yang Chen with an earth shattering might, wishing to cover him up.

# Chapter 131 - Expelling The Blood Phantom Vine

---

Although the people outside could not hear the sound, they could see the situation inside. Yang Chen could only take one step forward before he immediately turned into a huge cocoon bound by the blood colored vine. Not even a little of his figure could be seen anymore.

“Ah!”

Sun QingXue had been able to come over because of her relationship with Yang Chen, but she hadn't anticipated this kind of situation and immediately cried out in fear.

“Who is losing their head? Why has she come here!”

One elder watching the situation inside berated Sun QingXue after hearing her shout.

Only then did Sun QingXue discover, that the huge cocoon formed around Yang Chen was still mobile and was slowly moving towards Elder Hua. Although those blood colored vines had covered Yang Chen tightly, they were only enclosing him on the outside and could not touch Yang Chen's body.

“How is he able to do that?”



Looking at this scene, nobody had any more doubt about Yang Chen's ability to handle the blood phantom vine. Although the vine had attacked Yang Chen, it did not dare to get close to his body. Everyone seeing this was baffled. The blood phantom vine, in front of whom even elder Hua had been at her wits end, for which several tens of thousands of disciples of the Clear Sky Sect had been unable to find a solution. How could a trifling Foundation stage youngster accomplish this?

Naturally Yang Chen could not explain this. The blood phantom vine was a name famous even in the Immortal Realm for its dreadfulness. Apart from a few almighty experts, even if it was a Great Principal Golden Immortal, in front of a mature blood phantom vine, they also didn't have any means to control it. There was only one opportunity to control the blood phantom vine and that was to restrain it in its infancy.

The infant stage of the blood phantom vine was not counted in years, but rather the time before the blood phantom vine had ascended and was able to suck an immortal's blood. In his previous life, Hua Wanting was able to endure the torment of the blood phantom vine for a hundred years before struggling free from it and throwing it away. Only, at that time, she had been relying on her formidable cultivation, while Yang Chen was relying on some herbs and the essence of the eighth metal spirit power to control it.

The blood phantom vine was classified as second wood, the entire vine class were herbaceous plants, so it could be classified as second wood. Yang Chen previous talk with Sun QingXue in regards to improving his own second wood spirit power was precisely because of this. After he would subdue this blood phantom vine, which had been stuffing itself up with the blood of

an expert infinitely near the Da Cheng stage, it would be sufficient to allow his cultivation increase with redoubled power.

The eighth metal spirit power wrapping up his entire body was precisely restraining this second wood. After adding some formidable herbs, the blood phantom vine basically did not dare to come close to his body, even if it did not have a consciousness, this kind of plants had instincts to sense danger.

Although it did not have any contact, the blood colored vine had still covered Yang Chen tightly. But wherever Yang Chen stepped, the vine in that area got out of the way.

Very soon, Yang Chen's huge cocoon had wiggled to the center of the courtyard, getting close to the region where elder Hua Wanting was sitting upright.

The hearts of the sect master and the few elders watching from the outside were hanging in their throats. This was the most crucial point and although Yang Chen had proved that the blood phantom vine could not injure him for the time being, removing the vine covering the entire body of Hua Wanting was not exactly a simple matter.

Within the darkness cast by the omnipresent vine, Yang Chen walked step by step, closing in on Hua Wanting's body and then stopped. Using his spiritual awareness, he began to examine the circumstances there.

The blood phantom vine was capable of effectively isolating

spiritual awareness probes, so Yang Chen was only capable of using the movement on the ground to sense Hua Wanting's circumstances.

Hua Wanting was still alive and fighting tenaciously, but the signs of her life had already dropped to a minimum. Yang Chen could not even sense her heartbeat. But Yang Chen knew that Hua Wanting had controlled the systems necessary for living to the greatest extent, because the quicker the blood flow, the quicker the blood phantom vine would suck the blood. At this moment, Hua Wanting's body had formed a balance with the blood phantom vine.

“If it were not little Xue, I would have not come here to save you!”

Yang Chen said, unafraid that anyone outside would hear it. He knew that the layers of restrictions completely isolated sound. These words were said only for Hua Wanting to hear.

“A talented disciple with an almost completely full wood spirit root, but unexpectedly, just because of someone's selfishness, someone played tricks with her cultivation method, wasting a few decades of her cultivation and producing mixed spirit power throughout her entire body.”

Yang Chen was as if talking to himself, like venting his anger:

“The Clear Sky Sect is still considered to be an upright sect? Pah! What a joke!”

If someone among the upper echelons of the Clear Sky Sect heard his words at this moment, nobody would believe that he was meticulously trying to save Hua Wanting and would only be under the impression that, since his realm was very low, he was unable to control his anger.

But Yang Chen knew that he was saying all of this for Hua Wanting to hear. Hua Wanting had been sober headed from the beginning and had never loosened control of her body in her fight against the blood phantom vine. Hua Wanting heard every word and every letter of what Yang Chen was saying clearly.

While speaking, Yang Chen's hand had already begun to extend towards Hua Wanting's body. Hua Wanting, sitting upright, was naturally able to sense Yang Chen's movement, but Yang Chen's casual movement, had almost made her mind lose her defence.

She had reached this equilibrium after a hard struggle, believing that after some more time, she could struggle to the winning position and afterwards slowly take care of this blood phantom vine. But if Yang Chen displaced her slightly, her entire fight of a hundred years was going to be burnt. Unfortunately, despite being anxious, her body was not capable of making even the slightest movement, not even a warning movement or sound. She could also not issue even a trace of spiritual awareness, because she was being blocked by the vines.

Yang Chen's hand stopped half an inch away from Hua Wanting. The intense medicinal qi and the eighth metal spirit power made the vine surrounding Hua Wanting's body move a little bit, but not

much. This was not as bad as giving rise to backlash from the spirit power inside elder Hua's body.

Elder Hua's body was sealed tightly, Yang Chen only knew that this meant that she was alive, but he did not know that what kind of circumstances were under the blood phantom vine. Once the vine displaced, it immediately revealed a crack and Yang Chen's spiritual awareness immediately rushed in through that crack.

In a moment, Yang Chen knew the exact situation. Just as he had anticipated, the blood phantom vine's root had already penetrated into elder Hua's stomach and the master root had penetrated her heart, swallowing the blood produced in her body at all times. No wonder he could not sense any pulse, there simply was no pulse.

But even under these circumstances elder Hua was alive which clearly proved how formidable she was. No wonder she shook the heavens and the earth in the future. After being tempered for a hundred years there, her willpower had become extremely firm and persistent, what else could cause any problems for her?

“I am going to take care of this blood phantom vine, but you have to cooperate with me!”

Yang Chen said this like a doctor giving instructions to a sick person and then suddenly added:

“Ah what stupid thing I am doing? You can't hear anything!”

In short, he had already warned Hua Wanting to make her preparations but at the same time also cleverly covered his tracks. ‘I believed you couldn’t hear anything, so no one can blame me!’

The blood phantom root’s master vein had already penetrated Hua Wanting’s heart and there were also many fibrous roots filling her arteries. Removing them was not an easy matter.

“In any case, since you can’t hear me, you also won’t mind a little bit of pain!”

Yang Chen said again, but suddenly many long needles appeared within his hand.

These long needles were completely ordinary. Apart from being hollow, they didn’t have any speciality, even the materials used were completely ordinary. Previously, Yang Chen hadn’t thought that he was going to save Hua Wanting this time, so he hadn’t prepared enough and had only refined them while waiting for Zhou Sulan, hurriedly and crudely.

But despite being simple, they were already sufficient at this moment. The main use of hollow acupuncture needles was to input medicinal qi into the body of elder Hua Wanting, so using precious materials would just be a waste.

With one shake of his hand the needle punctured Hua Wanting’s skin. Luckily, this region was elder Hua’s arm and once the needle entered, a portion of dense medicine qi, carrying eighth metal spirit power with it, immediately rushed forth.

The blood phantom vine in the vein where the needle had entered, began to withdraw at a rapid speed. But within a hundred years, these vines had already fused together with elder Hua's body, so suddenly being forcibly separated produced an immense pain, as if flesh was being ripped apart.

The fierce pain made Hua Wanting almost lose her mind. But fortunately Yang Chen had already warned her, so she was prepared and after enduring these hundred years of constant torment, her capability to endure pain had increased by a large extent. Her mental state had become even more tenacious than heavenly silk, forcibly enduring the pain without budging even a little. Other region's hadn't loosened even a little.

Along with Yang Chen putting in the medicinal qi and spirit flow in a constant stream, the blood phantom vine in Hua Wanting's veins began to slowly pull back and very soon the blood demon vine could neither enter nor control that region again.

As soon as the sensation and control of this region were restored, Hua Wanting's heart relaxed. Yang Chen really was able to settle the blood phantom vine and was not just making trouble.

Outside, the sect leader and the elders of the Clear Sky Sect had nervously clenched their fists. Until now, everything appeared to be normal and this also made their desire even greater. The closer to success they thought they were, the more nervous they got. This concerned the life of a Da Cheng stage expert. If they had Hua Wanting, Clear Sky Sect would be even stronger than currently.

At this moment, Yang Chen's movement had been stopped. His spirit power had already been exhausted by being crazily pushed into the body of a Da Cheng stage expert for just a moment. This was not strange at all. Although Yang Chen had already reached the Foundation stage, this was still quite lacking to consume the blood phantom vine, which had caused so much suffering to Hua Wanting.

Yang Chen stopping his movements made Hua Wanting so nervous that her heart had come to her throat. Fortunately, after some moments of rest, Yang Chen again began to push out medicinal qi and spirit power, which started increasing the area under Hua Wanting's control.

Under the cover of the vines, other people could not see what kind of thing Yang Chen had used, as nobody was concerned about what kind of elixir Yang Chen had used to recover his spirit power. Everyone was only looking at the vine trembling incessantly within the courtyard. This kind of change was something they had never seen before.

The process seemed to be very simple: Yang Chen was pushing his medicinal qi and spirit power into her body, but this process lasted for a full ten days. Only then was Yang Chen able to expel the vine from one arm of Hua Wanting.

The needle with medicinal power and eighth metal spirit power was pressed into Hua Wanting's vein to block the blood phantom vine from entering again. Hua Wanting had also realized this point, so she didn't let her wood attribute spirit power appear in that area, fearing that, if she was not careful, she might counteract



Yang Chen's pathetic eight metal spirit power, which could cause all of this hard work to go to waste.

"Ahh, I am on the point of dying, I must go out to recover!"

After inserting the needle, Yang Chen who had completely worn himself out, spat out these words. Spending his last bits of energy, he soon slowly left the courtyard and made his way out of the courtyard at lightning speed. Afterwards, without caring for face or saying anything, he immediately fell to the ground and began to gasp for breath.

The sect master of the Clear Sky Sect appeared at Yang Chen's side in a flash and immediately squeezed a yuan cultivation pill into Yang Chen's mouth, afterwards, without making a difference about being male and female, she reached out her hand to explore Yang Chen's body and passed on her spirit power, assisting Yang Chen in recovering faster.

"How is elder Hua?"

On the side, the elders were worried about Hua Wanting. On the side, while the sect master was still helping Yang Chen recover, one of the elders asked impatiently.

"Shut your mouth!"

The sect master berated the elder. Yang Chen had already strained himself to his limits and was unable to support himself,

anyone could see this, so the question was really ill timed.

The elder also realized his mistake and obediently shut up, not saying anything anymore.

With the assistance of the sect master, Yang Chen only needed half a day before recovering fully to having a dragon's energy and a tiger's fierceness. Once he opened his eyes, Yang Chen directly stated the conditions inside, without anyone asking:

“It will still require some more time, I have already undone an arm!”

After he finished speaking, without saying anything anymore, he entered the courtyard again, this time changing to the other arm, and continued to work.

First were the four limbs, then was the belly, following which was her neck and finally he focused on the pit of her stomach. Settling all of them one by one, the only thing that remained was the master root in her heart. This entire process had already taken a full three months.

During this whole time, the Clear Sky Sect's master, together with her group of elders had been waiting outside of the courtyard. Even Sun QingXue was allowed to stay there because of her relation to Yang Chen.

During the process of waiting, Sun QingXue's complication was

analyzed by the group of elders. With Yang Chen's warning, the sect master and the group of elders could clearly see the problem. Even Sun QingXue's cultivation method was taken out and researched by the group of elders. What was most embarrassing for them was that, this time they discovered that the problem really did lie with the cultivation method and not with Sun QingXue's comprehension.

A talented disciple of the sect had been plotted against by someone of the sect and it moreover had been discovered by an outsider. Furthermore, when that person said this in the beginning, nobody trusted him. If it were not for Yang Chen spending so much time resolving the matter of the blood phantom vine and everyone having discovered that her comprehension was not inferior, they would have been unable to find this problem.

Obviously, the one most embarrassed because of this problem was precisely the sect master of the Clear Sky Sect. But the matter of elder Hua Wanting had been urgent, so it didn't need to be said, Sun QingXue's matter could only come afterwards.

# Chapter 132 - An Elder Can Also Make Mistakes

---

When only the master root was left, Yang Chen stopped. This was the most crucial step. As long as he succeeded, it implied that elder Hua Wanting would not have to endure further torment from the blood phantom root, but this was also the most challenging step and he wouldn't be able to achieve it with just medicinal power and spirit power.

If he just wanted to remove Elder Hua Wanting's pain and resolve the blood phantom vine, it was still comparatively simple, but the problem was that Yang Chen wanted to use this opportunity and wanted to collect this blood phantom vine's root, which, although it had sucked the blood of a Da Cheng stage expert, was still only in its infancy. This was going to be a lot more troublesome.

Naturally, for Yang Chen, this was not an impossible task. This was a good opportunity to show his friendship towards the Clear Sky Sect, to seek benefits and furthermore an opportunity to conceal his true aim. Otherwise, in case they found out that he had collected the blood phantom vine, it would actually increase his troubles in the future rather than decreasing them.

"This youngster must remove a piece of flesh from elder Hua's chest, so I must be disrespectful. Myself requests that seniors forgive me for being disrespectful!"

Apart from medicinal power and spirit power, Yang Chen could only use his flying sword to remove the blood phantom vine when

it had centralized in one place. Once the blood phantom vine entered the human body, it would certainly never leave and he could only use such a cruel method.

Since he pretended that elder Hua Wanting wasn't conscious, Yang Chen naturally had to request the elders of the Clear Sky Sect in order to make her understand, otherwise he would be charged with being disrespectful towards the person he had saved for no reason.

Fortunately the elders had already understood his goal and they also knew about the blood phantom vine's characteristics, so they didn't have any objection and nodded in affirmance.

“I require an empty qiankun pouch!”

Yang Chen raised this request towards the people of the Clear Sky Sect:

“The courtyard is still highly toxic because of the blood phantom vine, you all cannot go in. If you come in contact with the qiankun pouch containing the main part of the blood phantom vine, you must destroy it immediately, understood?”

Who could say that they wouldn't? Everyone nodded their heads in agreement. But Yang Chen obviously wasn't satisfied, so he asked again earnestly:

“Everyone knows this blood phantom vine is a treasure, but even

elder Hua Wanting was unable to resist it, I do not think it will be good to try.”

These words clearly had a hint of teaching people, the expressions on the faces of the Clear Sky Sect’s elders turned unsightly.

But Yang Chen was as if he did not care, he continued speaking while minding his own business:

“Perhaps everyone can think themselves to be lucky and may think that keeping it inside their qiankun pouch would not be a big deal.”

Looking around, Yang Chen glanced at the elders of the Clear Sky Sect and smiled:

“I will take the responsibility of informing everyone that the blood phantom vine will break through that qiankun pouch in at most three breaths of time. Within these three breaths, you must completely destroy it. The space of the qiankun pouch being destroyed will turn the blood phantom vine into fine powder. Apart from this, there is no other good method.”

Although Yang Chen’s words were solemn, these YuanYing stage experts did not accept it. All of them were YuanYing stage ancestors, but that one immature and inexperienced Foundation stage youngster, dared to make a show of his knowledge and experience in front of them?

“You must not push your luck at any cost, seniors!”

Yang Chen repeatedly warned them, persuading them patiently:

“Elder Hua’s qiankun pouch has already been smashed into pieces, I wonder if she thought she would be lucky and was instead entangled by the blood phantom vine. I have said all I could, seniors can think for themselves, this junior will immediately shut up!”

From the qiankun pouch, he fished out two porcelain bottles and walked to Sun QingXue and handed them to her:

“Little Xue, of these two porcelain bottles, one can make the blood phantom vine avoid you and one can bring you relief from the high toxicity of the blood phantom vine, take them.”

Placing them into her hand, he warned in a loud voice again:

“If something happens, use them immediately, your cultivation is the lowest here, so don’t try to act bravely!”

Although it appeared that he was repeatedly warning Sun QingXue, in reality he was warning the elders of the Clear Sky Sect in disguise. If an accident happened, it would also be an insurance for Sun QingXue.

Once he had completed this, Yang Chen extended his hand towards the sect master of the Clear Sky Sect and handed over his

qiankun pouch. Then he entered the courtyard again.

“This is the last and most crucial step: if senior can hear me, then please prepare properly.”

Yang Chen said to Hua Wanting:

“The blood phantom vine’s master root is isolated, so senior must immediately circulate your cultivation to dissolve junior’s eighth metal spirit power and force the medicinal power out of your body. Without the blood phantom vine, that medicinal power will erode your body.”

Hua Wanting’s finger slightly moved in response to Yang Chen’s proposal. This was her first movement since Yang Chen had expelled the blood phantom vine. Thanks to Yang Chen getting rid of the blood phantom vine from within her body, it left her with some strength to gain control over her body.

Yang Chen’s spiritual awareness had covered the entire region so he had acutely discovered this point and was immediately pleased beyond his expectations:

“Having senior’s cooperation, junior holds much more assurance.”

That kind of friendly tone, let alone speaking of the current moment, even if Hua Wanting had ninety nine percent control over her body, she would still be unable to hear any deceit even she



heard this face to face.

“For clearing away the master root of blood phantom vine, this junior will have to remove a part of flesh above your heart. This will hurt even more, so senior, please be careful!”

Yang Chen first reminded her before starting his work.

With just this last step left, Hua Wanting absolutely did not want to give up and slightly moved her fingers two times, affirming Yang Chen’s words. Seeing this, Yang Chen also began his preparations calmly.

The needle was directly inserted into her heart and began to pour in medicinal power and eighth metal spirit power. But this time, the master root of the blood phantom vine didn’t shrink back rapidly like the other times, instead it slowly formed a small ball, but still occupied a corner in the heart.

This was still near the chest, so Yang Chen carefully inserted it even deeper. The huge amount of medicinal power and spirit power started to pour in, which made the blood phantom vine leave most of the heart and concentrate in a very small section.

Suddenly, Yang Chen’s hand moved rapidly, a sharp flying sword directly penetrated into Elder Hua Wanting’s chest, following along the root of the blood phantom vine and rapidly sliced off a part. Immediately following this, Yang Chen threw it into a qiankun pouch, following which, the blood phantom vine which had been filling up the courtyard, was like it had suddenly received

a great pull and began to concentrate on Yang Chen's hand.

During this commotion, nobody noticed that the master root of the blood phantom vine had entered the Achievement Ring on Yang Chen's hand. The majority of the blood phantom vine was directly sucked in by the Achievement Ring and only a small part was actually placed into the qiankun pouch.

Originally, with Yang Chen in everyone's field of view, nobody would have thought that he could cheat. The blood phantom vine which was spread everywhere in the courtyard had all been squeezed into the qiankun pouch and no traces of it were left within the courtyard.

Yang Chen also rushed directly to the edge of the restriction and hurriedly used the method to open it and threw that qiankun pouch outside.

Once he threw out the qiankun pouch, Yang Chen no longer stayed and directly rushed back to Hua Wanting, whose body was finally free from the vine. In midair, a porcelain bottle had appeared within his hands. Once he stopped, the porcelain bottle had already been opened and the medicinal powder was quickly sprayed on elder Hua Wanting's chest wound.

Being sucked dry for almost a hundred years by the blood phantom vine, elder Hua Wanting's body didn't have even a drop of blood, so even with such a huge wound, not even a drop had trickled out. Her face was incomparably pale, resembling a corpse.

Once the medicinal powder was sprayed on her, the wound began to heal and a trace of flesh began to grow rapidly.

Not having even a single free moment from the beginning, Yang Chen had finally finished the process. Furthermore, under his observation, drops of blood had already begun to seep out of that wound, which clearly implied that elder Hua's body had already begun to recover the blood making function.

Strictly speaking, elder Hua had forcefully suppressed her production of blood using her cultivation, so that the blood phantom vine could not suck it. Currently, without the restrictions of the blood phantom vine, it had begun to restore immediately.

Now that there was no major restriction on elder Hua's side, after the blood phantom vine had been thrown out, it was the same as getting rid of mortal worry for her. The only thing left now was nursing her back to health. With elder Hua's cultivation, Yang Chen was certain that, within a few months, her cultivation would be restored and would even be able to increase more.

Only then did Yang Chen have the time to look at the qiankun pouch he had thrown out. Not out of his expectations, even after his repeated warnings, someone had tested his luck in trying to collect the blood phantom vine.

The instant the qiankun pouch was thrown out, an elder reached out her hand to catch it and without hesitation, her spiritual awareness immediately entered the qiankun pouch.

“Don’t!”

Clear Sky Sect’s sect master yelled, but was unable to prevent the elder’s movement.

Bang!

Like the blooming of a rose, following the elder’s spiritual awareness, more than a dozen blood phantom vines immediately came out of the qiankun pouch and engulfed the elder who had released the spiritual awareness.

Meanwhile, six elders, together with the sect master had already attacked the qiankun pouch. The seven YuanYing stage elders’ combined strike made the qiankun pouch directly explode into fragments, turning the blood phantom vine inside into powder.

The unfortunate thing was that because of the greediness of that elder, more than ten vines had escaped. These vines were like living animals and, perceiving people’s presence, they began to pounce towards the people in the surroundings.

The reason why the blood phantom vine was so terrifying was because within a short time, even if they were separated from the main part, they would not die and as long as they had access to fresh blood, these vines were capable of coiling around the source and enter the skin. After entering the skin, they would give birth to more roots, forming a brand new vine.

Of the people on the scene, everyone had the necessary knowledge about the blood phantom vine. Apart from the knowledge that the blood phantom vine could follow their spiritual awareness, they were clear about other things. Therefore, everyone attacked the small vines left behind.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

Several sounds echoed. A few elders, turning pale with fright, had successively attacked several small roots, but two or three had still escaped their attacks and began to pounce towards other people.

Sun QingXue's cultivation was very low and she was also one of the targets included. But she was not even a little flustered. When Yang Chen had given her the medicine bottles earlier, she knew that Yang Chen would not do anything useless, therefore she was always on alert. When Yang Chen threw away the qiankun pouch, she had already opened the medicine bottle and had sprinkled the medicinal powder on her body.

When that one vine throwing itself towards Sun QingXue suddenly sensed the medicinal power, it stopped midair and was immediately crushed.

The medicinal bottle within Sun QingXue's hand immediately disappeared and appeared within the sect master's hand. Soon after that, a large portion of medicinal powder was sprayed towards two more elders whom the vine was going to attack. The two vines immediately fell to the ground and began to twist around.

The several elders didn't dare to be careless and immediately attacked the vines which had fallen down just a moment ago, which made them turn into powder. Only then did everyone take a sigh of relief.

But the matter was far from over, the blood phantom vines, in addition to coming out, were also extremely toxic. Initially, the restrictions had sealed the toxicity of the blood phantom vine in the courtyard. If, in accordance with Yang Chen's words, they had destroyed the qiankun pouch, this kind of matter would not have happened, but unfortunately that elder wanted to fulfill his evil schemes.

The result of his evil schemes was clear, everyone apart from Sun QingXue sensed a wave of numbness. Even if they did not breathe, the blood phantom vine's poison was still going to corrode their body.

The sect master suddenly sensed something was abnormal and immediately learned from Sun QingXue and swallowed the powder inside the medicinal bottle before spraying it over her body. Immediately, the sensation of numbness began to fade.

After knowing that there was nothing wrong with the medication, the sect master immediately divided it for all other elders on the scene. Nobody dared to be neglectful and hurriedly swallowed it, which brought relief from the numbness, causing everyone to relax. It seemed that everyone had escaped from mortal danger.

Everyone's gaze then focused on the elder who had been rash just a moment ago. Apart from Sun QingXue, everyone's gaze was filled with contempt, especially the sect master's, which even had a trace of anger.

Even after Yang Chen's repeated warnings that they were not to be careless and try to push their luck, that elder still couldn't accept it. If it were not that Yang Chen had left that medicinal powder with Sun QingXue, they may have lost three or four people at this moment. Saving Hua Wanting but losing three or four people in the process, if such a thing had really happened, that would certainly have been a disaster for the Clear Sky Sect.

The mistaken elder also knew her fault and had lowered her head in guilt without saying anything. This time, whatever punishment the sect master gave her, she would abide by it without any resistance. If it were not for her reckless actions, this kind of matter would have not occurred.

After giving a fierce glance to the elder, the sect master turned her gaze towards the courtyard again. Yang Chen was still carefully providing medicine to elder Hua Wanting, seemingly without having looked over there. Rejoicing, the sect master suddenly had a feeling of not being able to confront Yang Chen. This was her first time coming across such a feeling after advancing to the YuanYing stage.

Even the sect master did not know why she felt that way towards Yang Chen, whether it was because Yang Chen had saved an elder of their sect or because Yang Chen had left a surplus of medicine powder with Sun QingXue. In any case, what the sect master

wanted to do right now was precisely to wait for Yang Chen to come out and then express her gratitude properly.



# Chapter 133 - Joy From Helping Others

---

Note:

And this marks 10% of Immortal Executioner! Only 1197 chapters to go! 😊

---

Although the outside was a complete mess, inside, Yang Chen was laughing slyly. The majority of the blood phantom vine had already been collected by him into the Achievement Ring and moreover, when putting them in the ring, he had already placed them into the medicine garden of the medicine bottle.

Although it could not survive in ordinary conditions, the master root was still wrapped within the flesh of elder Hua Wanting's heart. This was a Da Cheng stage expert's flesh and blood, which the blood phantom vine couldn't absorb completely even in a hundred years, this was enough to allow the blood phantom vine to survive for a short duration.

While everyone was believing that the blood phantom vine had been destroyed with that qiankun pouch, in reality, the main portion was still with Yang Chen.

Naturally, Yang Chen would not tell that to anyone, including Sun QingXue. What he had to do at that moment was to establish friendly relations. Since the issue of the blood phantom vine had already been resolved, what was left was just to eliminate the toxicity remaining in the courtyard and give some slight assistance to elder Hua Wanting in recovering. There was no need for Yang Chen to back down from such simple task.

It had to be known that, in his previous life, elder Hua Wanting had killed the blood phantom vine by relying on her formidable cultivation. Soon after that she had slowly refined the blood phantom vine's toxicity and, in the end, was not only able to restore her cultivation, but had furthermore stepped into the Da Cheng stage.

What Yang Chen actually needed to do was this. Elder Hua Wanting had been able to achieve this in less than one year. This was a favour which would cost him nothing and there were not many opportunities like this, so Yang Chen certainly did not want to miss out on this.

Since this was a favor to a person who was about to become a Da Cheng stage expert and he was moreover wanting Hua Wanting to take Sun QingXue as a disciple, Yang Chen decided to invest sufficient resources to restore elder Hua Wanting's injury properly this time.

He fished out a thousand year matured ginseng and placed it into the Profound Spirit Furnace standing in front of elder Hua Wanting and rapidly refined the ginseng liquid. Then he directly poured it into Hua Wanting's mouth without using any other herbs.

For the past hundred years, Hua Wanting had not received any replenishment and had supported herself completely by relying on the spirit power of her spirit vein and her formidable cultivation. Almost all of her vitality had been drained from her body and although the spirit power she had access to was extremely pure, it

was also extremely scarce.

Once the ginseng liquid entered her mouth, she immediately recognized what it was. For her, who was extremely weak, it was well timed assistance.

With her cultivation, it was impossible to overwhelm her with a tonic that was too strong. With the remaining small amount of spirit power, she quickly circulated the ginseng liquid to each and every part of her body.

Her flesh, which had almost wilted away after being sucked dry by the blood phantom vine, was as if it had come alive and hungrily absorbed the ginseng liquid. Soon, a tinge of pink appeared on her deathly pale skin, which did not have any color before. Her entire body was exuding an aura of liveliness.

The change of skin in elder Hua Wanting's body was extremely quick and soon the pink color had transformed into the usual bright red. It seemed as if, within this short instant, elder Hua Wanting's blood had been reborn.

Following which, the enormous amount of spirit power within the thousand year ginseng started to be refined and absorbed by her body. The impurities in the ginseng liquid had already been eliminated and it could thus be absorbed very easily. Soon, the thousand year ginseng's spirit power had completely entered Hua Wanting's body.

While elder Hua Wanting was recovering her spirit power, Yang

Chen sprayed a few bottles of medicinal powder around, which made the acute poison of the blood phantom vine which was sealed in the restricted area disappear.

After completing all of this, only then did Yang Chen turn towards the sect master and the elders waiting outside of the restriction and hinted that they could enter now.

The elders waiting outside the courtyard had started to grow anxious for some time, seeing Yang Chen's gesture, the sect master immediately cut open the restrictions and then the elders almost charged into the courtyard.

“You must not move elder Hua Wanting!”

The sect master saw that all of the elders apparently showed an indication of assisting elder Hua Wanting, so she immediately shouted in a loud voice.

The elders also understood the seriousness of the situation and immediately stopped their hand and surrounded elder Hua Wanting. By this time, they had also stopped paying any attention to Yang Chen and had forced him out of the encirclement.

Yang Chen did not mind it and with a smile called out to Sun QingXue, who was also outside of the encirclement and hinted to her that she was not to obstruct these YuanYing stage elders under any circumstances.

Just when everyone had released their spiritual awareness to probe the current situation of elder Hua Wanting, an extremely pure and enormous spirit power was suddenly released from elder Hua Wanting.

Bang!

The formidable spirit power blew apart everything in the surroundings.

Nobody among the several elders in the surroundings, including the sect master, was capable of stopping this spirit power and everyone was involuntarily pushed back.

Although Yang Chen and Sun QingXue were standing fairly far away, they were still pushed back by the spirit power. But when Yang Chen was hit by this spirit power, he couldn't help but cry in fear within his heart:

“This can't be!”

This kind of situation clearly implied that the time for Hua Wanting's tribulation had come.

Although he knew that she had stepped into the Da Cheng stage in his previous life, immediately after taking care of the blood phantom vine, he hadn't anticipated that, just after she had resolved the blood phantom she would also immediately go through her tribulations in this life. It could be assumed that a

hundred years of tempering herself had made Hua Wanting have a sufficient foundation and that thousand year ginseng liquid had allowed Hua Wanting to receive well-timed replenishment, so she may want to enter the Da Cheng stage in the spurt of energy.

For Yang Chen, this was an extremely beneficial event. Hua Wanting entering the Da Cheng stage was a definite fact, but currently she had started to undergo her tribulation under his influence. Regardless of whether she admitted it or not, regardless of whether the Clear Sky Sect admitted it or not, in this situation, they were the ones who would owe him.

Under the dumbstruck gaze of the elders and the unbelieving gaze of Sun QingXue and the complacent gaze of Yang Chen for his scheme succeeding, elder Hua Wanting, who had been sitting upright motionlessly for the past hundred years, was wrapped by a dark red light and began to rise into the sky.

At this moment, everyone understood what was happening. Expressions of excitement appeared on everyone's faces. Most of all, the sect master and elders of the Clear Sky Sect, they were already YuanYing stage experts. To be able to witness a peak YuanYing stage expert undergo the yin fire tribulation at this moment... What could be a better opportunity than this?

The yin fire could not be seen, so there wasn't anyone who knew what Hua Wanting had been going through, but one thing they could see clearly and that was that, the longer Hua Wanting's body was burning under the yin fire, the more smooth her skin appeared, and she did not have the previous withered appearance anymore.

First, second, third,... ninth, when the ninth tribulation of yin fire was over, elder Hua Wanting had already turned into a twenty five year young woman and her body had once again regained that sparkling and translucent appearance.

The only problem was that, under the erosion by the blood phantom vine for a hundred years, elder Hua Wanting's clothing had already been ruined. The only thing left behind was some tattered cloth, which covered a few important parts. Other than those, her bare skin was completely revealed.

Hu!

The sect master immediately reacted and threw a piece of clothing towards Hua Wanting, who was still in the sky.

Within the air, the figure of elder Hua Wanting flickered once and in the next moment, she had already put on those clothes, the tattered clothes which she had been wearing turned to dust. Soon afterwards her figure flashed again and she appeared in front of Yang Chen.

“Many thanks, fellow daoist for saving me!”

Elder Hua Wanting, who had entered the Da Cheng stage just a moment ago, bowed towards Yang Chen after passing through the tribulation of yin fire in front of all elders and the sect master.

“Junior doesn’t dare...!”

Yang Chen hastily bowed even deeper than Hua Wanting to return the politeness. What a joke, she was a Da Cheng stage expert, he was only a Foundation stage youngster, how could he accept this gratitude?

Yang Chen was not being unreasonable, if both of them were alone, Yang Chen would not have cared much about the greeting, but he was currently in other people’s territory. The Clear Sky Sect’s sect master and the other elders were also standing on the other side, if he acted too arrogantly, wouldn’t the good opinion and relation he had established with so much difficulty be in vain? Then Yang Chen would lose a lot just for saving a little.

“I am indebted to young friend for saving my life, this Hua Wanting does not know how to repay the favour at this time, so I owe young friend a favour, should you ask.”

Hua Wanting was absolutely straightforward and did not bother getting consent from her sect master about the repayment for Yang Chen:

“Young friend, in the future, if you have any request for this Hua Wanting, this Hua Wanting will go through water and tread on fire to accomplish it!”

When the sect master had heard her first words, she was already dissatisfied, but after hearing those final words of Hua Wanting, she couldn’t help but start complaining endlessly within her heart.



The Clear Sky Sect was ecstatic at Hua Wanting reaching the Da Cheng stage, but a great senior of the Da Cheng stage owing a debt to a Foundation stage youngster? Wouldn't it be a great humiliation?

But Hua Wanting had already said it, so she could not take back her words. Moreover, after thinking carefully, her words were also logical. If it were not for Yang Chen, who would have dealt with the blood phantom vine? Not to mention entering the Da Cheng stage, even surviving was dubious, so owing him a favor was a must. After thinking along these lines, the sect master also didn't feel so resentful.

“Little girl, your innate talent is not bad!”

Without waiting for the elders to come over and exchange the conventional greetings, Hua Wanting's gaze fell on Sun QingXue, hiding behind Yang Chen's body.

When she was tangled within the blood phantom vine, although she couldn't budge, Yang Chen's words echoed clearly within her ears. After personally seeing Sun QingXue's talent, she immediately verified Yang Chen's words. Slightly moving her spiritual awareness, she clearly realized the situation of mixed spirit power within her body.

“Which mediocre teacher has decided on your cultivation method? How can there be such a disciple within my Clear Sky Sect which hampers their disciple's progress?”

Hua Wanting was barely able to control her anger. She didn't want to discuss the shady business of the Clear Sky Sect in front of an outsider like Yang Chen, so she only gave the evaluation of an incompetent teacher.

“This kind of beautiful and talented disciple is instructed by a mediocre teacher, what a waste!”

Hua Wanting, without caring about the opinions of the elders and the sect master, directly asked Sun QingXue:

“What is your name, are you willing to accept me as your master?”

Sun QingXue could not believe what she was hearing, but Hua Wanting was really standing in front of her. This time, Sun QingXue's first response was surprisingly not immediately replying to Hua Wanting's question, instead, in her vision, Yang Chen's face appeared, asking her full of confidence if she was ready to change her master.

“Disciple Sun QingXue pays her respects to master!”

After a moment of surprise, Sun QingXue immediately agreed. Without further objections she directly fell to her knees and kowtowed three times in front of Hua Wanting.

The Clear Sky Sect's master and the elders all knew the problem regarding Sun QingXue's cultivation, but giving face to elder Mo

Qian, nobody said anything unpleasant. But at this moment, nobody could have anticipated that, as soon as she had survived her tribulation, Hua Wanting would take Sun QingXue as a disciple. Initially all of them were ashamed in their hearts, but Hua Wanting had been straightforward. But without waiting for anyone to say anything, Sun QingXue had already kowtowed, taking her as master.

“Senior Apprentice Sister Hua, this...”

The sect master who was standing on the side had embarrassment across her entire face. In fact Hua Wanting’s words just a moment ago also implied that she hadn’t properly supervised the Clear Sky Sect, but at this moment, Yang Chen was still present on the scene, so she couldn’t say much, except one word.

“What, does sect master think it is not appropriate?”

Hua Wanting replied only after Sun QingXue had kowtowed. After entering the Da Cheng stage, her status had taken a huge leap in the Clear Sky Sect, even her junior apprentice sister, the sect master, had to talk very formally with her.

“It’s not inappropriate.”

Who would dare to become hostile with elder Hua over one disciple? The sect master replied, forcing a smile:

“It’s just that this sudden increase in seniority of Sun QingXue may not be accepted by the other disciples.”

“Who would not accept this? Tell them to come and find me!”

Hua Wanting said with a faint smile:

“I am choosing my disciple, who are they to interfere?”

After she finished saying this in her domineering manner, she turned to the elders and the sect master and said, bowing her head:

“For the past hundred years, thanks for the trouble, junior and senior apprentice sisters!”

“Congratulations senior apprentice sister!”

“Congratulations junior apprentice sister!”

The group of elders all bowed to congratulate her, each and every one smiling from ear to ear. With the increase in the number of Da Cheng stage experts, the strength of the Clear Sky Sect had increased greatly, so how could they not be happy?

After making the salutations, all of the elders began to converse with elder Hua Wanting regarding what she had felt during those years. It was a joyous and harmonious sight.

Yang Chen hinted towards Sun QingXue. These two people

obediently retreated to outside of the confinement. They didn't have the qualifications to speak there, so getting out of their own initiative was best.

“I haven't lied to you, right?”

Looking at everyone chatting not too far away, Yang Chen softly asked Sun QingXue. These words, Yang Chen had once asked her at the execution ground and this time again.

“En!”

Until today, Sun QingXue couldn't believe everything that had happened. If it were not for Yang Chen asking this, maybe Sun QingXue would have first pinched herself, so as to confirm that she wasn't dreaming.

“Everything can happen, as long as you are willing!”

Yang Chen once again said this to Sun QingXue.

This time, Sun QingXue was no longer skeptical, instead slightly biting her lips, she nodded heavily, revealing a firm look on her face. When she turned to look at Yang Chen, Yang Chen saw a light in her eyes which he had not seen before.

Similar to Sun QingXue, Yang Chen currently also had an unreal sensation. The Snow White Fairy of the future had surprisingly established this kind of relation with him, even if they didn't have

another encounter, just this was sufficient to fill Yang Chen's bowl.

“Helping others really is a joyous affair!”

Not knowing what to say, Yang Chen suddenly thought of this, which involuntarily came out of his mouth.

## Chapter 134 - Even If You Speak, We Can't Believe It

---

This time, Yang Chen had to invest a fully matured thousand year old ginseng, as well as some other, normal herbs. But, in return, he had been able to establish friendly relations with a Da Cheng stage expert and had also obtained a favor from her. Other people did not realize this now, but he had also obtained the gratitude of the one who would be known as the snow white fairy in the future, and he had still received a blood phantom vine, which had sucked on a Da Cheng stage expert's flesh until it was full.

It may be true that Hua Wanting passing her tribulation at that time was convenient for the upper echelons of the Clear Sky Sect, but Yang Chen also knew that, even if he hadn't used that ginseng, people who could pass their tribulation would pass it regardless and it would still have been the same for these people, but it would not have been as good as the current situation for him, investing a little bit to get so much in return.

Hua Wanting had promised Yang Chen a favor immediately after passing the tribulation because she had discovered that Yang Chen had used a thousand year ginseng for her. That, for her, who was weak in health, was the most suitable tonic. For this favour, she had to owe him.

Very quickly, the sect master of the Clear Sky Sect realized that Yang Chen, this outsider, was still on the scene. Stopping her conversation with Hua Wanting, she walked over to Yang Chen and sincerely expressed her thanks.

What did the number of Da Cheng experts in a sect imply? Everyone clearly knew this. This time Yang Chen had not only resolved the matter regarding the blood phantom vine, but he had also helped in increasing the strength of the Clear Sky Sect.

In return, Yang Chen had also gained a benefit which could make anyone jealous, the gratitude of a Da Cheng stage elder. Even if elder Wu ascended immediately, Yang Chen would still have the cover of a Da Cheng stage expert. Other people still wouldn't dare to touch him.

When looking at the general situation, the sect master of the Clear Sky Sect had to look at the larger picture when compared to other elders of the Clear Sky Sect. Originally, she still had some suspicion towards Yang Chen, that he had come here to create trouble, but the instant Hua Wanting passed her tribulation, she realized many things. At least her own thoughts had become much clearer.

Within the sect master's eyes, Yang Chen's great fame was by no means a fluke. First was elder Wu, now elder Hua Wanting, two Da Cheng stage experts had shown such consideration towards Yang Chen. Who would believe this was just a coincidence?

Even if it was considered fortuitous, the sect master did not care much, she would not refuse to establish friendly relations with such a fortunate person. Moreover Yang Chen had come from a sect, famous for its righteousness, so he would not create any trouble for the Clear Sky Sect. Especially after she had found out that Yang Chen was a third grade pill concocting master at this



age, she would care about other things even less.

“These are the rewards we had previously agreed upon!”

The sect master handed Yang Chen a qiankun pouch. The qiankun pouch contained twenty thousand duplicated jade slips of the scrolls from their library, which had been previously agreed on.

Initially they had only agreed to let him browse through them, but now the sect master had directly gifted him duplicated copies. It could be clearly seen from this, that the sect master was completely satisfied with Yang Chen this time.

Sun QingXue had also become the disciple of Hua Wanting, so Yang Chen did not need to be anxious that her dantian would be injured when crippling her cultivation or whether her future cultivation would be smooth or not. Since nothing necessary remained and Yang Chen didn't have any intentions of seizing the opportunity to use Hua Wanting to make more connections, he said his goodbyes.

Yang Chen taking his leave was also agreeable with everyone. Apart from Sun QingXue being slightly reluctant on parting with him, the other people were very satisfied towards this youngster, who knew when to advance and when to retreat. Nobody had a big urge to keep him. Sun QingXue volunteered herself to see Yang Chen off to the outside of the Clear Sky Sect.

“Elder brother, will you still come back to meet me?”

Currently, Sun QingXue adored Yang Chen to an extreme, naturally she hated to part with him.

“Certainly!”

Yang Chen smiled towards Sun QingXue:

“As soon as I have free time, I will come to find you. If you want to meet me, then you can also come to the Pure Yang Palace to look for me.”

Under Sun QingXue’s reluctant gaze, Yang Chen finally left the Clear Sky Sect and started his journey back home. The outcome this time had already exceeded his expectations and Yang Chen was eager to return home.

After departing from the Clear Sky Sect, Yang Chen immediately went to a region devoid of humans and took out his flying shuttle. After that he rapidly began to fly towards a distant location. He hadn’t carefully distinguished the direction of the Pure Yang Palace, instead he was just flew in a random direction.

After flying for a long time, Yang Chen stopped at a small valley, which was seemingly concealed. There he looked everywhere to confirm that there wasn’t anyone else. Afterwards, he took out the bottle of the medicine garden from the Achievement Ring and quickly entered the medicine garden.

The blood phantom vine had already been moved into the medicine garden, but was only stuffed in, because he was pressed at that time, so Yang Chen couldn't plant it perfectly. One of the reasons why he had departed so suddenly was because of this. He wanted to properly settle the blood phantom vine before it would deplete elder Hua Wanting's flesh.

The blood phantom vine required very harsh conditions to grow, but fortunately, the medicine garden was capable of imitating such environment. This was because of Yang Chen cultivating both yin and yang of all the five attributes but at the same time it couldn't be done without the formidable spirit power supply of the medicine garden. Naturally, the most crucial point was that, within Yang Chen's memory, there was a method to grow a young blood phantom vine.

Time was pressing, the blood phantom vine had already started to wither. Yang Chen hastily transplanted the blood phantom vine to a place which perfectly imitated the harsh surroundings required for its growth and soon after that he controlled the spirit power of the medicine garden and, in accordance with the method he remembered, began to pour the spirit power in, to nourish the blood phantom vine.

Since it couldn't consume blood, the spirit power requirements of the blood phantom vine were double, or even triple the normal. But fortunately, during the trip to the ocean, Yang Chen had completely filled the bottle of the medicine bottle to the brim, so there was no worry about spirit power being depleted.

Only after spending several hours was Yang Chen able to

perfectly plant the blood phantom vine, which had been at its last breath and could assure its survival. Looking at the blood phantom whose vitality had been restored again, Yang Chen finally revealed a slight smile.

The crucial first step had been completed and the blood phantom vine had survived. Afterwards, as long as he could subdue and refine it, it would be as good to Yang Chen as getting a helper comparable to YuanYing stage experts. What tempted him most was that, after being subdued, the blood phantom vine would even attack people according to Yang Chen's thoughts and he also didn't need to worry about it spreading uncontrollably after a fight.

But this was still not the complete picture: the blood phantom vine was a divine object of the second wood attribute, so with the support of this fierce blood phantom vine, Yang Chen's second wood attribute spirit power would completely transform.

These were all matters for the future, Yang Chen also knew that such good deeds could not be accomplished easily. Looking at the blood phantom vine's restored growth, he was extra relieved and gently retreated from the medicine garden.

Just as he was about to return to the original world, Yang Chen discovered something strange. It was as if he had suddenly been bound by a formidable force and he was unable to move even a single step. He also didn't have any opportunity to return to the medicine garden.

What made Yang Chen most terrified was that his spiritual awareness had also been completely sealed. Initially Yang Chen

intended to use the blood river's killing intent to defend himself, but now he was completely powerless.

There was never a moment, when Yang Chen had thought that he would be as powerless as this.

His spiritual awareness was sealed, his spirit power was sealed, the movement of his body was also sealed, only Yang Chen's senses still remained. He was able to see and hear everything in the surroundings. To discover what was wrong, Yang Chen swept through the surroundings and immediately discovered that he was trapped within a type of sealing spell formation.

The most astonishing thing was that this grade of sealing formation required at least a YuanYing stage expert to use it fully, so why was a YuanYing stage expert dealing with him? Moreover, why would a YuanYing stage expert require a sealing formation to deal with a Foundation stage youngster like him?

But one thing was clear, the enemy did not want to allow him to die, he did not even want to allow him to struggle. Yang Chen immediately concluded this because of his countless years of experience in fleeing and fighting.

Since he would not die immediately, Yang Chen felt slightly relieved and his mind also quickly calmed down and began to ponder which person could deal with him like this.

“Humph, looking for you is really troublesome!”

A voice suddenly appeared in Yang Chen's ears and soon afterwards the person it belonged to appeared in front of Yang Chen. It was not just one person, but seven and taking the lead was a familiar woman.

“You are the elder from the Clear Sky Sect?”

Yang Chen recognized her in a single glance. This was unexpectedly the elder who had haggled with him and in turn had increased the price at the Clear Sky Sect.

“You recognize me? Unfortunately it is of no use!”

The woman sneered:

“I know that you are Pure Yang Palace's Yang Chen, but surely you do not know my name, I am known as Mo Qian and am an elder of the Clear Sky Sect. The cultivation method of little Xue which you have discovered was also my doing!”

“Because she was hindering your grand disciple's road?”

Although he couldn't move his body, Yang Chen was still able to utter a response. Hearing Mo Qian's words, Yang Chen immediately replied to her.

“That's right!”

Mo Qian did not have an ounce of fear when confessing all of this to Yang Chen:

“What, you wanted to get my confession? You think I will allow you to leave alive? I just wanted to know somethings before you die. So if you have anything to ask, ask away, I will tell you everything I know.”

“How did you find me?”

Yang Chen’s formidable mental state basically allowed him to read between Mo Qian’s words without being worried about his life and death, since the other party had sealed him like this, they must have some plan and once he knew their plan, he could concentrate on saving himself. But then again, first he had to unravel some mysteries.

“Speaking of which, youngster, you travel very quickly. In such a short time you have already travelled such a long distance, which grade of flying sword do you have? Ah well, after you die, it will also belong to me.”

Mo Qian didn’t answer directly:

“Just to let you know, the jade slips which you received from the sect master, among them, at least half have been tempered with, so wherever you go, you cannot escape my trailing ability.”

Hearing Mo Qian’s words, Yang Chen immediately had an urge to

slap himself. He had faced this kind of circumstances many times, so how could he forget this lesson.

Regarding this, Yang Chen hadn't been cautious enough. At that time after taking those jade slips filled bag from sect master's hand, he had put them directly into the qiankun pouch which he had gotten from his great master, Wang Yong, so that the various elders would not find out about his Achievement Ring. But he had forgot to put them into the Achievement Ring even after coming out and had thus provided Mo Qian the loophole to make use of.

“Your presence disappeared somewhere around here, so surely you also have an immortal cave which you can carry around or a magical tool, like a medicine garden. It seems my luck is not bad!”

Mo Qian said, feeling proud of herself. The female disciples behind her also didn't have any favourable feeling towards Yang Chen and were only calmly looking at the exchange between Yang Chen and Mo Qian.

“The Clear Sky Sect does have some good methods!”

Yang Chen again sneered:

“Secretly killing the sect's benefactor so that in the future I cannot use this favor.”

“Just accept your death!”



Mo Qian was not at all enraged hearing Yang Chen's sneering:

“In fact, this matter has no relation to my Clear Sky Sect, I just want you to die.”

So it was not Clear Sky Sect's conspiracy and instead Mo Qian's conduct. Yang Chen was quickly trying to think of an idea, incessantly trying to rouse his spiritual awareness or rouse his spirit power, but no matter how hard he tried, he was unable to break away from the current circumstances.

“You are a Foundation stage youngster and first you helped elder Wu refine the Heaven Seizing Pill, soon afterwards you dealt with the blood phantom vine and you moreover also refined third grade Foundation stage pills!”

Mo Qian slowly walked towards Yang Chen while she continued to speak:

“The Pure Yang Palace is not a sect focussed on pill concocting, yet you have created so many wonders in pill concocting, explain, how did you do that?”

“As you have realized, I have an amazing item related to pill concocting!”

Yang Chen said as if he had slipped, but he wasn't flustered or frightened because of being sealed:

“However, do you think I would keep that with me at all times?”

“Then we will all go together to find it.”

Mo Qian slightly raised her corner of mouth:

“You are not an idiot, why would you carry such a precious object with yourself? Moreover, I still think you won’t easily tell where it is concealed, isn’t that right?”

“Naturally, you will not let me go, informing you means death for me, not informing you is also means death for me, then why should I fulfill your desires?”

Yang Chen calmly said this while facing Mo Qian, who was standing in front of him.

“Frankly speaking, you are the first person I have seen who has shown such boldness in such a situation.”

A trace of admiration flashed in Mo Qian’s gaze before disappearing:

“What a pity!”

“I also understand the fact that, before you get hold of it, I am still safe for the time being!”

Yang Chen did not loosen his guard because of Mo Qian showing admiration for him. He replied, coldly staring at Mo Qian and the people she had brought together.

“I think I must introduce you.”

Mo Qian suddenly stepped aside revealing the six women she had brought together:

“They all are my disciples.”

“You must be curious regarding why I have introduced them?”

After Mo Qian had introduced her disciples, she confronted Yang Chen again:

“They are all JieDan stage experts and the most important thing is that their spiritual awarenesses are in complete harmony. If mine was also added with them, we barely have the qualifications to cultivate an extremely strange cultivation method together.

“You and I both are cultivators, so naturally you also know that knowing the things in other people’s minds is an impossible matter.”

Mo Qian revealed a complacent smile:

“But fortunately, this cultivation method which we can cultivate

together can directly invade your spirit sea and fish out all of your memories, one by one.”

“In other words, whether you speak or not, it basically makes no difference to us.”

Mo Qian arrogantly declared her own victory:

“Even if you tell us, we still can’t believe you, we will only be convinced by what we find.”

# Chapter 135 - To Kill Or To Refine?

---

Yang Chen was stunned by Mo Qian's words.

Just as Mo Qian had said, wanting to know what the other person was thinking was simply impossible. The most unpredictable thing in this world was a person's mind, even for immortals it was an impossible thing to accomplish.

But memory was different, if someone released their spiritual awareness, allowed another person to probe it and the other person had by luck grasped some unique spiritual awareness cultivation method, then it was very possible to examine someone's memories.

The trump card within Mo Qian's hand was precisely such a cultivation method, but it required the cooperation of her and her six disciples to accomplish it. It could be assumed that in such a huge fight, at least half of the resources would be used to suppress the spiritual awareness of the person the spell was targeted at.

What stunned Yang Chen was that Mo Qian surprisingly had the intention of attacking his spirit sea, wishing to invade his spirit sea with the aim of obtaining his memories. She could choose many bad options, but she actually had to select his spirit sea?

Initially, Yang Chen had believed that he would not have to face trouble this time, but his own carelessness had allowed Mo Qian to find his trace and while he was busy with nursing the blood phantom vine, they had arranged the sealing spell formation to

trap Yang Chen. But surprisingly, at such a critical time when he was standing at death's door, there had been such a favourable development.

Mo Qian was not someone who wanted to talk with Yang Chen. After informing him of the entire situation, she followed through with her words to make Yang Chen realize that nothing could save him. The master and disciples did not talk anymore and under Mo Qian's command, they quickly sat around Yang Chen, forming a circle.

Bang!

With Mo Qian controlling the spell formation, Yang Chen's body started shaking as if his mind was being struck, again and again. Darkness quickly spread in front of his eyes and he immediately lost consciousness.

“Master, I will now remove the restrictions, immediately suppress his spiritual awareness and afterwards invade his spirit sea at once!”

Apparently they had done this many times, so Mo Qian and her disciples were quite familiar with it. With Mo Qian's command, the disciples immediately dispersed and took their seats in the pre-arranged seats, forming the shape of the Ursa Major constellation.

Yang Chen was right at the position of the North Star and Mo Qian was the person closest to him. The six disciples had each extended their hands, one placed at the other's shoulder and the

final disciple's arm was placed on Mo Qian's shoulder.

Mo Qian was sitting in front of everyone, moving her hands to strike both formation secrets, which immediately eliminated the sealing spell formation acting on Yang Chen and he immediately fell to the ground. Mo Qian sneered and pointed her finger towards Yang Chen's yintang acupoint.

The reason why they had talked with Yang Chen and not directly started their task was because of the spell formation's limit: that it could only be maintained for a few hours. If they had started directly, finding the correct portion of memories from Yang Chen's birth until now would be just like finding a needle in a haystack.

As for why the previous conversation was necessary, it was so that Yang Chen's attention would be concentrated on that matter, which was the same as Yang Chen already keeping the answer ready before they even started, ready for Mo Qian to come and fetch it.

Mo Qian and her JieDan stage disciples had already done this kind of thing countless times and were completely compatible with each other. When Mo Qian's finger pointed towards Yang Chen's yintang acupoint, the spiritual awareness of the the last disciple directly rushed towards the disciple sitting in the front.

After the spiritual awareness of these two people combined, it then rushed towards the third disciple sitting in front of her and soon afterwards towards the fourth disciple, then towards the fifth, the sixth, finally it rushed into Mo Qian's body.

Mo Qian's cultivation was the highest and she was also the backbone of the whole spell formation. After proficiently combining the spiritual awareness of the six disciples behind her, she forwarded it to her finger pointing at Yang Chen's yintang acupoint and from where it directly rushed into Yang Chen's spirit sea.

Bang!

After the wave of familiar blackness had passed, the spiritual awareness of the seven people reached an unfamiliar location. This was completely different from the vast expanse of whiteness they had seen in other people's spirit sea. Actually there was only a thick fog of blood and nothing else.

Every person's spirit sea was different, the seven people knew this fact. With Mo Qian's spiritual awareness leading them, the seven spiritual awarenesses gathered and rushed into that fog of blood together.

Suddenly, with Mo Qian in the lead of these seven people, it was as if they had seen the most frightening thing in their life. Every person's face revealed an expression as if their soul had flown away and scattered. Soon afterwards, without saying any words, they directly lost their consciousness. Including Yang Chen, all eight people lightly fell to the ground, losing their awareness.

After a long time, Yang Chen was the first one to wake up. He had only lost consciousness because of the attack of the spell



formation. He hadn't received any substantial harm. Since he was no longer controlled by Mo Qian and her disciples, he automatically woke up.

After waking up, Yang Chen discovered the other people who had fainted, lying on the ground. With a sneer, he first inspected his body's condition, regardless of whether Mo Qian and others were living or not.

His biggest concern was still that sealing formation. It was really troublesome, they had surprisingly sealed both his spirit power and spiritual awareness. Fortunately, before extracting his memories, they had to make Yang Chen release his spiritual awareness, therefore they had removed the spell formation, otherwise Yang Chen would have been in great trouble.

“Heaven had a road but you chose not walk it, while hell didn't have any gate yet you still chose to burst in!”

Looking at the elder Mo Qian and the six other disciples lying on the ground, Yang Chen got up and began to bind them, one by one.

Yang Chen was very surprised that Mo Qian was just unconscious, but the first disciple behind her had died in fear. The five disciples behind her had also sustained severe injuries of different degrees, based on their proximity to Yang Chen. Mo Qian had also survived because of her cultivation being higher and although she hadn't lost her life at that moment, her spiritual awareness had also sustained injuries. If nobody helped her for some more time, she would certainly die on the spot.

“What a stupid attack, absolutely insisting on invading my spiritual awareness!”

Yang Chen said, muttering to himself. This was already the second time within half a year that someone’s spiritual awareness had rushed into his spirit sea.

The first time was Immortal Island’s Guan Yueying, she had been dragged into the river of blood through the spiritual awareness imprint and had been so scared, that she immediately lost consciousness.

The second time was this, the only difference with Guan Yueying was that, at this time Mo Qian had seized the initiative and had led the combined spiritual awareness of her and her six disciples directly into the river of blood.

If just a trace of blood river could make Guan Yueying unconscious, then what would happen if the entire spiritual awareness entered the blood river? The consequences of that could be clearly seen from the state of the disciples lying behind Mo Qian.

While they were still unconscious, Yang Chen used his soul stunning technique on Mo Qian and the five disciples who were alive, making them completely dormant. Other than Yang Chen waking them by his own accord, they could only be saved by someone at the level of Elder Hua Wanting, the Da Cheng stage expert, otherwise they would certainly never wake up.

There was no other option: the enemy was a YuanYing stage expert and even the worst among her disciples was at the JieDan stage. Yang Chen's cultivation base was quite low compared to them, so he could only restrict them. For additional control, after using his soul stunning technique, they were thrown into the medicine garden.

His topmost priority was to immediately deal with those troublesome jade slips. These jade slips had been tampered with by Mo Qian and had given away his position, so he had to immediately take care of these hidden dangers.

From their previous words, as long as he entered the medicine garden, they would be unable of tracking Yang Chen. Mo Qian knew that Yang Chen had the space of a medicine garden, so they could only lie in wait, deploying the spell formation at the original place.

Yang Chen would not repeat that disastrous policy again. Even if he put these jade slips into the Achievements Ring, Yang Chen could not feel sure, so dealing with them immediately was comparatively better.

Urging on his flying shuttle again, he rushed to another region. After deploying a few spell formations to warn him, he immediately released the sword spell guarding the medicine garden. Only after dwelling in the main hall of the palace in the medicine garden, did he feel safe again and began to carefully inspect those jade slips.

Yang Chen attentively searched each and every jade slip using his spiritual awareness and only after confirming that there were no problems with a jade slip did he put them into the Achievements Ring.

Since Yang Chen cultivated the three purities secrets, his spiritual awareness was very sensitive. Very quickly he found some jade slips with a hidden mark on them. Fortunately these marks were not imprinted very strongly: as long as Yang Chen carefully applied a bit of force, they could be erased easily.

Even if it was not very difficult, Yang Chen still had to spend one entire day on this matter. Only after he had inspected all twenty thousand jade slips did he feel relieved.

This situation was a lesson for Yang Chen. In the future, if he received anything from other people, as long as he could, he first had to inspect those for any such marks which could be used to trace him, otherwise even he himself wouldn't know how he died.

Finally, after everything was done, Yang Chen felt relieved. He wanted to kill Mo Qian immediately, and after thinking about it, he urged his flying shuttle to another region and then carried Mo Qian alone into the dome of the medicine garden.

Since all of the controls were in Yang Chen's hand, Yang Chen quickly removed the effects of his soul stunning technique, but he didn't release her completely, he still wanted to interrogate her properly.

“Strange!”

Even after removing the effects of the soul stunning technique, Mo Qian still didn't wake up, so he had no choice but to use another technique in the same category as the soul stunning techniques and gave a few jolts to her spiritual awareness. Only then did Mo Qian, who had been deeply unconscious, start to wake up.

Once Mo Qian opened her eyes, Yang Chen immediately discovered something wrong. Her listless eyes were not that of a YuanYing stage expert in any way, they were just like a person who had lost her soul.

“No way?”

Although Yang Chen knew that the blood river within his spirit sea was quite a calamity, he hadn't anticipated that it would be so formidable to make a YuanYing stage expert lose her mind.

“Who are you?”

Yang Chen asked Mo Qian, who had a lifeless look within her eyes.

“I... am... who?”

Replying to Yang Chen's question, Mo Qian, whose eyes were still without any expression spoke as if she had become demented.

He extended his hand and waved it in front of her eyes, but Mo Qian's gaze didn't focus on him and completely ignored his actions. When he used his spiritual awareness to probe her body, it entered her body without any hinderances, as if she had set up no defences against Yang Chen.

Had she really become a vegetable? Yang Chen clenched his teeth and suddenly tore a big hole in her clothes, exposing her smooth skin, but even after this, Mo Qian didn't even bat an eyelid.

In great surprise, Yang Chen carefully sealed Mo Qian again and afterwards grabbed one of her female disciples. After eliminating the soul stunning technique and giving shocks to her spiritual awareness, he forcefully woke her, only to find out that she had also become a vegetable.

The other four disciples were also forcefully woken up, but Yang Chen was very disappointed that none among these female disciples still retained their minds. Surprisingly all had turned into vegetables who had no capacity to think. It seemed that, after they had entered Yang Chen's spirit sea forcefully, they had all lost their souls.

This was somewhat uncomfortable for Yang Chen. Originally, Mo Qian had led these people to kill him and steal his treasures, so they were simply enemies. Even if he killed them, Yang Chen would not feel any mental burden. But currently, one had been scared to death, while the remaining six had turned into vegetables.

What to do? The first idea within Yang Chen's mind was to kill all of them and remove their traces. This was the most straightforward and easiest method and there would also be no problems for him in future. In all likelihood, Mo Qian and them would not have informed anyone that they were going to kill Yang Chen, so even if they went missing, there would be no traces leading to him.

But as soon as this thought came, another thought followed. It had to be known that Mo Qian was a middle YuanYing stage expert, since she had already become a vegetable, killing her would be a great loss.

Yang Chen knew at least three methods by which he could refine Mo Qian into his puppet, without harming Mo Qian's cultivation base. His success would mean that he had a middle YuanYing stage puppet as his secret weapon. For current Yang Chen, this was extremely attractive.

Similarly, the rest of the five disciples could also be refined into puppets, so that when the time came, the six puppets could form an offensive spell formation with Mo Qian as the core for the spell with the five JieDan stage disciples operating the spell. This would certainly be enough to deal with experts at Mo Qian's realm.

But this method of refining living people into puppets was certainly a technique of the devil path. If someone found out, Yang Chen would definitely be labelled as a devil cultivator.

The greatest danger was the Clear Sky Sect, if the Clear Sky Sect knew that an elder and JieDan disciples of their sect had been

refined into puppets, it would certainly enrage the sect, which was counted among of the top five sects; and they would certainly eliminate Yang Chen. Even the friendship he had developed after healing Hua Wanting would be of no use.

Kill or refine into puppets, these two thoughts were coming and going within Yang Chen's mind. One moment he would be partial towards one side another other moment he would be partial towards the other. It was really very hard for him to make a decision.

Ultimately, the scene of Mo Qian trapping him in the sealing formation, where even his death was not in his hands, appeared in his mind. That kind of helpless was certainly not very pleasant. Since Mo Qian was so fond of controlling people and reading their memories, then she also had to be ready to pay the price, so death was really quite fitting for her.

Those five disciples were also not any better. Looking at their proficiency in the technique, this was certainly not the first or the second time. Thinking about this, Yang Chen was no longer indecisive.

‘Mo Qian, since you wanted to kill me, then be ready to be killed in turn, if you can't. Since you wanted to read my memories, I will turn you into my puppets.’



# Chapter 136 - In Books There Are Houses Made Of Gold

---

Yang Chen had finally decided to turn Mo Qian and her disciples into his puppets, which certainly was not something he could achieve overnight, so taking them with him was better.

This time, after warning Sun QingXue, Yang Chen had intended to return home. From the time Yang Chen had departed, fifteen whole years had already passed since he had last seen his home.

Yang Chen wanted to spend half a year at his home, so that he could get enough time to spend time with his family and also tighten their villa's defenses.

After finding the right direction, Yang Chen steered his flying shuttle and started flying towards the direction of the villa where his mother and father were settled. Leading a life while concentrating on cultivating was not bad, but once he thought of going home, Yang Chen suddenly had grown a little impatient.

That villa had been arranged in a place where people usually didn't come, so generally speaking, in case of a war, the chaos would not involve that region. In addition to purchasing a large quantity of servants, he had also left behind a sufficient number of talismans for their defense, so there should not be any great problems.

The whole journey could be said to have been as fast as lightning. After spending just a few days, Yang Chen had already reached to

the mountain where his mother and father had been settled.

From a distance, Yang Chen had immediately discovered that there had not been much change in the illusion spell and the others which he had set up at that time. While flying on the entire journey, he had not discovered any problems. When he reached the mountain, Yang Chen stopped his flying shuttle and began to walk on the road just outside of the mountain.

The villa had a mountain on one side and a river on the other. In those days Yang Chen had recruited a group of servants which had people specialized in all respects and whose numbers counted in the hundreds. The entire villa was self sufficient in terms of fulfilling basic needs, without any need to rely on the outside too much. As for some necessary things, he had recruited people specialized in transportation and purchasing, so it was very safe.

Compared to the days when Yang Chen had left, the villa seemed even livelier, and many small courtyards had also sprung up. Fifteen years of time was already enough for one generation of people to grow up and settle down, which was the reason why so many houses had been built.

The life within the mountains was away from the chaos outside and was thus carefree and the people he had found at that time were also very honest. Even until now, everyone talked about Lord Yang and Madam Yang's son with great respect. If it were not for Lord Yang they would have been drawn in by the flames of war a long time ago, then where could they have enjoyed such a carefree life like the last ten years?

In the eyes of the people in the villa, Yang Chen was just a stranger. Apart from some old servants recognizing him, none of the youngsters was familiar with Yang Chen and were thus on guard against him. But after Yang Chen proclaimed his identity, he immediately received a very enthusiastic welcome.

When Yang Chen's mother and father heard that Yang Chen had returned, they were so excited that they were unable to stop themselves from coming out. Seeing that their son still had the appearance like when he left the house, these two people surrounded him and in their surprise questioned him while sizing him up. Only after talking for most of the day, did they remember to take him inside.

His father and mother were healthy, which made Yang Chen very happy. Not only that, in these fifteen years, his father and mother had once again given birth to two sons and one daughter, which indeed exceeded the necessary quota for fulfilling the mission of carrying on the Yang family line.

Because of his cultivation, Yang Chen had clearly stated that he would not produce any offspring for the time being. So with his two little brothers and one little sister, the Yang family could continue to remain in the following years. When Yang Chen returned, his little brothers and sister looked at him very strangely, but still they greeted their elder brother with excessive courtesy.

The villa had not only craftsmen, but also many scholars. All of the children in the villa had learnt to read and had been receiving education from the start. This had made Lord Yang extremely

satisfied. Initially he was only a peasant, but now their family had developed greatly in the field of education. Towards the education of his sons and daughter, he spared no pains.

In the entire world there were no unfilial immortals, even if Yang Chen was a cultivator, he still didn't forget this point. Unfortunately, his father and mother didn't have any aptitude for cultivation and after Yang Chen's inspection, he found that his younger brothers and sisters spirit root were also very ordinary, but this was also good: They would be able to enjoy their life, carefree, without any worries or illness. This kind of life was far better than that of a majority of cultivators and ordinary people.

Resting in his villa with his parents and other relatives, Yang Chen felt the familial warmth which he hadn't felt for a long time. This feeling was very comfortable and his heart was completely calm. Even within his sect, he did not have this kind of pure happiness without any pressure.

In those days, when he had given his mother and father the body refining pill and had left, his cultivation was very shallow: only at the first qi layer. Those illusionary spells which he had deployed outside of the mountain were also quite limited and only had the purpose of defense in the most dire of times. But now Yang Chen was already at the Foundation stage, naturally he had to lay new formations.

Since he now had two younger brothers and one younger sister, Yang Chen decided to increase the extent of the villa. To leave sufficient space for their growth, he expanded the extent of the villa by ten folds.

On the surrounding mountain tops Yang Chen arranged even more large-scale illusion spells and within the main hall of the Yang family's villa, he had arranged the new spirit gathering spell and a defensive spell formation.

The spirit gathering spell would assemble the spiritual influence of the surrounding hundred miles slowly at all times. As long as anyone lived inside of the villa, the spell would continuously improve their physique, keeping all illnesses away from them. As for the defensive spell, Yang Chen had given two tiles to his mother and father. As long as someone from the Yang family dripped their blood on them, they would immediately be recognized as the master and could control the spell formation.

Within the surrounding farmlands, Yang Chen had sprinkled enough soil from the medicine garden that this soil, which had been nourished by spirit power over all those years, had transformed these farmlands into the best agricultural lands of the mortal world.

He also revealed his flying ability to his parents and his siblings once, to convince them that he was not an ordinary mortal anymore and was already walking on the path to become an immortal, which became the source for extreme astonishment to his relatives.

Yang Chen left many such things for them, such as the elixir from refining thousand year ginsengs which could be used at a crucial moment to save someone's life, or the body pills which were to be used for the improvement of the physique of later

generations of the Yang family. At the same time, he also gave all of them five colours of spirit stones, which could be used to test whether the later generations had a cultivation spirit root or not. In case any of the later generations could cultivate, they should break a jade slip to notify Yang Chen and Yang Chen would personally come to take them to an immortal sect.

With these arrangements, the Yang family villa would certainly prosper more and more with the abundant harvest of all kind of crops, for at least the next hundred years.

After he finished making all such arrangements, Yang Chen began to integrate into this kind of calm livelihood of an ordinary person. On one side he was enjoying the family affection with which he did not come in contact often, while on the other side he was reading those twenty thousand jade slips he had gotten from the Clear Sky Sect.

Last time Yang Chen had only removed the hidden marks from them, but now he was reading all of them in detail. From the beginning, he had the absolutely clear goal of requesting these jade slips with miscellaneous information and the reason why he had spread a reputation of himself as a great bookworm at the Pure Yang Palace was also with the purpose that he could request other sects for such jade slips.

The previous generations had recorded many secrets and all of them were recorded within such books.

It was not that Yang Chen was not emphasizing on his cultivation, but cultivation was actually not just a simple matter of

training and increasing spirit power. If it had been such a simple matter, then wouldn't anyone who had spirit root simply skyrocket? In reality, those who were capable of becoming JieDan stage experts were like phoenix feathers and unicorn horns.

Everyone who had just advanced had to consolidate their current realms. This process of consolidation could last from three to five in the least, to eight to ten years at the most.

The more firmly the realm was consolidated, the easier the breakthroughs would be. As for those people who intend to break through a few layers in short time, the quicker their cultivation was, the more troublesome it would be in the future.

Yang Chen who had gone through rebirth was even more clear about this process. Other people who had built their foundation in only one type of spirit power did not have to be so cautious, but currently he had reached the Foundation stage in all ten types of the Five Phases of Yin and Yang, so he was extremely cautious and didn't dare to advance prematurely.

While enjoying the peaceful life at his home and reading these books, Yang Chen simply indulged in pleasure and had given up his duties.

The reason why these were all miscellaneous books was because the things written in them were not very significant and had no relation to cultivation, but with regards to expanding one's horizon, they were invaluable.

With one cup of tea with a hint of thousand year ginseng on the side on a table, Yang Chen was reading one of the jade slips with his spiritual awareness while lying on his couch with his eyes closed. Yang Chen clearly knew that even immortals could not have such a lifestyle frequently.

He was reading each one of them, one after another. If something was useful, Yang Chen immediately remembered it and noted it down. If it was not useful, Yang Chen still read it to pass the time and then forgot about it. After he had cultivated to the third layer of the three purities secrets, his memorizing ability had already reached an astonishing level.

Most of these jade slips were a waste because of Mo Qian's interference. What Yang Chen wanted was some travel records and things like that to increase his knowledge, how could Mo Qian allow Yang Chen, the person who had uncovered her conspiracy, to have his wishes fulfilled? Even if he wanted to increase his knowledge, these were just not suitable.

The majority of such folk stories were just ridiculous fantasies of some people for the entertainment of others and didn't have any connection with cultivation in any sense. Mo Qian never had any good intentions in her heart, but she had not expected that Yang Chen would look at these with keen interest.

In Yang Chen's eyes, most of the things for cultivation, especially in the field of pill concocting, tool refining or spell formations, could mostly be described as products of creative imagination. One could only achieve something if one thought of it. If one didn't even dare to think about it, then there wouldn't be even a small



desire for it.

These things were just what Yang Chen had wished for, so he was looking at every slip very carefully. Apart from this, there was still one more important reason, currently Yang Che was lacking Eighth Metal True Secrets among his Great Yin and Yang secrets, the information of which was reportedly written in the folklore of the Clear Sky Sect.

This was a memory from his previous life. Yang Chen did not specifically remember which folklore it was, but he definitely remembered that it was some disciple of the Clear Sky Sect with some free time, who had been reading the vernacular folk stories and had discovered this from therein.

These vernacular folk stories were similar to fiction. Most of them were about cultivators, some were about some qi layer cultivator whose cultivation had increased very quickly, some were about the experiences of experts who had gone to temper their disposition and cultivate their mental level. All of them had one common principle, which was that they were based on real events as much as possible, but never involved the real cultivation method of the cultivator or things like that.

But there was one exception and that was a folklore which the Clear Sky Sect had obtained from somewhere else. As it happened among the tales of fantasies, a small folklore containing an expert's cultivation method was mixed in.

This portion containing the cultivation method was at the end, and the length of the folklore was long, containing at least several

millions of character. Those ridiculous plots ahead of it made many cultivators discard it before reaching the end: those who were capable of persevering to the end were truly very few.

By some lucky coincidence a qi layer outer disciple who was hopeless about reaching the Foundation stage had discovered a mysterious cultivation method at the back of the folklore. After asking for guidance from his Merit Transferring Disciple, it caught the attention of an elder. Only then was it discovered that this was a copy of the Eighth Metal True Secrets.

From the beginning Yang Chen had inspected these slips to the greatest extent possible in anticipation of that day. Apart from indulging in the fantasies of people increasing their cultivation realm, he was looking for precisely that piece of folklore.

Twenty thousand jade slips, hundreds of millions of characters. Yang Chen did not even know if the one he had been looking for was in this collection or not, he also didn't remember its name, thus he could read every single one of them.

Yang Chen knew that cultivation stressed on Karma, therefore it could not be forced, so he would have to work hard to find the one. Even after a few months had passed and he had read over ten thousand jade slips, he still couldn't discover the one which he had been looking for.

Distant from worldly matters, the days of life were calm and free of worry. Yang Chen didn't have any extravagant hope that he would be able to take the Eighth Metal True Secrets from the Clear Sky Sect at the first try. If bad came to worse, he could just go

again and find an excuse to obtain some more books of the Clear Sky Sect. As long as he could get a large number of books, he would surely be able to find it.

As for the case that it was first discovered by the people of the Clear Sky Sect, according to his memory, that was a matter which would only happen a hundred years in the future. These hundred years were sufficient for Yang Chen to obtain all of the books which were not related to cultivation from the Clear Sky Sect.

With this attitude, Yang Chen was calmly reading the books which he had, while recording all things which were useful or which he believed would come to use in future.

After he had gone through first eighteen thousand jade slips, he suddenly came across one which was very long and contained several millions of characters. He discovered this after he swept it once with his spiritual awareness. Immersing his mind, he had only read the beginning but he could not help shaking his head again and again. How could someone write such a ridiculous tale and then at that length?

Suddenly he remembered something which made him excited: weren't the Eighth Metal True Secrets also inscribed in such a ridiculous and long tale? Thinking about this, Yang Chen accelerated the speed of reading and very quickly reached the last portion. Actually he had entirely skipped the plot of the tale and only looked at the portions which contained the cultivation method.

Trying to find the script overflowing with an ancient intention

was very easy: within half a day, Yang Chen had found what he was looking for. After carefully comprehending it a few times, he finally confirmed that this was the Eighth Metal True Secrets which he had yearned for all the time.

‘To travel far and wide only to find something easily’, Yang Chen suddenly remembered this sentence. Feeling happy, he burst out in happy laughter, but then another thought flashed through his mind.

In books there are sumptuous houses and graceful ladies, in books there are a thousand bushels of millets, in books there are regiments of war chariots.\*

---

Notes: The last sentence is a chinese Idiom, basically meaning that in books everything is possible.

# Chapter 137 - The Challenge Must Be A Life And Death Duel

---

Obtaining the Eighth Metal True Secrets was like a great burden being removed from Yang Chen's heart. His entire body was relaxed and happy.

Initially he had thought that he would not be able to obtain the Eighth Metal True Secrets from the Clear Sky Sect the first time. It should be known that the libraries of the Clear Sky Sect contained information accumulated over countless years, something which a small sect absolutely could not compare to. Even the Hidden Pavilion in the Pure Yang Palace had a few million jade slips, then how many would the Clear Sky Sect have?

Who would have thought that, because of Mo Qian's dirty tricks, he would be able to obtain these most unreasonable kinds of books which would allow him to obtain the Eighth Metal True Secrets the first time. Thinking about this made Yang Chen very happy.

Cultivators attached great importance to karma. Apparently, these Eighth Metal True Secrets were destined for Yang Chen somehow, otherwise he would not have obtained them on the first time.

But Yang Chen did not begin cultivation immediately after obtaining them. Since he didn't have the origin spirit power, the eighth metal true qi, he would not be able to cultivate it successfully. Not too long ago, Yang Chen had collected fifth earth true qi, but before he could understand it thoroughly, Yang Chen did not intend to go and look for other true qi.

He had already read eighteen thousand jade slips and had still two thousand left. After Yang Chen had finished them at a moderate pace, he tidied up everything and bid farewell to his mother and father.

Despite being greatly unwilling to let him go, they did not say much, other than reminding him repeatedly to come back from time to time. They already understood clearly that Yang Chen was in a different world from them.

While Yang Chen was enjoying his peaceful days with his family, a lot of sensational matters had happened in the cultivation world. Strictly speaking, they all had something to do with Yang Chen.

First was the Pure Yang Palace, which had grandly established its Hall of Eccentrics. Although a second rate sect establishing a hall for their subordinates was not something to make a fuss about, as it happened this Hall of Eccentrics had two YuanYing stage experts.

Actually just two YuanYing stage expert was not something which could astonish people, but these two YuanYing stage experts were demon beasts. This fact was sufficient to gain the attention of other big sects.

Demon beasts entering the sect, how was this possible? People are people, demons are demons. When running into a demon, not killing it was already an immense favour, so how could they tolerate them entering their sect?

But the explanation given by the Pure Yang Palace removed all their problems. They had guarded the sect painstakingly for thousands of years, so what else should they be rewarded with? Thinking that the Pure Yang Palace had already presented the two demon beasts with the fifth earth true qi which elder Wu had given as a present for Yang Chen; had that helped them reach the YuanYing stage?

Even the Five Phases Sect had fifth earth true qi, but it could not compare to the Pure Yang Palace's style. Everyone knew that the Pure Yang Palace did not have a cultivation method to refine fifth earth true qi, so even if they kept it, it would still be of no use. But they had given them as a present to the two earth attributed demon beasts. Other sects had never used such a method.

Once the Hall of Eccentrics was established, it gave rise to the attention of many sects and at the same time, many guardian spirit beasts which had been subdued by other sects also expressed their expectations for the Hall of Eccentrics. This caught all of the big sects unprepared.

If they did not give them benefits, maybe the guardian spirit beasts would escape, but it would still pain them to give the guardian spirit beasts some rewards. Moreover, those guardian spirit beasts who had restrictions put on them also began to show the will to rebel, which gave headaches to the sect leaders of all big sects. And this matter was supported by Elder Wu, so others could not oppose it.

Regardless of what is said, the Pure Yang Palace had not only left

a good mark of their name in the realm of demon beasts, they had also raised two YuanYing stage experts within the sect and this was an undeniable fact.

The Pure Yang Palace's reputation spread far and wide, some things were good some were bad. Some people who couldn't accept that demon beasts were shown such consideration felt very repulsed. Many loose cultivators thought that, since they could ensure the safety of demon beasts, surely they would try to defend their disciples to the greatest extent and started coming in large numbers, which made the Foreign Affair Hall's master, Xu Cheng Xin, quite delighted.

Another sect which was the center of an important event, similar to the Pure Yang Palace, was the Clear Sky Sect. The Clear Sky Sect's Hua Wanting had finally thrown off the blood phantom vine after a hundred years of struggle and had successfully passed the yin fire tribulation. The Clear Sky Sect publicized this news with great fanfare and every sect sent their representatives to congratulate them.

Yang Chen's contribution was mostly concealed by the Clear Sky Sect. They had only said that, just after Elder Hua had broken away from the blood phantom vine, she was very weak and Yang Chen had provided her timely support by giving her a thousand year ginseng, so she could pass the tribulation in one stroke. With this relationship, Elder Hua had specially reminded the Clear Sky Sect to maintain a courteous relationship with Yang Chen and the Pure Yang Palace.

Although elder Hua reaching the Da Cheng stage was a delightful



occasion, even more people were envious of Yang Chen's good fortune. First was elder Wu and now elder Hua. Why was he able to gain favours from all those Da Cheng stage experts? Why couldn't other people encounter this kind of good fortune?

As for the disappearance of Mo Qian and her few disciples, nobody had raised this topic, as if the Clear Sky Sect itself wasn't aware of it.

Mo Qian and her six JieDan stage disciples had gone out together to pick some herbs, so other people hadn't seen their presence. But this kind of matter was very common and Yang Chen himself wouldn't return to the sect for many months or years, so nobody found it strange and went to look for the whereabouts of Mo Qian and her disciples. Perhaps after a few decades or hundred years someone would look into this matter.

Currently Mo Qian and her five disciples were sitting upright in the domed main hall of the medicine garden within the bottle, motionless and were cultivating aimlessly, relying on instinct. They had already completely lost their minds, even these actions were commanded by Yang Chen using the soul stunning technique.

The latest news however concerned someone from the junior generation, which had a direct relation to Yang Chen. Green Jade Immortal Island's most talented core disciple, the fairy, in young cultivators eyes, Shi Shanshan, had issued a piece of information, requesting a confrontation between the Greatest Heaven Sect's Li QingChen and Pure Yang Palace's Yang Chen in the presence of people to settle a misunderstanding or a conflict.

What astonished people was that Yang Chen, after leaving the Clear Sky Sect, had completely disappeared and hadn't responded to the news. According to Fairy Shi, Yang Chen had already agreed to the confrontation and she was only waiting for Li QingChen's response.

The response from the Greatest Heaven Sect actually startled people even more: Li Qingchen had completely disagreed with Shi ShanShan's request and had even said that Yang Chen had deceived Fairy Shi and directly issued a challenge to Yang Chen saying that, as soon as Yang Chen appeared, he would immediately go and challenge him.

After returning from the Yang family villa to the cultivation world, he had discovered this news. Hearing this, not only was Yang Chen not angry, he was actually filled with joy.

Li QingChen, this person had tried to obstruct Yang Chen in every possible way since he had joined the Pure Yang Palace. He had even used his relationship with Chu Heng to make Chu Heng suppress him. Yang Chen wanted to settle this debt for a long time, but he hadn't found an opportunity, but now that Li QingChen had taken the initiative to challenge Yang Chen personally, Yang Chen couldn't help but burst out in happy laughter.

The last time when the palace master of the Pure Yang Palace had asked elder Xu to ask for compensation from the Greatest Heaven Sect, the Greatest Heaven Sect had said that this was a private matter between Yang Chen and Li QingChen, so the sect would not interfere and they should settle it privately.

But Yang Chen knew that, although the Greatest Heaven Sect had said these words, the palace master of the Pure Yang Palace had not desired for Yang Chen to knock on Li QingChen's door and settle his private grudges. If not for any other reason but because the influence of the Greatest Heaven Sect was too great.

Now however they could not stop Yang Chen, as the perpetrator of this matter was Fairy Shi of the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Although the Greatest Heaven Sect had great power and influence, it could not suppress the Green Jade Immortal Islands.

Since he could not blame Shi ShanShan, he could only blame Yang Chen. The problem was that Li QingChen clearly did not dare to accept the request for the confrontation in presence of people, but had surprisingly used this kind of method to pressure Yang Chen.

After hearing the news from the mouth of other cultivators, Yang Chen understood the general situation and since he couldn't do anything at that time, he directly returned to the Pure Yang Palace. In any case, he could not miss this opportunity, since Li QingChen himself had knocked on his door, Yang Chen certainly did not mind taking care of him forever.

“How did you buy your way into establishing relations with Hua Wanting?”

After returning to the Second Fierce Yang Hall in Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen first paid a visit to his master. When Gao Yue saw Yang Chen, the first thing she did was ask this question.

Gao Yue could not help becoming concerned: her only disciple, although he was only at the initial Foundation stage, had still given her many things to worry about. Elder Wu still hadn't ascended and he had already enlisted elder Hua Wanting, truly enviable.

“No, wait for the Palace Master and the Great Master to come over, then we will talk about it!”

Yang Chen knew that, once they heard that he had returned, the Palace Master and the Great Master would certainly come to question him, so he didn't wanted to say too much.

Gao Yue angrily glanced at Yang Chen once and then commanded her servant to go and inform the Palace Master and Wang Yong. Yang Chen, this disciple of hers, was certainly a troublesome disciple, but at the same time he was also the disciple who didn't cause her any worries, which really made Gao Yue feel conflicted.

She considered him troublesome because he dared to provoke anyone, first it was elder Wu, then it was elder Hua Wanting. Both were Da Cheng stage experts, but he acted recklessly and was also not afraid of being killed by anyone.

Saying that he did not cause any trouble was because Gao Yue herself did not need to worry about anything: cultivation, refining pills, refining tools, spell formations and so on; she completely did not need to bother with any of these things for Yang Chen, since Elder Wu and elder Hua Wanting had publicly given their support to Yang Chen, so nobody easily dared to create trouble for him.

It was as if his master was completely unnecessary, which was part of the cause for Gao Yue's gloominess. But even then, she was extremely satisfied with Yang Chen. She could completely sense the concern and care from Yang Chen. Having a disciple like this, what else could she want?

The Palace Master and Wang Yong arrived very quickly. Especially the Palace Master; from the time he had heard the news about elder Hua Wanting, he had been in shock. Yang Chen surprisingly had the good luck of establishing relations with a Da Cheng expert again and the Da Cheng stage expert furthermore even owed Yang Chen a favour. This made the Palace Master exceptionally happy.

This also implied that as long as this relationship was used appropriately, it would also establish a good relation between the Pure Yang Palace and the Clear Sky Sect. From the Pure Yang Palace's perspective, this only had advantages and no disadvantages.

Yang Chen was simply the lucky star of the Pure Yang Palace. From the time he had joined the Pure Yang Palace, regardless of if it was the xun qi pill or the spirit vein of the Second Fierce Yang Hall, no matter if it was Elder Wu or Elder Hua Wanting, no matter if it was the Hall of Eccentrics or being a third grade pill concocting master, he had brought a lot of pleasant surprises.

Every time, something related to Yang Chen happened, it had apparently become a tradition for the Palace Master and Wang Yong to come to the Second Fierce Yang Hall after Yang Chen

returned. The Palace Master knew that, apart from himself and his master, Yang Chen did not trust the other elders too much, therefore there was no need for other people. Just them and Yang Chen's master, Gao Yue, were present.

After hearing Yang Chen colorfully describe the events with Fairy Shi at the Green Jade Immortal Islands and the matter at the Clear Sky Sect, Gao Yue immediately expressed her dissatisfaction.

“At what time has Yang Chen used fairy Shi's name to deal with affairs? Why didn't I know?”

Gao Yue couldn't bear to see Yang Chen accused wrongly and vented her resentment very strongly.

“Those are all small matters. Doesn't that youngster of the Greatest Sky Sect already have a guilty conscience?”

Different from Gao Yue extreme hatred, the Palace Master and Wang Yong were more focused on the Da Cheng stage expert, Hua Wanting, and the Clear Sky Sect.

Nobody could believe that Yang Chen could deal with the blood phantom vine with the information from a book containing miscellaneous information, this clearly seemed far fetched. The blood phantom vine was certainly an extremely formidable object, if someone had records, it would only be within the records of extremely high level experts in tool refining and pill refining. It was certainly not possible to have it in the Hidden Pavilion in the Pure Yang Palace.

“How did you know how to deal with blood phantom vine?”

The palace master hadn't opened his mouth and was thinking about how to ask this, but the Great Master, Wang Yong, on the other side, asked with a meaningful glance. He did not interrogate him however, instead, to make him feel secure, he said:

“You do not need to worry, regardless of whatever method it was, even if you killed someone, your Great Master will safeguard you!”

That last line was said to Yang Chen, but actually it was directed at the Palace Master. In any case, regardless of what Yang Chen had done, no blame could be pushed onto Yang Chen.

“This is not a great secret, Elder Wu has given this information to me last time.”

Yang Chen directly pushed the blame onto Elder Wu. It wasn't like anybody could verify it in any case and even if someone could, Elder Wu would also confirm it.

The palace master and Wang Yong suddenly understood everything. It seemed like this was another layer of security which Elder Wu had left for Yang Chen before ascending. In any case, his ascension was imminent and he already didn't need any favours, so he had given Yang Chen this chance, which would also be a sort of protection for Yang Chen. Fortunately, this had happened before Elder Wu's ascension. This really was a great coincidence.

“What was the matter with Sun QingXue of the Clear Sky Sect? Why did you suddenly remember to look for her?”

The Palace Master asked again.

“Because Elder Wu had warned me of a matter.”

Yang Chen seized this opportunity to talk about the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets. Regardless of the other sects, Pure Yang Palace could not lose many disciples. Not everyone was like Sun QingXue, who could still shake up the whole world, even after she had abolished her cultivation once.

The palace master very seriously listened to Yang Chen, but within his heart, he had already secretly become alert.

“That youngster from the Greatest Heaven Sect challenging Yang Chen, how should we settle that?”

After listening for a long time and seeing that the matter of Yang Chen’s challenge had been raised, Gao Yue suddenly asked.

“Very simple, master!”

Yang Chen answered with a smile:

“Ask Hall Master Xu to release the news. If Li QingChen with a



strength of the peak Foundation stage wants to just compare notes, then I admit defeat. If he really wants to challenge me, then it has to be a life and death duel!”

## Chapter 138 - He Is Already Doomed To Die

---

These words were the same ones Yang Chen had said to Han Jiande of the Tian Quan Sect at the Heavenly Stairs when he had come, looking for trouble with Yang Chen. At that time, when Han Jiande, who had a higher cultivation, had challenged him, Yang Chen had immediately admitted defeat.

But who could have known that Yang Chen was not truly admitting defeat and was instead just forcing Han Jiande to accept a life and death duel with Yang Chen. Now Yang Chen had used the same words, so surely he had to have some kind of mortal enmity with Li QingChen.

“He is at the peak of the Foundation stage, Yang Chen, do you have complete confidence?”

Gao Yue naturally did not wish for Yang Chen, her first disciple, to fight a life and death duel with an expert who was at the peak Foundation stage, so she immediately asked, filled with worry.

“Whether I am confident or not, I must fight. In any case, it’s better than making the experts of the Greatest Heaven Sect bear grudges towards me and not allowing me live peacefully from now on!”

Yang Chen replied with a smile.

“Why?”

Gao Yue clearly didn't know the reason for this. While the Palace Master and Wang Yong on the contrary, both nodded with a knowing smile after hearing Yang Chen's words. This movement confused Gao Yue even more.

“Li QingChen will never agree to a confrontation with me in front of others, because that would certainly make him lose all face.”

Yang Chen knew that his master had not yet matured to the level of his previous life, where she understood everything. Since she couldn't think of everything, Yang Chen patiently explained it to her.

“This is also the case for the Greatest Heaven Sect: they will absolutely not want a disciple who is sowing discord between two people by distorting the truth. Therefore, they will surely do everything they can to prevent that confrontation.”

The Palace Master once again nodded slightly at Yang Chen's words.

“This is similar to how the sect traitor, Chu Heng, humiliated the sect.”

As if he had received encouragement, Yang Chen continued:

“The Greatest Heaven Sect would rather send some inferior

disciple, as they also would not be willing to allow their sect to be disgraced by a lowly cultivator like me.”

When comparing the the reputation of a person with inferior skills and a person with bad name representing the sect, the former was preferred more by people. After all, a person with inferior skills had a lot of factors against them, so if they were unable to beat the opponent and lost, they would not lose face. As for losing face, it was the reputation of Li QingChen alone and would not damage the Greatest Heaven Sect.

Gao Yue understood this point clearly, but she was still slightly doubtful:

“They are not willing to carry the name of being a loser, so what relation does it have with you not accepting the challenge? Why would the experts bear grudges?”

“If I had not agreed to the challenge and had asked to arrange the confrontation, then Li QingChen would not be able to avoid losing face and the Greatest Heaven Sect would also become the target of everyone’s ridicule.”

Yang Chen continued explaining with a smile:

“Under such circumstances, the experts of Greatest Heaven Sect who would not dare to take out their anger on the Green Jade Immortal Islands will turn towards me and the result of such an event will be the loss of my life.”

Gao Yue repeatedly nodded her head hearing after this. Suddenly she couldn't help raising her head to glance at Yang Chen, who was speaking with confidence. This disciple's mind was seemingly clear headed indeed.

“But if I promised a life and death duel, that would mean that, this is just a private matter between Li QingChen and me. This way the Greatest Heaven Sect will also have a way out of an embarrassing situation.”

Seeing that his master was looking at him, Yang Chen rejoiced even more:

“With the attitude of the experts at the Greatest Heaven Sect, since it was a private affair, then regardless of whatever the outcome was, they would not meddle too much.”

“Compared to not replying to the challenge and then becoming the target of grudges for the countless experts of the Greatest Heaven Sect, I would prefer to fight a life or death duel with Li QingChen and settle our grudges.”

Yang Chen knew that Gao Yue had already begun to realize slowly, so his concluding words were simple.

“Then even if you accept his challenge, what is the need to insist on a life or death duel?”

Gao Yue was only thinking about Yang Chen's life and death and

did not care much about anything else.

“Because if we do not consider it a matter of life and death, the Green Jade Immortal Island would make us two confront each other, which would be completely unacceptable for the Greatest Heaven Sect.”

Yang Chen helplessly replied:

“Since the Greatest Heaven Sect has already said that this was a personal grudge between us, there was no other way but to issue the challenge to me. In fact, regardless of whether it was a life and death duel or not, for us it would have been the same. So rather than this, I would prefer to formally issue a life or death challenge, which would also give them a way out.”

“Wasn’t elder Hua Wanting very considerate of you?”

Gao Yue suddenly recalled Hua Wanting’s matter, which Yang Chen had said just recently, and hastily asked:

“If you do not agree, could it be that they would risk angering elder Hua Wanting by killing you?”

“The Greatest Heaven Sect is the only one sect which can ignore Elder Hua Wanting’s consideration towards me and accept the life and death challenge to kill me without having to worry about retaliation from elder Hua Wanting.”

Yang Chen clearly knew that some matters could not just be settled by a person's determination:

“In fact, Li QingChen is very pathetic: he has already been abandoned by the Greatest Heaven Sect.”

“Why?”

Gao Yue asked with suspicion, confused again by Yang Chen's words.

“Because regardless of the outcome, he cannot escape death.”

Yang Chen's smile grew large. This was the part that made him most happy:

“If he wins, I die and then Li QingChen will also be executed. On one side to settle elder Hua Wanting's anger, on the other side for the Greatest Heaven Sect to take up the position of placing righteousness before their family and admitting their errors in front of the Clear Sky Sect and the Green Jade Immortal Islands.”

“What if you win?”

Gao Yue asked like a curious kid in front of Yang Chen.

“If I win, he dies.”

Yang Chen replied with a smile:

“But the Greatest Heaven Sect will still admit their errors before the Green Jade Immortal Islands, conceding that they accepted an unworthy disciple.”

“Aren’t you just saying that the Greatest Heaven Sect is not willing to take responsibility for his actions as their disciple?”

Gao Yue refuted, opening her eyes even wider.

“They just don’t wish to be forced to admit their mistakes, that’s all.”

Yang Chen slowly shook his head:

“In fact, once the confrontation with Fairy Shi is over, the Greatest Heaven Sect will be forced into a corner. Rather than being forced to admit their mistakes, it would be better to admit it by their own initiative. But since any such thing which could make them bow their heads hasn’t happened, they also don’t wish for it.”

“Therefore, they arranged a challenge to get themselves out of the embarrassing situation?”

Gao Yue asked angrily. The Greatest Heaven Sect had gone too far by making Yang Chen take the risk for their matters, so how could Gao Yue accept this?



“Right!”

Yang Chen nodded his head:

“Actually, right now many people in the Greatest Heaven Sect are hoping that Li QingChen dies under my hands, as this is the best possible outcome. With this, they completely don’t need to worry about elder Wu and elder Hua Wanting’s anger and as long as they hand over a proper compensation to the Clear Sky Sect, this matter will be over.”

While Gao Yue and Yang Chen were conversing, the Palace Master and Great Master Wang Yong were listening to them on the side full of smiles, but did not say anything. The more they heard, the wider the smiles on their faces became. They were looking at Yang Chen and his master as if they were some kind of precious treasures.

“So, it is because this matter also involves the Green Jade Immortal Islands, otherwise, they would have held the confrontation secretly, and would not have had a need to proclaim this confrontation to the whole world, correct?”

After understanding the reasons Yang Chen had given her, Gao Yue’s mind was like an open tap, the more she pondered over this, the more questions she asked:

“Then aren’t they just exploiting you?”

In his previous life, Gao Yue was a very careful thinker, otherwise she would not have become the Palace Master of the Fierce Yang Hall. Once he heard these words, Yang Chen immediately understood that his master had begun to think over things.

This was a good thing. Yang Chen desired for his master to be safe and sound her entire life, but it was also impossible for him to accompany her everywhere, so he wanted her to have the ability to defend herself.

Although cultivation was one aspect, another was the ability to precisely judge the circumstances. This was the strongest ability she could rely on for self defence. The more Gao Yue began to ponder over this matter, the more it implied that her safety increased.

“Repulsive! How can the Green Jade Immortal Islands be like this?”

Gao Yue scolded them, feeling aggrieved:

“How can they just drag in my disciple?”

“Because of the new Da Cheng stage expert at the Clear Sky Sect, all big sects, including the Greatest Heaven Sect, the Five Phases Sect and the Green Jade Immortal Islands are feeling pressure.”

This time, it was not Yang Chen who replied, instead it was the Palace Master:

“Initially, all big sects were in an equilibrium, but the current problem is that the Green Jade Immortal Islands have to also look for something to maintain the balance.”

While explaining to Gao Yue, the Palace Master nodded towards Yang Chen in admiration. The words Yang Chen had said just a moment ago, simply caught the Palace Master and Wang Yong by surprise. A disciple who had just reached the Foundation stage not too long ago could analyze the disagreement between sects so thoroughly. This just made them pleasantly surprised.

This kind of intelligence and luck, moreover someone who could also look at the general situation as a whole... Such a disciple was simply an innate heavenly talent. At least ninety percent of JieDan experts in the Pure Yang Palace could not think about such a problem, not to mention the Foundation stage or qi layer disciples. If such a disciple was not properly cultivated, then the Pure Yang Palace could only be called extravagant.

“Yang Chen, you must go out in the near future and attentively cultivate, waiting for Li QingChen to drop in and throw away his life!”

After the Palace Master had explained to Gao Yue, he had turned around to Yang Chen:

“We will discuss again after this matter has been settled.”

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen hastily bowed and replied.

This time, Gao Yue also didn't say anything. She had clearly understood Yang Chen's words, regardless of whether Li QingChen lived or died, in the end, he would not be able to escape his death. Even the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect wanted him to die. His odds of success in this life and death challenge were really very low.

Even if Li QingChen, at the peak of the Foundation stage, had a higher cultivation than Yang Chen, who in the Greatest Heaven Sect would agree to incur the anger of both elder Wu and elder Hua Wanting at the same time? Furthermore, since the Green Jade Immortal Islands were also participating, the Greatest Heaven Sect would absolutely not allow the Green Jade Immortal Islands to have their wishes fulfilled, so the best option would be to give up on a peak Foundation stage disciple.

After finishing the conversation, the Palace Master and Wang Yong didn't stay for much longer and departed together, releasing some information to the other elders. Inside of Gao Yue's room, only Gao Yue and Yang Chen remained.

“Yang Chen, this Li QingChen has been focusing on you all along, allowing him to die like this... Wouldn't it be very convenient for him?”

Currently Gao Yue was thinking about this problem from Yang Chen's point of view, she knew everything that Li QingChen and Chu Heng had done to Yang Chen, therefore she particularly wanted to know what Yang Chen would think about it.

“Master, did you not realize it?”

Since the Palace Master and Wang Yong were not in the room anymore, Yang Chen spoke to his master even more freely:

“Previously, Li QingChen had asked Chu Heng to deal with this disciple, relying on the power of being an official disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect. But currently, they are expecting him to die. Compared to this, what could be more painful to him? What could be a better revenge than waiting for him to come and throw his life away? What else could be a more wonderful outcome than this?

“What if he is not willing and instead attacks you, facing death's door?”

Gao Yue was still somewhat doubtful. She couldn't help it, since this affair involved Yang Chen. This question however did not need Yang Chen to be answered, she herself knew the answer. Since the upper echelons of the Greatest Heaven Sect had decided it, then how would a minor, peak Foundation stage disciple, dare to rebel against that?

Once she thought this was the result of scheming and plotting between various sect, Gao Yue couldn't help but feel a wave of anxiety. They would even abandon their sect's disciples without

the slightest hesitation! This was simply cruel.

“Aren’t they cultivators who have cultivated meticulously for so long? How can they all be like this?”

Gao Yue suddenly asked Yang Chen in a tone as if she was speaking to herself.

“I do not know about others.”

Yang Chen bluntly said:

“But you will not!”

If Gao Yue had been like that, then in his previous life, then why would she have chosen death to defend Yang Chen?

“How do you know?”

Gao Yue was quite puzzled at Yang Chen’s determined reply:

“Even I myself don’t know!”

“Because you are my master, so I know!”

Yang Chen casually answered Gao Yue on the surface, but in his heart he secretly added for himself:

“Because in my previous life, you have already used your life to prove that you are not that kind of person!”

“Then can you change into such a person?”

Seeing Yang Chen reply so confidently about her, Gao Yue seemed to be very happy and in turn asked Yang Chen.

“Towards others, maybe!”

As before, Yang Chen gave a reply which made Gao Yue feel even happier:

“I will forever not become like that towards master!”

“You will not, but if other people can then what?”

Gao Yue had seemingly sunk into a line of thought and had begun to drill Yang Chen on this question.

“Then I will turn into a person who other people cannot abandon!”

Yang Chen also understood what kind of thoughts Gao Yue was having. If Gao Yue was unable to get over this, then it could cause her to have a Heart’s Devil very easily. Therefore he very patiently straightened things out:

“With this disciple’s achievements and connections with people, they can only select Li QingChen to die and could not do anything to disciple!”

“With your connections, are you just making friends so that you can have formidable supporters to rely on?”

Gao Yue’s eyes suddenly flashed and she was very resentful towards Yang Chen’s attitude of seizing every opportunity.

“Disciple’s cultivation is quite shallow right now, so this is a plan for convenience!”

Yang Chen smiled:

“As soon as disciple’s cultivation starts rising, then at that time, we can decide who to abandon and who to protect according to our logic.”

“Decide according to our logic?”

Gao Yue shook her head. Apparently hadn’t realized that Yang Chen had used the word ‘our’:

“I will never become such a person!”

“Then you will basically become someone whom the people close



to you will not even dare to think of abandoning, regardless of whatever the matter is!”

Yang Chen said with great heroic spirit.

These words of Yang Chen had struck a chord within Gao Yue’s heart. She had the nature of advancing bravely in front of all difficulties and wished to control her life by herself and not being controlled by others. She immediately replied with a smile:

“I like this. We will try to become this sort of people!”

After she had said this, her tone became even more cheerful, as if she had untied a knot in her heart, otherwise she would have remained entangled with this question. After this troublesome matter had been resolved, her nature had been tempered even more. After realizing this, Gao Yue smile’s became even wider.

“Master, be at ease!”

Yang Chen said as if he was replying to Gao Yue, but even more it seemed like he was making a pledge with himself:

“With disciple here, even if an earth shattering matter happen, master need not worry, disciple will take care of it!”

# Chapter 139 - If You Die, I Will Live On As Your Widow

---

What Gao Yue and Yang Chen hadn't seen was that the Palace Master and Wang Yong, who had been returning, had stopped midway.

The Palace Master found a place to sit down and then put up a restriction spell. Then the Palace Master said to Wang Yong, who had been following just behind him:

“Senior disciple, this grand disciple of yours really leaves people speechless!”

“Are you envious?”

Wang Yong and the Palace Master were fellow apprentices, so in private they were more casual than when they were in front of people:

“Being envious is useless, it was just my good luck that I have such a good Grand Disciple!”

“Yes, Yang Chen's fortune can make people go mad with envy!”

Palace Master did not hide his jealousy, but he was only envious towards Yang Chen and not envious of Wang Yong.

“Having good fortune is also a skill!”

Wang Yong was trying to safeguard his Grand Disciple in every possible way, but when hearing the Palace Master’s bare jealousy, he paid no mind to it. The Palace Master was unlikely to do anything to Yang Chen because of a little jealousy.

“He is greatly pushing himself.”

The Palace Master shook his head:

“The largest trees catch the most wind. After this challenge, for the time being, don’t allow him to go out to train, so that others don’t harm him.”

“Staying at the sect is also good! Only, should we let him do what he wants?”

Wang Yong completely consented to this point, if a talent showed off excessively, making people secretly envious, even with great fortune, who could say when a person’s luck would run out. Although the big sects were extremely polite and amiable on the surface, if the times demanded it, they would not hesitate to backstab, like the Greatest Heaven Sect had done towards the Five Phases Sect or like the Green Jade Immortal Islands had done to the Greatest Heaven Sect.

“Spirit power of the five attributes at the Foundation stage, and he is also extremely well educated and knowledgeable, so surely

guiding the outer disciples has to be enough?”

Apparently the Palace Master had already thought this through.

“Yes!”

Wang Yong nodded, being a Merit Transferring Disciple at the Nine Earth Manor, Yang Chen would have to remain at Meiqing mountain within the territory of the Pure Yang Palace. If he did not have to face some calamity on the level of having his family exterminated, it would be just impossible for him to go out. Not to speak of the fact that he also didn't have to worry about security, these arrangements made by the Palace Master were extremely brilliant and did indeed make use of people to the greatest extent.

Yang Chen didn't know that he was already confined in one place under disguise by the Palace Master and Wang Yong in such a short time. After he had settled his issues and consolidated his realm for such a long time, the foundation realm of the complete Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets had been fully consolidated, so he could attempt to break through to the next realm.

However, before that Yang Chen had to settle his dispute with Li QingChen.

After two months Yang Chen and Gao Yue appeared on a small island in the territory of the Green Jade Immortal Islands. This island was a region which was decided for his life and death duel with Li QingChen.

Li QingChen was also there with a JieDan stage expert of the Greatest Heaven Sect. A duel between two Foundation stage youngsters to settle their personal grudges was still unworthy for any high level expert to witness, not to mention travelling here.

What was unexpected was that two YuanYing stage experts had appeared from the side of the host, the Green Jade Immortal Islands, as well as the concerned party, Fairy Shi.

Among the two YuanYing stage experts, one was Guan Yueying with whom Yang Chen had already crossed swords once, the other was someone he didn't know, but the other expert seemingly had some relationship with Li QingChen.

“Yang Chen, I am sorry!”

Before the duel had begun, under the hateful gaze of Li QingChen, Shi ShanShan walked to Yang Chen and apologised to him.

Yang Chen could clearly see that Shi ShanShan was not acting like an unreasonable person who could easily be duped like before. This sentence clearly proved that she had borrowed Yang Chen's name to deal with Li QingChen in the previous matter.

With regards to the apology from the Cold Plum Fairy of the future, Yang Chen began to feel slightly bitter. If it were not for Li QingChen, Yang Chen would not have received so much trouble at the Pure Yang Palace.

Sure, Yang Chen only treated his experience as troublesome and not as life and death crisis to temper himself. But he also knew that, with Shi ShanShan's cold personality and her nature of not easily communicating with other people, the cause of everything would have been how Shi ShanShan had treated Li QingChen, who had thought that his love was being reciprocated. Then again, not all of this could be completely blamed on Shi ShanShan.

“In the future, don't drag me into your affairs!”

Since settling this time's affairs still depended on the intentions of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, Yang Chen did not intend to nag too much on this matter, so after saying this, he closed his eyes and began to rest, no longer paying any attention to his surroundings.

Seeing Yang Chen's attitude towards her, Shi ShanShan was astonished within her heart. From the time she had entered the Green Jade Immortal Islands until now, she had been constantly pursued by people and had never seen a male fellow daoist like Yang Chen treat her so coldly. This was both new and odd for her at the same time, though it was while she was still feeling guilty. Speaking of which, it seemed like Yang Chen still hadn't completely understood the situation.

“You must be careful!”

Shi ShanShan said with an unvarying expression, in low voice:

“Li QingChen is related to my sect's elder Li Yunyu and has

received pointers from her, so by all means you must be extremely careful in this life and death duel.”

This information seemed slightly troublesome to Yang Chen. If the situation was like this and he killed Li QingChen, then the Pure Yang Palace and Green Jade Immortal Islands could be in disagreement, rather than being put into trouble with the Greatest Heaven Sect.

But at this moment, the arrow had already been released from the bow, so other matters would have to be put off until this one was settled. Regardless of whoever was behind Li QingChen, it was impossible for Yang Chen to use his own life to make up for it, Li Qing Chen had to die.

“This matter has arisen because of me, if you fail in the challenge...”

Saying this, Shi ShanShan suddenly bit her lip, the color of her face turned red and finally, after making her resolve, clenching her teeth she said:

“If you lose here, then I will live as your widow!”

After saying this, Shi ShanShan directly turned around and left, without waiting for Yang Chen’s reaction and returned back to the side of elder Guan Yueying. Bowing her head, she again resumed her cool and elegant appearance and then stood calmly.

Many people had come to watch the fight, but all of them were standing slightly far. Since the duel hadn't begun yet, no one dared to use their spiritual awareness and risk provoking the two YuanYing stage experts. Although Shi ShanShan had said this in a low voice, the few people near them, including two people from the Greatest Heaven Sect, the two YuanYing stage experts from Green Jade Immortal Islands and Gao Yue had all heard her words clearly.

Yang Chen was also startled. Widow? What did this mean? Among ordinary people, it referred to a wife, who did not marry again after her husband was dead or a woman who did not marry for her whole life after her fiancé was dead. Among cultivators, this meant not looking for a Dao Companion after their Dao Companion was dead. The problem is, did Yang Chen have such a relationship with Shi ShanShan? How could Shi ShanShan say such a thing?

Bang!

While Yang Chen's side still hadn't recovered from their astonishment, Li QingChen had already gone berserk due to anger. Without waiting for the agreed upon time, he started approaching Yang Chen while shouting loudly:

“Yang Chen, you die for me!”

Not just Yang Chen and Li QingChen, but Guan Yueying, Li Yunyue, the two YuanYing stage experts and Yang Chen's master, Gao Yue, were completely stunned hearing Shi ShanShan's words.



Shi Shanshan had simply expressed her opinion, she did not think Yang Chen had much of a chance of winning this duel. This was completely normal as Li QingChen was at the peak of the foundation stage, a core disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect, still under the guidance of a YuanYing stage expert. His cultivation was unfathomably deep.

On the contrary, Yang Chen had only built his Foundation not too long ago, and he was moreover a disciple of a second rate sect. When Yang Chen was just an executioner, Li QingChen was already training and travelling with Shi ShanShan. Although she did not know the exact troubles Yang Chen had faced later, Li QingChen must have given him many troubles, she was completely sure of this, therefore she had come to this conclusion.

Just as Shi ShanShan had said, she thought this matter was because of her, therefore she had to take responsibility. Previously, Guan Yueying had guided her regarding the problem in this field, if she did not obtain a thorough understanding of Yang Chen, then Shi ShanShan would give in to her Heart's Devil and would be unable to extricate herself. Since it was already hopeless for Yang Chen, Shi ShanShan might as well prepare herself for living as Yang Chen's widow, this calmed her feelings.

Gua Yueying clearly understood the feelings in Shi ShanShan's heart, but she hadn't expected that Shi Shanshan would surprisingly put out such resolve. She also hadn't discussed this with Guan Yueying and had assumed the identity of Yang Chen's widow all by herself.

Once she remembered how Yang Chen had dealt with a her, a YuanYing stage expert, so easily, Guan Yueying couldn't help but issue a bitter laugh. Shi ShanShan, this stupid child, why did she make such a vow? If Yang Chen was certain that he would lose, why would he initiate a life and death duel?

On the other side, Li Yunyu had completely different thoughts. She had long ago decided to make Shi ShanShan and this descendant of her clan Dao Companions. Therefore, she had all along spared no efforts in helping Li QingChen gain a favourable impression in Shi ShanShan's eyes. This time, Shi ShanShan had gone too far saying such words. This was simply trashing her face.

At this moment, Li Yunyu was even angrier than Li QingChen. Shi ShanShan had clearly expressed her intentions, even if Yang Chen died here, she would never become Li QingChen's Dao Companion. With the efforts of so many years going to waste, how could it not make elder Li feel bottomless anger?

Gao Yue was completely stunned and then worry began to rise. She absolutely had not anticipated that Shi ShanShan would surprisingly say such words. If the Green Jade Immortal Island's Li Yunyu was left out of consideration, then Yang Chen held the upper hand in this challenge and was completely out of danger. But with the sudden appearance of this YuanYing stage expert on the scene, nobody was sure what would happen next.

Under that constant worry, Gao Yue was also greatly proud. Her disciple was really outstanding, even the world famous Fairy Shi had taken the initiative to become his widow. If Yang Chen did not die, then wouldn't it mean that he had got an exceptionally good

## Dao Companion?

But after feeling complacent, Gao Yue also felt a little angry, apparently everything she liked was always snatched by other people, this was very uncomfortable.

This sensation had only lasted for a split second, before Li QingChen's loud voice woke her up. Surprisingly before the appointed time had come, he had already attacked. A sword light like a great general was flying rushed towards Yang Chen.

“Despicable!”

Gao Yue loudly cursed. Just as she was about to block it, she suddenly felt a wave of killing intent and was forced to put in all her strength to deal with it.

The killing intent had come from Green Jade Immortal Island's Li Yunyu. After finding that Gao Yue had the intention to block it, Li Yunyu pressed down on Gao Yue by using her spiritual awareness. Since this was a life and death duel between Yang Chen and Li QingChen, others could not casually interfere.

But Yang Chen just calmly raised his head, his hands had already gripped onto the Immortal Beheading blade. Taking a step forward to meet the flying sword, he raised the blade high and slashed towards the sword light.

“Humph, who taught this youngster? He can't even use a flying

sword! What is he doing, using a blade to show his strength?”

Before the outcome of the clash was clear, Li Yunyu ridiculed Yang Chen.

If she had only said this, then it would not be of much concern, but when she said this she used spirit power to carry her voice far. All people in the surroundings clearly heard this, including Yang Chen. This kind of method of disturbing someone's mental state was definitely considered to be a disgusting trick to interfere from the outside, but she was not concerned in the least about how other people viewed her.

Even if everyone thought it was despicable, Li Yunyu was a YuanYing stage expert and this was the territory of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, so who would dare to say anything against her?

But the most regretful thing was that some matters could not distract a determined person, even such tricks, in front of absolute strength, they were a mere joke.

Ding!

Accompanying Li Yunyu's ridiculing words was an extremely melodious sound, as well as a dazzling spark. The blade in Yang Chen's hand had accurately slashed at the flying sword. The immensely powerful strike had directly thrown the flying sword to the ground.

A flying sword only controlled by spiritual awareness against the blade in Yang Chen's hand which was controlled both by spiritual awareness and his physical body... The superior one was obvious.

Speaking of spiritual awareness, Yang Chen was already at the peak of the JieDan stage while Li QingChen was only at the peak of the Foundation stage, the difference between them was an entire realm. Speaking of strength, Yang Chen's body had been nourished by the blood of countless immortals, so his strength had reached outrageous levels. Speaking of the quality of flying swords, the Immortal Beheading Blade was a weapon which had taken a peak JieDan expert several hundred years to refine, so how could Li QingChen's flying sword, which he had only received a few decades ago from Li Yunyu compare to it?

Sparks flew in all directions and a big nick appeared in Li QingChen's flying sword. As for Li QingChen, who had an extremely close connection with his destined flying sword, he released a loud shout, as if, when the flying sword was damaged, his spiritual awareness also suffered heavy losses.

But Yang Chen never had the habit of showing mercy to an enemy, after the first slash, he rushed forward, and while his body was in the air, he had raised the Immortal Beheading Sword again.

After his foot reached the ground, Yang Chen was already three feet in front of Li QingChen. His Immortal Beheading blade chopped down fiercely, without showing any mercy.

Li QingChen immediately sensed danger, and resisting the pain from the wounds in his spiritual awareness with great difficulty,

he released the defenses on his body. Immediately, a faintly discernable armor appeared on his body and at the same time, many flickering light balls appeared in Li QingChen's hand. Even an evil grin appeared on his face.

“You can not!”

A loud cry of fear immediately echoed. The owner of the voice was none other than elder Li Yunyu, who had mocked Yang Chen just a few moments ago. But this time, her voice was full of pleading people didn't know to whom she was saying this.

# Chapter 140 - Since He Didn't Die... What Now?

---

The people watching in the surroundings didn't know and even Gao Yue and Shi ShanShan, who were standing nearby didn't know, whom Li Yunyu had shouted those words to.

Yang Chen was currently in the winning position as his slash was very fierce and powerful. But Li QingChen had also unleashed a high level armour, and was moreover holding a silver ball, which was some kind of unknown magic weapon, supposedly his means to strike back. So even among them, they were unable to determine whom these words were said to.

But Guan Yueying knew that Li Yunyu's shout was meant for Yang Chen. The might of that one slash, although other people couldn't see it, she and Li Yunyu, the two YuanYing stage experts were able of determining it properly.

Not to mention that Li QingChen had hurriedly unleashed that body and soul protecting armor, even if he had his flying sword and had used its full strength, he may not necessarily be able to resist that strike from Yang Chen. That one chop from Yang Chen just a moment ago on that flying sword had clearly illustrated the terrifying might of the Immortal Beheading Blade, but Li QingChen hadn't admitted to this point.

Hearing Li Yunyu's yell, Li QingChen instinctively believed that this was to stop him from utilising that ball in his hand. It had to be known that this was eighth metal god thunder, refined personally by Li Yunyu. As long as he used it, not to mention a

Foundation stage junior, even if it was a YuanYing stage expert, if he didn't die, he would only barely survive.

But Li QingChen immediately understood the meaning behind Li Yunyu's shout. He was too close to Yang Chen, if he used the eighth metal god thunder there, it could only end in the mutual destruction of both of them. Thinking this, Li Qing Chen immediately hesitated for a moment.

But this one moment decided who would remain alive and who would die. Yang Chen's Immortal Beheading Blade, ruthlessly chopped at the center of Li QingChen's head.

The illusory armor noiselessly shattered like glass. Yang Chen's strike chopped directly from the top of Li QingChen's head to the soles of his feet. He was divided in one strike. When Yang Chen snatched the silver ball from Li QingChen's hand, the left and right parts of Li QingChen's corpse separated and fell on either side.

“Youngster, you dare!”

Li Yunyu didn't dare to believe everything that she had seen. She had already shouted to stop this, but Yang Chen had surprisingly still killed him. This was simply not giving her, a YuanYing stage expert, any face. In her anger, she immediately took out her flying sword.

“Junior apprentice sister!”



From one side, Guan Yueying shouted loudly, creasing her brows. Her voice contained traces of oscillating spiritual awareness, which immediately woke up the berserk Li Yunyu. The oscillating spiritual awareness was something Guan Yueying was very proud of. The last time she had used this was on Yang Chen, which had injured him. Only this time she had used it on Li Yunyu.

Guan Yueying's loud shout immediately made Li Yunyu clear headed, only then did she realize what she was trying to do. Yang Chen and Li QingChen were in the middle of a life and death duel, so how could Yang Chen stop his hand just because of Li Yunyu's shout?

But although she thought this, Li Yunyu still absolutely couldn't accept that Li QingChen, whom she had trained for several years had been killed in just two strikes. She also couldn't believe that the flying sword which she had personally refined had been broken in one strike by Yang Chen's blade and furthermore, the body protecting armor she had prepared for Li QingChen shattering in one strike.

What was most unacceptable for her was that her own clan junior had been chopped in half in front of her. The fierce anger almost made her lose reason and directly go and kill Yang Chen on the scene.

Guan Yueying had promptly obstructed her from going berserk as she could not tolerate what Li Yunyu was going to do. There were many people watching in the surroundings. If Li Yunyu had really went through with it, there was no other option than killing all people there.

But one thing Guan Yueying was completely certain about, was that even if Li Yunyu had tried to kill Yang Chen, she certainly wouldn't have succeeded. Although Yang Chen may be unable to defeat Li Yunyu, if he decided to flee, even ten Li Yunyu's would not have been able to chase after him. Guan Yueying had experienced this personally. What's more, Guan Yueying was not sure if Li Yunyun would even be Yang Chen's opponent if he was completely serious.

Seeing the strange pattern which Yang Chen had exposed, if Li Yunyu had really attacked him by going against rules, then maybe the Green Jade Immortal Islands would have to face extermination. Although she was not sure, Guan Yueying felt that there was certainly a connection between Yang Chen and the anomaly with the spirit power of the Green Jade Immortal Islands recently. After all, the timing of Yang Chen appearing and the event occurring was a great coincidence.

After he had chopped Li QingChen, disregarding how others thought of him, Yang Chen stepped forward and first grabbed Li QingChen's pouch, throwing it into his belt. The advantages had always been his first priority and there also had been no rules prohibiting him from collecting his spoils after the life and death duel. While he did not let go of the silver ball in his hand, his spiritual awareness was constantly fixed on Li Yunyu.

Once he had touched the ball, he immediately knew what it was, so he was not putting the ball away, precisely because of the fear that Li Yunyu would go berserk. Only after looking at Guan Yueying dominate her, his heart eased a little bit.

The spectators were very excited, the life and death duel between a peak foundation stage and an initial foundation stage cultivator had surprisingly been so simple, but the result had been so unexpected, which had made all of them unable to believe what they had seen.

“Have my eyes gone blind just a moment ago?”

“How could this happen?”

“What kind of spiritual weapon does he have?”

“Fellow Daoist Li couldn’t even stand a blow?”

Countless gasps, guesses, doubts, puzzled voices were rising continuously. Nobody could accept this result. Obviously, a peak Foundation stage expert had a higher cultivation, so how could he die in the hands of an initial Foundation stage cultivator? In such conditions, what kind of meaning did their cultivation even have? The higher realm was unable to defeat a lower realm?

Furthermore, some people who had relations with the Greatest Heaven Sect started shouting another version.

“He must have used some kind of devil technique, otherwise how is this possible?”

“You cheat, what method did you use?”

Within this unnecessary racket, everyone discovered one thing: the JieDan expert who had accompanied Li QingChen surprisingly did not say a single word. And while everyone was commenting, under everyone’s astonished gazes, he silently collected Li QingChen’s corpse.

Everyone quieted down when they saw that the JieDan expert went and sat down not too far from Yang Chen, apparently he had to speak to him to keep up appearances, so nobody dared to open their mouths for the fear of disturbing them.

“This life and death duel is the loss of my Greatest Heaven Sect’s disciple.”

The JieDan expert calmly cupped his hands:

“This is a personal grudge between you two which didn’t have any relation with either sect. My Greatest Heaven Sect will not bear grudges towards you for this reason. Fellow Daoist Yang, congratulations!”

“For every grievance someone is responsible, for every debt there is a debtor. A life and death duel can’t be blamed on anyone.”

Yang Chen also cupped his hands:

“The Greatest Heaven Sect really has the charisma of a big sect,

assuming responsibility, I really admire you!”

Flattery was also necessary sometimes. Speaking like this gave the Greatest Heaven Sect a way out, so Yang Chen would also not mind speaking these few words. Since there was a variable like Li Yunyu present, he still didn't know what would happen.

Right now the person who was most embarrassed was none other than Shi ShanShan. In her opinion, there was no doubt that Yang Chen would die this time. Leaving aside the matter of cultivation, Li QingChen also had magical weapons specially prepared by Li Yunyu, which were not something Yang Chen could compare with. But who could have known that the result would be this?

Because of Guan Yueying's guidance, Shi ShanShan had realized the error in the method she had used to deal with Li QingChen, so she felt extremely guilty towards Yang Chen.

Initially Shi ShanShan had intended to continue with the opportunity of the confrontation, so that Yang Chen could restore his name and at the same time, adding her apology and some compensation should be enough to make Yang Chen understand.

But who could have known that such a small matter would spread so widely in the cultivation world, and she herself didn't know the reason. Li QingChen was a family member of Li Yunyu, therefore the Green Jade Immortal Islands had decided to hide a lot of information from Li Yunyu and the same was the case with Guan Yueying. So it was even more impossible for Shi ShanShan to know.

Li QingChen had a guilty conscience, so he did not agree to the confrontation and instead initiated a challenge. What was most out of Shi ShanShan's expectations was that Yang Chen would actually ask for a life and duel with Li QingChen. This made her blame herself even more. While constantly thinking Yang Chen would die, she decided to become his widow under the guilt.

The problem was that Yang Chen was perfectly well and alive now, so Shi ShanShan did not have the opportunity to become a widow. But these words were indeed greatly dubious, ordinary people used it for their husband and fiancé and cultivators use it for their dao companions, so how should Shi ShanShan deal with this?

Just while she was thinking about how to deal with embarrassment, Yang Chen turned towards her, which made Shi ShanShan feel even more ashamed and resentful at the same time. The more she looked at Yang Chen coming near her, the more annoying her heartbeat became. She was thinking of saying something, but she could not open her mouth and was extremely anxious.

“Fairy Shi, you must not joke like that again!”

Yang Chen smiled towards Shi ShanShan and didn't forcibly seize the opportunity, only cupping his hands:

“Still in the future, this Yang would be grateful if you did not involve me in these kinds of affairs in the future!”

After he had finished speaking, without waiting for Shi ShanShan's response, Yang Chen immediately turned and started walking in his master's direction.

The color on Shi ShanShan's face alternated between red and white for a good moment, looking at Yang Chen already walking towards Gao Yue, she didn't know why she was feeling uneasy, suddenly she yelled:

“Although Shi ShanShan is an ordinary woman, I will still do as promised! This affair has happened because of me, so I cannot avoid taking responsibility, I will certainly not take back the words I have said!”

After she had shouted this, without caring for the two YuanYing stage cultivators nearby, Shi ShanShan immediately called out her flying sword and flew towards her island. Leaving behind a large group of people looking at each other in dismay, not knowing what the matter was.

Yang Chen nearly stumbled. What did Shi ShanShan mean by these words? Was she admitting that she was his dao companion?

Other people hadn't heard Shi ShanShan's words but Guan Yueying, Li Yunyu, Gao Yue, Yang Chen as well as the JieDan stage expert from the Greatest Heaven Sect had clearly heard them. Seeing Shi ShanShan going like this, the JieDan expert from Greatest Heaven Sect had an expression of Schadenfreude and cupped his hands towards Yang Chen:

“Fairy Shi is incomparably beautiful and elegant, Fellow Daoist Yang, congratulations!”

After he had congratulated Yang Chen, that JieDan expert bid his farewell to Gao Yue, Guan Yueying and Li Yunyu and quickly departed. The crowd was also not as lively as before and were quietly discussing the amazing fight that had happened just a moment ago while departing. Only the master and disciple, Gao Yue and Yang Chen, as well as the two YuanYing stage experts, Guan Yueying and Li Yunyu were left behind.

“Senior Guan!”

Yang Chen knew that the matter had still not been resolved, and would bring him even more troubles in the future so he could only cup his hands to greet Guan Yueying, whom he was familiar with:

“You need not take Fairy Shi’s words seriously, if senior could persuade her on my behalf.”

Just after saying that, Yang Chen was cut off by Guan Yueying:

“Words spoken are like a loose arrow, a disciple of my Green Jade Immortal Islands has never said something like this before so many people and later not admitted it. Fellow Daoist Yang, you have a future full of promises, will ShanShan disgrace you?”

In front of Yang Chen, Guan Yueying did not exaggerate his



strength and only said that his future had boundless prospects.

Although she had used the excuse that a disciple of the Green Jade Immortal Islands would not break her word, Guan Yueying also had some selfish motives. If this matter raised some improper opinion of Yang Chen against the Green Jade Immortal Islands then that would be a great inconvenience. On the contrary, with Shi ShanShan's accidental promise, maybe she could play matchmaker.

If that happened, with Shi ShanShan's previous words, nobody would force her to become their dao companion in the future, which would resolve a great inconvenience. Also, if Yang Chen truly was the sort of person which she had guessed and he also had the boundless prospects he seemed to have, then there would only be benefits and no disadvantages for the Green Jade Immortal Islands and Shi ShanShan.

As for Yang Chen, Shi ShanShan had a reputation of being beautiful and alluring throughout the whole world, otherwise people would not start calling her 'cold plum fairy' in the future. Her sect's junior, regardless if it was cultivation talent or beauty, everything was far above average, and she was furthermore from a prestigious sect, so she was absolutely capable of mating with Yang Chen.

“Eh?”

Yang Chen hadn't anticipated that Guan Yueying would say this. Other than a surprised yell, he was completely speechless.

“Since fellow daoist Gao is Yang Chen’s master, then why doesn’t fellow daoist Gao try to convince him?”

Guan Yueying turned towards Gao Yue’s side:

“We should both report this to our sect masters so that they can set a date to betroth Yang Chen and Shi ShanShan, what do you think?”

“What?”

Gao Yue was baffled thinking about how this matter could have developed so fast. She had to decide so suddenly, but she was also somewhat amazed.

“Fellow daoist Gao doesn’t have to feel awkward about this matter.”

Guan Yueying knew that they first had to have Yang Chen’s approval and continued speaking:

“But my Green Jade Immortal Islands’ disciple will never eat her words. Cultivators attach most importance to the law of karma. Yang Chen, if you are not willing, then we can not force you, but ShanShan will also not look for another companion and will live this life alone. You should do your best!”

After she finished speaking, not waiting for Yang Chen to reply, she took a long sigh:

“Alas, poor ShanShan!”

Immediately afterwards, she pulled Li Yunyu, who was staring at Yang Chen with incessant hatred, and disappeared.

What the hell? Yang Chen’s brows almost linked together, forming a line. How could it be that the Cold Plum Fairy didn’t have any suitors? If she called out once, then the line of people would extend from the Green Jade Immortal Islands to the Pure Yang Palace! Why did they decide it to be him?

Only two people, Yang Chen and his master were left on the island, so Yang Chen turned around to look at Gao Yue. Just at that time, Gao Yue also looked at Yang Chen, the master and disciple looked at each other with dismay in their eyes.

# Chapter 141 - Becoming The Merit Transferring Disciple

---

Regardless of the circumstances, this was Yang Chen's victory. Being a victor in a life and death duel against Greatest Heaven Sect's Li QingChen was more important than anything else.

At least, it was like that according to Gao Yue. A life and death duel was not a joke, generally speaking, only one person would survive. Since Yang Chen had survived, the complications regarding it were not very troublesome, since he still had opportunities.

“Fairy Shi is quite beautiful, your luck with women is really good!”

After the tension had eased up, Gao Yue suddenly said this to Yang Chen with a smile which was not a smile. Only ridicule could clearly be seen in her eyes:

“She is furthermore a talented JieDan stage expert. After becoming dao companions with her, your cultivation will surely advance by leaps and bounds.”

“Alas!”

Yang Chen could not help but glance at his master whose face had turned pale and while taking a long sigh said:

“Li QingChen was a descendent from the clan of elder Li Yunyu of the Green Jade Immortal Islands... Just what kind of trouble will she bring in the future?”

“But at least you are alive, right?”

Regarding the earlier fact, Gao Yue was still in quite high spirits when compared to Yang Chen. Yang Chen was also not as happy as he should be after winning in a life and death duel with a peak Foundation stage expert.

Although Yang Chen’s battle this time was quite simple, it made Gao Yue realize one fact very clearly: that Yang Chen still didn’t have a proper flying sword. He still only had the weird large blade which he had been using from the time he started cultivating, as if he was afraid people wouldn’t know that he had been an executioner.

Gao Yue determined that this time, after she returned, she would immediately go and gather the best kinds of materials and make the best flying sword for Yang Chen. What kind of excuse could she say to him after she had stressed so heavily that she would refine it herself. Not to mention that the palace master had personally agreed to provide Yang Chen with a flying sword.

But Gao Yue could not be blamed: she wanted to give Yang Chen the most suitable flying sword as soon as possible, so she had racked her brain but had been unable to figure out what kind of flying sword Yang Chen wanted. Right now, he didn’t need the flying sword but it had to be able to fight other flying sword in close quarters.

Despite being glad after winning the duel, he was not that happy after he had been forcefully assigned a dao companion, even though that dao companion was incomparably beautiful. Most of all, after Yang Chen thought of the cold expression on the face of the future Cold Plum Fairy, even if they were together, it would be just like standing near a block of ice, which didn't exactly appeal to his interests.

“These issues must be cleared properly with the Green Jade Immortal Islands. It's just a misunderstanding, that's all. No need to take this seriously.”

Yang Chen shook his head, nevertheless thinking that refusing it was better. Otherwise, on that day, only Li QingChen had appeared, but when she revealed her monstrous talent in cultivation in the future, countless number of people would come forward, that would surely be troublesome.

Yang Chen was not someone who didn't know east from west after getting in the good graces of a beautiful woman, therefore he logically thought about handling this matter.

Seeing Yang Chen so insistent on this, Gao Yue also had to endorse his decision as his master. But for some unknown reason, after hearing that Yang Chen had made this decision, Gao Yue felt very relaxed.

The specific dealings still had to be negotiated between the Pure Yang Palace and Green Jade Immortal Islands. After all, the people

who had come to watch were two YuanYing stage experts from their side and only Gao Yue and Yang Chen from this, so their status was seemingly not equal.

After returning to the Pure Yang Palace, neither dared to be careless and went directly to report to the palace master. Since the Greatest Heaven Sect had truly renounced Li QingChen it was simple and the matter would have ended with Li QingChen's death and would not have had any more twists and turns, but his relation with an elder of the Green Jade Immortal Islands was really troublesome.

“Don't worry, you should take every step carefully!”

What was out of the expectations of the two people was that the palace master had been greatly optimistic regarding this affair, as if nothing had happened:

“It'll create some trouble, but they should have known not to use the life of my Pure Yang Palace's disciple to get in someone's good graces, isn't that right?”

This one line immediately made Yang Chen and Gao Yue feel an incomparable warmth. After all, he was the sect leader, so he could make disciples feel the sect's protection very easily.

“Regarding the matter of Dao Companions, we will negotiate about that.”

The palace master continued, but he immediately made a huge turnaround:

“Yang Chen, Fairy Shi would indeed be an exceptionally good dao companion, you should think about it once.”

Regarding this, Yang Chen shook his head again. He would not like a dao companion who had been forced on him. Fortunately, the Palace Master did not force him and shifted the conversation to the topic of Yang Chen’s future plans.

“Yang Chen, in the near future you must not go anywhere.”

After he had praised the two people, the palace master began talking about the work assigned to Yang Chen:

“Since you have faced so many great affairs recently, it would be better if you could calm yourself and sincerely remain in the Pure Yang Palace for some time, alright? I have discussed about this with fellow apprentice brother Wang Yong: the Nine Earth Manor has been lacking a suitable Merit Transferring Disciple. Yang Chen, it would be good if you could go and guide the younger generations!”

Regarding the Palace Master’s arrangements, Yang Chen had no say. He could do nothing but follow them. In addition to that he certainly needed to calm himself and carefully increase his cultivation.



Naturally Gao Yue also rejoiced greatly. At least Yang Chen did not need to run around everywhere, facing dangers. The Nine Earth Manor was within the Pure Yang Palace's territory, so what kind of stupid enemy would try to behave atrociously there?

“You have to sincerely provide guidance in the Nine Earth Manor!”

Gao Yue warned Yang Chen again and again:

“Very soon, I will take a trip to the city to find the best quality materials for you to refine the flying sword. So during that time, by all means, don't stir up any trouble!”

Regarding Yang Chen's ability to cause trouble, Gao Yue had absolutely no doubts, therefore, before leaving, she sincerely admonished Yang Chen.

Suddenly Yang Chen was full of expectations: this time Gao Yue would in all likelihood officially begin the refining of his MingGuang sword. Naturally, among the memories of his previous life, this was one of the few which brought smile to his face, even at death's door.

In front of Gao Yue's repeated warnings, Yang Chen nodded again and again and then, without saying anything more, he headed directly for the Nine Earth Manor. What about passing guidance? It was just the perfect time to go and find a few future talented treasures.

Li QingChen's life and death duel was not a great challenge for Yang Chen. What he needed to think about at that moment was the great calamity of the devil cultivation which would engulf the entire cultivation world in the future.

Just avoiding the problem of the devil cultivation was simple, he only needed to warn them not to come in contact with the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Method. But Yang Chen was thinking even further: afterwards the Pure Yang Palace would also have to participate in the joint operation to annihilate the devils. How he could prevent disastrous losses at that time was Yang Chen's main concern.

It appeared that getting rid of Lin ChengHe first was perhaps the best option.

Because of the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Method, this devil, Lin ChengHe, had rushed to the Da Cheng stage and only after sacrificing the lives of several tens of YuanYing stage experts, could he be killed in the end, but because of him every large sect had lost a great amount of their strength and had gone into seclusion for several decades to recover. Only after that could they begin to restore.

Yang Chen would absolutely not allow the tragedy of the Pure Yang Palace which had happened last time to be repeated again, so he had to make some preparations in advance. Adding to that there were large differences between this life and his past life, so he himself didn't know how big the effect of this great calamity would be.

In his previous life, at the time of this great calamity of devil cultivation, elder Hua Wanting of the Clear Sky Sect was still entangled in the Blood Phantom Vine, but currently, because of Yang Chen's intervention, she had successfully broken free from the Blood Phantom Vine and had entered the Da Cheng Stage. If Hua Wanting decided to undertake the task of eliminating Lin ChengHe, Yang Chen couldn't guess what the outcome would be.

This time everything was variable, but for Yang Chen, the best security would be to increase his own strength. Unfortunately, for the problem at hand, the Foundation stage was indeed quite lacking. Even if he had been a JieDan stage expert, in front of the devil Lin ChengHe, he would be just like a piece of cooked meat, ready to be eaten. He really wouldn't be able to do anything.

Even though there were several years before the great calamity and even if Yang Chen knew about many heavenly materials, profound cultivation methods; within the short time of a few years he would still not be able to contend against Lin Chenghe. If he wanted to have the strength to defend himself during this huge calamity over the devil cultivation, then he first had to rely on the sect's strength and preserve it to the greatest extent, secondly he needed to possess a magic weapon that could be used as a trump card at a critical moment.

After his fight with Li QingChen, Yang Chen immediately knew that he had to put refining his destined magic weapon as a priority. Earlier, because he had just reached the Foundation stage and had been consolidating his realm, Yang Chen did not want to be distracted by refining a magic weapon, but now that his realm had already consolidated, he could begin his refining.

For all cultivators, picking their destined magic weapon was a very important affair. Because the destined magic weapon was very closely linked with the life of the cultivator, if the magic weapon suffered heavy damage, then the cultivator was also seriously injured. But, since a destined magic weapon was linked to the master even more closely than other magic weapons, it would display at least three to four times more strength than an ordinary magic weapon.

In fact, Yang Chen had long ago picked his destined magic weapon. The reason why he had been using the Immortal Beheading Blade was precisely to treat it as his own destined magic weapon. The real body of the Immortal Beheading Blade was the sword box refined by a JieDan stage senior. The sword box was not very outstanding by itself, but if a sufficient number of powerful sword spirits were added, then it could take a qualitative leap.

Regarding the sword spirits, Yang Chen had already thought of a way to do it. He needed flying swords corresponding to the ten attribute of Yin and Yang five phases secrets, if he could gather all of them, then he may be able to turn it into a magic weapon which could make anyone in the Heavenly Court shudder.

Collecting flying swords of the ten attributes was not very easy, but Yang Chen already had obtained the ingredients for two types. One was the PengLai Divine Wood, the other was precisely the Blood Phantom Vine. Coincidentally both of them were wood attributed.

With Yang Chen's current strength of the Foundation stage, it was basically impossible for him to refine the PengLai Divine

Wood. With just the support of the geocentric flame inside of his body, it was impossible to even change the shape of the PengLai Divine Wood.

If the Blood Phantom Vine had been mature, then Yang Chen would have also been helpless, but the Blood Phantom Vine Yang Chen had received had coincidentally only sucked the blood of a Da Cheng stage expert in this realm and was at the infant stage, just enough to allow him to do what he was good at.

Because of the characteristics of the Blood Phantom Vine, it would create a second wood flying sword after being refined, which would have powerful blood sucking characteristics and would moreover be able to mature after sucking the blood of someone powerful, then of the cultivators in the Spiritual World and then the Immortal World, only then would it genuinely be able to enter the mature stage.

Every sword spirit could be entered independently, so what Yang Chen wanted to do at that moment was to use the Blood Phantom Vine to create as a flying sword which would be used as the first sword spirit and then intensifying the refining of the Immortal Beheading Blade to become his destined flying sword.

Naturally, tampering with the destined flying sword was a long process during which he could not be disturbed, so Yang Chen's first priority was to assume the role of Nine Earth Manor's Merit Transferring Disciple.

When he returned to the Nine Earth Manor, the disciples there were not unfamiliar to Yang Chen. Not to mention anything else,

just climbing to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, in addition to the allocation of the luxurious Second Fierce Yang Hall, there would be nearly no one who didn't know of Yang Chen. What's more there was still his fame from refining the Heaven Seizing Pill as well as, after recent vague rumors, the favour granted by elder Hua Wanting of the Clear Sky Sect which made it even more impossible for people to not know him.

It was a very pleasant surprise for all outer disciples that Yang Chen, who was known to have already read all books in the Hidden Pavilion of the Nine Earth Manor, had become their Merit Transferring Disciple. Who would be more familiar with the things in the Hidden Pavilion than Yang Chen? As long as they could obtain the name and the exact position of the books they were looking for from Yang Chen, it would save them a lot of time.

The facts went along with the expectations of the outer disciples. Yang Chen's arrival really did give the Nine Earth Manor a huge change of appearance.

Previously, during Chu Heng's time, the instructors would not do their best effort to teach these disciples, while he would be mostly busy in his cultivation and would only provide very little time to these disciples. Chu Heng also had one more mortal weakness: he was a water attributed cultivator and thus only had good knowledge about water attributed cultivation methods. Regarding other cultivation methods, he wasn't very skilled in guiding disciples.

Yang Chen was completely different, he was an expert who had cultivated the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets and thus,

regardless of whatever attribute it was, in front of Yang Chen, everyone could obtain terse and accurate guidance. Although he only said a few words, it made the disciple who was being guided have sudden insights and sometimes have an all new understanding regarding their cultivation.

“You practice a water attributed cultivation method in which being flexible is the most important. Only then you can show your effectiveness. When you have time, go to the Hidden Pavilion and look at the three jade slips in the fourth column, sixth row. It will be helpful for you.”

“For the metal attribute, the most important thing is being acute. You must be able to conquer every obstacle. Grasp the essentials and you will be able to settle your current problem.”

On the first day Yang Chen returned, all of the outer disciples raised their problems. For every person, Yang Chen made them tell him their problem and afterwards, demonstrated his own cultivation method once and then picked the most suitable cultivation method for them.

Yang Chen only used one day for several hundred disciples to give everyone accurate solutions. Those who had a strong perception broke through on the scene, which surprised all outer disciples, even to the extent that nobody wanted to leave and wished to hear the explanation, so that maybe they could also comprehend something.

“Oh right, you. Your cultivation method is a little problematic. Spirit power cannot always rotate at this meridian.”

Just as the everyone was about to depart, Yang Chen suddenly pointed towards a servant following after an outer disciple and said to him:

“Settle this and you will be able to advance to the next layer.”

“Is Sir talking to me?”

That one servant whom Yang Chen had pointed at had never expected such a good thing and was startled.



# Chapter 142 - Refining The Destined Flying Sword

---

“Yes, you!”

Yang Chen nodded and smiled towards that servant:

“You already are at the seventh qi layer, if you can advance a few more layers, you will definitely be able to become an inner disciple.”

Hearing these words, all of the servants who had followed after the outer disciples immediately became excited. But they still remembered their status and did not dare to cross their limits and merely looked at Yang Chen with a gaze full of hope.

“In the future, to any person in the Nine Earth Manor, including the people at the Ye Xiu Manor, if anyone has a problem, they can raise it in front of me.”

Yang Chen sternly said:

“Every two months, I will set aside a day at both the Ye Xiu Manor and the Nine Earth Manor. If you have anything you are not clear about, you can ask me.”

Bang!

Yang Chen's words caused a sensation in the entire crowd.

Wouldn't this mean that servants were also allowed to get pointers from him? This was unprecedented! None of the previous Merit Transferring Disciple had done this before.

The number of servants in the Ye Xiu Manor and Nine Earth Manor was several times higher than the number of outer disciples. Previously they hadn't gotten the opportunity, but now Yang Chen had surprisingly promised to provide guidance, which pleased everyone beyond measure.

On the path of cultivation, to pick suitable people, all sects use a very cruel method: In the beginning, they just have to depend on their comprehension and luck and if they are successful, then they become outer disciples, if they are unsuccessful, then they become servants. The same is the case for outer disciples.

There was also nothing impartial and everything could be said to depend on karma. If they were lucky, then they could run into a good Merit Transferring Disciple and would be able to build their foundation successfully, but if they were not, then it couldn't be forced.

The Merit Transferring Disciple also changed every few years, so these outer disciple just had to wait for the opportunity when a Merit Transferring Suitable for their cultivation would come. Yang Chen had too much bad luck and had by some coincidence run into Chu Heng from the beginning, who then made things difficult for him.

All previous Merit Transferring Disciple had been proficient in only one attribute and could not give proper guidance regarding other attributes. People like Yang Chen who were proficient in all five attributes had simply never come before. It could be said that this was the good karma of these outer disciples.

With Yang Chen's promise, the many servants also got excited. With the guidance of the Merit Transferring Disciple, maybe they could once again hope to build their foundation.

“If you need some kind of elixir refined, then gather the ingredients, I will refine it for you.”

After making the promise of giving pointers to everyone, Yang Chen made another promise which made everyone happy.

Who didn't know that Yang Chen was a pill concocting expert, moreover one who could already refine second grade foundation stage pills? If they could gather the ingredients, Yang Chen would refine a second grade foundation stage pill for them, so wouldn't they have a great chance for achieving the Foundation stage at that time?

The entire Nine Earth Manor and Ye Xiu Manor were filled with excitement, as if everyone had obtained their desire of reaching the Foundation stage. Even those people who had long ago given up their hopes on building their foundation had once again hope visible in their eyes.

Everyone immediately remembered about Shangguan Feng and Wang Yong, who originally didn't have any hopes of reaching the Foundation stage and had been sent to become the managers of the Ye Xiu Manor, but currently they were living together with Yang Chen at the Second Fierce Yang Hall. If somebody said that this didn't have any relation with Yang Chen, nobody would believe it.

Suddenly a completely new atmosphere had appeared in the outer area of the Pure Yang Palace. Regardless of whether it was cultivation or anything else, everything was completely different from before.

Many servants also began to ponder what should they ask when Yang Chen came next time. Moreover, the majority of outer disciple who had taken advice from Yang Chen began to cultivate from the beginning.

Once again, as the day when Yang Chen would give pointers drew near, everyone was notified. This time Yang Chen's intention was to allow everyone to have a clear view of their cultivation, which would require a long time, moreover everyone was personally tested by Yang Chen.

Who would be dissatisfied with this? Yang Chen personally inspecting everyone, such a great opportunity could only be found by luck, so who would oppose to it? Each and every one were excitedly waiting for the manager of the Nine Earth Manor to call them to their turn. Naturally, at that time, their servants were also waiting to get pointers.

What was astonishing for everyone was that this time, apart

from carefully inspecting their cultivation, Yang Chen also made them put their hands on a small stone in his hand and insert spirit power into it.

Though nobody knew what he was doing, nobody questioned him. Everyone believed that Yang Chen was testing them for their cultivation of spirit power and therefore excitedly inserted their spirit power. .

The detailed guidance this time benefitted all of them. Previous cultivation mistakes, their future cultivation direction, even some regrettable things which they had used, as long as they asked, Yang Chen answered all of them in detail and even demonstrated for them on the scene. His formidable performance made all disciples and servants be convinced in heart and soul.

Naturally, among them there were some exceptions, but what they didn't expect was that, rather than guiding them, Yang Chen made them change their cultivation method entirely.

“Uncle master, I have an earth attributed spirit root, how can I cultivate a wood attributed cultivation method?”

The very first one was an outer disciple who was at the fifth qi layer. Hearing Yang Chen's explanation, he indeed didn't dare to believe what he was hearing.

“Right now, I cannot explain you, but I can make a promise to you.”

Yang Chen also didn't explain much to the disciple and used his status of being a Merit Transferring Disciple to demand this outer disciple to cultivate the other attribute's cultivation method:

“I can guarantee that cultivating the wood attributed cultivation method will be easier than your present cultivation. Moreover, when you reach the peak of the qi layer, I personally will refine a third grade foundation stage pill for you!”

Yang Chen could not tell him about the postnatal spirit root, at least right now he was unable to explain and could only forcefully make him accept and use benefits to goad him. Although the disciple was somewhat dubious, under the enticement of a third grade foundation stage pill, he finally agreed.

The disciples like him were only fourteen among the thousand people of the Nine Earth Manor and Ye Xiu Manor. For most people, the postnatal spirit root was the same as the innate spirit root. Moreover many postnatal spirit roots were not as outstanding as the innate spirit root. So this ratio was quite normal.

After two months, Yang Chen had finally given pointers to all disciples. Yang Chen spared no pains in giving pointers to any disciple or servant, at least for the next half year, as long as these people cultivated according to his instructions, there would not be any major problems.

This also provided enough time to Yang Chen to take care of his own matters. First Yang Chen wanted to refine his destined flying sword.

There was a very large difference in refining the destined flying sword and refining an ordinary flying sword, the destined flying sword had to enter the spirit sea and slowly fuse with his primordial spirit until they were completely assimilated. Common methods of refining a flying sword could increase the grade of the destined flying sword, but it would be unable to achieve that kind of interlink.

The Immortal Beheading Blade, whose real identity was the sword box, entered his spirit sea after taking a full two months. Once it entered the spirit sea, Yang Chen could immediately see the enormous Immortal Beheading Blade.

These circumstances were similar to when Yang Chen had refined the wood attributed third grade foundation stage pill, but this time, it was not only the shape, but the main part of the Immortal Beheading Blade which had entered the spirit sea.

The large Immortal Beheading Blade allowed Yang Chen to see all flaws and defects in the sword box, but unfortunately, with his current skill, Yang Chen would not be able to improve upon the sword box refined by a peak JieDan expert, so he could only record these flaws and afterwards look for the right ingredients, so that it could be refined as soon as possible.

To temper the destined flying sword, Yang Chen inevitably chose the blood river. This was Yang Chen's pride and his sharpest weapon. If the flying sword could bring that killing intent along with it, then almost nobody would be his enemy.

Without hesitating much, Yang Chen threw the Immortal Beheading Blade into the river. Tempering the body of the destined flying sword required the process to be conducted continuously. The beginning period, requires the most patience. Only if the flying sword united with his body and soul, would he be able to use the flying sword as his arms and legs.

If he just had to place a spiritual awareness imprint, or perhaps pass it through a few layers of ordinary refining, such as the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets or the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets, he could at most make the flying sword recognize him as master, but then he wouldn't be able to form such a close connection with the flying sword.

Usually people only very rarely refined and tempered their destined flying sword at the Foundation or the JieDan stage. Firstly, their cultivation was shallow and secondly, when they were at this realm, they usually didn't have any good magic weapon which could be refined as their destined flying sword, which had to be cultivated and used throughout their life.

Everyone waits until they were at the YuanYing stage and then, with the utmost care, they would refine a high grade magic weapon which could be nurtured and tempered as their destined flying sword. But before that, there was a method of compromise between genuine destined weapons and common magic weapons: those were quasi-destined magic weapons. Their might was more powerful than ordinary flying swords, but they were still inferior to a genuine destined magic weapon.

Because of this compromise, the tempering and refining did not



require wasting a large amount of energy and the magic weapon was naturally not that high grade. Moreover, the connection with the spiritual awareness was also not as strong as a genuine destined magic weapon.

But even if it was a quasi-destined magic weapon, when it received serious damage, it would lead to its master's spiritual awareness being gravely injured. Previously, all of the people Yang Chen had beheaded, like Chu Heng and Li QingChen, all used this kind of destined magic weapon, the quasi-destined magic weapon.

Yang Chen did not wish in the least to waste his energy at this kind of extravagant weapon. Even if Yang Chen crossed the JieDan stage stage from the Foundation stage and then to the YuanYing stage without any hitch, it would nonetheless require at least several hundred years. Moreover, several hundred years was already sufficient for Yang Chen to raise the grade of his destined flying sword by a few notches.

There wasn't anyone who wouldn't want to upgrade their destined magic weapon, naturally Yang Chen was the same. The sword box itself was a magic weapon which could be upgraded. If high grade sword souls were also inserted into it, then even Yang Chen would be unable to imagine its formidable power. Naturally Yang Chen wanted to be extremely careful with such important things.

Although his cultivation was not at the YuanYing stage, the fusion of a genuine destined magic weapon with the master's body was mostly dependent on spiritual awareness. For the most basic tempering Yang Chen need to soak the sword box in the blood

river within his spiritual awareness for ten years. Only then would the initial step be completed.

This also meant that, for these ten years, the blood river in Yang Chen's spiritual awareness could not be used to attack, except when enemies like Mo Qian took the initiative to enter Yang Chen's spirit sea.

The previous attack of Mo Qian and her disciples made Yang Chen realize that, after his rebirth, he had been very careless about being alert. He had always thought that he would certainly have access to the blood river no matter what, and thus didn't put anyone in his eyes. This was certainly a very dangerous attitude.

Not just Mo Qian, when he had been attacked by Guan Yueying, if Guan Yueying didn't only have thoughts of reprimanding him at that time and instead wanted to kill him, maybe Yang Chen would have already been dead. So where would he get the chance to restrict Guan Yueying?

He wanted to be able to completely rely on himself for vigilance, so he would first have to thoroughly take away all of his defences and then allow himself to form an instinctual response, which was another matter. Yang Chen decided to practice this custom when facing low level enemies from then on, so that, when he faced an even more powerful person after ascending, he would not regret that at the last moment.

While having thrown away all of his defences was just the perfect time to refine the destined magic weapon. This kind of opportunity had one move but two gains, so how could Yang Chen

miss it?

At the time of losing all of his defences, he also needed a new method to protect his life. Fortunately, the Blood Phantom Vine provided the perfect way.

The formidable demonic vine which had trapped elder Hua Wanting for over a hundred years, should at least be able to give Yang Chen an opportunity to escape. As long as Yang Chen was able to survive, then he would certainly have the opportunity to flee, at least in front of a YuanYing stage expert.

As for the attack of even higher stage experts, if a Da Cheng stage expert wanted to kill Yang Chen, then even the blood river did not have any use. It would be impossible for Yang Chen to keep the blood river prepared to erupt at all times, and who knew when a strike from a such a powerful person could annihilate Yang Chen?

Yang Chen was full of expectations. The destined flying sword produced by combining the spiritual awareness he cultivated with the Three Purities Secrets and the killing intent of the Xiantai Stage... How powerful would it be?

Naturally, since he possessed a spirit object like the blood phantom vine, Yang Chen absolutely did not want to waste it, and the time he was the Merit Transferring Disciple was just perfect for him to make a second wood attributed flying sword's embryo by refining the master root and a small root of the Blood Phantom Vine.

The sword produced from this sword embryo would be one of the sword souls of the Immortal Beheading Blade. The Blood Phantom Vine's powerful blood sucking characteristic would be the most power feature of this flying sword and also the one which people would be most afraid of.

After this flying sword formed, the Immortal Beheading Sword would certainly have the ability to intimidate even YuanYing and Da Cheng stage experts. If it was able to suck the blood of an earth immortal after ascending to the Spiritual World, the flying sword would certainly mature into a weapon which even immortals would dread.

## Chapter 143 - Second Wood Spirit Power

---

When Yang Chen had previously planted the PengLai Divine Wood in the Medicine Garden, huge changes had occurred in the space. However, after the Blood Phantom Vine had been planted, virtually no changes had developed. This baffled Yang Chen.

But after spending some time on it, he understood the reason: the majority of herbs originally growing in the Medicine Garden were of the second wood attribute. If the Blood Phantom Vine, a spirit object which also had the second wood was added, then it would not trigger any major changes.

But after acquiring the Blood Phantom Vine, the Medicine Garden was as secure as Mount Tai even without the defensive spell of the dome. Without a method to deal with the Blood Phantom Vine, any intruder entering the Medicine Garden wouldn't come out unscathed. Growing the Blood Phantom Vine was just like growing a natural bodyguard.

Even Yang Chen had to make extensive preparations in order to enter the Medicine Garden, to make sure wasn't injured by the Blood Phantom Vine. If it wasn't for Yang Chen using special methods to trap it, and the layers of qiankun pouches surrounding it, the Blood Phantom Vine would probably have broken out of the Medicine Garden and caused a massacre within Pure Yang Palace.

Yang Chen's only regret was that the grade of the Blood Phantom Vine was not easy to increase. It could not be done without the blood of experts. Fortunately, this Blood Phantom Vine of his had already sucked the blood of a Da Cheng stage expert for about a

hundred years. Although it still hadn't matured yet, the energy it had obtained was barely enough for it to pass through its vulnerable period and become capable of defending itself in this realm.

But if he wanted to increase the grade of this Blood Phantom Vine again, then he had to have it suck the blood of an even higher leveled expert than elder Hua Wanting. That meant that he required a Da Cheng stage expert's blood. Thus, Yang Chen currently didn't have any extravagant hopes for increasing the grade of this Blood Phantom Vine.

After carefully entering the Medicine Garden, Yang Chen went to where the Blood Phantom Vine was planted and began to prepare for the refining of the Blood Phantom Vine.

This refining was not to turn the Blood Phantom Vine into a flying sword, but rather to mark Yang Chen's spiritual awareness imprint on the Blood Phantom Vine. This would allow the Blood Phantom Vine to accept Yang Chen as its master, no longer attacking him and listening to his orders from then on.

The process of refining had to be carried out very carefully, even after Yang Chen made sufficient preparations. The Blood Phantom Vine itself was highly toxic, so Yang Chen controlled the Medicine Garden to seal this region for the time being, so that the Blood Phantom Vine didn't affect the other plants growing in the Medicine Garden. He applied herbs all over his body and only then did he carefully approach it.

If he wanted to refine the Blood Phantom Vine, he had to come in

contact with it. Under normal circumstances, with Yang Chen's strength of the initial Foundation stage, as long as he came in contact with it, he would immediately be sucked dry by the Blood Phantom Vine, so he had no other choice than to use the methods he had learned in his previous life regarding dealing with the Blood Phantom Vine. He applied several layers of herbs which could restrict the Blood Phantom Vine and applied them to his hand, forming a glove. Only then did he dare to touch it.

Because of the herbs used by Yang Chen to restrict it, the Blood Phantom Vine appeared completely suppressed. This also made Yang Chen's work very easy. His spiritual awareness rushed into the Blood Phantom Vine via one of the vines.

Suddenly, many sinister shadows of the Blood Phantom Vine appeared in Yang Chen's spirit sea. Resembling a viper in coloration, the vine started wreaking havoc in Yang Chen's spirit sea.

Unfortunately, Yang Chen's spirit sea, even apart from the blood river, possessed PengLai Divine Wood, Real Sun Fire and the Geocentric Flame. Complementing these were layers of fifth earth soil and bridge formed by the cyan ox horns. For the Blood Phantom Vine, any attempt to damage them was completely futile.

Regardless of how berserk the vines were, as long as they came into contact with any of these things, they were immediately repelled. Very quickly, the blood colored vine discovered that no matter how it twisted along the enormous trees of PengLai Divine Wood, it was unable to harm them. Furthermore, running into either the Real Sun Fire and the Geocentric Flame just repeatedly

inflicted harm. The only one capable of receiving it was apparently the layer of fifth earth soil.

The Fifth Earth soil was the region which wood attributed plants were most fond of. The Blood Phantom Vine noticed this very quickly and stuck its root into the Fifth Earth Soil, and then began attacking the bridge formed by the enormous ox horns.

All along, Yang Chen was controlling and observing everything. The Blood Phantom Vine had tangled with the two horns, but very quickly discovered that the two horns didn't have any blood for it to suck. Finally, devoid of options, the blood phantom vine gathered all of its vines and focused on the blood river.

The blood river was the thing which was closest to blood, but also the thing the Blood Phantom Vine was instinctively the most scared of. In the end, unwilling to lose, the Blood Phantom Vine inserted a small vine into the blood river to explore.

The instant the blood Phantom Vine's image came in contact with the blood river, it suddenly started to wither and then, violently shaking, started to slowly disintegrate. The vine which entered the blood river couldn't be pulled out.

The violent shuddering continued for some time, until Yang Chen suddenly gave the order to stop through a strong thought. With that one thought, the blood river immediately released the the vine and the image of the Blood Phantom Vine immediately regained its form and turned into a round ball, not daring to move anymore.



Yang Chen's spiritual awareness, directly probed that round image and soon started slowly moving it. Moving according to Yang Chen's will, the Blood Phantom Vine also began to slowly weave around the PengLai Divine Wood. Compatible yin and yang was the only correct path.

After this final step, Yang Chen opened his eyes. The Blood Phantom Vine before his eyes was mysteriously giving off a sensation of intimacy. Yang Chen experimented with a quick mental order, and a vine immediately stretched out and coiled around at Yang Chen's side to form a circle. From start to end, it hadn't once come in contact with Yang Chen.

Until now, Yang Chen had only thought of subduing the Blood Phantom Vine by force. Taking a rough count of the time, everything that happened in his spirit sea seemed to have taken only around an incense stick of time, but in the outside world he had spent almost a whole two months. The timing of his plan was just perfect, he had decided to provide guidance again in exactly two months.

Last time, Yang Chen had provided sufficient guidance and had also walked through the Nine Earth Manor and Ye Xiu Manor once, therefore there weren't many people who needed guidance.

This time, after Yang Chen had given pointers to the disciples once, he had a lot of free time again.

Generally speaking, Yang Chen was the most relaxed one among

all Merit Transferring disciples. Since he had provided ample and detailed guidance before, those disciples would not face a major problem for at least half a year or more. As such, Yang Chen seemed to be the most idle Merit Transferring Disciple.

But then again, this was the ideal result which Yang Chen had hoped for. Despite giving guidance, he could not allow his cultivation to drop, so the current state was the optimal situation for him.

After subduing the Blood Phantom Vine, Yang Chen was not very anxious about refining the Blood Phantom Vine into a sword embryo. Instead he began to increase the grade of his second wood attribute for which he had received from the Clear Sky Sect.

The Blood Phantom Vine was the purest kind of second wood plant, almost comparable to the PengLai Divine Wood of the first wood attribute. If this had not been the case, Yang Chen would not have racked his brains over how to make use of the Blood Phantom Vine as his second wood flying sword.

The first wood's spirit power had already successfully assimilated the PengLai Divine Wood's spirit power, so naturally Yang Chen wanted to turn his second wood spirit power into Blood Phantom Vine's spirit power. Like this, controlling his Blood Phantom Vine flying sword in the future would be made even more familiar and easier.

This kind of thing, Yang Chen had already done it once. Last time, he had used the PengLai Divine Woods master root and had successfully blended it into a foundation stage pill. Naturally, this

time, Yang Chen had picked the same method.

With the experience of making the third grade foundation stage pill, Yang Chen was much more relaxed. However, there was only one Blood Phantom Vine, which could not be compared to the amount of PengLai Divine Wood branches, so Yang Chen could use only the vine leaves as herbs.

This time, Yang Chen only used one month to refine the foundation stage pill. After all, Yang Chen had long ago reached the Foundation stage, he merely needed to change his spirit power. Furthermore, refining it once was sufficient as there was no need for a high quality third grade pill.

After building one's foundation, many things become quite simple. Those matters which required a long time before reaching the Foundation stage could be completed in a very short time afterwards.

Taking one second wood foundation stage pill, the second wood spirit power in Yang Chen's body began to transform for the first time, from ordinary second wood spirit power it had changed to very high grade blood phantom vine spirit power.

This process proceeded slowly and steadily, since Yang Chen already had experienced transforming his first wood spirit power and fifth earth yuan qi, he knew that after subduing the main part of the Blood Phantom Vine, there wouldn't be any more problems.

In less than ten days, Yang Chen had already transformed the

second wood spirit power in his body into the blood phantom vine's spirit power.

As soon the second wood spirit power had transformed, the shadowy image of the blood phantom vine in his spirit sea began to solidify.

With a rumbling sound, Yang Chen's spirit sea again began to expand. This time, the expansion was not very large, only widening by approximately fifty percent compared to before, but Yang Chen's spirit sea had already reached an area with a radius of 100 [mu](#).

Since yin and yang were now in balance, the PengLai Divine Wood grew vigorously and the large pillar supporting the sky had grown even higher. Even the sky of the spirit sea had become higher.

His spiritual awareness, which had already been at the JieDan stage, had apparently advanced by leaps and bounds after this transformation and broken through all barriers to enter the initial YuanYing stage.

This was an amazing surprise and completely outside of Yang Chen's expectations. He had never thought that, someday, when he was only at the Foundation stage, he would have spiritual awareness comparable to an initial YuanYing stage expert. The might of the Three Purities Secret made Yang Chen see Greatest Supreme Elder in a completely new light.

With his spiritual awareness reaching the YuanYing stage, Yang Chen was as if he had entered a brand new realm. Yang Chen had also entered that realm in his previous life, but that time it wasn't so distinct. At least, the complexity of his spirit sea in his previous life when he was a Great Principal Golden Immortal could not be compared with the current circumstances.

After the transformation this time, two thirds of his second wood spirit power had been consumed. Even though Yang Chen had completely consumed two Profound Yang Fruits and had then used their spirit power to replenish his own, only one third remained. However, the quality had greatly increased.

Everything was going according to Yang Chen's plan, and the Merit Transferring Disciple's life was calm and orderly. Giving pointers to outer disciples did not generate even the smallest amount of pressure on Yang Chen and also didn't delay his cultivation either. After the second wood spirit power had been transformed, Yang Chen once again gave pointers to outer disciples and then went to welcome two special guests.

His guests who had come to look for Yang Chen were two old friends from the recently established Hall of Eccentrics. She Kui and Xie Sha had gone to some unknown place following the Palace Master, and had only appeared in front of him half a year after Yang Chen had returned to the Pure Yang Palace.

“Against our expectations, you are quite carefree!”

She Kui and Xie Sha had smiles spread across their faces, they were seemingly very satisfied with the way things were going.

“These two master ancestors, how come you have time to come over?”

Yang Chen greeted them with a face full of smiles. Since both of them were at the YuanYing stage, the Palace Master had directly made them elders. Since they were of the same generation as the Palace Master and Wang Yong, Yang Chen could only call them master ancestors.

“What kind of bullshit is this? Don’t give us that!”

Hearing that Yang Chen had addressed them like this, the faces of the two immediately dropped. In all likelihood, one of the most complicated things inside the sect were these kinds of complicated hierarchical relationships, which made these two carefree people very uncomfortable.

After venting their gloominess, the two then spoke about their intentions. During this time, they had been under the guidance of the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace, looking at something related to tool refining. Although they had learned a lot, all of the things the Pure Yang Palace collected were for the cultivation of cultivators, not for demon beasts, so many things were still not clear to them. So after much thought, they decided to look for Yang Chen.

Coincidentally, these two wanted to refine their destined flying swords. Generally speaking, all demon beasts could refine a part of their body and treat it as their destined flying sword, She Kui and

Xie Sha were no exceptions. She Kui had picked four of his poisonous fangs while Xie Sha had picked his scorpion tail.

The demon beasts had instinctively used the strongest parts of their bodies as their destined magic weapon, but this kind of method was very primitive. After looking at the tool refining methods of cultivators, She Kui and Xie Sha had also begun to think about their destined magic weapons and didn't want them to be crude.

So these two instinctively thought of Yang Chen. Yang Chen had countless ideas which normal people could not understand. She Kui and Xie Sha kept their own counsel, and after finding the time, they came to Yang Chen to discuss these matters.

Yang Chen was completely willing to discuss these things with the two. After all, they were an important part of the Pure Yang Palace's fighting strength. The stronger the Pure Yang Palace was, the better it was for Yang Chen. That's why he intentionally began to use some things he knew to guide them.

The two YuanYing stage beasts stayed at Nine Earth Manor discussing matters related to tool refining. Many of the directions of thought Yang Chen pointed out were things which She Kui and Xie Sha had never thought about. In this sort of intense discussion, these two people immediately had a flashes of insight and the concepts of refining tools started to become clearer and clearer by the day.

One day, when they were fully embroiled in discussions, Shangguan Feng suddenly rushed into the Nine Earth Manor.

“Yang Chen, just recently master ancestor Wang Yong suddenly departed, leaving behind a letter, and ordering me to notify you.”

Shangguan anxiously said upon seeing Yang Chen: “He said that your master had been attacked and has sustained some injuries, so he had rushed ahead to rescue her!”

As soon as these words left Shangguan Feng’s mouth, he immediately sensed a wave of coldness and his whole body started shivering.

---

Notes:

[1\]](#) 1/15 of a hectare



# Chapter 144 - Preparation Before The Slaughter

---

Not only Shangguan Feng, but She Kui and Xie Sha also felt a coldness as if they had been suddenly transported to the world of ice and snow, where people couldn't stop shivering.

Everyone suddenly discovered that the source of the cold air was Yang Chen. But all three of them very quickly understood that this was not any cold air, but killing intent. The frightening killing intent surprisingly made all three of them sense a chill in their bodies.

She Kui and Xie Sha were still better, but Shangguan Feng's jaw began to clatter. Xie Sha discovered that there was something wrong with the situation and hastily yelled:

“What are you doing? It was not Shangguan who attacked your master!”

The killing intent diffused in the air, but coldness still spread across Yang Chen's entire face. He rushed to Shangguan Feng and asked:

“I am sorry, senior disciple Shangguan. I lost my self control there. Do you know who did it?”

Shangguan Feng required a moment to recover from the shock. That one act just a moment ago had scared him half to death, it

was as if he was facing a death god. Fortunately, Yang Chen had stopped it in time, otherwise Shangguan Feng would have been embarrassed in front of everyone.

If these people knew that Yang Chen's blood river was still being used to soak the Immortal Beheading Blade and that the killing intent he had released was only a hundredth of its full potential, their thoughts could be imagined.

“It is currently unknown.”

Shangguan Feng shook his head, and continued his answer with some lingering fears:

“Master ancestor had walked away quite hastily, without saying much, he merely rushed me to inform you.”

As he said that, as if he had remembered something, Shangguan Feng fished out a compass:

“This is something the Master ancestor left for you, saying that this would be able to point to master ancestor's position.”

Yang Chen held the compass and carefully observed it for some time, then he immediately realized that this was a compass which searched for a certain object on Wang Yong's body, probably the qiankun pouch. Then he immediately became clear headed.

Wang Yong didn't know who attacked Gao Yue, but Gao Yue

definitely had a magic tool on her body which she would have used in a moment of crisis to immediately inform Wang Yong. This was a high grade tool used for warning in extreme crises, which could only be refined by YuanYing stage experts.

But Yang Chen was still exceptionally worried. Issuing an alert over being seriously hurt, she had made it clear that she had suffered a powerful attack. Her position was still unknown, if Wang Yong was too late, then there would certainly be grave consequences, so Wang Yong had hastily departed, most likely because of the same reason.

Thinking this, Yang Chen did not stay anymore and immediately stood up, wanting to rush out. Suddenly he thought of something and stopped, then turning around he asked:

“Would you two seniors like to make a trip with me!”

She Kui asked, opening his eye:

“To do what?”

“Kill people!”

Yang Chen said to the two people without hiding his killing intent in the least.

“Younger disciple Yang!”

Shangguan Feng shouted with great alarm, Yang Chen wanted to kill openly, this was exactly what he expected but hoped not to happen. Most of all, he was also taking She Kui and Xie Sha, the two YuanYing stage experts of Eccentric Hall. If something went wrong, there would be a lot of trouble for the Pure Yang Palace.

“Senior disciple Shangguan, there is no use stopping me!”

Once Shangguan Feng opened his mouth, Yang Chen knew exactly what he wanted to say:

“Those who have dared to harm my master, even the heavens cannot save them. Why else do you think the great master asked you to inform me?”

Shangguan Feng was startled for a few moments and then immediately turned speechless. Wang Yong had made these plans with such an intention, otherwise, a YuanYing stage expert like him setting out was already excessive, so what was the need to inform Yang Chen?

“Senior disciple, help me by taking over as the Merit Transferring Disciple here for a few months, I will go and quickly return!”

Yang Chen extended his hand and pulled Shangguan Feng to his seat and then immediately turned around and left with She Kui and Xie Sha.

It had been two years since they had entered Pure Yang Palace, but following with the rules had been quite depressing for them. When they were demon beasts, they were free and careless, so long as the enemy's strength didn't surpass them, they would immediately kill them when they wanted. After being restrained for two years, once Yang Chen invited them to kill people, they immediately followed him without saying anything more.

“Younger disciple Yang, be careful!”

Shangguan Feng knew that there was no way to stop Yang Chen, so he could only warn him to be careful.

Yang Chen did not even turn his head and directly waved his hand behind himself and sped off.

His master was seriously injured and had still not been found by anyone. Yang Chen took out his Flying Shuttle and started moving together with She Kui and Xie Sha. The Flying Shuttle along with two brilliant rays in the sky disappeared from the Nine Earth Manor in a flash.

Holding the compass, Yang Chen began adjusting the directions. During these few months, he had been staying at the Nine Earth Manor and did not know where Gao Yue was collecting materials. However now, with Wang Yong's compass, he discovered with surprise that Gao Yue's was actually in the direction of the NanHuang Great Mountain.

Initially he had believed that Gao Yue had simply gone to the city to purchase ingredients, but now that he had discovered that Gao Yue had possibly gone to the NanHuang Great Mountain, Yang Chen realized that the matter was not so simple.

The Great Mountain penetrating deeply into NanHuang was far away from where ordinary people lived. Even the most savage types of people could only establish their footing with great difficulty. There were demon beasts everywhere in the Great Mountain. Aside from cultivators, nobody would dare to set foot in there.

As it happened, the natural resources in this region were extremely extravagant, because it was a deserted region, countless heavenly materials could be found there. Similarly, the underground also had extremely enriched mineral resources. A lot of high grade tool refining materials usually came from this Great Mountain. In all likelihood, Gao Yue wanted to find some good materials, that's why she had come there.

There were many demon beasts and cultivators there. Not just of upright sects, but also of the devil sects. Generally speaking, there simply weren't any rules in the NanHuang Great Mountain. Only strength ruled there.

The countless battles happening among cultivators, among demons and among magicians were completely beyond reason. Everything that happens there was not under the influence of any sect, everyone did what they wanted without the slightest scruple. It was also a dangerous place, where cultivators could temper themselves at the edge of life.

Yang Chen was extremely worried, he even felt some regret. How could he only think of enjoying the warmth of the MingGuang sword again, but neglected Gao Yue, who had to face these grave dangers? He could not help but urge his flying shuttle to move at its fastest speed, moving almost as fast as lightning to catch up to Wang Yong.

In his previous life, Gao Yue did not spend so much effort to refine the MingGuang sword, so it could be assumed that Yang Chen's arrival and his deeds had changed many things in this world.

Yang Chen was constantly praying in his heart:

‘Master, you can not have met with any mishaps! If you are seriously injured, that is still alright, as long as there is still an opportunity for you to live, this Yang Chen will immediately grab it and bring you back from the edge of death.’

The more anxious he became, the calmer Yang Chen started to look.

The Greater Mountains were unlike the Immortal Falling Well. The Immortal Falling Well still had Elder Wu to keep watch and after Elder Wu left, some other elder would be assigned. But the Greater Mountains were completely unlike that. The one with the bigger fist was the law. If he wanted to take revenge for Gao Yue injuries, then there was no other way than to be even fiercer than the others.

Even though the speed of Yang Chen's flying shuttle was very fast, it would still take him at least one month from the Pure Yang Palace to the Greater Mountains. Wang Yong certainly had some good magic weapon and he had been ahead of Yang Chen all the time from the beginning.

But that also gave Yang Chen some relief. The higher Wang Yong's speed was, the larger was the possibility of him providing support to Gao Yue. Currently Yang Chen was hoping that Gao Yue only sustained injuries and had not been killed. Otherwise, even if it would ruin the Immortal Beheading Blade, Yang Chen would massacre the entire Greater Mountain.

While She Kui and Xie Sha were flying on their strange flying swords, Yang Chen suddenly thought that it was a good decision to bring these two YuanYing stage demon beasts with him after all. Who knew what kind of difficulties they would have to face and Yang Chen did not want to be done in while taking revenge.

He could already command the Blood Phantom Vine, so frankly speaking, he could even resist a YuanYing stage experts, but Yang Chen did not mind a few more helpers.

Since the blood river in his spirit sea couldn't be used, Yang Chen found that he could only use Mo Qian and her disciples, who were sitting within the dome of the Medicine Garden, after much thinking.

Six people, one at the middle YuanYing stage and five at the



middle JieDan stage, while the strength of the five disciples was equal. Initially, when they were at the Clear Sky Sect, they had a very ferocious character, but unfortunately they had all turned into vegetables.

Despite turning into vegetables and losing the perception of their surroundings, some deep rooted memories still remained and they had also retained their cultivation instinct.

During the time Yang Chen had ignored them, these six people were motionlessly sitting in the main hall of the Medicine Garden, silently cultivating their primary cultivation method.

This was caused by a minor hypnosis within the Soul Stunning Technique which Yang Chen used, which left only one thought in their mind: before Yang Chen summons them, they should continue to cultivate. But now Yang Chen had to draw support from their strength.

Since they had completely lost their consciousness other than killing them, Yang Chen could only convert them into puppets. But Yang Chen wished to make them different from ordinary puppets. As far as he knew, the only defect they had was the loss of consciousness, other than that they should remain as they were before, just like other cultivators. This also implied that they would turn into even higher grade puppets than normal puppets.

Perhaps calling them loyal slaves was more suitable. The trick Yang Chen used did not erase everything from their mind but changed them so that they could only listen to Yang Chen's orders instead. In their hearts, there would not be anything besides Yang

Chen's orders. They wouldn't have any apprehensions, fear and no ability to think about the problems at hand. They would only be slaves who would work according to Yang Chen's orders.

Frankly speaking, the results of their cultivation during this time were far better than cultivation done by six normal people in the same time. Not to mention anything else, just the fact that their hearts were without greed was something which usual cultivators could not achieve easily.

These six people did not have think about anything such as a heart's devil during their cultivation, let alone think about things like attacking the boundary of the next realm. They were wholeheartedly devoted to cultivation, which made it much more smooth.

What Yang Chen wanted to do with them was to turn them into his faithful slave puppets. This required a special trick but simultaneously also required very formidable spiritual awareness.

Although Mo Qian was under Yang Chen's hypnosis, she was still a middle YuanYing stage expert. Yang Chen's current level of spiritual awareness was still not high enough to make her follow his orders to the point.

Mo Qian's five disciples on the other hand were all at the mid JieDan stage and Yang Chen's spiritual awareness, which was currently at the initial YuanYing stage, was sufficient to control these five.

For this kind of control, Yang Chen had to plant a special spiritual awareness imprint. This could only be done by a person like Yang Chen, who had exceptionally formidable spiritual awareness.

The five disciples as well as Mo Qian were all metal attributed, so cultivating in the dome of Medicine Garden was most suitable for them. And with the Medicine Garden's dome, when Yang Chen used his trick, it would not allow She Kui and Xie Sha to see anything they shouldn't see.

Because he didn't need to control the entire body of the target, only the spiritual awareness, the person would still retain the original personality, but these five people had lost their minds long ago, so it was even easier. While on the road, Yang Chen didn't enter the main hall of the dome, instead, using his hand to hold the lid of the bottle, he had already successfully established thorough control over the five within less than twenty days.

Although She Kui and Xue Sha were travelling together with him, they only thought that this was Yang Chen's way of refining the lid and nothing more. They didn't have the slightest idea what was going on inside.

Five metal attributed middle JieDan stage experts with equal cultivation. This was perfectly suitable for a spell formation within Yang Chen's mind: the Five Direction Profound Female Spell. The five people forming the spell would take five different positions. The offensive strength was far better than five people just cooperating.

But this formation of five women was only a last resort for Yang Chen. Since he had never gotten the opportunity to change their appearances after trapping the five women, if they appeared in public then maybe they would catch the eye of someone they knew, so unless he had to, Yang Chen would not use them, like he did not use the blood river unless absolutely necessary.

During the following days, Yang Chen and the two demon beasts hastened on their journey. While Yang Chen was completely calm on one side, She Kui and Xie Sha had quite a fierce expression, as if they wanted to kill people without any regard. Naturally they could sense the tempest within Yang Chen's calmness.

They feared that if the news was not good, Yang Chen would go on a massacre. They did not know why, but they were still somewhat fearful against Yang Chen. This was just their instinct as demon beasts and did not have any relation with their cultivation, so they did not know the reason.

Suddenly it seemed as if Wang Yong's figure had stopped moving. With great relief, Yang Chen quickly controlled his flying sword to go towards that region.

From the beginning Yang Chen was only a day behind, so now he only ran half a day when the pointer of the compass suddenly started shivering, indicating that Wang Yong was in the vicinity.

Shua!

The flying shuttle was immediately withdrawn by Yang Chen

and the figures of three people appeared in the sky standing on air. After being bored for one month, She Kui and Xie Sha, who had already been restraining themselves, began to move their hands and feet around.

Yang Chen's spiritual awareness began to extend crazily in all four directions, to sense the circumstances in his surroundings. Soon after that, his figure suddenly shuddered, discovering the position of Wang Yong.

And together with Wang Yong was the figure of someone whom he was extremely familiar with: Gao Yue. At that moment Gao Yue was lying in Wang Yong's arm, with her hands and legs softly hanging down. If it were not for her rough breathing, Yang Chen would have thought she was already dead.

Sensing this, Yang Chen finally took a long sigh. His master was alive, then everything was good.

# Chapter 145 - Great Master May Not Be Ideal

---

“Huh?”

Wang Yong who had just found Gao Yue, was surprised to discover Yang Chen just after inspecting the condition of Gao Yue's injuries.

He had originally thought that he would meet Yang Chen a few days later, but he hadn't expected that Yang Chen would come this quickly. But Yang Chen had always exceeded his expectations, so this did not count for much.

“How is master's condition?”

Yang Chen sprinted to Wang Yong's side and anxiously looked at Gao Yue, who was within Wang Yong's hands. Gao Yue's hands and feet were drooping on the side at this moment and her complexion was deathly pale, there was almost no liveliness in her face.

“She was seriously injured, so I had her eat some life saving medicine to stabilize her condition!”

Wang Yong was skillful in refining tools, but he was not very proficient with pills, so he was at a loss when faced with Gao Yue's injuries.

“Then give her this one to eat!”

Without much thinking, Yang Chen immediately fished out a pill and was going to put it in Gao Yue’s mouth, but Gao Yue had already become unconscious at that moment, so how could she know that she was supposed to swallow the pill?

“What is this?”

The pill looked slightly familiar to Wang Yong, but he couldn’t recall what it actually was and couldn’t help asking. He was not worried that Yang Chen would cause harm to Gao Yue, but he feared that the pill would have no effect.

“It’s a [Lingzhi Gyakuro](#) pill!”

Yang Chen’s reply made Wang Yong overjoyed. The LingZhi Gyakuro pill was one of the top grade healing pills. It uses a thousand year matured Lingzhi and ten thousand gyakuro as the main ingredients and could heal all injuries for cultivators at the YuanYing or lower stages.

But at that moment Gao Yue was still unconscious, so there was no way to feed her the pill. Yang Chen anxiously looked everywhere, but aside from Wang Yong, She Kui and Xie Sha, there was no other person to help.

After much thinking, Yang Chen clenched his teeth, sucked the pill into his own mouth and without caring for the relation

between master and disciple, transferred the pill from mouth to mouth while supporting Gao Yue's head with his hand.

Within Yang Chen's mouth, the pill had already turned into fluids. Yang Chen slowly pushed it into Gao Yue's mouth and soon afterwards started softly massaging her throat and exerted some more force through her mouth, so that the fluids would start to flow down Gao Yue's throat and enter her stomach.

Wang Yong was silently watching them from the side, but didn't say anything. Right now saving her life was important, if necessary they had to do away with convoluted formalities. Even if this was somewhat overstepping the boundaries, but other than this they had no way.

Furthermore, among the people present, Yang Chen was the most suitable one, since Wang Yong, She Kui and Xie Sha couldn't help in this kind of matter. Moreover, not to mention other factors, Yang Chen would not allow it.

The pill was definitely effective. After entering Gao Yue's stomach, it immediately turned into a warm current and began to heal her injuries. Gao Yue's complexion also seemed much more rosy.

“Who did it?”

Looking at the pill's effect, Yang Chen relaxed and at the same time, immediately began to inquire about Gao Yue's circumstances. Confronting his Great Master, Wang Yong, Yang



Chen couldn't be too aggressive, so he calmly asked him.

“I don't know!”

Wang Yong shook his head, within his eyes there was the same anger:

“When I came, little Yue was lying inside that cave, but she had many injuries over her body, so we can conclude that many people attacked her. The most serious one was the wound on the back. The enemy most likely launched a sneak attack on her.”

Hearing Wang Yong's words, Yang Chen also began to inspect her carefully. As soon as he swept her with his spiritual awareness once, he immediately grew even angrier.

On Gao Yue's body, there were at least eight places with serious injuries: the arms and leg which were shattered into small pieces had already been fixed by Wang Yong, but all the other injuries were almost fatal, clearly the enemy wished to kill her and didn't have the slightest intention of leaving her alive.

If Gao Yue did not have the high quality matured ginseng which Yang Chen had given her, or she hadn't used it in time, then maybe she would have already been dead.

Even then, the injuries on her body were definitely fatal. If Wang Yong and Yang Chen had been delayed by a day or two, then maybe the situation would have already been beyond saving.

Previously Chu Heng had just abused her a little in passing, and Yang Chen could not hold his anger, but now someone had surprisingly dared to injure Gao Yue to this degree. If this could be tolerated, then what couldn't?

What Yang Chen could not accept the most was that Gao Yue was refining a flying sword for Yang Chen and had come to the Greater Mountains for that purpose. She had received such serious injuries because of Yang Chen, so how could he not be furious?

“Great Master, do you know what kind of material Master was looking for here?”

Yang Chen asked Wang Yong, forcefully controlling his anger.

“Red Sun Metal Soul.”

Wang Yong was also not calm, but he still said the name of the material for Yang Chen:

“Little Yue wanted to refine a top notch fire attributed flying sword for you, but since she lacked the Red Sun Metal Soul, she had come to the Greater Mountains, but hadn't expected that she would be entering a trap.”

Because of the effects of Lingzhi Gyakuro pill, Gao Yue's face became much livelier. The injuries on her body also began to heal slowly, so her condition was apparently pretty good. But how

could such heavy injuries heal immediately? It would take at least half a year or more to heal completely.

“Master’s qiankun pouch has been snatched by the enemy.”

Yang Chen noticed this during his careful inspection. Since Wang Yong would definitely not embezzle it, the only explanation was that it had been robbed by the enemy.

“The only thing that little Yue has is her destined flying sword and these seven feather clothes. Although the seven feather clothes have already been ruined, if it were not for these pearls on her body, I also wouldn’t have been able to find her.”

Suppressing his anger, Wang Yong looked at his cherished disciple’s face, which was still exposing a slightly pained expression and in a voice laced with hatred, said:

“She was lucky that she escaped here and launched the signal for help, otherwise the consequences would have been too horrible to imagine.”

This was certainly great luck, otherwise Yang Chen and Wang Yong wouldn’t have known until they heard the news of Gao Yue’s death.

“Since the qiankun pouch has been robbed, then clearly it had something which those people wanted.”

Yang Chen coldly analyzed:

“Since they have dared to attack my master, no matter who they are, I will help them meet their tragic death.”

“Yang Chen, you take little Yue back and return to the Pure Yang Palace, I must still investigate a little more here to find out who those bastards which dared to attack my disciple were!”

Wang Yong had also lost his temper.

“Great Master, I think it will be better if you would take master back.”

Yang Chen shook his head, directly opposing Wang Yong’s proposal.

Hearing Yang Chen’s words, Wang Yong glared at him. If he did not have a reasonable explanation, he would not mind being rude to Yang Chen.

“You are a YuanYing stage expert, whoever did it will not dare to admit it in front of you.”

Yang Chen slowly said:

“But this disciple is different, I am only a Foundation stage youngster, so they would not be afraid to admit it in front of this

disciple. In any case, they must have done it to silence her. This disciple also wants to take a look, who the son of a bitch, who dared to injure my master, is.”

The Great Master and the grand disciple were the same, both giving their reasons to look for the people who injured her. Hearing their conversation, both She Kui and Xie Sha wanted to laugh, but both of them knew the current situation, so they did not utter any sound.

Wang Yong also mulled over this. What Yang Chen was saying was correct. If he, a YuanYing stage experts went out personally, then who would be foolish enough to admit that they had launched a sneak attack on his disciple? In any case, if this youngster Yang Chen went out, then maybe he could spy on some people and swindle the information about who did it out of them.

After a moment, Wang Yong finally gave his approval:

“Good, I will take little Yue and return, you have to be careful!”

While speaking, he fished out a few pearl like things from his qiankun pouch and gave them to Yang Chen:

“These are some fire-thunder pearls, refined by me personally. They have immense firepower, so use them when necessary, there is no need to save them.”

Yang Chen reached out his hand, but he handed him a jade bottle

in return:

“Great Master, these are some Lingzhi Gyakuro pills, give one to master every five days and her injury will heal even faster.”

Both of them were concerned about Gao Yue, so there was no need for formality. Following this, Wang Yong looked at Yang Chen and then again looked at She Kui and Xie Sha at his side. Seeing them, he felt relieved. With the two YuanYing stage demon beasts, who specialized in covering their tracks, there should not be any problems on his side.

“After you find the main culprit, no matter who he is, you must immediately kill him for me.”

Wang Yong said, his voice filled with endless hatred:

“If the matter becomes big, I will take the blame. Since they dared to harm little Yue, I will kill their entire family!”

“Great Master, take care!”

Yang Chen nodded his head, following which his gaze followed Wang Yong carrying Gao Yue and leaving. Only after Wang Yong’s silhouette couldn’t be seen anymore, did Yang Chen heave a long sigh.

Finally he was relieved from the side of his master. With Great Master Wang Yong at her side during the return journey, her

safety would be ensured. After she returned to the Pure Yang Palace, there would be no more problems and she could recuperate with ease.

But the case for finding the culprit who had launched the sneak attack on Gao Yue and heavily injured her was far from being closed. Inside of the Greater Mountains, everyone was responsible for themselves, it was a dog eat dog world. Yang Chen could absolutely not endure Gao Yue being injured, even more so after learning that she was injured while looking for suitable materials for him.

The region where Wang Yong had appeared was the entrance of a cave, so Gao Yue had probably been hiding inside previously. Without saying much, Yang Chen went in to take a look.

This was a naturally formed tunnel, though it was unknown how Gao Yue discovered it. After being seriously injured, she escaped to there and, using the last bit of spiritual power that she had, she launched the signal for help and immediately concealed herself at the cave's entrance and lost consciousness. Yang Chen could still see mouthfuls of blood Gao Yue had spat, but at this moment, they had all turned purple black already.

Looking at these, Yang Chen could imagine the pain Gao Yue had suffered and the more he saw them, the more his hatred towards those people rose.

This was however certainly not the site where the attack happened, because apart from some mess which Gao Yue had made outside when she had hastily escaped to there, there were no other

traces. So since no clues could be found inside, after staying there for a short moment, Yang Chen came out of the cave and covered the entrance. After loudly calling She Kui and Xie Sha, he began to leave.

“Where should we go?”

Xie Sha casually asked.

“Master’s qiankun pouch was robbed, so there was definitely some precious object inside. Let’s have a look in the surroundings and see where can we find some market, maybe we will find some clues there.”

Although Yang Chen was angry, he was not frantic, and calmly analyzed everything to find the region where they could find some clues.

Frankly speaking, the most reliable way to identify the culprit was for Gao Yue herself to identify them after waking up, but the enemy had launched a sneak attack on her, so Yang Chen was not sure if she knew the enemy’s identity, so maybe trying to use some other method would be easier.

The Greater Mountains also did not completely follow the jungle law everywhere, there still were some safe places. These regions were places to carry out business transactions, and since everyone had participated in this, everyone agreed that no fights could happen at these places. All grudges had to be settled outside.



These regions were important to Yang Chen's investigation. As long as he could find some clues, Yang Chen could immediately make She Kui and Xie Sha connect with the demon beasts of the Greater Mountain. Maybe then he would be able to find the site of the incident and then the attacker.

The two formidable demon beasts changed back into their original shapes, following Yang Chen's wishes. A palm sized Sand Scorpion and a palm long Meadow Viper occupied Yang Chen's shoulders. These two appeared to be most ordinary animals. When other people looked at them, they would only think that they were Yang Chen's house pets and would not even consider them to be demon beasts.

Within Yang Chen's hand there was a flying sword. This flying sword was gifted to Yang Chen by elder Wu after he had refined the Heaven Seizing Pill as a present. This flying sword was very high grade. Apart from the defensive spell of the medicine garden's dome, this was the highest grade magic weapon which Yang Chen had. Holding it within his hand clearly looked like he was showing off.

Because this kind of high grade flying sword, which was even good for a YuanYing stage expert, was in the hands of a mere Foundation stage cultivator, it would clearly look like waste in the eyes of anyone.

In the Greater Mountains, everyone hid their identity, but they were JieDan stage cultivators at least. Only very rarely would some peak Foundation stage cultivator appear, but he would then be extremely careful and never reveal his valuables so as to not catch

the attention of others. But there was basically no case of an initial Foundation stage cultivator like Yang Chen who would swagger around, carrying such a precious treasure.

Yang Chen did not try to find a destination very meticulously and just picked some random direction and begin to steer his flying sword. The speed of the flying sword was not very fast, but the light of the flying sword reached quite far, as if it was afraid that other people would not see it.

He had been flying for barely two hours when someone suddenly looked at Yang Chen and a formidable spiritual awareness swept across. Yang Chen also did not pay much attention to it and kept on minding his own business, but the master of the spiritual awareness couldn't hold back.

Shua!

A flying sword quickly rose from halfway up the mountain and rushed towards Yang Chen. The flying sword had still not reached there, but the master of the sword light yelled in a loud voice:

“Fellow daoist, wait a minute!”

Yang Chen immediately stopped in the sky, but the flying sword continued forward and only stopped after travelling a bit further. In the eyes of the other person, this was a clear sign that Yang Chen did not have a complete grasp of his flying sword, which made him even more determined. This person was a male JieDan expert.

“Fellow daoist, why are you in such a hurry? Where are you going?”

The JieDan stage expert had a smile on his face. He was looking at Yang Chen like a wolf was looking at a fat lamb in front of him.

“Myself is just looking for some people to ask for directions.”

The smile on Yang Chen’s face was even wider than that of the JieDan expert:

“Fellow daoist just appeared at the perfect time, maybe you can give me some directions?”

# Chapter 146 - This Place Is Dangerous

---

“The Greater Mountains are very dangerous.”

The JieDan stage expert had a very warm smile, but he stretched out his hand, trying to grab Yang Chen’s wrist:

“Didn’t your sect’s elders tell you that?”

With one movement, a portion of spirit power rushed out from his hand. The JieDan stage expert was acting as if this had nothing to do with him and calmly said:

“Not knowing how you died is also a kind of blessing in some situations. If you want someone to blame, you can only blame yourself for not hiding your treasures!”

After he had finished speaking, the JieDan stage expert revealed a shocked expression. He had initially expected that this youngster would squirm in pain, but he was completely calm without any change in expressions.

“Want to kill me?”

Looking at the astonished face of the attacker, Yang Chen revealed a smile:

“Then you must not blame me.”

The JieDan stage expert was just about to take his hand back in great alarm, but a pain suddenly appeared in his hand and soon afterwards it became even more painful. It was already too late to let go.

Bowing his head to look where he had grabbed Yang Chen's wrist, he immediately saw a blood red vine on his wrist. At this moment, the vine had already given birth to very small, thorn-like roots, which had directly entered his skin.

This was also not important, the crucial point was that the thorns which had entered his body were spreading through his entire body, following his veins. With just a moment's effort, it had already drilled through his arms and shoulders and entered the pit of his stomach.

The JieDan stage expert was scared to death on the scene, what is this thing? So evil! He could not think of anything to use and the thing which had drilled through to his stomach was definitely not some nourishing medicine. Just a moment ago he wanted to oppress Yang Chen using the spirit power in his body, but now he discovered that all of the spirit power in his body had already been sucked out by this blood colored vine. Not even a tiny bit was left.

Cold sweat, which he had not experienced in a long time, covered his forehead. The JieDan expert looked at Yang Chen, who was smiling while standing in front of him, as if he was looking at a demon.

“Originally I only wanted to ask you for directions, but since you wanted to kill me, I also don’t mind giving a lesson to you.”

Yang Chen said while continuing to smile:

“Now, can I ask you for directions?”

The JieDan expert couldn’t think of anything he could do aside from nodding his head again and again. That Yang Chen had asked this question gave the old man some hope, maybe there was still a chance to redeem himself. According to Yang Chen’s words just a moment ago, he seemed quite mild and was only talking about teaching him a lesson.

“Where is the closest market from here?”

Yang Chen retreated a few steps to find a place to sit and then asked.

“It’s in that direction, approximately two days away from here.”

The JieDan expert didn’t dare to be neglectful and although his body was still shivering, his hand pointed in a direction with lightning speed:

“There is the Cut Cloud Valley, where everyone gathers to do business.”

“Has some kind of incident occurred near the market recently, like looting of some treasures or killing someone.”

Even after finding this person, Yang Chen certainly did not think that his luck was so great that he had directly found one of the people he was looking for, therefore he did not care to reveal his purpose in the least.

“This kind of thing happens nearly every day, so it is nothing noteworthy.”

The JieDan stage expert said that with a bitter laugh, unable to deal with the fact that his body had already become somewhat limp, he carefully replied:

“Do you want to find someone or something? I am relatively familiar with this region, maybe I can assist you.”

In fact, in the Greater Mountains, killing people and looting things was indeed very common, even just a moment ago, weren't Yang Chen and that JieDan stage expert doing the same thing? While the result had been different, this really was not a big deal here.

“I am looking for Red Sun Metal Soul, where can I find it?”

Previously Yang Chen had only heard that it was very chaotic here, but since he hadn't seen it personally, he hadn't expected it to be so brazen. But this was also good for him, he would have no

apprehensions when doing his work.

“Red Sun Metal Soul?”

The JieDan expert began to tremble and at the same time also began to ponder. After thinking for a good moment he slapped his head as if he had thought of something. Trying to curry favor with Yang Chen, he said:

“Two months ago, I heard that they were going to auction some and afterwards a mysterious woman bought it. If you are interested, I can take you to the market to inquire.

A mysterious woman had bought the Red Sun Metal Soul? Yang Chen’s heart jumped, could it be that this mysterious woman was his master? She had bought the Red Sun Metal Soul but was attacked by people who wanted to rob her? This more or less confirmed what Yang Chen had thought.

“Which market? Where is it?”

Suppressing the excitement in his heart, Yang Chen calmly asked:

“Where can I find that mysterious woman?”

“She already left the Cut Cloud Valley.”



The JieDan expert saw that Yang Chen was interested, so he was also excited, thinking that his chances of survival had increased, he pointed in another direction and said:

“In this direction, there is the Devil Flame Valley. There are many devil cultivators and demon beasts over there and the number of treasures is large. But if you don’t have the strength you must not go.”

The Devil Flame Valley... Yang Chen firmly committed this name to memory. Looking at the JieDan expert who was facing him with extreme respect, he thought of something and suddenly asked:

“In the recent days, has there been someone in the surroundings who was chased to death? Have there been people who have been looking around for someone’s whereabouts with great fanfare?”

The JieDan stage expert began think, Yang Chen had asked this so clearly so he could be almost certain that Yang Chen was looking for someone and the one he was trying to hunt down was moreover not the one who was being hunted. There was no need to ask, this was certainly a vendetta.

But with Yang Chen’s strength at the initial Foundation stage, wanting to behave atrociously in the Devil Flame Valley was certainly not possible. Just as he was about to advise him, he suddenly remembered something: his life and death was still in Yang Chen’s hand, so he also did not dare to say any unnecessary words and could only rack his brains, trying to find more such information which could give him higher chances of survival.

After thinking for long, he couldn't remember anything big that had happened in the surroundings so he could only shake his head:

“There hasn't been.”

After he said this, afraid that Yang Chen would kill him, he hastily added:

“Are you looking for someone? I can lead the way!”

“You will guide me?”

Yang Chen sneered, then softly said:

“We are total strangers and I just wanted to ask you for some directions when you tried to kill me, so why you trying to guide me now, do you want to lead me to a nest of demons?”

“No, I just want you to spare my life!”

The JieDan stage expert had heard Yang Chen's words which were not too encouraging, so he quickly begged for forgiveness.

But Yang Chen had never intended to give him any opportunity to live, the Blood Phantom Vine which had already entered the JieDan expert's body suddenly began to crazily absorb blood.

“For every grievance, someone is responsible, for every debt there is a debtor, you wanted to take my life first, so don’t blame me.”

The JieDan expert only vaguely heard Yang Chen’s last words before disappearing into complete darkness.

One JieDan expert was not a big problem for the Blood Phantom Vine which had already absorbed the blood of someone who was almost a Da Cheng stage expert. Within a short moment, the JieDan expert turned into a heap of dried bones.

From here to the Devil Flame Valley would at least take half a month even if he used the Flying Shuttle, but Yang Chen was using a common flying sword, so the time would change to at least one month.

The JieDan expert’s qiankun pouch was collected by Yang Chen, but he didn’t really look at the things inside. Right now, Yang Chen’s was filled with rage to the bottom of his heart because of Gao Yue’s injuries, so how could he think of paying attention to these small spoils?

Yang Chen didn’t intend to completely believe that JieDan expert’s words, but he still intended to first stop at the Cut Cloud Valley and take a look at the circumstances there and only then move forward. In any case, it was only two days away from his current location, so Yang Chen would not be hindered much.

The Cut Cloud Valley was a small market which was at the edge of the Greater Mountains. That's why there were more human cultivators than demon cultivators, no matter if they were cultivators of the dao or devil path cultivators.

The valley was very warm, apparently someone had arranged a small Spring Spell Formation. This spell formation was not very useful, but regardless of what season it was at the Cut Cloud Valley, it could maintain a constant temperature inside. Simply speaking, all four seasons were like spring there.

Although there were not many people, according to what Yang Chen found, there were at least three devil cultivators. One had a black coloured zombie following behind him, another one had red eyes, as if worried that other people would not see that he had killed a lot. There was still one more, a woman who was extremely charming. Even at this public place, she was throwing coquettish glances everywhere without worry. When looking at Yang Chen, she also threw a flirtatious smile at him.

In another place not far away, there was also a demon cultivator, his strength was at least at the peak JieDan stage, but he was not concealing his demonic presence and was just calmly sitting on the ground.

Furthermore, in another place, three dao cultivators of some sect were also sitting calmly, absolutely not worried about being attacked by others.

Although the Greater Mountains followed the law of the jungle, using force was strictly prohibited in these markets. These were

everyone's place of rest, so everyone followed these rules without exception.

There was no need for anyone to make them forcefully follow these rules. As long as anyone broke these rules, they would be the target of a multitudes of arrows. Who would dare to bring everyone's wrath on themselves? That's why everyone could only obediently comply with the rules.

But when Yang Chen entered the Cut Cloud Valley, it still gave rise to everyone's attention. Any person coming here had at least the strength of the initial JieDan stage. A rookie like Yang Chen who was just at the Foundation stage had never come there before.

But there was nobody who felt pity or sympathy with him. Everyone who matched gazes with Yang Chen looked at him as if they were examining a prey. Even on the way to the Cloud Valley, Yang Chen had sensed many greedy gazes in the surroundings.

"I am looking for Red Sun Metal Soul, do you know where can I find it?"

Yang Chen did not pay any attention to those and directly went to the biggest store in Cloud Valley and asked the shopkeeper, offering him a few catties of low grade spirit stones.

Although he was only a shopkeeper, he was still a peak Foundation stage expert. After looking at Yang Chen, he looked at the spirit stones in front of him and then faintly shook his head, saying:

“These are not enough for the information you want.”

Without paying any attention to him, Yang Chen took a Profound Yang Fruit out of the Medicine Garden and placed it on top of those spirit stones. Looking at the Profound Yang Fruit, a shine passed through the eyes of the shopkeeper, then he looked at Yang Chen with a smile that was not a smile and said:

“A few days ago, I heard that one batch appeared in the Devil Flame Valley, but it had already been auctioned and sold.”

“Is there some place where I can buy it?”

Yang Chen was not very surprised at this information. He knew that the unknown JieDan expert which had died in his hands would not lie in the binding of the Blood Phantom Vine, but he wanted some more information:

“I am ready to pay a high price.”

The flying sword which Yang Chen was using was originally an extremely high grade flying sword which was given to him by Elder Wu. If he added on the Red Sun Metal Soul, it's grade could be increased again. This shopkeeper's eyes did not miss that point, so there was no reason for him to doubt that Yang Chen had another purpose.

“The Red Sun Metal Soul is very rare. Only a piece is found every

few decade, so if you want to find it, you must find that customer.”

The shopkeeper had also only been at the Greater Mountain for a short while, so he stayed at this market. His knowledge and experience was also not that extensive and he had only recently found out the market prices. He immediately shook his head.

“I want to find information about that customer, is there any way you can help me?”

Yang Chen slightly scowled and asked.

“There is no way!”

The shopkeeper shook his head again:

“The auction market of the Greater Mountains strictly prohibits releasing any buyer’s information, but....”

This one line raised Yang Chen’s attention and he immediately asked:

“But what?”

“If you really want to, then you can try your luck at the auction market and leave a notice there. If they receive some information about what you want, they will notify you.”

The shopkeeper pointed out a direction to Yang Chen:

“But for such information, you must be ready to invest a high price.”

“En!”

Yang Chen nodded without making any comment. Soon afterwards he raised his head:

“One final question, is there any auction that had happened here one or two days ago?”

“Your luck is too bad.”

The shopkeeper shook his head:

“This Cut Cloud Valley is very small, usually people only buy things necessary to restore their strength. The genuine treasures can only be found in a big market. The Devil Flame Valley is going to have an auction in the future, you can try your luck there.”

Yang Chen did not ask anything more and merely extended his hand to point towards the things for the shopkeeper to take them. The shopkeeper happily accepted the Profound Yang Fruit and those low level spirit stones and turned around to leave.

But after he had turned around, the shopkeeper remembered



something, and turned around again, happily saying:

“Looks like you are a first timer, so I have some advice for you: These Greater Mountains are unlike your sect mountain. There were killings everywhere, if you have some good treasure, you must conceal it carefully, otherwise you won’t even know what killed you.”

“Many thanks for the warning!”

Yang Chen was slightly surprised at the shopkeeper’s good intentions, but he did not care too much about other people’s warnings.

“You should have elders at your sect, so if you need anything from here, it would be better to send them.”

The shopkeeper again said:

“With your cultivation it is very dangerous here. Take note of my advice and leave the Cloud Valley immediately, using your quickest speed to leave and return to your sect. Perhaps it is not too late.”

After speaking, he immediately turned around and left.

“I am really looking forward to someone attacking me!”

Yang Chen lowered his head and faintly mumbled to himself, so

nobody other than him heard it.

# Chapter 147 - You Have A Chance To Survive

---

As if proving the shopkeeper right, the moment Yang Chen left Cloud Valley, he immediately sensed people chasing him in the surroundings.

Yang Chen sneered and still continued on his flying sword as before. Nobody had noticed that the small Sand Scorpion and the Meadow Viper on his body had disappeared without a trace a few moments ago.

Xiu!

A flying sword made a flitting sound, forcing Yang Chen to stop. In front of him two people appeared, these two were among the people he had seen at Cloud Valley.

Before anyone could say anything, a lovely laughter could be heard coming from behind Yang Chen's back. Yang Chen didn't even need to turn his head around to know that it was that devil cultivator who was throwing around flirtatious glances in the Cloud Valley.

While they were in the air, below them the zombie had silently appeared, like a cheetah. On the side of that zombie appeared the devil cultivator controlling it.

On one side, the demon qi had skyrocketed, while on the other side killing intent was wreaking havoc. A pair of blood red eyes were attentively watching Yang Chen, as if a hungry wolf was

watching its food.

“Are all of you together?”

Yang Chen looked at everyone approaching him from the surroundings and faintly smiled:

“This really is a good place to kill someone and loot them!”

“Youngster, we don’t want to kill you, so leave your qiankun pouch and your flying sword here and run away as far as you can.”

A dao cultivator in front of him said fiercely.

“And what if I don’t do so?”

Yang Chen calmly looked at the person speaking and slowly asked.

“Then you will have to die!”

The complexion of the person speaking changed and he began to attack as soon as these words left his mouth. The flying sword flashed within his hands and he rushed towards Yang Chen.

Ding.

A crisp and clear sound echoed in the surroundings between Yang Chen and the person who had said those words. Everyone in the surroundings was amazed. How was this possible?

The loud sound had just rang, when suddenly a gray ribbon appeared before everyone's eyes. The long ribbon was like a living animal, incomparably nimble and in a flash it rolled around the flying sword.

Looking at this, the dao cultivator who was the master of sword was greatly alarmed and used all of his spiritual awareness to command the flying sword to return. However the gray ribbon was extremely flexible and strong, so the flying sword was unable to make any movement after it had been wrapped up.

Seeing that things were far from encouraging, the other people in the surroundings shouted loudly and released their magic weapons one by one. But just as their magic weapons had left their hands, their bodies immediately tensed up. On closer look, it could be seen that their bodies had already been bound by that magic weapon.

After rolling around their bodies, the long ribbon suddenly tightened and everyone released a blood curdling scream before losing consciousness. Regardless of what kind of magic weapon they used, all of them fell down from the sky. Without their masters' spiritual awareness controlling them, they had all turned into masterless objects. Initially that zombie had also been moving, but he also suddenly stopped under the effect of the ribbon.

Yang Chen collected his own flying sword and his figure slowly descended on the ground. The long ribbon in the sky also began to

come to the ground.

The slender ribbon then turned into She Kui. He had returned to his original shape just a moment ago. His body had become thumb thick but thirty three hundred meters long and had captured all of them after catching them off guard.

She Kui was an expert in concealing himself, adding to that the fact that his cultivation was a lot higher than these people. They didn't have a clue that they were being surrounded by She Kui.

The Blood Phantom Vine quickly replaced She Kui's body and coiled around the bodies of those people, even the zombie was no exception. Soon, the group of people began to wake up one by one under Yang Chen's prodding.

“For every grievance someone is responsible, for every debt there is a debtor, since you wanted to kill, then you must also be ready to get killed yourself.”

These people were powerless because the Blood Phantom Vine was wrapped around them. Hearing Yang Chen's words, everyone began to tremble. At the same time as Yang Chen said these words, he did not forgot to use spiritual awareness to communicate with the demon cultivators.

“I don't know who you are, but I also don't care.”

Yang Chen continued:

“I only want to know one thing.”

Speaking until there, Yang Chen paused, as if giving everyone some time to recall their memories and then continued:

“This is what I want to know: A woman was recently attacked not far from here. Who were the attackers?”

“I don’t know!”

Everyone revealed anxious expressions. The first one to speak was the devil cultivator who had blood red eyes. Even though he was under these circumstances, he didn’t seem to care much.

Yang Chen creased his brows together. He suddenly discovered an anomaly about that person. He was just about to speak, when that person suddenly started laughing heartily and his body rose up while the Blood Phantom Vine which was coiled around his body loosened and untied. Even Yang Chen didn’t know when this happened.

“A mere Blood Phantom Vine wants to subdue me? My Blood Fiend Sect’s great method of blood evasion does not its reputation for nothing.”

With great laughter, the devil cultivator’s entire body turned blood red, as if he was made out of light and within a moment he completely disappeared from everyone’s vision.

The loud laughter still hadn't disappeared, when the blood coloured silhouette which had flown away just a moment ago, suddenly returned to the ground with an even quicker speed and a loud sound.

The person was still in the air, as a few vines of the Blood Phantom Vine crazily wrapped around him and deeply entered the body of the blood colored silhouette.

This time, Yang Chen didn't give him any opportunity and the Blood Phantom Vine immediately began to absorb his blood crazily. Within a few moments, the blood colored silhouette turned into a corpse in front of everyone and didn't move anymore.

“I am not very fond of uncooperative people.”

Yang Chen didn't even look at the dried up corpse and only walked back to the group of people, slowly saying:

“Who else wants to run, they are free to try.”

The remaining people were outdoing one another in shaking their heads. Yang Chen also didn't want to talk much with them and with one thought from him, the zombie was raised before Yang Chen.

“Even after refining a metal corpse for a hundred years, you



couldn't even withstand a single blow, hmph, useless tricks.”

Shaking his head, Yang Chen concluded this. Hearing this, the face of the devil cultivator who was controlling the corpse turned unsightly, but Yang Chen continued:

“Since you will not speak up, then I will not leave you.”

A wave of hissing sounds which gave everyone a sour feeling began to rise from the metal corpse's body. Everyone's eyes were fixed on it and they suddenly discovered that the body of the metal corpse had been corroded by something and a big hole had appeared in it. The hissing sound was precisely the sound of corrosion of the zombie.

Soon, the incomparably stiff corpse turned into a river of pus, flowing across the ground. While flowing it even created some small holes in the ground and only then did the hissing sound stop.

“I have asked once, I will not ask again!”

Yang Chen again confronted the remaining people:

“The one among you who tells me will live. If you do not know then it is just unfortunate and we will certainly celebrate the anniversary of your death next year this day.”

“I know something! I know something! I request you not to kill me!”

This time, the one who had opened the mouth was precisely the female devil cultivator who had been throwing around flirtatious looks.

Under the threat of death, the witch who was initially throwing around hundreds of smiles turned deathly pale. Her entire body began to tremble and shiver.

The frightened words she had said while trembling even made people feel like a young lady who was frightened to the extreme and thus they couldn't help but take pity on her.

“Please don't kill me! Please don't kill me!”

That witch talked without stopping:

“I will inform you of everything I know, I am also willing to serve you as a servant or a slave but please don't kill me!”

Seeing that Yang Chen was looking at her, the spirit of survival began to grow stronger within the witch's eyes. Her expression showing that she was willing to do anything to remain alive completely fit with her revealing clothes and taking her charming face into account, any cold person would take her as a slave.

“How dare you show this trifling, not even half matured, Beautiful Woman Devil Cultivation in front of me?”

But it was as if Yang Chen's heart was made of stone:

“Say what you know, otherwise you die!”

“I... two months ago, there were indeed a few people hunting a woman. They were from Fulong Cave and Luehui Valley.”

That witch did not dare to say anything useless and quickly said what she knew.

“I am very sorry.”

Yang Chen very regretfully shook his head, and said to that witch as if regretting:

“I should have told you about something. The Blood Phantom Vine has already taken root in your heart, so I know when you are lying. Basically you don't know anything, so: die.”

After he finished speaking, the witch suddenly issued a desperate yell, but she only yelled once and did not yell again. In front of the other people that beautiful witch turned into skin and bones.

After seeing the death of two people and the corrosion of the zombie, the remaining people did not think of using lies and started to do their utmost to think of some event which had happened recently, everyone was fighting for their own lives.

“Spare my life! Look, we are both from dao sects, please spare my life!”

That very first cultivator who had attacked Yang Chen did not have that arrogant and bossy attitude anymore, he had begun to weep almost immediately:

“I came here only half a month ago, so I don’t know anything.”

“In only half a month, you have learned to murder and rob people, not bad!”

Yang Chen faintly nodded his head and afterwards he said with a smile:

“Then you are of no use, die!”

Again there was a blood curdling scream and a dead corpse. There was only a Dao cultivator, a devil cultivator and a demon cultivator, who began to shudder in fear remaining. Seeing that Yang Chen’s gaze was fixated on him, that person whose zombie had been destroyed began to yell loudly.

“Looks like you haven’t remembered anything which could save your life.”

Yang Chen regretfully shook his head. That devil cultivator’s loud yelling suddenly came to a stop as his body was reduced a small puddle. Soon he went to keep those other dried corpses

company underground.

It was not that Yang Chen was fond of killing them, but at the Greater Mountains, even if he showed leniency towards those people, they would not be grateful. There was only one rule here: the weak were the prey for the strong. If you let others go, it meant they would probably come back and try to kill you.

Right now, Yang Chen was quite calm. He had only one desire, and that was to know who attacked his master. Those people certainly would not admit it themselves, so he had to use this kind of method and along the way he would probably also attract the interest of the people responsible, or he may be able to obtain some information by killing people like this.

Currently only a dao cultivator and a demon cultivator were left in front of Yang Chen. When Yang Chen's gaze passed by, the Dao sect's disciple began to shiver so badly that he was not even able to speak.

Yang Chen sighed and turned his gaze towards the demon cultivator. The demon cultivator had completely lost his mind under Yang Chen's pressure and was just about to scream when he suddenly remembered something and forcing himself to restrain his shout, he began to speak in a high pitched voice:

"I remember something! Last month one of my friends informed me that some people had been hunting a woman to obtain the Red Sun Metal Soul which she had, but that female had been able to flee!"

Hearing the word 'Red Sun Metal Soul', Yang Chen immediately knew that his plan was working. With one thought of his, the dao sect's disciple was completely absorbed by the Blood Phantom Vine.

Hearing the blood curdling scream of a fellow dao sect disciple, Yang Chen was like an amiable old man, the smile never left his face. That demon cultivator told him everything. Apparently there was some kind of cultivation method for demon beasts in the Greater Mountains.

"Your friend told you?"

The Blood Phantom Vine raised the demon cultivator to Yang Chen's height. As if wishing to confirm it, Yang Chen again asked.

"My friend knew about this, he informed me this personally."

Demon cultivator hastily nodded, knowing that his life was at stake.

"Where is that friend of yours, help me look for him!"

Yang Chen said, without giving him any leeway.

"Yes, yes!"

The demon cultivator hurriedly nodded and then carefully said:

“You see, this is inconvenient for me, can you release it a little?”

“Then give me your demon soul!”

Yang Chen ordered him without the slightest hesitation. He could be released, but Yang Chen had to hold his life in his own hands; otherwise, if he was even slightly careless and allowed him to escape, the trail of clues which Yang Chen had obtained after so much pain would be completely lost.

The demon cultivator had no alternative other than handing over his demon soul, but this was different from an agreement where both parties agreed. Instead it was forcefully obtained by the enemy to control or kill him. However his life was already in Yang Chen’s hands, so the demon beast did not dare even to play any games and obediently handed over his demon soul.

Only after the demon soul of the demon cultivator entered Yang Chen’s spirit sea did Yang Chen find out that this demon beast was actually a gray wolf. He also didn’t know that he had cultivated the Appearance Transforming Secrets and had transformed himself into something strange. Even Yang Chen didn’t know his original form until now. Only after getting hold of the other party’s demon soul did Yang Chen control the Blood Phantom Vine and released the wolf.

With the demon soul in Yang Chen’s hands, the demon wolf didn’t even have the slightest thought of rebelling and only did

what Yang Chen told him, like collecting the qiankun pouches of those dead people and delivering them to Yang Chen.

After flipping through them once, Yang Chen realized that these people didn't have anything precious. Apart from a few flying swords, there was nothing that Yang Chen wanted, so he immediately gave them to the demon wolf:

“I will give you these as a reward for helping me in finding your friend!”

Not only hadn't he died, but he had also made easy money. The demon wolf was delighted and hastily nodded and led Yang Chen to some unknown direction.

After flying for almost three days, the figure of the demon wolf slowly descended to the ground and pointed towards the front and said with some concern:

“My friend is somewhere within this area of the Greater Mountains, but I need some time to find him, probably two days.

“Quickly go and quickly return!”

Yang Chen nodded and after finding a seat for himself, he began to meditate.

After obtaining Yang Chen's permission, the demon wolf hastily left and entered the mountains.



Within Yang Chen's hands again appeared the bottle lid of the Medicine Garden. Although he was sitting at the same place, his mind was completely immersed within the palace hall of the Medicine Garden.

## Chapter 148 - Obtaining Clues

---

Within the Palace Hall, Mo Qian and her disciples were still cultivating. Because they were cultivating within the palace hall which was rich in spirit power, their cultivation had advanced by leaps and bounds in a short time.

The five JieDan stage experts were completely under Yang Chen's control, only Mo Qian, their master, was left but she was also completely immersed in cultivation after Yang Chen's simple hypnosis.

Although her cultivation was at the YuanYing stage, she was still a vegetable. This was a great waste. While Yang Chen was still unable to order Mo Qian around, like her disciples, a few simple attack moves were still possible.

The thought of a sudden YuanYing stage expert mounting a sneak attack while the enemy was facing an attack from the Profound Five Women Spell, with the YuanYing expert coming without any warning and without leaving any clues really made him excited, this was definitely be the best way of catching other people off guard.

Even if Mo Qian had a cultivation at the YuanYing stage, because she had lost her mind, a simple hypnosis could be easily accomplished.

Naturally, Yang Chen could not control Mo Qian directly with his spiritual awareness, but he could issue a few simple commands to

her to act accordingly. Simple commands like attacking, fleeing, mounting a sneak attack, concealing or cultivation were not very difficult.

Since it was convenient like this, Yang Chen still had to spend one whole day to drill all of these things firmly into the depths of Mo Qian's spiritual awareness and practice it to become familiar, which made her think Yang Chen was like her owner.

After doing all of this, Yang Chen added even more layers of security on top of it. The appearances of Mo Qian and her disciples still hadn't been changed however, so they couldn't be used rashly. For the time being, Yang Chen decided to put veils on their faces, but this was not a long term solution. Afterwards, when he had the time, he would change their appearances too.

In this kind of environment, She Kui and Xie Sha were like dragons who had returned to the sea or like tigers who had come back to their mountains and wished to indulge in pleasure, completely forgetting their sense of duty. But they also knew the severity of the situation and were only taking a stroll in the vicinity of this region, not delaying the major matter regarding Yang Chen in the least.

The demon wolf also didn't make Yang Chen wait for long. After one day, the demon wolf appeared with another demon beast. Without the Appearance Transforming Secrets, the demon wolf definitely looked like a fierce monster, while the other demon beast was a huge spider.

“My friend's large spider web covers both the sky and the

ground, it's not there to injure anyone, only to obtain information of people's activities in the surroundings."

The demon wolf explained in place of the spider woman, as if also explaining indirectly why the spider woman knew about the hunt.

This reason was indeed acceptable by Yang Chen and he believed that the spider woman may know something. Yang Chen was not stingy for the reward in the least, and in exchange for the information he directly pulled out a thousand year ginseng from the medicine garden and stretching out his hand in front of her, he said:

"Tell me everything that you know and if it is true, this will be yours!"

A thousand year old ginseng was the greatest enticement for the spider woman, who was at the JieDan stage. Even the demon wolf on the side started drooling upon seeing this, but he knew that this was not for him. Earlier their group had surrounded and tried to kill Yang Chen, so leaving the demon wolf alive was already a great favour for him, not to mention that Yang Chen had also given him the qiankun pouches of his companions, so he did not have much hope regarding this ginseng.

Since his demon soul was in Yang Chen's hand, the demon wolf did not dare to play any tricks. These two days he had been searching for the spider woman to appear, but the spider woman didn't want to come in contact with Yang Chen, especially after hearing that Yang Chen had killed all of the JieDan experts who had attacked him together. But under the constant begging by the

demon wolf, she finally agreed.

But after seeing the thousand year ginseng in Yang Chen's hands, the spider woman did not have any misapprehensions and immediately started to narrate the events of that day.

Indeed, on that day a few people were hunting a female. The woman had received serious injuries and was fleeing in disarray, as if she had lost her sight, while, behind her, more than ten JieDan stage experts were chasing her. Because of her speed, they didn't have the ability to overtake that her, however. After that woman had left the huge network of the spider woman, the spider woman did not know what had happened.

“Which direction did they come from?”

Yang Chen didn't chatter with the spider woman much and directly asked the question he was most interested in.

“From that side.”

The spider woman's memory was very good, and moreover with the record of the tears in the spiderweb at that time it was absolutely precise.

The direction in which they had passed through precisely lead to the location where Gao Yue was found. Yang Chen again asked about the clothes of that woman at that time, which finally made him sure that this woman was Gao Yue.

“Who was chasing her?”

Forcefully repressing his anger, Yang Chen asked about the identity of the killers.

“That was not very clear, but among them there was someone I’ve seen before.”

The spider woman honestly answered, but her tone was slightly sluggish, as if she was deliberately keeping Yang Chen in suspense. Her gaze also frequently swept over the thousand year ginseng in Yang Chen’s hands.

Yang Chen sensed the situation of the spider woman and without any hesitation he threw the ginseng towards her. As long as he knew the identity of the culprit, what was one ginseng? He could even give her all of the ginsengs he had in the medicine garden.

“So who was he?”

After throwing over the ginseng, Yang Chen subsequently asked.

“He is a person who has been terrorizing everyone at the Greater Mountains for a long time, a peak JieDan stage expert, who is only one step away from the YuanYing stage.”

The spider woman was unable to contain her joy over holding the

ginseng and without creating any suspense she directly said:

“I have seen him twice, both times he was doing some kind of shady business.”

“So who is he!”

Yang Chen was interested in his identity, not in his cultivation or his actions.

“He is a guard of some young master.”

The spider woman continued after thinking for a moment:

“I don’t know his name, but he has a long scar on his face, which is said to be deliberately left to make him appear fierce. This person’s cultivation is very high. When I was hiding, I had personally seen him heavily striking that woman once.

“What young master?”

Yang Chen immediately asked. On the surface he was calm, but in his heart, he had already given the death penalty to that scar faced man.

“That young master is the son of the clan chief of some Hao Manor, so his influence is too great. As long as he takes fancy to something, he would forcefully take it.”

Whether the spider woman's memory was bad or whether she hadn't come in much contact with it, the things she had told were not complete:

"But those people frequently move around in the vicinity of the Devil Flame Valley, over there half of the murders or robberies are committed by them. The usuals at the Greater Mountain know how to defend against these people, but if there is some newcomer, he will certainly fall into their evil schemes.

"Doesn't the auction house there have some rules, like they never leak the identity of a seller or buyer? How can these people know?"

Although the spider woman did not tell anything in much detail, Yang Chen had already understood the situation completely. These clues had indeed been greatly useful.

"I have never gone to the auction house."

The spider woman mocked herself:

"I also don't have anything worth auctioning."

Yang Chen was completely satisfied with this information. Only the name of that Hao something manor was unknown to him, but finding it would be very easy. He could casually ask anyone over there to learn it. After Yang Chen would catch the scarred man, even he would honestly spit out the truth.



After obtaining the thousand year ginseng, the spider woman had left happily. But since the demon wolf had tried to kill Yang Chen, he had no other option but to serve as a guide for him. Yang Chen had however promised him that, after reaching the Devil Flame Valley, he would set him free.

Even if he was unwilling, the demon wolf had no other option since his demon soul was in Yang Chen's hands. Yang Chen could kill him anytime he wished, so he didn't dare to utter even half a complaint against him and obediently led Yang Chen to the Devil Flame Valley.

On the following day, Yang Chen appeared with a low profile appearance and was not showing off. Even so, with his strength of the initial Foundation stage, he still caught the attention of passersby.

But as soon as they acted with evil intentions, they had assured their doom. Along the journey, Yang Chen had never revealed the existence of She Kui and Xie Sha and just settled everything with the Blood Phantom Vine.

The demon wolf's heart was even more alarmed during the whole journey, especially when people with an even more profound cultivation than his wanted to deal with Yang Chen. If Yang Chen died, then he would also die, as the lives of both of them were connected. But since he had no other alternative, in the beginning, the demon wolf also went out, sometimes persuading them with kind words, sometimes begging, just with the hope that the enemy would let them off.

Most of them would let these two go after his acts. But in the cases when others attacked, the demon wolf discovered that Yang Chen had something like the blood phantom vine on his body and could summon the blood phantom vine anytime and anywhere, handling one or two JieDan experts was a simple matter.

Despite the fact that anyone would be horrified upon seeing the dried up corpses left behind after the blood phantom vine had absorbed the blood, the demon wolf had gotten used to it after seeing too many of them. He had moreover discovered that this amiable looking person at his side was simply a god of massacre. As long as anyone had the slightest intention to kill him, the only result would be that they would immediately die, there was just no other option.

Especially after hearing Yang Chen's catchphrase: 'For every grievance someone is responsible, for every debt there is a debtor', he also realized one more thing. When Yang Chen would kill anyone, he would always say this, as if it had become his habit. Even when there was not enough time to say it before killing them, he would still say it to them after they had died. He would never forget to say it.

Since the demon wolf still didn't know Yang Chen's name, he had set a nickname for him in his heart. That nickname was 'for every debt there is debtor', although it was too long, the demon wolf thought it was the closest possible name for him.

After one month, Yang Chen finally arrived at the Devil Flame Valley. He also complied with his promise and returned the demon

soul of the demon wolf to him and allowed him to leave. He himself, entered the Devil Flame Valley without any assistance.

Although it had 'valley' in its name, the Devil Flame Valley was a hundred times larger than the Cut Cloud Valley. It had the biggest market in the Greater Mountains. Just the number of frequently appearing cultivators alone were already over ten thousand. Every kind of shop could be found there, everything one could think of was here, furthermore the biggest auction house was also there.

While on the journey there, when he was getting rid of people with devious plans, he understood one thing: The attack on Gao Yue was done by the people of the Hao Yi Manor. Many people knew their notorious reputation and nobody would stand in for them to hide the truth.

But he was still not clear about how Gao Yue's identity was leaked from the auction house. Yang Chen had already become suspicious that the auction house was the main culprit, but since there was no proof, he couldn't be certain.

But Yang Chen did not want simple retaliation, he still had to find all of the people who were involved in the attack on Gao Yue and make them pay the price. Since they had dared to lay their hands on his master, even someone from the heavens wouldn't be able to save them.

He found an inn to stay first and then decided to not come out until the next auction. His plan was simple: he would go to the auction and see if he could draw the attention of some people. At that time he could ascertain the auction house's role based on

whether someone looked for him or not.

The extent of the Devil Flame Valley was very large, thus there were many cultivators. But what Yang Chen was seeing was that a majority of the people had a cultivation at the JieDan stage. Apparently the way of doing anything they wanted to also enticed peak JieDan experts. Therefore Yang Chen could see a lot of peak JieDan stage cultivators.

Occasionally Yang Chen would see some YuanYing stage experts, who all just flashed through his vision and then couldn't be seen anymore. There were not a lot of Foundation stage cultivators in the Greater Mountains. He could see some servants in the city, but the Foundation stage was considered as the younger generation, so they could only enter these shops through the backdoor. After all, everyone was busy entertaining customers there and they couldn't let a JieDan expert feel wronged.

Yang Chen was very lucky, after he had spent just ten days there, there was news of a large auction taking place soon. This was also one of the customs of the Greater Mountains: every month there would be at least one auction.

The Greater Mountains were a great place to attack the YuanYing stage bottleneck, but there were not many spirit veins here, so if cultivators wanted to cultivate, they could only rely on absorbing the spirit power within spirit stones. Thus the requirement of spirit stones there was very large.

Similarly, the Greater Mountains was rich in natural resources, moreover the quality was also not very bad. Usually, as long as

they could find some precious things, cultivators would not be stingy in spending spirit stones to buy it. Moreover the best way to maximize profit was precisely the auction house.

Although common things could be bought at the shops, genuine treasures could only be found in auctions.

Since everyone in the Greater Mountain knew how dangerous this region was, including the organizer of the auction, the auction house only recognized spirit stones and not the reputation of any person. Moreover, the people entering the auction could not see each other. As for who received the treasure, this was kept a secret. This guarantee was the principle of continuous transactions.

But in Yang Chen's eyes, this rule had already been broken by someone in the auction. Gao Yue being attacked by people clearly showed this point. Following that, Yang Chen just wanted to ascertain this point.

Finally, on the opening day of the auction, Yang Chen entered the public lobby of the auction house in a cloak he had bought in advance to hide his identity. Following the participants of the auction, he reached the door of the auction hall.

The cloak which hid his appearance also blocked all of spiritual awareness probes around him and it also made everyone appear the same, so nobody could tell any difference. The only thing capable of differentiating the buyer's identity was the license plate which was given at the gate of the auction.

Nine hundred seventeen. That was the number which Yang Chen had received.

## Chapter 149 - Warming Up The Stage

---

Although the mantle could hide his image, it had a fatal flaw: It could not be used during fights. If someone started fighting while wearing this, it would immediately break into pieces. This was also the reason why those people who were trying to steal could reveal the identity of their target.

The inside of the auction house was very large, but it didn't appear so from outside. Yang Chen knew that this was some kind of space, like the medicine garden, which had been refined by at least two Da Cheng stage experts. Only then could it have that size.

After entering the room, everyone went to the rooms corresponding to their number plates. They only had one exit from where one could leave the auction house at any time, so basically nobody would be able to come in contact with other clients in the auction.

Under such circumstances, if other people knew what someone had purchased, who would believe that the auction house had no relation to it? After entering the room Yang Chen carefully sized up everything, but he could not find anything wrong.

The number of rooms should be equal to number of plates they had been given. Inside of the room there was only one place to sit. On the other side of the room, a desk was placed with some light refreshments and tea, making it clear that other customers could not access it.

In front of the seat was a huge window which was perfect to show the image of the item and the auctioneer, but nothing else could be seen. On the armrest there was a bidding stone, which looked like a gem. As long as one kept their hand on the gem and unleashed their spiritual awareness, one could immediately make his bid known to the auctioneer.

The staff was still entering the arena one by one, but the auction of many small things had already begun. Frankly speaking, none of the really precious materials had been displayed. They were only being used to warm up the crowd, so that the customers wouldn't get bored.

Initially Yang Chen did not care about any of these things, but he hadn't anticipated that the first thing that would come up would shock him.

"This item is being shown in the auction for around ten years now, but there has been no one who knew what use it has."

Along with the auctioneer's words, something appeared in the area where the auction articles were arranged.

That item resembled some kind of weapon, it had a handle, but it did not resemble a sword or a metal truncheon. The closest thing would be a ruler. It even had fine marked scales on the top surface.

But it could also not be called a ruler, as the marked scales were unevenly distributed, which really confused people as to what this thing actually was.



“This thing is not something worth mentioning, even the material is not of very high quality.”

The anchor was clearly not very enthusiastic about this thing. His tone was very casual:

“The owner of this thing has some relation with the auction house and because of that, it has been shown in the auction house for ten years. The price is starting from one catty of high grade spirit stones. Is anyone interested in buying it?”

Although he was the host, he was doing things very half heartedly. Perhaps this was his temperament or maybe these things shown in the beginning were just to warm the stage. As he didn't even wait for everyone before beginning, it should be insignificant.

It was an item whose use was unknown, which was also not suitable for being a magic weapon, while the ingredients of the item were also low levelled, yet they were demanding the high price of one catty. If it were not for the anchor's words that the master of this item had some relation with the auction house, maybe it would have already been thrown away long ago.

But without any hesitation, Yang Chen immediately placed his hand on the bidding stone and issued the base price: one catty of high grade spirit stones.

“The only use of this thing is that it can change colour when

spirit power is passed through it.”

The anchor had the intention to continue the introduction, but he suddenly heard the indication of someone bidding and was completely startled. He confirmed it once again, not daring to believe it but after confirming that someone had indeed bid on it, he immediately shouted:

“One catty of high grade spirit stone, is there anyone who wants to bid higher?”

Once the anchor’s words came out, it immediately caused a ruckus in all of the rooms. That object, which had been used to warm the stage for so long and was believed to never be sold, surprisingly had someone bid on?

Everyone began to discuss if this was a treasure or not, otherwise why would someone have paid such a high price for it?

“One catty of high grade spirit stones, is there anyone who wants to bid higher?”

The anchor had already asked the second time. But after asking, he continued to incessantly describe the trash attributes of this object as if he was trying to stall for time.

The customers coming in one by one, as long as any one of them had participated in auction frequently for the past few years, on hearing the anchor’s words and looking at the object they would

immediately be stunned. There was someone who still wanted this thing? Who could be such a wastrel?

The auctioneer was also hesitating. This thing was delivered by an old freak and that old freak was very greedy for money. As long as he would get anything to sell there, he would always keep the base price very high, as if he was afraid that he would get a lower price in the auction.

But his strength was very high. Ordinary cultivators wouldn't even dare to tease him. Usually, even if the starting prices were high, it could still be sold, so there was no loss to the auction house, but apart from some products of good quality, most of the things that old freak delivered were just like this: impressive looking, but useless.

Until now, nine of the ten items which the auction house had shown while warming the floor, were delivered by that old freak. The reason being, that the auction wanted to give face to the old freak and if people didn't buy it, then it was not the the auction house's fault and they would have an explanation for him. Then the old freak would be unable to say anything, for example 'the auction house hadn't provided any chance to him' and become their enemy.

But right now someone had paid the high price of one catty of high grade spirit stones for this useless object. How could it not rouse people's interest?

“Who is the bidder?”

The master overseeing the affairs immediately asked. Soon after that, someone delivered Yang Chen's information to him.

The name was just some nonsense, ninety nine out of a hundred people use false names. But after he found out that Yang Chen's strength was only at the initial Foundation stage, the master's heart immediately relaxed and he quickly instructed:

"If other people don't bid on it, allow him to take it. Keep him under strict surveillance and after auction is over, ask him what this thing is."

The master's instructions were immediately passed down. The host obtained those instructions in a flash and did not delay any longer. In any case, this thing had been shown there for so long, it was unlikely that someone else would bid. The host immediately began asking for the third time:

"One catty of high grade spirit stones, the third!"

Although everyone was curious, nobody increased the price. One catty of high grade spirit stones was equivalent to ten thousand low grade spirit stones and no one wanted to fight over something the usage of which wasn't clear.

"One catty of high grade spirit stones, sold!"

This time, the host didn't wait for too long and after a short

moment, he struck his hammer for the third time, showing that a deal has been reached.

In the eyes of others, one catty of high grade spirit stones were quite a lot, but in Yang Chen's case, they were just a drop in the ocean and for this thing he would have even been ready to exchange one catty of top grade spirit stones, let alone one catty of high grade spirit stones.

Although that thing appeared to be very unremarkable and did not seem to be useful, Yang Chen knew that this thing appeared only in the spiritual world. It was an ordinary and yet again completely extraordinary Heaven Measuring Ruler.

The reason why it was ordinary was because it was made from the most common materials of the Spiritual World, but it was also not completely garbage, unlike what the auctioneer was saying. This Heaven Measuring Ruler was currently covered with a layer of ordinary materials of the mortal world to cover up its true colors.

As for saying it was extraordinary was because, even in the Spiritual World not everyone could possess something like this. At least as Yang Chen had heard, only people from big sects were in possession of such a thing.

Although this thing was named Heaven Measuring Ruler, it didn't measure the heavens. Instead it was used to measure the spirit power in a person's body. It would show different colours for different realms and the indicators were used to show at which layer was someone in a particular realm.

Although this thing didn't have many uses, Yang Chen knew that this was a treasure which everyone would covet, especially experts who were at a bottleneck. If they had this Heaven Measuring Ruler, they would be able to quickly reach the edge of the bottleneck and then make their breakthrough.

The reason why the indicators on the Heaven Measuring Ruler were distributed unevenly was because the closer you reached to the limit, the more detail it would show in the change of spirit power.

Perhaps people could think that just showing the level of spirit power in their cultivation was not very useful, but Yang Chen knew that during the bottleneck period, the Heaven Measuring Ruler was a greatly enviable treasure.

It was known as the bottleneck period because during this long time, cultivators were unable to sense the progress they had made and would use all kinds of methods to find that out, so that they could break through.

Although it was known as the bottleneck period, in reality it did not mean that the progress completely stopped in that realm. There was merely a small variation which made the cultivator unable to sense their progress, but as long as they diligently trained, small amounts of progress were still made.

With the Heaven Measuring Ruler, they could see the transformations in their spirit power cultivation at all times. Even

if the variation was very small, the Heaven Measuring Ruler was capable of indicating it clearly.

Those cultivators who had never entered the bottleneck period would not be able to imagine being trapped in one stage, with the time needed for a breakthrough being very long. Getting a magic tool which could show that, albeit very slowly, their spirit power was increasing constantly, it could provide a large boost to their confidence.

Confidence was one of the most powerful factor for subduing a heart's devil in the case of a cultivator. This fact could be clearly seen from Great Master Wang Yong. Before he had obtained the Heaven Seizing Pill, Great Master Wang Yong was precisely in the bottleneck period, unable to break through, but since he had received the Heaven Seizing Pill, his cultivation had changed within a single day and he had already become the number one elder in the Pure Yang Palace. The strength of confidence was obvious from this.

Wearing the Heaven Measuring Ruler and sensing one's own cultivation grow every day, was like having no bottleneck period for a cultivator. It would at most be a stage where one's cultivation was advancing a little slow. The confidence from this was something which the people who hadn't enjoyed the benefits of the Heaven Measuring Ruler would never be able to enjoy.

Yang Chen hadn't expected that he would obtain such a great treasure in the mortal world and at that at a price of a mere catty of high grade spirit stones.

In the auction house, one had to pay on the spot and get the delivery. Within the Greater Thousand Mountains, there wasn't anyone who could be trusted or to whom the product could be sold on credit. The instant the host had hammered for the third time to complete the deal, it also implied that Yang Chen had to pay immediately.

In less time than it takes for half an incense to burn, the Heaven Measuring Ruler was delivered to Yang Chen's room and put up on Yang Chen's table. The Heaven Measuring Ruler was covered by a light membrane, making it inaccessible. Furthermore, on the other side of the table a tray appeared. The meaning was clear: Yang Chen was supposed to put the spirit stones on that tray.

Regardless of Yang Chen's doubts, the auction house's way of doing things was quite authentic, exchanging the goods by one hand and the cash by another. When Yang Chen had placed a sufficient amount of spirit stones on the tray, the membrane covering the Heaven Measuring Ruler very quickly disappeared.

With almost lightning speed, Yang Chen grabbed the Heaven Measuring Ruler and placed it into the Achievement Ring without much thinking, to ensure that other people didn't try to snatch it. Only after putting the Heaven Measuring Ruler away safely did Yang Chen heave a sigh of relief, and began to watch the auction.

The period of warming the stage still hadn't ended yet, but the next thing truly was trash, and it had quite an excessive price without any uses. This period lasted for the time it takes for two incense sticks to burn. Only then did the auction advance to the next stage.



Clearly the biggest news of the auction that time was the selling off the Heaven Measuring Ruler at such a high price. All kinds of people with all kind of intentions were asking about the customer as well as what the Heaven Measuring Ruler was, in the end.

Yang Chen had certainly anticipated these kind of circumstances, but this was also the result he wanted. The Heaven Measuring Ruler was just a pleasant surprise, if it had not appeared, then the Yang Chen would have bought the best object on display there to give rise to the attention of people and to appear as someone who was rich and overbearing but with low cultivation. Then, if someone later had come looking for trouble with him, the auction house certainly couldn't shed the responsibility.

“Middle grade flying sword, the Red Rainbow Sword. Base price: fifty catties of middle grade spirit stones.”

“Forty catties of Profound Metal Essence. Base price: eighty catties of middle grade spirit stones.”

“The inner dan of a mid JieDan stage demon beast. Base price: fifty catties of middle grade spirit stones.”

“One copy of the rare book MieMo Sha. Base price: sixty catties of middle grade spirit stones.”

One by one, all of the items were being shown and were then auctioned. However all of these were just trash to Yang Chen, still he was bidding on every item, increasing the price. Clearly

displaying the image of a rich person. Naturally, apart from the people of the auction house, nobody knew that the person who was disrupting the flow of things was Yang Chen.

After a very brief period of two hours, all the items in the first stage were shown and sold, moreover all of them were sold at a price at least double the amount of the base price. This clearly showed the prosperity of the auction house.

But the more it was like this, the more vigorously the fire of wrath burned in Yang Chen's heart. If he found the slightest evidence that the auction house had any relation with the attack on his master, he certainly would not mind massacring the entire auction house.

Compared to his master, let alone one auction house in the Greater Market, even if it was something which would offend everyone in this world, Yang Chen still wouldn't mind destroying it.

# Chapter 150 - Rich And Imposing

---

Yang Chen's actions were monitored by the master of the auction house for the entire time. The master's room was the center of the entire auction house, inside there, not only could he see the auction of every object, he could also find out everything happening in any room at the same time.

When Yang Chen was paying for the Heaven Measuring Ruler, he did not pull out scattered pieces to make up the catty of high grade spirit stones, instead he had first pulled out a complete piece of extremely bright top grade spirit stone. Then he put it back in and took out a pile of scattered spirit stones to pay.

Everyone in the auction house knew about Yang Chen's situation. Moreover, Yang Chen would always enter the bidding competition, this made it sufficiently clear that Yang Chen wanted these things. After some objects had been auctioned, Yang Chen had clearly established his image as a rich person who had an inferior cultivation and lacked experience.

On the master's side there was a seemingly confident youngster whose gaze was fixed on Yang Chen's every movement, just like the auctioneer.

The last item of the auction was an obscure demon beast's horn. The horn was extremely sharp and was of the ninth water attribute. After putting in spirit power, it could even penetrate ordinary flying swords in a single stab. The material of the horn was very hard. Even burning by fire, soaking in water and being hacked by a flying sword wouldn't leave any kind of marks behind.

But even the appraiser of the auction house couldn't identify what demon beast this horn belonged to. This world was very large; just in the Greater Mountains tens of millions of organisms lived, so even if the appraiser was very well learned, it was still impossible for him to know about everything.

But one thing was certain: that this belonged to a demon beast at least at peak of the YuanYing stage or higher, which had fallen off for some unknown reason and had thus been received by someone. Since even the owner of this horn couldn't refine it, he had brought it to the auction house to exchange for spirit stones.

Even then, this horn caught the attention of many people. The horn was roughly two feet long and innately had the shape of a pointed awl, so there was no need to grind it to turn it into a flying sword. As long as someone could refine it, it would be a high grade flying sword.

For demonstration, this horn was dropped onto the arm of a peak JieDan stage demon beast without using any force. The horn effortlessly passed through the arm of the peak JieDan stage demon beast without so much as a scratch.

The demon beast who was demonstrating there was a demon cultivator who regularly appeared in the Devil Flame Valley. His real identity was that of a thick skinned rhinoceros with thick leather and skin, which made his defense astonishing. Him being so effortlessly pierced by the beast horn clearly demonstrated the sharpness of the horn.

Following this, it was hacked at by a flying sword and burned in fire on the spot, but there still wasn't the slightest amount of harm to it. All of this clearly showed the strength of this beast horn.

Naturally, the auction house had clearly announced that if one's cultivation was not sufficient, there was no need to even think about it. But who wouldn't desire for a powerful magic weapon? Even if the cultivation was low at the moment; whoever had a high cultivation from the start? If necessary, it could be bought right now and then refined when the strength was sufficient.

All of the previous items had a base price ranging from several catties of middle grade spirit stones to several tens of catties of middle grade spirit stones, that was several hundred catties to several thousand catties of low grade spirit stones. But this beast horn had a base price of one catty of high grade spirit stones, the same as the Heaven Measuring Ruler.

“Two catties!”

The instant the auctioneer announced the base price, Yang Chen immediately announced his own price. Forcibly increasing the price to double.

“2.5 catties!”

“3 catties!”

“5 catties!”

“6 catties!”

“6.5 catties!”

“7 catties!”

“7.5 catties!”

“8 catties!”

“9 catties!”

“9.23 catties!”

“9.5 catties!”

“9.72 catties!”

“9.82”

“9.92!”

“10 catties!”

Experts who had been waiting for an opportunity also began to move. Adding a little here, adding a little there, the price of the beast horn had very quickly risen to ten catties of high grade spirit stones.

At the greater Mountains even a YuanYing stage expert could not casually take out one catty of high grade spirit stones easily. Only by pouring in their sect's strength would that be possible. The more the bidding extended, the more the number of people increasing the price decreased and so the increase in price slowed down.

Even then, everyone only increased the price after proper consideration. If they didn't bid in small units such as liangs, then customers even wanted to use units as low as qian. It had to be known that one qian of high grade spirit stones was just one catty of middle grade spirit stones.

The atmosphere of the auction house was becoming more and more fiery. Most of the clients were cursing without any restraints in their room, if it were not for the fact they didn't know who the others were and it was strictly prohibited to cause trouble in the auction house, maybe someone would have already rushed to other bidders and attacked them.

Yang Chen also hadn't expected that the final item of the auction would be such a pleasant surprise. Other people may not know, but he clearly knew that was the horn of a qilin.

An ordinary qilin's horns were similar to deer. But this one was certainly not an ordinary qilin's horn. Rather this horn had fallen

into some kind of torrential water or a whirlpool and had been scrubbed for countless years and got this shape. The reason why it was ninth water attributed was probably also because in these countless years it had been infected by the ninth water.

Such a treasure, if he had not bumped into it, then he would not have cared, but now that he had found it, how could he let it go to others for such a small amount? After seeing that the bunch of customers had gradually reached the price of ten catties of high grade spirit stones and stopped, the auctioneer had already counted two times, when Yang Chen raised the bid again.

“11 catties! 11 catties! Is there someone who wants to bid higher?”

Looking at this completely new price, the auctioneer had become excited. The increase of one liang by one liang, had made him feel that there was no more suspense left, but then came Yang Chen’s sudden action of increasing the price by 1 catty. How could it not make people excited?

“He is just an initial Foundation stage youngster, who doesn’t have any method of refining it, so what does he intend to do with it?”

The confident youngster sitting besides the master of the auction house asked, wrinkling his brows while looking at Yang Chen effortlessly bidding.

“Even if he waited with refining until he could, it wouldn’t be too late!”



The master smiled. This kind of question was really quite childish, but with the identity of that youngster, he had to reply:

“Or perhaps, he has some special method of refining.”

“Although his age is not too old, he is quite well-off!”

That youngster thoughtfully said, with his gaze fixed on Yang Chen.

“Young master, we auction house people cannot break the rules ourselves, otherwise nobody would give us any face in the Greater Mountains.”

Hearing that youngster's words, the master of the auction house immediately understood what he was thinking and hastily warned him.

“Don't worry, I know what to do!”

The youngster revealed a sneer at the corner of his mouth and slowly said this, attentively watching Yang Chen.

One unknown beast's horn, although it was very sharp and had good quality, was not enough to make the people of the Greater Mountains invest a price more than ten catties of high grade spirit stones.

Most of the cultivators come there with the intention of making a breakthrough, some others also came to look for ingredients, but it was no one's main aim to invest in something which nobody recognized and which couldn't be refined.

After Yang Chen had bid eleven catties of high grade spirit stones, the auctioneer turned silent, waiting for the clients to increase it. But after waiting for a short time, no one had increased the bid.

“Eleven catties, does anyone wants to bid higher? Eleven catties, two!”

The auctioneer again announced the bid, but waiting for him was still silence.

Moving forward, the auctioneer was suddenly startled, as if he had seen something unfathomable and immediately said with excitement:

“Fifteen catties! Fifteen catties! Does anyone want to bid higher?”

The sudden increase of four catties created a ruckus in the auction house. It had to be known that four catties were equivalent to forty thousand catties of low grade spirit stones. The spirit power from that was sufficient for a JieDan initial stage expert to reach the peak JieDan stage. This addition of four catties, who could even spend so much money?

“Young master, this...”

In the moment the master of the auction house was not careful, the youngster at his side had added four catties of high grade spirit stones, which gave the master huge fright. Even if all the things which had been previously auctioned were added in, the total amount would be just around this. So if Yang Chen renounced right now, the auction house would have suffered a loss this time.

“I want to know what exactly it is!”

The young master nervously said, with his eyes glued on the scene in Yang Chen’s room. But a trace of jealousy could be seen on his face:

“Does he not have a piece of top grade spirit stone? Still afraid to pay?”

Even with his identity as young master, he could not casually take out ten catties of high grade spirit stones, but Yang Chen, who was just at the initial Foundation stage could easily take out a piece of top grade spirit stone, how could it not make him go green with jealousy?

“Our appraisal master had said that the highest price of this thing would be twelve catties of high grade spirit stones.”

The master was somewhat vexed, but he was just a shopkeeper,

so the gap between his identity and the young master's was too large and he simply couldn't criticize the actions of that young master and could only quote the highest possible price.

The young master had also begun to feel the regret as soon as he had opened his mouth. Why couldn't he help but try to embarrass Yang Chen? Perhaps seeing Yang Chen pull out the top grade spirit stones had made him realize of his own inferiority.

He was the majestic young master, yet everyday he would be hard pressed for money, but that person was strolling around, carrying a piece of top grade spirit stone. It looked as if this was just his allowance. This strong contrast made him ashamed to death. But right now, he began to tense, if Yang Chen backed out, this thing would fall in his hands and he didn't have enough spirit stones to compensate for this.

“Twenty catties!”

Before the auctioneer could shout the second time, Yang Chen had already made his bid. Directly doubling the price at which all other people had stopped before.

Bang!

This was not just the auctioneer's cry of surprise, but everyone had been astonished. Who could spend so much money to buy a beast horn's whose method of refining was not known? Could it be that this was some rare treasure?

Everyone began to make enquiries and the eyes of the master of the auction house also brightened. Yang Chen had only won the bid of two things. The first was the Heaven Measuring Ruler, which was in the beginning, at one catties of high grade spirit stones. But this time, he had spent even more money: twenty catties of high grade spirit stones.

These two high bids, both made auction master and young master not know what to do, since everything about Yang Chen was an enigma. Furthermore, Yang Chen was very young and his cultivation very low, but he still had a top grade spirit stone. All of this had an enormous attractive force, which made the master pay more attention to Yang Chen.

The young master did not dare to open his mouth again. If the beast horn really ended up with him, his gains would not make up for the losses. Moreover, he had already formed another plan: that was to learn the secret of the beast horn from somewhere else. If it really was a unique treasure, then the beast horn had to return to him.

“Young master, no matter what you have planned, you must be careful during work.”

The master who was also staring at Yang Chen’s figure, repeatedly warned him:

“You cannot allow anyone to know that it was your doing by any means! We cannot break the rules.”

“I know!”

When he heard the price, the young master had heaved a sigh of relief in his heart. Right now the master was still repeatedly warning him like a child. Did he think that this young master didn't know this? After impatiently answering him, he immediately stood up and called out an attendant, giving him some instructions and only then did he sit back down.

“I have arranged for good people to take care of it. Within a hundred miles of the Devil Flame Valley, no one will attack him.”

The young master softly said, but it made the auction master who was asking feel relieved.

Nonetheless the auction master showed no response and continued to sit there, neither opposing nor agreeing, as if he had not heard this. But young master knew that this was his way of informing him that he would not be responsible for this matter.

After the price of twenty catties of high grade spirit stones, he no longer dared to contest with Yang Chen. When he thought that, for a trifling price of twenty catties of high grade spirit stones, he had obtained a qilin's horn, Yang Chen did not know if he should rejoice or make fun of them. In any case, it was a great feeling, as if a tasty meat pie had fallen into his hands.

Two bids, including one of twenty catties of high grade spirit stones. This was already the highest transaction in the history of the auction house. Yang Chen was convinced that he certainly had

to have given rise to the attention of people in the auction house. The next step was to just sit tight and wait for the robbers.

Yang Chen was not certain if someone would attack him, but from the instant he had left the auction house, he had discovered that someone had already begun to trail him.

Even though Yang Chen was still wearing the appearance hiding mantle and everyone looked the same which should hide which one Yang Chen was. Nonetheless Yang Chen could sense that kind of concentrated gaze on him.

After much thinking, he could only think of one explanation: That there was some problem with this mantle handed out by the auction house. Those people had recognized him by this mantle.

Holding those things, Yang Chen did not stop in the Devil Flame Valley and similar to cultivators who had obtained some treasure, directly departed the Devil Flame Valley on his flying sword.

After Yang Chen had flown for over ten miles, behind him a group of trackers appeared. The leading person was holding a compass and joyfully followed the direction Yang Chen in which had left and began to chase after him.

What they hadn't noticed was that Yang Chen, who was quickly fleeing ahead of them, had already shown the trace of a sneer on his face.

# Chapter 151 - The Enemy Started Off Leniently

---

Yang Chen, flying ahead, changed his speed many times, but no matter if he flew fast or slow, the people behind him certainly hadn't intended to attack him near the Devil Flame Valley.

After discovering this, Yang Chen also began to move leisurely. Naturally, nobody had discovered the small snake which had just then left Yang Chen's body and entered the mountain woods.

Departing next was a small scorpion who also silently left and entered the thick jungle.

Soon after that, when he was approximately two hundred miles away from the Devil Flame Valley, Yang Chen sensed that the people chasing him suddenly accelerated their speed.

When the group of sixteen people appeared in front of Yang Chen, they were stunned to discover that Yang Chen was calmly sitting on a piece of a rock, while behind him a woman covered in a veil was eagerly massaging his back and glanced at them from the corner of her eyes without even raising her head.

The sixteen people immediately stopped their flying swords and seemed to be in a mess, but they immediately disseminated in different directions, forming a half moon shape in Yang Chen's surroundings.



The problem was the woman, whose cultivation should be around the mid JieDan stage, who did not match the information they had been provided. But they had sixteen people on their side, with the worst being at the later JieDan stage, so there shouldn't be any problems.

Their group had handled a lot of matters like this. Initially, it was decided that only two of them would set out to kill the initial Foundation stage youngster, but for insurance, the young master had still sent everyone.

Although there seemed to be no problems, Yang Chen's confident attitude baffled them. Sixteen people had surrounded him, but he was still sitting at the same place without any worries.

"That scar face hasn't come?"

The first one to speak was the one who was still sitting calmly, Yang Chen. With just a glance, he could determine that the Scarface that spider woman had talked about was not there. Thus Yang Chen was not completely sure that these people were from the Hao Yi Manor and tried to confirm by pretending he knew Scarface.

"Hmph, for dealing with a youngster like you, there was no need for senior scarface to come!"

Perhaps here they were strong enough to proclaim themselves as tyrants or perhaps it was their usual habit to dictate, the person in the lead didn't intend to hide anything and generously admitted to

it.

“Good, you all admitted, that’s good!”

Hearing what they said, Yang Chen sneered and asked:

“Since everyone was chasing after me, what do you want, speak out!”

“Sire is indeed quick with words, then we will also not beat around the bush.”

The person in the lead hadn’t met a calm headed youngster like Yang Chen and was also somewhat nervous, but thinking that their side held the absolute advantage, he was not very worried that Yang Chen would play any tricks:

“Hand over all of your belongings and tell us the use of the last two items you purchased and maybe you will get yourself a chance to survive.”

The person who was in the lead knew that these words were just nonsense, how could they allow Yang Chen to depart alive? But if they did not convince him, although robbing spirit stones was easy, getting the details of the two things he purchased at the auction would be troublesome. So first they had to boast loudly and pretend to be good people. If this didn’t work, they could always capture him and extort the confession using some other methods.

“Sure enough, the auction house is also an accomplice!”

These words of Yang Chen were as if he had confirmed many things and was no longer interested in talking with these people.

Once his words came out, the leader apparently sensed something strange about the atmosphere, but no one knew from the problem was.

When he turned around to observe his surroundings, the people behind him indicated that there was nobody hiding near them for an ambush. But Yang Chen was sitting calmly, as if he had certain guarantees, which had worried the leader the entire time.

Shua!

Suddenly, inside of the small area, four women exactly the same as the one who was behind Yang Chen's body appeared. The woman standing behind Yang Chen also stopped, as five flying swords began to coil around in their surroundings.

“Attack!”

The appearance of the four women caught the leader with surprise. Without continuing to scout for information, he directly ordered the attack.

Everyone was on their guard, but hearing the leader's command to attack, several among the sixteen people immediately rushed towards the women from the surroundings. In their minds, sixteen against five, or rather sixteen late and peak JieDan stage expert against five mid JieDan stage cultivators, the outcome of such a battle was obvious.

But once they attacked, they immediately discovered that it was not as easy as it seemed. Each of the five women held their respective position, as well as advanced and retreated using the same method. Clearly this was a very high level spell formation. Against the sixteen people, not only were the five women not giving them an advantage, instead they were fighting on equal terms with the sixteen people surrounding them.

But Yang Chen was still sitting on a mountain rock as before, coldly looking at the ongoing battle without saying anything. This group of people wanted to attack him just moments ago, but now they couldn't even leave.

Nobody had discovered that, at some unknown time, this area had been surrounded by a layer of blood colored vines. While everyone was busy in the battle, an indifferent and abundant red mist silently spread everywhere.

Within the battle, the people quickly discovered that their spirit power had already stopped listening to their orders. Seeing this, they were greatly frightened and wanted to flee, but it was already too late.

The red colored vine which had spread over the area, wrapped

around the surroundings of everyone, including the five women. The vine had already coiled around everyone, successfully forming a closed network.

It was just as if the vine had a mind of its own and it avoided the bodies of the five women. As soon as it came in contact with them, it immediately left. But the other people were not so lucky, after the blood colored vine had wrapped around them, it began to frantically take root.

The violent pain which passed through the bodies of the sixteen people made them shriek miserably. But the five women were as if they hadn't seen anything and were still on guard, surrounding the group of people who were already wrapped up in the Blood Phantom Vine.

The sixteen people were arranged in a row by the Blood Phantom Vine, because it had been absorbing their blood, they had already become powerless and lightly collapsed in front of Yang Chen. Yang Chen kept his stare fixed on them as if watching some dregs without any life.

“I really want to know something. Two months ago, did that man with the scar and your young master launch a sneak attack on a woman who had bought Red Sun Metal Soul.”

Once he opened his mouth, Yang Chen went straight to the point without beating around the bush.

“Since we have already fallen in your hands, if you want to kill

us, then listen clearly!’

A man seemingly strong willed shouted loudly:

“Don’t even think that we would sell our young master out!”

“As you wish!”

Yang Chen lightly snapped his fingers and that person who was raining abuses was immediately thrown in front by the Blood Phantom Vine and under everyone’s eyes, he turned into a dried corpse following a blood curdling scream.

The group of people turned pale, but nobody opened their mouths. That young master did indeed have some ability. Even in the face of death, these people still weren’t giving the information Yang Chen wanted.

“It seems that I have come too late for the party!”

While Yang Chen was interrogating them one by one, a loud voice echoed in everyone’s ears.

Hearing the loud voice, the people lying on the ground were exalted. Yang Chen’s gaze turned towards the direction of the voice.

On that side, within the mountain woods, all plants began to

separate, as if they were being pushed aside by a formless hand. With that appeared the figure of a strong person who was slowly walking there, as if taking a stroll in their garden.

“Humph! Useless people!”

Looking at the group of people lying on the ground tangled in Blood Phantom Vine, he snorted:

“If it were not for young master’s cautiousness, your mistake today would have caused a great loss to the young master!”

Even when they were tangled in Blood Phantom Vine and facing the threat of death, these JieDan stage experts only issued painful screams but never revealed fear on their face. But the appearance of this person, made dread appear on their faces.

Yang Chen was coldly watching this valiant man, his gaze was fixed on that long scar starting from the left corner of his eye and extending to the right corner of his mouth. Seeing him walking towards him step by step, Yang Chen furiously asked:

“Scarface?”

“Youngster, I hear you were looking for me?”

Scarface didn’t admit to his identity, the scar on his face already was enough:

“If you want to know anything, I will tell you before your death!”

“These people are useless now!”

His gaze fixed on the figure of the person with scar and with one thought, the Blood Phantom Vine began to crazily absorb the more than ten people it was coiled around.

“Senior Scarface, save us!”

“Save me!”

Mournful screams with cries for help echoed, but scarface kept on coldly watching the Blood Phantom Vine wreaking havoc on everyone, without the slightest intention to help them and just coldly snorted:

“Since you have failed young master’s affair, you must die!”

“If you don’t kill them, I will kill them, you attack while holding back, but I’m busy.”

Saying this to Yang Chen, Scarface placed his hand on the dried corpse of one of his companions who had been sucked dry by the Blood Phantom Vine, remaining indifferent.

When the blood colored vine suddenly wrapped up around



Scarface, he didn't make any movements, but an armour of flame suddenly appeared on his body. Once the vine touched it, it immediately shrunk back as if running into its nemesis. No matter what was said, it was still related to the second wood attribute. Running into fire which could subdue the entire wood attribute, it had to cower.

“A good treasure!”

Yang Chen praised. This flame armor was definitely a good treasure. The flames could be seen on top of the armor, this was a mixed magic armor formed by Nanming flame. Not only could it be used for defense, but the armour also had the Nanming flame which could be used to attack the enemy. This was indeed a good magic tool. It had both attack and defense.

Just this magic tool alone was far more powerful than everyone's flying swords added together. Even if Yang Chen was included, the magic weapon on him still could not be ranked at the same level as the Nanming flame armor. Its grade still hadn't been upgraded and it was unable to act as both an attack and defense magic weapon.

Not to mention other things, even the Nanming flame integrated with the armor was a flame which could be compared to the Real Sun Fire. And the one holding this kind of weapon, Scarface, was certainly not a person with a cultivation at the peak JieDan stage as he had heard from the spider woman, Yang Chen judged.

“YuanYing stage?”

Yang Chen's gaze turned chilly. This was the first time after coming to the Greater Mountains that Yang Chen had run into a YuanYing stage expert. This person was surprisingly successful in spreading his reputation as a peak JieDan stage expert, indeed very cunning.

Concealing one's cultivation was not very difficult, but Scarface had already revealed the Nanming armor so it could be assumed that he didn't plan on letting Yang Chen walk away alive.

What astonished Yang Chen was that the spider woman had told him that she had personally seen Scarface strike Gao Yue, but with his cultivation it was impossible for his master to run away from him, so how was this the same thing?

"With your strength of the Foundation stage, your eyesight is pretty good!"

The Scarface still hadn't attacked and was still fixedly looking at him, he even praised Yang Chen a little, which made Yang Chen not know what his intentions were.

"Two months ago, did you attack a woman who had bought Red Sun Metal Soul?"

Regardless of anything, Yang Chen first had to confirm who attacked Gao Yue. Not to mention that Scarface was a YuanYing stage expert, even if he was a Da Cheng stage expert, as long as Yang Chen had confirmed this, together with his destined magic weapon, he would stake his all to get justice for his master.

“Pure Yang Palace’s young lass, has what kind of relation with you?”

Scarface raised his eyebrows as if he hadn’t expected Yang Chen to ask this kind of question. But he didn’t deny, nor try to conceal it, instead he admitted it with great confidence. He even made it clear that he knew Gao Yue was a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace.

“Myself is Yang Chen, the woman you tried to hunt was my master!”

Before coming to the Greater Mountains, he had already hid all things which could prove his identity. In addition to that he cultivated the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, so other people basically could not discern his sect from his cultivation.

Since the enemy himself had admitted it, Yang Chen also did not hide. But at this moment, Yang Chen didn’t have the kind of hate which was carved in his bones and engraved in his heart, on the contrary it had been replaced by gratitude.

With the cultivation that Scarface had revealed right now, not to mention Gao Yue’s cultivation at the initial JieDan stage, even if she had a cultivation at the peak JieDan stage with some life saving treasure in her hand, she still wouldn’t be able to flee from Scarface, if Scarface had truly wanted to kill her.

Gao Yue wouldn’t have been able to leave alive, that meant the other party had been lenient. Thinking of this, cold sweat covered

Yang Chen's forehead. If Gao Yue had run into someone who was not Scarface or if he hadn't been lenient, then wouldn't Gao Yue have died to refine his flying sword? This was completely unacceptable for Yang Chen.

“Eh? Attacking the strong but the weak comes for revenge?”

After learning the fact that Yang Chen only had the strength of the initial Foundation stage, he was even more astonished:

“But it seems you are more difficult to deal with than your master, even your master was no match for this many people.”

“I am indebted to you for being lenient with my master, my gratefulness can't be explained in words!”

But Yang Chen cupped his hands with a serious expression and said that to Scarface.

“You flatter me, when seizing something, if one does not have kill people, then it should be avoided, there is no need to especially thank me.”

Scarface only waved his hand, without taking it seriously:

“You are the same, today I am very happy that you have dealt with this garbage in my place. As long as you tell me, the two things you have won the auction are, what their use is and hand them and your spirit stones over to me, I will spare your life!”

“You have injured my master, so we cannot live together under the same sky, if you want these things then you must deal with me first!”

Yang Chen hadn't changed his intentions in the slightest, with a thought, the five women immediately surrounded Scarface. Their five flying swords began to move around and started to attack.

# Chapter 152 - Gathering Of Yuanying Experts

---

“Sword spell!”

With just one glance, Scarface could see that these five women were working in cooperation with each other. Clearly this was a high grade spell formation. Those henchmen falling before this was really not a shame.

However Scarface didn't put them in his eyes. A few JieDan experts would never be able to suppress a YuanYing stage expert, Scarface firmly believed this.

Confronting those five women, Scarface didn't even pull out his flying sword but instead formed a fist and had unleashed the Nanming armor for defense, which made the five women shiver.

It had to be said that the might of the spell formation of these five women was really unusual, even if they were only at the mid JieDan stage, through cooperation they were able to contend with more than ten peak JieDan stage experts.

But when confronted with a fierce person like Scarface, this sword spell was looking a bit inferior. Under the continuous barrage of Scarface's fierce punches, the circle of the five women was growing bigger and bigger. At this moment, just remaining unscathed under Scarface's attacks was already very exhausting, not to mention surrounding him.

Scarface's every punch was landing with precision, every single punch was attacking the blade of the flying swords and moreover, each punch had a strength which caused a jolt in the body of the master of the sword. If it were not for the Five Direction Profound Female Spell through which these five women were sharing combat information as well as timing all attacks, and if they were replaced with a single person to face these attacks, that person would have surely been annihilated long ago.

“Ants are ants, even if they form a sword spell, they will still remain ants!”

Several tens of punches of Scarface had already enlarged the area of the sword spell by at least three times. Under the excitement of the fight, Scarface burst into loud laughter and got out of the spell formation forcibly and started to walk towards Yang Chen.

Facing the Five Women Profound Spell Formation alone, without even taking out his flying sword. This Scarface had to have a cultivation of at least the middle YuanYing stage. But seeing the results, Yang Chen was delighted in his heart. If these five women had a slightly higher cultivation and all of them were at the peak JieDan stage, then Scarface wouldn't be able to escape without injuries.

While thinking this, Yang Chen could not help but start grumbling about that idiot Mo Qian. Mo Qian was truly stupid; her disciples didn't lack talent, but even after so much time they had spent robbing others, they were surprisingly only at the middle JieDan stage. She truly was a lazy master who hampered the

growth of her disciples.

Even when Scarface was coming towards him, Yang Chen was completely calm and unworried, his gaze fixed on Scarface's face. Suddenly he made a signal with his hand.

“If these little girls won't do, how about including me too?”

She Kui's rough voice echoed behind Scarface.

Scarface was greatly startled. Someone had surprisingly crept behind him silently and he didn't even notice. How was this possible? When he turned around, he saw She Kui's huge fist coming towards him.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The punches of both She Kui and Scarface were knocking against each other continuously, which could shock anyone to their core.

Finally these five women didn't have to confront the tyrannical might of Scarface alone and their five flying swords quickly seperated and began to continuously attack Scarface.

Although Scarface had the Nanming Flame Armor to protect his body, he couldn't rely on it alone. A flying swords would often reach his body and at that time, he would repel it in one punch, but he didn't have any surplus strength to attack these five women as he had to confront She Kui's next punch immediately.



This fight between two YuanYing stage experts in addition to the Five Female Profound Spell Formation had turned the mountain woods in the surroundings to wood chips. Initially, the forte of the five women was speed, which only required a moment's effort to unleash, so those mountains woods and rocks which could possibly hinder these flying swords had to be chopped down. Thus after a few moments, this region had turned completely bare.

She Kui and Scarface were causing explosions using spirit power at the time of punches and because of that, the surroundings seemed like the god of thunder, Lei Gong, had been wreaking havoc. Pits had formed everywhere, a spectacle too horrible to endure.

But there was something strange about this fight: YuanYing stage experts had countless tricks and techniques, but both Scarface and She Kui were fighting with only their fists. She Kui wasn't drawing his sword since he hadn't refined his destined flying sword from his poisonous fang, but why was Scarface also not drawing his sword?

But Scarface was alone fighting against She Kui and those five women, yet he didn't lose the slightest amount of ground. This already showed one thing clearly: that She Kui's cultivation still couldn't keep up with Scarface.

She Kui started howling repeatedly and unleashed his fifth earth true qi, which he hadn't used earlier. Sensing the might of this punch, even if he had the Nanming Flame Armor, Scarface still didn't dare to receive it head on and kept retreating.

After retreating several steps continuously, Scarface attacked ferociously. His complexion changed and an earth shattering pressure suddenly covered everyone. According to his expectations, Yang Chen would lose consciousness immediately and those five women would also not be able to display the complete efficiency of the sword spell and thus he could face She Kui alone.

What Scarface hadn't expected was that, Yang Chen was surprisingly still sitting on that mountain rock, three hundred meters far from the battle region without showing any signs of falling unconscious. Even those five women hadn't slowed even a bit and were still attacking him relentlessly.

Regardless of how much Scarface racked his brains, he was unable to find a reason. Since when could a few middle JieDan stage and an initial Foundation stage youngsters disregard the pressure of a YuanYing expert?

Being driven into corner, Scarface finally revealed his real skill, or at least it seemed so in Yang Chen's eyes. In the previous attacks, Scarface hadn't revealed any killing intent, but the current attack was extremely fierce, as if wanting to destroy the enemy.

Sou!

A light red flying sword suddenly flew out from Scarface's body and in a flash, it obstructed the sword spell of those women. Soon after that, a halo began to condense around Scarface's fist and it

valiantly collided with She Kui's fifth earth True Qi.

With every fist, the ground below them sank a little bit, as if it was being hit a huge iron hammer. The figures of the two people were becoming more and more quick, almost turning into two rays of light for onlookers. The Five Direction Profound Female Spell was already unable to keep up with them.

“Good, I have finally been able to satisfy my cravings after so long.”

Scarface's voice suddenly came through. He had seemingly been able to fight to his heart's content:

“But you are not my opponent, even with these young girls, you are still not my opponent.”

“Together with what?”

Suddenly an unfamiliar voice came from the surroundings, which made Scarface tense.

When had YuanYing experts become so abundant? Furthermore, why were there so many of them in the support of this initial Foundation stage youngster? The Pure Yang Palace shouldn't be so formidable, right? Even scarier was that this expert had also appeared silently. Scarface didn't even notice his traces before.

Xie Sha appeared in his true form from the start. Although the

usually huge sand scorpion wasn't several hundred meters long, it was still several meters in size. After changing forms, his carapace had become even stronger. His huge tongs rushed towards Scarface's waist without any warning, and his tail stabbed towards Scarface from the top, like a sharp blade.

“Another YuanYing stage demon beast?”

Scarface was gobsmacked. Until now, She Kui was fighting with him in human form and he was in the advantage since She Kui didn't have his destined magic weapon. But now Xie Sha had changed into his original shape and was using his physical advantage thoroughly, which made Scarface feel the pressure.

Xie Sha's outer carapace was strengthened by fifth earth True Qi, so even if Scarface's flying sword stabbed it, other than leaving a small trace, it wasn't able to penetrate through.

For a while, the sound of a sword stabbing continued to echo, but even after Scarface's flying sword had stabbed Xie Sha's outer shell several times, it was unable to do anything against it. Apart from the time when Xie Sha attacked him, there was no opportunity of injuring him.

On the other side, She Kui was incessantly bombarding him with punches. Having no alternative, Scarface was forced to use his true ability. The Nanming Flame on the armor began to burn even more brightly and very quickly several swords were formed around Scarface and they began to attack relentlessly.

With the fifth earth True Qi protecting their body, the Nanming Flame was basically unable to injure them, but they also couldn't gain an advantage. Especially, the flame swords which Scarface had seemed like a sword spell and immediately flew and surrounded the two people.

She Kui also shouted loudly and also turned into his original shape. He also was in a compacted form, a several meters long meadow viper revealed his sharp hunting teeth and fiercely rushed forward to attack.

This move had increased the fighting strength of She Kui and Xie Sha. The time for which they could remain in human form was still not long and they were basically unable to display their complete fighting strength when in human form. After turning into original forms, they immediately gained some ground with the help of their instincts for countless years.

At this moment, those five women surrounding the fight couldn't enter anymore. The spirit power that spilled out in a fight between three YuanYing stage experts was enough to critically injure these five women. Under Yang Chen's control, they were stationed near Yang Chen, alertly observing the surroundings.

But the more they fought, the more vigorous Scarface got. Eight flame swords were revolving around his body, stopping all attacks from She Kui and Xie Sha while simultaneously attacking. One more flying sword was whirling around at the back of those two like a viper, waiting for its chance.

Even after they had changed from one to two, Scarface wasn't

showing any signs of being defeated. This kind of strength made Yang Chen even more suspicious. Could it be he only let his master slip off because he didn't want to kill people after robbing them? With the strength he was showing currently, just one strike was enough to kill Gao Yue on the spot.

This Scarface surely had some story behind him. After coming to this conclusion, with one thought he gave an order to Mo Qian and she immediately disappeared from the hall in the Medicine Garden and appeared on top of the region where the three people were fighting. Soon afterwards, without making any sound, she put her flying sword in front of her face and rushed to attack Scarface.

Within the fight, killing intent suddenly appeared in the sky, and in a flash, Scarface sensed the danger, so he placed his flying sword in front of him. Only after obstructing one punch, did Scarface have the opportunity to see what was attacking him from the top.

“Another a YuanYing expert?”

Scarface began to shake in surprise. When had YuanYing experts become so cheap in the Greater Mountains? Going as far as to forming a group to support an initial Foundation stage expert?

At the instant, he saw Mo Qian, Scarface became sure that Mo Qian was also a companion of Yang Chen. Her disguise was similar to all the females at Yang Chen's side: similar clothes, similar black veil to cover the face. The only difference was that of her cultivation, as Mo Qian was at the middle YuanYing stage.

With Mo Qian's appearance the direction of the battle immediately changed. Yang Chen was unable to completely control Mo Qian, therefore he had used simple a hypnosis on her. Under his direct command, disregarding her own safety, Mo Qian was attacking with all of her strength, an extremely reckless position.

She Kui and Xie Sha also realized that Mo Qian was their helper. Therefore, both of them used their huge bodies to act as a shield for Mo Qian, allowing Mo Qian to attack with her full strength. Although these three people hadn't cooperated with each other before, at this moment, their cooperation was flawless.

Confronting, such a difficult enemy, Scarface finally showed his true strength. With a loud howl, he spilled several spell flags, which quickly sank into the ground. Once the spell flags sunk, the entire area was covered with smoke, enveloping everyone within it.

None of those three could see anything, even their spiritual awareness was slightly affected. These spell flags were basically used to hinder their sensation. Once these spell flags were used, the offense of Mo Qian, She Kui and Xie Sha was slowed.

At that time, Scarface was controlling nine flying swords, one sword spell and one lone sword as well as controlling the sword spelling while also resisting three YuanYing stage expert, without losing any ground. His cultivation in Yang Chen's eyes had already reached the late YuanYing stage at that moment.

Yang Chen wanted to form some sort of contact with Scarface at this moment, but when he diffused his spiritual awareness in the

surroundings, a thread of spiritual awareness surprisingly jolted slightly, after sensing an unfamiliar spiritual awareness.

Who was that? Someone was surprisingly spying on them, using spiritual awareness from not too far. Yang Chen was alarmed and immediately, without paying any more attention to the ongoing fight, made a thread of spiritual awareness tightly follow that unfamiliar spiritual awareness to track its owner.

The spiritual awareness was extremely minute. If Yang Chen hadn't cultivated the Three Purities Secrets, he basically wouldn't have been able to sense it. Moreover he only discovered this because there were some slight fluctuations in the spiritual awareness, either because of those spell flags or because of the fight, otherwise Yang Chen was unable to discover it until now.

The spiritual awareness was being released from a tree top, several hundred meters away. This huge Cassia tree had been at the Greater Mountain for countless years. Although it was extremely thick, the treetop was not very high. If one looked from the bottom to the top, everything at the top could be seen.

If it were not for Yang Chen's spiritual awareness drilling into it, he basically would have been unable to determine the thickness of the tree. If an ordinary person had swept his spiritual awareness, he would have believed that this was a part of the forest.

This Cassia tree had turned into a demon and had the innate ability to hide its presence which was even more outstanding than the meadow viper. Other people would be basically unable to discover this anomaly.



Yang Chen thought of something and immediately used the beast controlling secrets and when their spiritual awareness met, he passed on one thought:

“Are we disturbing senior?”

“Eh?”

The Cassia Tree demon was caught off guard, but it immediately became normal again. A trace of extremely formidable spiritual awareness mixed with Yang Chen’s spiritual awareness, which was removed in a flash, leaving behind a trace for communicating with Yang Chen:

“Interesting little calf, how did you all become humans?”

“Senior, my sect has an Appearance Transforming Secrets, which has to be cultivated.”

While communicating with it, Yang Chen didn’t hide anything and directly told it about the Appearance Transforming Secrets.

“Since you have called me senior, this old man also wouldn’t be impolite in taking your things.”

Nevertheless the Cassia Tree Demon immediately accepted, and soon afterwards communicated further:

“In return, how about this old man helps you capture your opponent?”

# Chapter 153 - Patiently Waiting For Revenge

---

Why not? Yang Chen was naturally willing, but he still thought that there was some ulterior motive in this deal, so he could not help but warn him:

“That person is wearing an armor of Nanming Flame, so you must be careful, I want him alive.”

“No problem.”

The Cassia Tree Demon immediately agreed and instructed at the same time:

“Tell that metal attributed woman to get out of the way!”

This was once again an unfathomable mystery, but Yang Chen didn't hesitate and immediately issued a command to Mo Qian and she immediately started to fly towards Yang Chen. Before reaching Yang Chen, she came across the domed hall of the Medicine Garden and entered it.

The three remaining fighters didn't know why Yang Chen had called Mo Qian, but at that moment everyone was so furious and immersed in battle that no one cared about that.

The influence of four YuanYing stage experts fighting had already influenced an area with a radius of several hundred miles long ago. But nobody dared to check it out, for the fear of burning

their own hands and were only listening to the sound of activity, trying to guess what was happening.

The people of the Devil Flame Valley had also discovered this berserk pressure and everyone's complexion was serious. A big battle was taking place so close to the Devil Flame Valley and by the looks of it, it involved several YuanYing experts. What had happened, why were they so angry?

At the same time as people far away were guessing, Yang Chen was also trying to guess what kind of method the Cassia Tree Demon wished to use to deal with Scarface. But he didn't have to think about it for long, as he could see the answer.

A complete mountain, a several metres high mountain, a few hundred metres away from the battle of those people, suddenly flew up from the ground. As if it had been uprooted it began to disintegrate into mountain rocks and began to fall on the battle of those three people from the sky.

Yang Chen could clearly see that the mountain had countless thick roots deeply embedded. These roots were without question the roots of that old Cassia Tree Demon. That old demon had surprisingly used the strength of its own roots and directly pulled out that mountain and smashed it towards the battle.

Those three immersed in their battle did not discover that mountain until it was already on top of their heads and by the time they found out, there was not enough time to take cover, so they only had the option of using their own strength to resist this mountain striking upon them.

Bang!

A loud sound echoed and in the region where the three people were fighting, a throne suddenly appeared on that mountain's peak, formed like a new small mountain.

Yang Chen was not even a little worried that She Kui and Xie Sha would be harmed, they were earth attributed demon beasts, let alone this mountain, even if it was a hundred times larger, they would still be safe and sound especially after refining the fifth earth True Qi.

Scarface on the other hand wasn't at ease anymore. The spell flags couldn't be taken out and regained in time, so they were also smashed. Just as he used earth evasion, he discovered that among the mountain roots in his surroundings, there were countless tenacious roots surrounding him.

Even if he used the Nanming Flame, those roots didn't seem to care much and began to shrink their grip. Soon, only enough space for Scarface to stand was left, making him unable to take even a single step.

The Nanming Flame was burning brightly, but the tree roots secreted a peculiar juice. Regardless of how brightly the flames burnt, it was unable to harm the tree roots.

At this moment Scarface had realized that he had run into a formidable expert and could only stop his vain struggle and allow

the roots to wrap around him. The roots took him out of the mountain base and delivered him in front of Yang Chen.

She Kui and Xie Sha had already turned into human shape and were standing at Yang Chen's side, suspiciously looking at everything. Yang Chen only used a single sentence to explain:

“I ran into a senior of the demon race.”

Since the old Cassia Tree Demon had already made his move, She Kui and Xie Sha very quickly discovered the presence of this old tree demon. Plant type demons sometimes lived much longer than animal type. Seeing this tree demon's cultivation, even if both of their ages were added, calling him senior would still not be an overstatement.

“When did the Pure Yang Palace get so many strong demon beasts?”

Scarface who was delivered in front of Yang Chen had his body covered with tree roots, but he hadn't lost consciousness. Apart from not being able to move, he could still talk consciously. At this moment, he didn't have any thoughts of fleeing, so he suspiciously asked.

“Someone saw you chase my master and attack her once, what do you say?”

Yang Chen sternly asked. The spider woman had said that

Scarface had struck her once, then even if he had some kind of story, Yang Chen would not let him off easily.

“If it were not for my attack, she would not have been sent off flying, but would have been humiliated to death by the young master.”

Even in this situation Scarface hadn't accepted defeat and only snorted, but although his tone was unyielding what he had said already explained everything.

Yang Chen believed these words. With his strength, Scarface had resisted Mo Qian, Xie Sha and She Kui; so if he wanted to get rid of Gao Yue, it was as easy for him as stretching his finger. Even capturing her would only be a small effort. Even if he wanted to capture her, it was still not worthwhile to pretend to attack her.

So regardless of anything else, Scarface had still saved Gao Yue's life. After considering for a moment, Yang Chen transmitted to the old Cassia Tree Demon:

“Senior, I request you to let him go.”

“Aren't you worried that he will attack you immediately after being released?”

The Old Cassia Tree replied with a chuckle.

Yang Chen thought of something and invited the Old Cassia Tree

Demon:

“Senior this junior knows a exceptionally good place to discuss things, I wonder if senior is interested?”

“There is no harm in doing it, where is it?”

The old Cassia Tree Demon was very daring and was simply not worried of Yang Chen playing any tricks.

Yang Chen opened the domed medicine hall and enveloped everyone to take them in. The main body of the old tree demon also entered.

“Everyone, you must not move around randomly so as to prevent injuries.”

Yang Chen warned. In fact, even without Yang Chen warning, seeing the forty nine high grade flying swords fluttering at the top made everyone vigilant.

Mo Qian and her disciples were as if they had returned home and without saying anything they immediately sat down to cultivate without caring for anything else. She Kui and Xie Sha had also entered there for the first time and were looking around curiously, but none of them took even a single step.

The old tree demon had already released Scarface and in a moment he had transformed into a person who had complete



hands and feet, but was still leaning towards the appearance of a large tree and began to curiously look around. Clearly he had already obtained slight success in the Appearance Transformation Secrets within a short moment.

“Your master was chased by the order of the young master of the Hao Yi Manor, not only for her wealth, but also to capture her.”

Scarface didn't have any more ideas to attack, so he was sitting down on the spot and while looking at Yang Chen, he said:

“If you want to go to Hao Yi Manor, I can lead you there.”

“I will destroy Hao Yi Manor for sure, but for what reason are you the henchman of the Hao Yi Manor's young master?”

Yang Chen was not someone easy to cheat. If Scarface didn't give him a reasonable reply for helping him, Yang Chen wouldn't mind beheading him on the spot.

“I have mortal enmity with the Hao Yi Manor. I have infiltrated the Hao Yi Manor, so that one day I can exterminate it.”

Scarface said this without the slightest hesitation:

“I was afraid that the old traitor would recognize me, so I disfigured my face and concealed my cultivation and became his son's henchman, creating disasters everywhere, wishing that some expert would drop in to take revenge.”

These words were quite reasonable. Previously, everyone Yang Chen had asked, had told him that about the Hao Yi Manor's atrocities: they committed all kinds of evils, like plundering and killing people without any hesitation. Almost everyone in the Devil Flame Valley knew about it.

From the beginning, Yang Chen had thought that the young master of the Hao Yi Manor was arrogant and conceited and his stupid actions only spread the bad name, but hearing Scarface's words, it seemed that he was indeed adding fuel to the fire.

He also understood why Scarface had let his master go. Scarface deliberately showed off his scar and then afterwards he would always allow people to leave. After being released, someone could always come back with their sect's strength, that was Scarface's intention.

“Your cultivation is already at the peak of the YuanYing stage, can't you just exterminate the Hao Yi Manor yourself?”

Yang Chen was confused and asked:

“I haven't heard of any Da Cheng stage expert at the Hao Yi Manor.”

“You are slightly less informed.”

Scarface had already determined that although Yang Chen had

the lowest cultivation here, he was the person who was making all the decisions, so he explained to him:

“The master of Hao Yi Manor has four brothers, all of them at the peak of the YuanYing stage. Although I can fight them alone, they have some spell formation which allows them to join together, which is very difficult to deal with.”

“That was passed down by Hao Yi Manor’s ancestor: the four devil spell. The combined assault of these four brothers is even sufficient to hold their ground against a Da Cheng stage expert.”

Scarface explained, without concealing anything:

“I have already tested it once: under their spell formation, I could not last even for the time it takes a stick of incense to burn. If I had not escaped quickly at that time, I would have already died.”

“Therefore you thought of using the bad reputation of their young master and waited for any experts’ retaliation?”

Yang Chen still didn’t understand one thing, so he asked again:

“It could be assumed that this is not your first or second time doing this, so why are the Hao Yi Manor’s people living so nicely until now?”

“That young master, although he is arrogant, it is not like he does not have a brain.”

Scarface vented his anger:

“Before every attack, he would make proper inquiries regarding the victims, whether they had some backing or not, otherwise he would certainly not act. Regarding the time of your master, I was responsible, so knowing that she was from the Pure Yang Palace, I hid that information to draw out someone like you.”

Speaking until here, a strange light suddenly appeared in the eyes of Scarface:

“If little brother can help me eradicate the Hao Yi Manor, allowing me to take revenge and wipe out the grudge, I, Scarface am willing to lay down my life as a present for you!”

Scarface could already see that, although the strength of She Kui and Xie Sha was slightly inferior than him, their bodies were very strong. Even his Nanming Flame Armor couldn't do anything to them. And that old tree demon who had captured him was even more frightening, in one simple move, he had captured him. If that old tree demon were to act, then the demise of the four masters of the Hao Yi Manor was certain.

Even if the old tree demon didn't help, just this domed palace hall where he was sitting right at that moment also had some unknown sword spell. Those forty nine swords were all high grade and one could easily imagine the potential strength of one strike of this sword spell.

After burning with hatred for many years, Scarface had finally seen hope, so he was a little impatient. He had completely devoted himself to his hatred and suffered untold humiliation, but he had still listened to the orders of that young master, bossing him around. He had already reached the last straw long ago, but now that an opportunity presented itself, he hastily wanted to capture it.

“Although you gave my master a way to survive, her serious injury still had something to do with you.”

Yang Chen was attentively watching Scarface and fiercely asked him:

“What do you have to say about that?”

“As long as you help me take revenge, the day when the Hao Yi Manor disappears, I will give up my life to compensate for your master!”

His whole life, Scarface had devoted to hatred, which had become his only reason to live. He hadn't thought much about the matters after his hatred was resolved.

Scarface's circumstances made Yang Chen remember himself. In his previous life, he was similar to Scarface, living only for the sake for taking his revenge. Even in this life, he had been unable to forget that until now. But since the heavens had given him another chance, he also wanted to make his master's life even more beautiful instead of taking revenge.

Yang Chen could understand his mental state, so after thinking to himself for some time, Yang Chen made the decision:

“You don’t need to speak further, I also want to destroy the Hao Yi Manor, this is not for your revenge but for my master’s revenge.”

Upon hearing this, Scarface showed a delighted expression, but before he could say anything, Yang Chen stopped him:

“But since you have injured my master, after this affair is over, I want you to kowtow and apologise to her and do any three things she asks of you, do you agree?”

This was a pleasant surprise, outside of his expectations. Even if Scarface didn’t want to agree, he furiously nodded his head, unable to say anything due to excitement. Impatiently, he immediately stood up, but he finally remembered Yang Chen’s warning that here, he should not take even one step randomly, so after standing up, he didn’t move around, but the expression on his face had become comparatively more impatient.

Yang Chen turned towards the old Cassia Tree Demon and cupped his hands towards him:

“Senior, this junior requests senior to help with something. After that matter is finished, this junior will present you with wood attributed Body Dividing Secrets. Is it possible for senior to agree?”

“Body Dividing Secrets?”

The Cassia tree demon had already cultivated the Appearance Transforming Secrets very quickly. After training for just a short while, he could already speak, even though his speech was rigid.

“What is that?”

“Since senior is a wood attributed demon beast, your main body can take roots at a secure location and your divided body can move around anywhere.”

Yang Chen simply replied:

“As long as the main body is not killed, even if your divided body is destroyed, senior will not die.”

The old tree demon immediately realized the difficulty of Yang Chen’s Body Dividing Secrets, so without much thinking, he directly nodded:

“Ok, we have a deal! When do we attack?”

“Senior, wait for some time!”

After getting the tree demon to agree, Yang Chen turned to Scarface again.

Hearing that Yang Chen had already obtained the support of that old tree demon, Scarface was unable to contain his joy. When Yang Chen faced him, Scarface was unable to express his joy in words.

“Scarface, I can teach you a method which will allow you to break the Four Devil’s Spell and cut the enemy yourself.”

Yang Chen was trying to entice him:

“But in return, after this matter is settled, I want you to give me a strand of the Nanming Flame, do you agree?”

“Yes, I agree!”

How could Scarface not agree? Hearing Yang Chen’s words, he almost started jumping with joy. He clenched his fists, which made a crackling sound, and his excitement could be seen clearly.



# Chapter 154 - Eliminating Hao Yi Manor

---

Hao Yi Manor was very large. It had an area of several hundred mu and had servants protecting the courtyards and so on. They numbered almost a thousand people. Suddenly at midnight at a distance of almost ten miles from the Hao Yi Manor, a few people appeared.

“Senior, can you bind this entire building?”

Yang Chen could see a spell formation protecting Hao Yi Manor and asked the old tree demon at his side.

“This is just a trifling area of a few hundred mu, this old man’s roots can cover even bigger manors.”

The old tree demon looked like an old man at this moment, his beard was very long and he was wearing a type of mottled clothes. His appearance exactly resembled an old man in dire straits.

After saying this, the old tree demon suddenly seemed to sink his legs into the ground. After that, Yang Chen and others immediately sensed large movements from the grounds underneath. After a short moment, the tree demon, with a smile with his feet still inside the ground, said:

“Alright then, I can assure you that nobody can escape from here, you can attack now!”

The old tree demon had lived for countless years, so long that even Yang Chen could not judge the depth of his cultivation. But regarding his words, Yang Chen had no doubt.

“Scarface, regardless of whatever grievance or hatred you have, there is someone you will never attack.”

Yang Chen strongly urged him and particularly warned him:

“That young master, who had designs on my master, he is mine!”

Both eyes of Scarface who had been restraining himself for an extremely long time had turned blood red, the Nanming Flame Armor on his body brightened and the eight flame swords began to hover around his body. He issued a loud shout towards the Hao Yi Manor in the distance and his figure immediately turned into a blur, rushing forward.

She Kui and Xie Sha, standing behind Yang Chen’s body also had similar expressions. When Yang Chen had asked them to come, he had told them they were going to kill people. For a long time, they had not been able to release their killing intent, which was quite unpleasant for these two.

“This Hao Yi Manor doesn’t have any innocent people, so you two seniors can go on a rampage!”

Yang Chen had investigated the Hao Yi Manor properly. There were no innocent people there. Since they were only there to kill

sinner, Yang Chen didn't feel even a bit of guilt:

“But don't rob that young master from me!”

She Kui and Xie Sha burst into a loud laughter and transformed into their original forms. Afterwards they rapidly began to move in towards the manor from two different directions in order to kill.

Soon, a wave of bloodcurdling screams could be heard from the Manor, together with countless terrified cries of help. A few people tried to flee by using their flying swords, but just as they had gone two miles outside, a huge root appeared from somewhere and wrapped around them, throwing them back into the manor.

Yang Chen was watching everything indifferently, but suddenly he loudly yelled:

“For every grievance someone is responsible and for every debt there is a debtor. Young master of this manor, since you intended to rob and kill my master, I will end your dog life!”

After he finished speaking, regardless of whether people had heard it or not, Yang Chen began to take large strides and move towards the entrance of the manor. Only, after walking a few steps, countless blood colored branches suddenly appeared from his body. Reflecting the fire burning far away, he appeared like a monster with tentacles growing all around him.

There were many people in manor which included many experts.

Soon Yang Chen heard the sound of fighting. But the young master should be at the central region with the main forces and from the Nanming Flame which could be seen in the sky from far away, it was likely that Scarface had already begun fighting with those four brothers.

Suddenly five women appeared behind Yang Chen's body, who rushed to the rear of the Manor to kill people. Yang Chen himself remained standing at the main entrance of the Manor, calmly waiting for someone to walk into the trap.

Nobody could escape by flying. All three directions had formidable enemies, so the only way was the main entrance, where Yang Chen was, so there would inevitably be someone who would want to escape from Yang Chen's side.

Apart from the four manor masters, there was no other YuanYing expert in the Hao Yi Manor, so Yang Chen, together with the Blood Phantom Vine, was already able to deal with any remaining people. Moreover, there was still Mo Qian left. The YuanYing expert was ready to mount a sneak attack at all times.

Mo Qian only knew how to obey orders but could not judge the situation by herself, so for fear that she would also get rid of that young master, Yang Chen didn't let her out and kept her only for defence.

The people fleeing from the gate were not able to come in front of Yang Chen. They could not even see Yang Chen's face clearly before they collapsed because of the Blood Phantom Vine's poison mist and afterward they could not even feel the vines dragging

them to Yang Chen.

As long as it was not the young master whom Yang Chen was looking for, Yang Chen would allow these people to serve as the Blood Phantom Vine's nourishment. Within the short period of an hour, the people dying under Yang Chen's hand had already crossed over a thousand.

Finally, the terrible massacre made everyone inside the Manor feel dread when a group of people holding each other suddenly rushed to the main entrance of the Manor.

“Protect the madam, protect the young master!”

Several people who were clearly henchmen, were distributed in the surroundings of a man and woman and rushed out. Seeing Yang Chen's silhouette in the distance, several people immediately rushed towards him.

Hearing the name of madam and young master, a smile immediately made its way on Yang Chen's face. After waiting for a very long time, this young master would finally fall in his hands.

“Kill him!”

Looking at Yang Chen standing at the middle of the road obstructing the way, that young master immediately grew angry and loudly yelled at the few henchmen protecting him.

In all directions of the manor, formidable enemies were fighting. Nobody knew where they had come from. What was most astonishing for that young master was that his most powerful lackey, Scarface, was among these people. He didn't know why Scarface had concealed his strength, but he was surprisingly at the YuanYing stage and was evenly matched with his father and three uncles.

The Manor master had sensed that the events were far from encouraging while engaged with Scarface and had ordered them to flee. Inside the manor was a secret pathway to the outside, but just as they were about to go in, they discovered that the secret path had collapsed because of some explosion.

He wanted to flee using earth evasion, but he suddenly discovered that he was being obstructed by something. In any case, escaping from the old tree demon would indeed be very strange. So there was no other option than running away through the front door.

That sulking young master had just shouted the order of killing him, when he suddenly discovered that those resilient guards of his were curled in front of that person's figure and soon began to start screaming and dry up.

Seeing such a dreadful scene, that young master was scared out of his wits and was just thinking of recoiling back when he heard Yang Chen's scary voice which was cheerful on discovering him:

"Young manor master, since you have come then you must not think of returning."

“You... you, who are you?”

The young master asked almost weepingly:

“What kind of hatred does the Hao Yi Manor have with you that you have formed such an evil scheme?”

Even if he was an idiot, seeing Yang Chen standing at the main gate, he could easily see that Yang Chen was the one giving the orders. The young master thought to himself that he had never seen Yang Chen, so he should not have offended him in any way. Since there was no hatred or enmity, why was Yang Chen leading such a massacre here?

“Young master truly is a person with short memory.”

Yang Chen said with a smile:

“Two months ago, didn’t you order your people to attack on a female JieDan stage cultivator? Furthermore, you also robbed her Red Sun Metal Soul. Has the young master already forgotten this? Killing people and robbing them has probably already become your habit, young master, hasn’t it?”

“What relation does that woman have with you?”

That young master was greatly astonished. He realized that he

had kicked a metal board that time. But how could he know that the female JieDan cultivator had such a fearsome backer like Yang Chen?”

“She was my master!”

Yang Chen slowly said to him, realizing that the young master had remembered.

“How is this possible?”

The young master loudly yelled, as if he had gone mad:

“She isn’t even on your level, how can she be your master?”

“What is so impossible about this.”

Yang Chen smiled and making the Blood Phantom Vine retreat, he alone confronted the young master’s party.

Without the Blood Phantom Vine, everyone immediately probed Yang Chen’s cultivation. But the results gave everyone an even greater surprise. Initial Foundation stage? How was this possible? Of those guards who had charged at him just a moment ago, who wasn’t at the JieDan stage?

While everyone was stunned, the woman behind the young master suddenly yelled and a flying sword rushed towards Yang



Chen to behead him.

Ding!

The ringing sound echoed and that flying sword was obstructed by some unknown flying sword. Soon after, another figure with her face covered appeared from behind Yang Chen and like a cheetah she rushed towards the group of the young master.

That female who had just attacked was caught by her throat by the masked woman, who then flew into the sky with her. All those people suddenly heard the sound of a neck snapping and the body and head of that woman landed in different places. When they heard the sound of the body and head falling to the ground, all of them began to shake uncontrollably.

After this, that masked woman again returned behind Yang Chen and disappeared, as if she had never even appeared.

That young master's eyeballs almost came out after seeing this. An initial Foundation stage youngster had so many powerful bodyguards. By the looks of it, they all seemed to be at the YuanYing stage. How could he not regret? Why did he have to go and provoke such a monster?

“I, I am ready to compensate you! Even that piece of Red Sun Metal Soul, you can have it back!”

That young master's voice started to tremble due to his

nervousness and with shivering hands he pulled out a pile of things from his qiankun pouch:

“These, these are for you, just let me go, just let me go!”

In fact, there were many good items among the things that young master had pulled from his qiankun pouch. Once Yang Chen’s eyes swept over them, he immediately discovered many materials at least as precious as the Red Sun Metal Soul. But how could these things make Yang Chen’s fury disappear?

Looking at this things with an expression of disdain, Yang Chen sneered mockingly:

“Kill you for what? These things are mine already and I can take them after killing you.”

“Since you haven’t killed me for so long, you definitely want to leave me alive!”

Although there was still some slight panic in the young master’s voice, he hastily said things trying to curry favour, as if he had found something to reassure him:

“What do you want? Tell me! As long as I can give it to you, I will give it to you. If you want to know something, I will tell you, but just please don’t kill me!”

“Clever!”

Yang Chen revealed the trace of a smile and praised him:

“Surprisingly you know that since you are still alive, I definitely want something.”

“Tell me, tell me!”

Young Master immediately turned cheerful:

“As long as you tell me and I have it, I will give it to you!”

“In reality, I don’t want anything from you.”

Yang Chen calmly shook his head and continued on:

“You also can’t give me anything I want.”

“Then why haven’t you killed me yet?”

Again the young master turned fearful, he also began to sob:

“You definitely have some aim, definitely some purpose, just tell me!”

“The reason why I still haven’t kill you is this.”

Yang Chen gazed fixedly at those frightened men and women, and calmly said:

“Only that I want you to look at the demise of Hao Yi Manor before you die, that’s all.”

“What?”

Hearing Yang Chen’s reason, the young master’s legs became weak and he immediately sat down on the ground. The women behind his body also began to weep.

That slaughter within the Hao Yi Manor had already advanced to the finale. The painful screams had also become rare and the loudest sounds were coming from the battle between Scarface and the four masters. The hundred or so mu of the Hao Yi Manor were completely razed to the ground.

“Impossible!”

The young master loudly yelled:

“My father and my uncles join together to form the Four Devil Spell! Even a Da Cheng stage expert cannot deal with it, so wishing to exterminate my Hao Yi Manor is absolutely impossible. As soon as my father and uncles kill your people, you won’t be able to escape from your calamity!”

Knowing that Yang Chen would kill him in any case, the young master actually released a strong pressure and began to threaten Yang Chen:

“Let us go right now, I am the master, so I will make the previous matter forgotten, otherwise, we will destroy you indiscriminately! My father and uncles will certainly not let you go, you and your people will all be killed!”

As if fulfilling the prophecy, just as the young master's words had barely left his mouth, the victor was also decided in the fight of those five people in the Hao Yi Manor. With a rumbling sounds, a glaring light continued to flicker incessantly and soon afterwards, a flame sword began to wave around and the silhouettes of several people were thrown out not very far from them.

There was one thing common among the four people who were falling down: everyone was burnt completely and while falling their bodies began to disintegrate. By the time they had fallen to the ground, they had already turned into pieces of burnt meat.

But that young master and the few women sitting behind him, who were extremely familiar with those four figures involuntarily yelled madly and then began to sob loudly. Those four people were clearly the four master of the manor, but they had already been annihilated.

Scarface's figure appeared immediately afterwards and looking at those people in front of Yang Chen, he burst into a loud laughter:

“There is still some filth remaining, receive your death!”

And he directly rushed towards them.

Before the young master could turn his head around, he already heard a series of screams. When he turned around, all he saw was the ground littered with dead bodies. At the last moment, Scarface had remembered that the young master was Yang Chen's prey, so he hadn't touched him.

After the death of these people, Hao Yi Manor had become completely quiet, without any more screams. Soon, She Kui, Xie She and those five women appeared from different directions. While walking, She Kui showed a cheerful expression after fulfilling his craving, just like Xie Sha next to him.

“For every grievance someone is responsible and for every debt there is a debtor.”

Yang Chen walked a few steps and walked to face the young master:

“Young master of the manor, since you dared to move against my master, even a hundred deaths cannot save yourself. Farewell!”

After speaking, he slashed the flying sword in his hand once and that young master's head immediately flew. After that, Yang Chen caught the severed head at his hair bun began to walk away with blood still dripping from the severed head.

# Chapter 155 - Fate Of The Auction House

---

Hao Yi Manor had been completely razed to the ground, Scarface hadn't left even a single person alive. The entire manor was like an impenetrable fortress being surrounded by the old tree demon, so nobody was able to escape.

That young manor master's head was preserved properly by Yang Chen, who wanted to return it to his master. This mess of the Hao Yi Manor still required someone to straighten it, however.

There were dead bodies of thousands of people, as well as their belongings, which wouldn't decay and disappear with the dead bodies. Thus, with Scarface's advice, Yang Chen and the others started gathering the spoils of battle.

For all those years, the people of the Hao Yi Manor had robbed a lot of good things in the Greater Mountains. Just that young master alone had robbed materials and magic weapons worth several high grade spirit stones in a decade, then what about his father and the other three brothers, who were even more greedy?

Yang Chen's sword box required large a number of flying swords, so he wasn't polite and took all of the flying swords he could. In addition to that, the Red Sun Metal Soul wasn't something which he would let go. After all, it was something which Gao Yue had found for him after a long search, so he wanted to get the hold of it no matter what.

The remaining things were divided equally among all of them.

The Hao Yi Manor was quite rich, all of these things had filled up almost a hundred ordinary qiankun pouches. Finally, since nobody was in the mood to fight over things among themselves, the qiankun pouches were divided evenly. Anyone could get anything, so nobody had an advantage nor were they at a loss.

Scarface, who had finally taken his revenge, lit a fire and burned the entire Hao Yi Manor to the ground. From then on, there was no Hao Yi Manor in this world.

Scarface also abided by his promise as he took out one of the eight flame swords on the Nanming Flame Armor and gave it to Yang Chen as a present.

Scarface hadn't actually believed that Yang Chen would teach him some method to deal with the Four Devil Spell, but the things that Yang Chen had taught him afterwards were completely logical, allowing him to fulfill his desire of revenge personally.

With Old Tree Demon to keep watch as well as She Kui, Xie Sha and Yang Chen to assist him, Scarface faced the four masters of the Hao Yi Manor with great confidence. Once the fight began, the enemy had sensed that Scarface was very difficult to deal with and thus immediately unleashed the Four Devil Spell.

This Four Devil Spell was the unique skill of those four brothers to save their lives, which they had stolen from a bag of some expert after they had sneakily attacked on him during their adolescence. When it was unleashed, it would reveal endless might. Enemies could only save their lives by escaping at high speed, otherwise even a Da Cheng stage expert would be unable to do anything in



front of this.

But Scarface discovered that the method which Yang Chen had taught him was useful. Not just useful, but extremely useful.

Yang Chen did not tell him to look for some particular flaw in the Four Devil Spell and attack it, but rather told him about the places where the attacks of spell could not reach him. If the Four Devil Spell was launched, it had extremely formidable strength, but it had one fatal weakness: that was that there were some positions which could be used for cover. Very few people knew about this secret, but unfortunately for them, Yang Chen was one of them.

Perhaps just missing one or two attacks would not have mattered much, but, if all the attacks are missed at every decisive moment, then it could be a fatal weakness of the Four Devil Spell or rather, fatal weakness for the people who had arranged the Four Devil Spell.

Continuously sending attacks into empty air and the backlash which it brings with itself could accumulate on the body of the people operating the spell step by step. When Scarface began to use this method of hiding, the four manor masters were already doomed to die.

Unfortunately, the four manor masters did not know that they would have to face such serious consequences and only kept believing that this time the attack hadn't hit because the enemy was dodging quickly. After a few hours, because the backlash was accumulating, the peak YuanYing stage experts finally died on the spot, being burned from inside.

Ecstasy, astonishment and disbelief. Looking at the four manor masters who were defeated by himself alone, Scarface had very complicated emotions.

Currently Scarface couldn't see Yang Chen as just a simple youngster anymore. He was clearly just an initial Foundation stage youngster, but he knew far more things than the YuanYing stage experts present. Moreover, because of Yang Chen, he was able to take the revenge with his own hands, so he had an almost blinding worship for Yang Chen, to the stage of following his every word.

But after his immense hatred had been settled, Scarface suddenly felt that he didn't have the drive to move forward anymore. He did not know what should he do in the future. Should he go and train so as to search for the path for ascension or should he stay at the Greater Mountains? Scarface was at a loss.

“No need to think about it, there is still one great enemy left!”

As if he had realized Scarface's dilemma, Yang Chen stepped forwards and patted on his shoulder:

“The auction house of the Devil Flame Valley, they are also one of the main culprits!”

Scarface had been the number one henchman, so he was completely aware of the auction house's role in the robbing and the killings. He agreed and obediently began to walk towards the Devil Flame Valley behind Yang Chen.

She Kui and Xie She were also completely satisfied. Even when they were at the Desolate Valley, they hadn't been able to kill people so freely. Slaughtering the innocents and killing scoundrels to wipe out a grudge were two completely different things. They were completely calm.

The auction house also had a great influence, but as long as there were people, someone was bound to give in to greed. All of the information Hao Yi Manor's young master obtained was most likely received from the young master responsible for the affairs of the auction house. That one young master was responsible for supplying the information while this young master was responsible for killing people and looting their things, which were then divided between the both of them.

Just this point had already broken the rules of the auction house, moreover the rules which they themselves had determined. That's why the auction house had provided them with special mantles for hiding their appearance, which were fitted with special compasses to leave a trail. The rules they themselves had set had been thoroughly broken by them behind the stages.

Yang Chen wanted the old tree demon precisely to deal with the auction house. Previously, at the Hao Yi Manor, he had just assisted them for their friendship, but the auction house was the main target where his help was needed.

Compared to Hao Yi Manor, the defenses of the auction house were even tighter and they also had more experts. Moreover, in case it was not handled properly, the entire Devil Flame Valley

could rise against them.

The most troublesome thing was that the auction house itself was a magic weapon. The huge auction house not only offered a place for auctions, but was also a magic weapon with absolute defence. As long as people entered it, they would be safe from all kinds of attacks. If this kind of magic weapon was not taken care of quickly, attacking someone was just impossible.

The auction house hadn't fallen until now because of that reason.

Three days later, Yang Chen's party arrived outside of the Devil Flame Valley. Yang Chen's aim was simple: the master of the auction house and that young master were both people who had a connection to the attack on his master, they had to die.

Hao Yi Manor's information still hadn't been passed to here. In fact, there was no possibility that it would be passed on to here. If not for someone to pass through there by chance or someone who was visiting a friend, then the Hao Yi Manor, which had already been turned to ruins would never be discovered by anyone.

As long as it was not discovered, the people of the auction house would not notice for time being, which would be even more convenient for Yang Chen. This was also the reason why Yang Chen had first made his move on Hao Yi Manor. If he had first attacked the auction house, which had great fame and prestige, maybe the young master of the Hao Yi Manor would have already run away.

In half a day, a rumor began to spread like wildfire in the Devil Flame Valley. The auction house had been colluding with Hao Yi Manor and was involved in the business of killing people to rob them, which Scarface was completely aware of. This rumor was being spread by Scarface himself.

After some time, the place, the people who participated, the items sold by auction and what things they had seized or planned to seize were all made public. In fact, this was no longer being considered a rumor, but rather a list of items of the victims.

Anyone with a brain could immediately discover that the items sold by the auction house on the list were all real and there was one thing common with all these items: their whereabouts were all currently unknown.

The people who had participated in the attack were also recognized. When the people recalled their whereabouts at that time, it all seemed true as proclaimed on this list.

With the analysis of this list and adding in the information which Scarface had provided, everything became clear. The reputation of the auction house reached rock bottom in a very short amount of time.

The master of the auction house did his utmost to block this information, but who could block information when they wanted within the Greater Mountains? The more it was blocked, the more it appeared that they were guilty. The entire matter was spread, bubbling and gurgling. People did not dare to pass by the auction house's surroundings anymore.

This was still not over. Most fierce was the appearance of those compasses. These few compasses could search for any person who was wearing the appearance hiding cloak. So anyone who attended the auction could be tracked.

Almost everyone in the Devil Flame Valley had an appearance hiding cloak. After a few confirmations, all of the rumors had ironclad evidence. People who possessed the appearance hiding cloak immediately destroyed it as soon as they heard the information.

No one had anticipated that the appearance hiding cloaks, which facilitated their participation in the auction, were actually a way to their own demise. Fortunately, the majority of them were poor and could not afford good items, otherwise there would have been no difference between them and the people who had gone missing.

The auction house had thoroughly become the target of everyone's criticism. Everyone in the Devil Flame Valley was watching it like a tiger watching its prey. If it was not for the formidable strength of the auction house, these people would have already surrounded it.

The master was greatly alarmed, but he didn't dare to take any action. This time, he also couldn't complain to the young master, after all he had also agreed to many things tacitly. Those two people were tied by karma. One could not escape without the other.

He had broken the rules of the auction house, which the owner also knew now, so apart from death, he didn't have any choice. Even if the young master was the owner's favourite son, it would be very difficult for him to escape punishment.

Although the master had thought of running away, he knew about the owner's formidable influence, if he took the responsibility together with the young master, perhaps there was a chance for him to save his life, but if he ran away just before the battle, then his life would be more miserable than death.

The only option right now was to retreat within the auction house and maintain his guard and afterwards send information to notify the owner. As for settling the matter, that was already not something which a trifling master, who was only responsible for looking after the regular affairs of the auction house, could resolve.

The reason why the auction house had been standing tall in the Devil Flame Valley of the Greater Mountains was their formidable strength, not just their manner of doing business. Although such a large affair has occurred, the master was convinced that those people in the Devil Flame Valley could only keep on shouting to express their resentments, but attacking the auction house was not possible. If the master did not want them to, those people could not even enter the main gate of the auction house.

Despite however clear that was, the master would never have thought that someone would actually attack the main gate or even use such an unreasonably shocking method to attack. This was simply unimaginable to the master.

Suddenly the people of the Devil Flame Valley had witnessed a shocking scene which made them unable to believe their eyes.

The entire auction house was suddenly uprooted from the ground and thrown into the air. Within the air, it was once again forcibly pulled down and ruthlessly smashed into the ground.

Nobody understood what had happened, but everyone knew one thing: that the attack on the auction house would bring great trouble.

The master's endless pride in the defense of the auction house was shattered like glass in front of the old tree demon, who had lived for countless years.

A series of strikes began to crazily fall on the outer surface of the auction house. The master frightfully discovered that the defense of the auction house was being stripped layer by layer. Every strike was critically damaging to the auction house. After a few attacks, the auction house was completely shaken up by these strikes.

Bang!

At the same time as the auction house's final layer of defense was broken, the huge auction house disintegrated.

Several people began to come out, like bees evacuating from a honeycomb. But just as they were about to come out, they



immediately sensed a pressure as if thirty thousand catties were falling from the sky, which immediately made them recall the previous attacks on the auction house.

Nobody dared to resist and immediately rushed out, but they couldn't see an enemy, yet they could sense endless killing intent everywhere.

“Where is the master? Where is the young master?”

A voice suddenly echoed in everyone's ears, but the owner of the voice could not be seen.

Everyone's eyes involuntarily turned to the master and the young master. The identities of those two were immediately exposed under the questioning gazes of everyone.

“Senior! Myself is greatly terrified in your presence! If I have offended senior in anyway, I request senior to come out and tell myself personally, and I will make sure that senior is immediately handed over the compensation by the owner!”

Just recently their fraud had been exposed and now this attack came, there was no need to ask, both matters were definitely related. The master could only step in personally, hoping that the enemy would give them a chance to negotiate, to give face to the owner.

“If you and that young master die, I will not investigate further!”

That strange voice echoed in their ears again:

“Your auction house is struck off the face of the earth from now on!”

# Chapter 156 - My Courtyard Has Abundant Spirit Power

---

Demanding their master's and young master's life, how could the people of auction house agree? Perhaps the master could be abandoned, but who would dare to abandon the young master? Their only choice was to fight to the death.

The problem was that the enemy did not give them this chance. While the master and the young master were still hesitating, the ground suddenly opened up and engulfed both of them. No matter that they were both at the peak JieDan stage, all struggle was in vain and they mysteriously disappeared in front of everyone's eyes, leaving behind a group of guards and administrative people, poking the place as if they were dreaming.

This time the people of the auction house were in great trouble. The master was expendable, but the young master was also taken away and as everyone had heard, the intention of the enemy was to take the young master's life. If the owner knew about this, all of the auction house's guards could forget about leaving there alive.

Someone among them suddenly shouted loudly:

“The young master is dead, quickly run for it!”

Rumble! The group of people looking at each other in dismay began to flee. In any case, this world was extremely large, even the owner would not pointlessly search for a few guards. If their cultivation base was strong enough, they could escape to some

place far away before it was too late and remain alive.

They were clever enough to even take away the items of the auction house and before the people of the Devil Flame valley could understand what had happened, this place was completely deserted, without the trace of any person.

The auction house of the Devil Flame Valley, which had a large amount of fame and prestige as well as the most secret information in the region, had surprisingly been completely annihilated in a single day. The people of the Devil Flame Valley then recalled all of those pitiful people who had been killed because of the auction house. Maybe they had some special patron. Now, since the complete truth had been revealed, it would certainly be investigated for a lot of people.

Because of this, the Devil Flame Valley would certainly become a place for quarrels where normal cultivators couldn't stay for long. In fact, many people had already begun to pack their things and escape.

Many people were very remorseful. They had, with great difficulty, found such a good encampment in the Greater Mountains, but now they were forced to depart. It was no surprised that they were unwilling.

But strictly speaking, this could not be blamed on outsiders. If they hadn't been so apathetic towards these matters, the auction house wouldn't have become so arrogant. Ultimately nobody could be judged as completely right or wrong.

Yang Chen was not responsible for the Devil Flame Valley in any way, so for him, since his master had met with misfortune here, he did not care that these people were being forced to leave. Him not wiping out the Devil Flame Valley was already giving too much face to them. As for where the people of Devil Flame Valley would go, it was not his problem.

That old Cassia Tree Demon was definitely very strong. He had dealt with the auction house almost by himself. Even the master and the young master were captured by him alone.

When the two people were brought in front of Yang Chen, their cultivation had already been sealed. When they saw Yang Chen, both of them immediately realized what sort of mistake they had made this time.

An initial Foundation stage cultivator coming to the Devil Flame Valley should have already thrown up a lot of questions. Moreover someone who could take out a top grade spirit stone just like that, which was something even the young master could not do, it would only be a miracle if he did not have any great power backing him.

What kind of stupidity had risen in the young master's mind at that time, that he got the idea to attack Yang Chen? Maybe it was Yang Chen's wealth or his low cultivation making him seem like a good target.

“Fellow Daoist, Fellow Daoist, our young master is stupid! He

should not have offended you, but by all means, you also should not lower yourself to our young master's level."

As the master saw Yang Chen, he spoke as if a will to survive had rushed forth in him:

"I will kowtow and apologize to you here! Whatever compensation you want, I offer you double! As long as you let us go, any condition is not a problem!"

Within that master's eyes, Yang Chen was so young and had so much authority, he would surely not back down so, but as long as he lowered his head and apologized to Yang Chen, admitting his guilt and giving him compensation, maybe it would cool off Yang Chen's anger and allow them to live.

Other people might not know, but that master had seen many such a situation with the second generation young master. He would get angry over small things in one moment and afterwards the matter would be settled when people flattered him and offered compensation.

But the master could not even imagine that Yang Chen wanted to kill him not for himself, but for his master Gao Yue. That young master also hadn't thought that the female who seemed to be insignificant, whom they had attacked two months ago, was the real trigger here.

"These words you should say to those dead people!"

Yang Chen sneered and took a step forward. He was just about to attack.

“Fellow Daoist, do you know who is behind us? Do you know who the owner is?”

Since begging for forgiveness wasn't working, that master immediately switched to another tactic: he started threatening Yang Chen:

“The Young Master is the owner's first son. The owner is extremely fond of him! If you dare to harm him, even if you run to ends of this world, you won't find a place to hide!”

Yang Chen still hadn't said anything, but the master had seemingly already anticipated what Yang Chen was going to say and spoke in advance:

“You think that your identity is a mystery and the owner cannot find you. But the owner will certainly investigate the last auction first in this matter. The things you purchased were special and your bids were huge, which will certainly catch the owner's attention and at that time, the first person owner will find will be you.”

“Oh?”

Yang Chen seemed to be a little surprised:

“Then tell me one thing, who is the owner in the end?”

Once he heard these words, the master immediately relaxed. He was not worried of negotiating with people, what he was most afraid of was that the other person would not even give him a chance to negotiate. As long as he could mention the owner's name, maybe they could get an opportunity to leave there alive.

“If your master is very popular and affluent, maybe he is willing to pay a huge price to redeem the head of the son he doted on most.”

Yang Chen's words, immediately dumbfounded the master. He was thinking that the conversation was going very good, but now he was speechless again.

“Redeem the head?”

That young master was already scared silly on the spot. What did Yang Chen mean by those words? He couldn't remain silent anymore as the head in question right now was his!

“You young master, for every grievance someone is responsible and for every debt there is a debtor. You have not only broken the rules you set yourself, you have also injured my master.”

Yang Chen's complexion darkened:

“There is no need to say anything about you being some powerful



person's favourite son, since you have dared to lay hands on my master, even if your father was the Jade Emperor, he wouldn't be able to save your head!"

After he finished speaking, Yang Chen simply didn't give any more opportunities to the young master and the master to say anything and, in one slash, the young master's head flew into the air and was then caught by Yang Chen. Then his gaze turned towards that master.

The master was already paralyzed because of fear. How could he have anticipated that Yang Chen would not leave any route for retreat and directly chop off the young master's head? Looking at the head from which blood was still dripping, that owner had almost gone into a daze.

"You, you, you killed the young master!"

That master was pointing his finger towards Yang Chen and said this in a tone that clearly expressed that he did not dare to believe what he had just seen. His expression had also turned similar to his tone, not daring to believe what had happened.

"Now you can tell me if your master will be willing to spend a price to redeem his favourite son's head!"

But Yang Chen slowly spoke, raising the head in the face of that master.

“You, you, you will surely die!”

That master’s eyes had already started to turn blurry. That young master’s head was chopped off in front of him. This was already something which escaped the range of things that he could believe. In shock, he couldn’t even say anything else.

“How can you still call yourself a cultivator with such small guts?”

Yang Chen looked at that master who had nearly gone insane and spoke with disdain. Shaking his head, he slashed his sword at his head.

“For every grievance someone is responsible and for every debt there is a debtor. Since you offered that information about my master, you must also die!”

Saying his customary phrase, he chopped off the master’s head. Afterwards he froze both severed heads and placed them in his qiankun pouch.

“Senior, here is your Body Dividing Secret!”

After the matter was finished, Yang Chen walked to the tree demon and, using the Beast Taming Secrets, he immediately delivered the chants of the Body Dividing Secrets to the tree demon using his spiritual consciousness.

The old tree demon, who had taken the form of an old man, nodded with a smile. Then, without saying anything else, he closed his eyes and began to comprehend. Yang Chen also did not say anything and began to wait, calmly looking at that tree demon comprehending it.

After a good while, that tree demon opened his pale yellow eyes and took a deep sigh:

“Wonderful! What a treasure!”

“Since senior is happy, it is all good!”

Yang Chen replied with a smile and then asked:

“I wonder if senior has any future plans?”

“Plans?”

That old tree demon chuckled:

“To look for a secure place to plant this main root. Afterwards I’ll wait for the Yin Fire tribulation! I have already suppressed the Yin Fire tribulation for countless years, again and again. Fortunately, with your Body Dividing Secrets, if I fail, only this incarnation will be destroyed and I will still be able to live!”

Hearing these words, everyone was greatly startled. Burning by

the Yin Fire was one of the tribulations which peak YuanYing stage had to experience. That old tree had surprisingly been suppressing it. What level of cultivation did he even have? Apart from Yang Chen, nobody present had heard of such a fierce person.

The later words of that old tree demon expressed his gratitude towards Yang Chen. With this Body Dividing Secrets, the Yin Fire tribulation would be shifted completely to his other body and the main part would not be injured, so the tribulation could be passed easily.

Yang Chen's words were very clear. This technique was especially for plant attributed demon beasts to pass their Yin Fire tribulation. No matter how much the other people envied it, for them it was not very useful. She Kui and Xie Sha were still fine, but Scarface couldn't conceal the astonishment in his eyes.

"I wonder if senior is interested in moving to this junior's sect?"

Yang Chen tried to entice him with a smile:

"This junior is owner of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, which has abundant spirit power, where safety is also ensured. If senior is willing, my entire sect, from top to bottom will come out to welcome senior."

"Haha, you junior, in the beginning I thought that you were a small calf, but only now I know you are not."

That old demon spilled Yang Chen's intentions with a smile:

“That young Meadow Viper and Sand Scorpion have told me everything. Aren't you intending to make me enter that Eccentric People Hall of yours?”

“If senior is willing, then you naturally may enter.”

Yang Chen smiled and without showing the slightest embarrassment over having his intentions revealed he said:

“If you are not willing, then you can come as a guest and stay in my courtyard as long as you want!”

“Aren't you worried that other people will complain?”

That old man smoothed out his beard and said with a smile:

“I have heard that a lot of people are coveting that courtyard of yours!”

Seeing that She Kui and Xie Sha had completely sold him out, Yang Chen fiercely glared at these two. Although they were at the YuanYing stage, under Yang Chen's glare, they still lowered their heads, feeling guilty.

Actually, both of them had wanted to get the tree demon to join the Pure Yang Palace, because if that happened, their Eccentric

Hall's strength would increase by leaps and bounds and they would have even greater face in the sect. These two, who had already tasted the feeling of being in an organization, absolutely didn't want to return to living lonely.

“It is my courtyard, what can anyone else say?”

Yang Chen once again turned to that old tree demon and said with a smile:

“If senior really doesn't want to come in contact with those people, then please feel free to just plant your main body there. Don't tell me that you think other people would even say a thing about the type of plants I grow in my courtyard?”

Although his tone was slightly disrespectful, his meaning was completely clear. With the cultivation of the old tree demon, if he didn't become arrogant at the courtyard after passing the Yin Fire tribulation, even the Palace Master wouldn't be able to discover it. The clear proof of that would be that the old tree demon had not been discovered at the Greater Mountains for so long. After all, not everyone had a spiritual awareness as sharp as Yang Chen.

“Fine then. This old man will bother you as a guest for a few days. That Eccentric Hall, if you all think that there is some necessity, then this old man will immediately enter!”

That old demon nodded with a chuckle and agreed to Yang Chen's request, but he also didn't hide his desires:

“This old man has always thought that you have something which will allow this old man to ascend. That thing is very close, but I couldn’t find it. So following you will also be a good opportunity.”

Hearing that old demon’s words, Yang Chen immediately thought of the PengLai Divine Wood branches planted in the Medicine Garden. Could it be that the old demon was talking about them? Perhaps because the old tree demon had entered the domed palace hall, he was able to sense the PengLai Divine Wood nearby. After all, the domed palace hall was the lid of the Medicine Garden’s bottle, both were parts of a whole, so the old tree demon saying that it was nearby made complete sense.

If he was really talking about the PengLai Divine Wood branches, then Yang Chen had to admire the sharpness of the old tree demon. But thinking about this, it seemed to be normal. After all, the old tree demon possessed the wisdom of countless years. His spiritual awareness was extremely formidable. In his entire past life, Yang Chen had barely met any experts of the Mortal World, so it was not strange that someone could sense them.

But Yang Chen would certainly not hand that thing to the old tree demon, not to mention that he didn’t even know what kind of trouble this old tree demon with such a high cultivation could cause. Until now, the old tree demon hadn’t done anything, but he wanted to obtain a spirit grade object like PengLai Divine Wood. That really would be too easy for him. Even the Body Dividing Secrets were only given to him after he had settled the matter of the auction house, Yang Chen certainly did not want to make an example showing that he was a person from whom things could be obtained without any work.

He had finally taken his revenge, and also obtained the Heaven Measuring Ruler as well as a Qilin's horn, while retrieving his master's Red Sun Metal Soul and roping in a powerful expert, not to mention that the three people from the Pure Yang Palace had obtained around seventy or so qiankun pouches, which was almost three fourth of the harvest from Hao Yi Manor, their profits were enormous, which could make anyone drool.

The circumstances of Scarface were unique and he could be said to have committed many evils previously. Although his cultivation was formidable, Yang Chen hadn't invited him. The Pure Yang Palace surely didn't want an expert who had such a complicated background, even if he was at the late YuanYing stage.

But Scarface had already agreed to go to the Pure Yang Palace to apologise to Gao Yue and had moreover agreed to do three things for her. So after returning, Yang Chen would have to find another way to settle him.

The party again started their journey and the goal this time was the Pure Yang Palace at MeiQing Mountain.



# Chapter 157 - Master Has Still Not Woken Up

---

Everyone was travelling within Yang Chen's Flying Shuttle, flying very quickly. From the Devil Flame Valley to the edge of the Greater Mountains and then rushing from the edge of the Greater Mountains to the Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen only needed a fortnight's time.

The speed of the Flying Shuttle was very quick, which even startled Scarface and that old tree demon. Despite being amazed, that Cassia Tree Demon didn't let any surprise appear on his face, but Scarface wasn't the same.

What a fast Flying Shuttle Yang Chen possessed! If at that time Gao Yue had it, then Scarface and his people would not be able to catch her. Scarface really couldn't imagine how big the strength of the Pure Yang Palace was.

But Yang Chen did not care about this. He had spent half a year in the Greater Mountains, of which almost five months were spent on the journey. The time to handle these affairs was not very long. At that moment, he was very anxious, thinking about if Gao Yue's injury had healed or not and had if it affected her cultivation.

Normally, since the Great Master was taking care of Gao Yue while returning, Yang Chen should have been relieved, but he had a bad premonition: only, he could not return immediately and had to take care of these matters.

The first stop was naturally the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. Just as they reached there, everyone sensed the abundant spirit power, which was almost at the point of solidifying and successively took a deep breath.

No wonder Yang Chen was saying that the spirit power at his place was abundant: after all, he really had a place with such a profound spirit vein. That old tree demon continued to inhale long breaths, as if trying to absorb all of the vaporized spirit power in the air and kept praising:

“What a good place! What a good location!”

Although Scarface didn't say anything, his eyes revealed a sense of deep regret, which he couldn't conceal. Big sects really were big sects: even their cultivation regions were so luxuriant.

She Kui and Xie Sha had their own places. After arriving, they immediately returned to their own courtyard. The Cassia Tree Demon and Scarface were visitors, so Yang Chen led them to his room, so that they could take a rest for some time, and afterwards he led Scarface towards Gao Yue's room, while letting the old tree demon stay to get familiar with the environment.

The Second Fierce Yang Courtyard was not very big. They reached Gao Yue's courtyard within a moment, but Yang Chen was astonished to see that the Great Master was still at Gao Yue's side.

Looking at his Great Master, Wang Yong, Yang Chen's heart began to beat loudly: could it be his master's injury had worsened?

He hastily stepped forward to perform his salutations and enquire about master's injuries.

“Who is this?”

Wang Yong didn't reply to Yang Chen's question at first, and instead asked about Scarface, wrinkling his brows.

Scarface hadn't concealed his cultivation at this moment, so when he displayed his formidable strength of the late YuanYing stage, Wang Yong became vigilant. If Yang Chen was not the one who had led him here, Wang Yong would in all likelihood have already begun to interrogate him.

“He is Scarface, he had chased master, working under someone's order and had secretly allowed her to escape alive.”

Yang Chen didn't hide anything and immediately answered.

Hearing that Scarface was the one who had chased Gao Yue, Wang Yong's once again creased his brows, but then he immediately relaxed them. With this kind of cultivation, if Scarface had wanted to kill Gao Yue, then he would have already killed her and would not have only injured her, allowing her to be saved. Generally speaking, it could be considered as a favor from Scarface for saving Gao Yue's life. When he thought of this, Wang Yong's complexion brightened again.

“What is fellow daoist Scarface doing here?”

For the time being, Wang Yong didn't speak with Yang Chen regarding Gao Yue, and instead received his guest first. Regardless of anything, Scarface was still a guest, so Wang Yong also adopted the attitude of a host.

“Senior Scarface has come to apologise to master.”

Before Scarface could open his mouth, Yang Chen took the place of Scarface to explain everything:

“Senior Scarface has been feeling guilty since he had injured master by mistake and is determined to apologise to master personally.”

On one side was Yang Chen talking, and on the other there was Scarface, nodding. Seeing this kind of behaviour Wang Yong couldn't say anything and had to nod, but he immediately stopped him:

“Fellow daoist Scarface, the wound on my disciple is rather deep and she still hasn't woken up, I am afraid that fellow daoist won't be able to fulfill your desire at this time.

Hearing this, Yang Chen was startled and, not caring about Scarface or Wang Yong anymore, directly rushed towards Gao Yue's room.

Wang Yong understood Yang Chen's impatience and didn't say

anything, but instead extended his hand towards Scarface and invited him:

“I request fellow daoist to come with me, I just had some issues which I wanted to discuss with fellow daoist. My Pure Yang Palace is simple and crude, so please forgive us for not serving you properly!”

When Scarface heard that Yang Chen’s master still hadn’t woken up, he knew it meant trouble. He estimated that Wang Yong wanted to ask questions about the technique he had used at that time and other things, but he also could not decline, so he followed Wang Yong to the guest room.

Once Yang Chen entered Gao Yue’s room, he immediately saw Gao Yue’s female servants waiting on her. Furthermore, Gao Yue, the person herself, was lying down on the couch, motionlessly, as if she was asleep.

Seeing Yang Chen enter, few female servants hurriedly saluted him. But Yang Chen did not pay much attention to it, hurriedly nodded and directly walked to Gao Yue’s bedside and extended his hand to touch her vein and he began to check carefully.

Her pulse was steady and did not resemble that of an injured person in the least. After checking, he also slightly relaxed. Apparently, those serious injuries she had received that day, had recovered at least on the surface.

“Senior disciple Yang, master’s inner injuries have already been

healed.”

One servant on the side hastily told Yang Chen:

“But it seems as if her spiritual awareness has been heavily injured, and had moreover been excessively consumed, such is why she had been unable to wake up until today. Great Master Wang has tried all kinds of methods and asked various people, but he was still unable to do anything.”

Yang Chen’s brows creased again. He released his spiritual awareness and began to pass it into Gao Yue’s body through his hand, directly entering her spirit sea.

Once he made contact with Gao Yue’s spirit sea, Yang Chen couldn’t help but immediately take a deep breath: The spirit sea of ordinary cultivators was supposed to be like a calm lake, but Gao Yue’s spirit sea was like an active volcano, wreaking havoc everywhere. Her weak spiritual awareness rolling around in Gao Yue’s spirit sea basically didn’t seem able to calm down any time soon.

Not only this, if it had just been wreaking havoc, then her spiritual awareness would have already calmed down and started to recover, but the weak spiritual awareness was currently still rebelling and attacking from all sides, for some unknown reason, so it would indeed be a strange occurrence if Gao Yue woke up.

On that day, Gao Yue had sustained severe losses and had become extremely weak, but later she had still forcefully launched the

warning signal and sent it to the Pure Yang Palace, which had put her spiritual awareness in such a situation, like a lamp whose oil had dried up. If Yang Chen had not given her that Lingzhi Gyokuro pill at that time, the circumstances would have been even more serious.

Seeing this situation, Yang Chen's heart started to break into pieces. When he could not deal with it anymore, he quickly instructed the few female servants:

“Prepare a room for her where no one can disturb master! It must have abundant spirit power, I will heal master!”

Hearing Yang Chen's instructions, the female servants were exalted and asked Yang Chen in a cheerful tone:

“Senior disciple Yang, do you have a way?”

“I can only try!”

Yang Chen didn't have complete confidence, but at this moment, Yang Chen could not delay any longer and had to try, in spite of the danger.

The room was quickly made available: almost every courtyard had a room that could be used for seclusion. It could also be used for cultivating normally and when required it could be used to unleash a spell formation and finally it was still a place to enter seclusion. Those few female servants only had to quickly tidy up

things there and come out.

The sound of activity on the side immediately alarmed Wang Yong, who had just understood the circumstances. Anxious for his lovely disciple, he forgot all of his manners and hastily rushed there and asked impatiently:

“What is going on here?”

Yang Chen, who was carrying Gao Yue in her hands, walking towards the room, quickly answered upon seeing Wang Yong:

“The treatment of master cannot be delayed any longer. Disciple must test something to check if she can be rescued or not.”

Gao Yue was in an extremely dangerous situation right now: That spiritual awareness wandering around had begun to weaken even more and was almost at the point of exhaustion. If this continued, Gao Yue would sink into eternal rest due to exhaustion of her spiritual awareness in a short while.

Even if she didn't die, she would become similar to Mo Qian, just a body without any consciousness. Even the chances of that were still low, death was still a highly probable outcome.

Yang Chen was very clear about this fact. Apparently Wang Yong also understood this. But the Palace Master of Pure Yang Palace and the other elders had also come to check her and weren't able to find a way. They had also consulted experts of other sects, but they



were also unable to help, everyone could only look helplessly while Gao Yue became weaker and weaker, her spiritual awareness starting to drain bit by bit.

How could Yang Chen allow this to happen? After his rebirth he had come back precisely to stop the tragedy of his previous life from happening and to ensure that his master had a safe and happy life, but right now his master had surprisingly suffered such a serious injury. How could Yang Chen watch, like a bystander?

There still wasn't any medicine in the Mortal World which could heal spiritual awareness, so he had to use some other method. The matter was extremely urgent and Yang Chen could not care about anyone else right now and immediately entered the cultivation room, carrying Gao Yue.

Although he didn't know any method to treat weakening spiritual awareness, Yang Chen remembered a type of cultivation method known as Profound Yin and Yang Heart Sutra. The Profound Yin and Yang Heart Sutra allowed two people to cultivate together, drawing support from one's partner's spiritual awareness, both could strengthen the cultivation of their spiritual awareness by one step.

It could be simply explained in a single point: this was a kind of method for pair cultivation. Initially Yang Chen hadn't thought that he would have to conduct pair cultivation with Gao Yue, even if it was a pair cultivation of spiritual awareness, but he couldn't tolerate Gao Yue's condition and to save her life, he would use everything he could.

Since the master's consciousness was totally dormant right now, Yang Chen arranged Gao Yue in proper posture for cultivation and then himself sat behind her, embracing her body from behind, so that she wouldn't fall down. After he had prepared everything properly, Yang Chen touched his forehead on the back of Gao Yue's head and began the Profound Yin and Yang Heart Sutra.

Gao Yue final memories were of herself being chased by a group of people, then she began to panic over choosing a path to flee and finally chose a tunnel. Then she launched the warning magic tool and immediately lost consciousness.

Currently, Gao Yue had finally begun to sense that someone had come to save her, only, she was extremely weak and couldn't even open her eyes to see who it was. In a normal day, she could easily sense who it was, even without opening her eyes, which now seemed to be heavier than thirty thousand catties.

She was extremely shocked at the fact that she could not even sense her own body, she felt as light as a feather, as if she was floating on air, but she could not sense anything in her surroundings. She felt extremely tired and very hard pressed, as if she was near death.

This kind of situation lasted for an extremely long time, when Gao Yue suddenly felt as if her body had become warm, like she was being hugged by someone and felt very comfortable.

An warm current, which made her feel very comfortable, started to flow from the top of her head, increasing her strength by much, but, she was still extremely weak. She could however already sense

many things: her body seemed to be in a terrible mess, tossing everywhere, without stopping.

But there was that current passing from the top of her head. She could neither see nor hear, but she could sense that current was nursing down her body, knocking into everything and beginning to comfort it. Furthermore, Gao Yue herself felt a joy which couldn't be described in words, being passed from every direction into her consciousness.

This process also lasted for an extremely long time, but Gao Yue knew that the person who had assisted her would be extremely tired and had done all of this without resting. But, she didn't know who it was that had helped her so much.

Although she didn't know who it was, Gao Yue was extremely grateful. Only when Gao Yue obtained more and more strength, did she discover that she was within her spirit sea. That mess was not her body, but her spiritual awareness.

She wanted to see who had assisted and taken care of her, but it was impossible for her at the moment. The only certain thing was that, when this person was assisting her, she felt very comfortable, very warm and completely safe. Apparently this person was someone who she completely trusted and she completely relaxed.

Her chaotic spiritual awareness had finally calmed down, and Gao Yue could finally control her spiritual awareness, but her spiritual awareness, which used to be extremely formidable, was very weak at the moment. It didn't even have the strength to move around.

“Master, with this cultivation method that I am giving you, you will be able to recover very rapidly.”

A thought suddenly appeared in Gao Yue’s brain, which made it clear that the person who had been helping her was Yang Chen.

She was extremely confused, but Gao Yue knew that this was not the time to investigate and immediately began to research the cultivation method which Yang Chen had passed on to her. That cultivation method was very complicated, but Yang Chen’s explanation was very detailed, so Gao Yue quickly understood the crux of it and began to move her extremely weak spiritual awareness, little by little.

Basically the pair cultivation method had a higher efficiency than if a single person was cultivating, so Gao Yue’s recovery speed began to accelerate.

As they became more proficient in the cultivation method, Yang Chen’s spiritual awareness began to blend with Gao Yue’s spiritual awareness, to the point where his consciousness was within hers, and her consciousness was in his. And that fusion gave Gao Yue never ending joy.

But Gao Yue was also exceptionally shocked to discover that her disciple, who was just at the initial Foundation stage had a spiritual awareness even stronger than a peak JieDan stage expert.

Yang Chen’s cultivation method was extremely formidable and

very soon Gao Yue discovered that her spiritual awareness had recovered, but the situation was not over yet: after her recovery, the spiritual awareness began to strengthen. It stopped only after reaching the late JieDan stage.

But Gao Yue also sensed that Yang Chen's spiritual awareness had reduced by much because of her own spiritual awareness being strengthened. This made her very worried. Only after Yang Chen reminded her through his thoughts, did Gao Yue stop cultivating.

Her spiritual awareness had been restored to its original state and Gao Yue immediately became clear headed, but she was immediately embarrassed to discover that she was cozily leaning into Yang Chen's bosom, while both of Yang Chen's hands were tightly holding her waist, with his forehead still touching the back of her head.

## Chapter 158 - Leave It To Me

---

Although she knew that Yang Chen had done this for the sake of healing her, Gao Yue's face still turned red. Especially when she sensed Yang Chen's powerful arms around her slim waist, that powerful sensation was making her go weak.

She still remembered that joyful sensation while she was unconscious. Gao Yue sighed, thinking:

“We are master and disciple!”

But that sensation of infatuation made her lean slightly against Yang Chen's cheek after she removed her forehead and leaned over slightly.

After enjoying a few seconds of warmth, Gao Yue suddenly asked:

“Where are we?”

Naturally Yang Chen had also enjoyed that experience of using pair cultivation for cultivating their spirit awareness. He possessed those unclear emotions towards his master from the beginning, and now he tasted that proximity, so after waking up, he found that he did not want to remove his hands from his master's waist.

If it was possible, Yang Chen wanted to remain like this forever, but he knew that it was impossible. When Gao Yue opened her mouth, Yang Chen unwillingly released her.

“This is the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.”

Yang Chen replied:

“You have already returned home.”

“Oh!”

Feeling slight surprise, Gao Yue hatefully moved her body forward slightly, separating herself from Yang Chen’s hug. Then, as if she had suddenly remembered something, she asked:

“What’s the matter with your spiritual awareness? Hasn’t it decreased a lot?”

Often, when cultivating as a pair one would only use the other’s strength to make up for one’s own weak points, so that they could progress together. Pair cultivation of spiritual awareness was the same, if the gap between the spiritual awareness of two people was too large, then one of them had to supplement the other.

Gao Yue’s spiritual awareness had risen greatly, so naturally Yang Chen’s would have decreased. Moreover, Yang Chen had previously assisted Gao Yue by arranging the chaotic spiritual awareness, for which he had to spend a large amount of his own spiritual awareness.

Yang Chen did not care much about it, as long as his master could recover, let alone losing some of it, even if all of his spiritual awareness was entirely destroyed, Yang Chen wouldn't care. In any case, with a heaven defying cultivation method like the Three Purities Secrets, even starting from the beginning wouldn't make much of a difference.

But Gao Yue's question suddenly reminded Yang Chen of something, so Yang Chen hastily asked:

“Master, inspect your spiritual awareness and body and check if you have any problems!”

Seeing Yang Chen being so impatient, despite being anxious herself, Gao Yue calmed her heart down and entered her spirit sea to inspect her condition. Although it wasn't very urgent, after taking a look, Gao Yue jumped in astonishment.

Initially her spirit sea had been completely empty, but currently it was clearly divided into two layers, one of fire and one of water. Moreover, the range of the spirit sea had also expanded by a lot, during the time she couldn't sense anything. Her spirit sea had greatly increased and her spiritual awareness had suddenly expanded, she felt clearly that this would only have benefits and no downsides.

What made Gao Yue suspicious was that her spirit sea had two levels. The layer of fire was still understandable, but what was the meaning of that water layer? When she thought of the fact that Yang Chen had told her to cultivate water attributed secrets, she couldn't help but feel even more baffled.



For some reason her cultivation base was not disturbed, but since she hadn't eaten anything for a long time, she felt pretty tired. This could be settled very easily: as long as she circulated her cultivation once and absorbed enough spirit power, it would not be a problem. Currently, she could not find any problems with herself. The only thing that was bothering her was if it would be a problem since Yang Chen had lost such a large amount of spiritual awareness.

Turning around, she carefully sized up Yang Chen. He didn't seem to have any changes, only his face was a little pale. But she already knew that it was definitely from excessive wear and tear while he was nursing her spiritual awareness.

Still, seeing Yang Chen's conditions, she felt so much pain that she wanted to start crying. Unable to restrain her emotions, she reached out her hand and gently caressed Yang Chen's pale face, lightly kneading it.

"It's nothing, master!"

Yang Chen was almost unable to control himself. Finally still resisting his excitement, he said very slowly:

"You have already returned to the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. I have already killed all of the people who tried to kill you, and that thing you were robbed of, I have already gotten it back. I also brought one of the culprits here, would you like to see him?"

Strictly speaking, when she became aware that Yang Chen had treated her injured spiritual awareness, she was astonished, but after hearing what he had done, rather than being astonished, she was so frightened that her mouth had opened involuntarily.

Gao Yue had personally experienced the attack, so she perfectly knew the strength of those people. Even she, an initial JieDan expert couldn't just do anything she wanted in the Greater Mountains. How could an initial Foundation stage disciple like Yang Chen enter the Greater Mountains and even kill those people?

But when he showed them those heads one by one: 'This is Hao Yi Manor's young master's head, this one is of that young master and the master of the auction house of the Devil Flame Valley.' She started to believe him. When he also told her about the locations of these people correctly, Gao Yue had no option other than to believe that her disciple, Yang Chen, who was just at the initial Foundation stage, had really taken her revenge.

These two had been in that cultivation room for a long time and during this time the Great Master Wang Yong and the others who had been standing outside were very worried. Only when Yang Chen had told her the events that had happened, did he recall that they also had to go out.

"Master, do not tell anyone about that cultivation matter."

Before going out, Yang Chen warned Gao Yue. There were some things, which could not be leaked and neither could they be used for everyone.

Gao Yue raised her head and looked at Yang Chen. Seeing his serious expression, she could not help but nod. Yang Chen had many things on him which couldn't be explained, so having such a cultivation method was not too strange for Yang Chen.

Wang Yong had been worried for a long time. His disciple and grand disciple had been in the cultivation room for almost four months now, without any news. If Yang Chen had not warned them repeatedly that they could not be disturbed under any circumstances, he would have already rushed in.

Fortunately he could still sense that the two people inside were safe, otherwise, Wang Yong would have already entered.

Just when Wang Yong was worrying, the door of the cultivation room suddenly opened and Yang Chen and Gao Yue, one in front, the other in the back, came out.

Looking at Gao Yue walking like a normal person, Wang Yong almost couldn't control his excitement. In the end, being a YuanYing stage expert, he forcibly resisted rushing forward and checking her. But his face still revealed an expression of gratitude for a moment.

When all of the elders of the Pure Yang Palace were helpless and even the healing experts of other sects couldn't do anything, his own grand disciple had brought back his disciple healthy and active within four months by himself. This was simply a miracle.

“Good, you don’t need to say anything! I know everything now!”

Wang Yong interrupted Yang Chen before he could open his mouth:

“What you have is very good, if we have any hatred, we certainly must take revenge! Those people must be killed, if someone looks for you now, my Pure Yang Palace will deal with it!”

After talking with Scarface, Wang Yong found out about everything that Yang Chen had done. Originally, he himself wanted to make a trip when Gao Yue had become healed, but Yang Chen had done everything very proficiently. Even if he had went there, he also wouldn’t have been able to take care of it that proficiently, it was even possible that he would have done worse.

Annihilating the Hao Yi Manor, which had almost a thousand people, making friends and exploiting a formidable person like Scarface, none of these things were something which could be done by a simple Foundation stage disciple.

But Yang Chen had done so many miraculous things at the Pure Yang Palace to this date, that Wang Yong wasn’t surprised when he heard of these events and only thought that this was how it should have been. The power of habit could be seen clearly when even a YuanYing expert could think of such miraculous acts as just normal for a Foundation stage disciple like Yang Chen.

Scarface hadn’t spoken in much detail about the events. At least those five JieDan stage females and that YuanYing stage expert

hadn't appeared again and Yang Chen had also warned him, therefore he only told the part of the story related to him. Even a powerful expert like that tree demon was waiting for Yang Chen to come and talk personally.

As for why Scarface had been waiting there all along, it was because he had promised to Yang Chen that he would apologise to Gao Yue and to compensate for those injuries, he would do three things for her. These things hadn't been achieved, but Yang Chen had entered the cultivation room with Gao Yue, so he could only wait there.

Scarface couldn't do anything but wait. Other people may not know, but Scarface clearly knew that the old Cassia Tree Demon in Yang Chen's room was a lot more frightening than anything else. Since he had promised to take care of Yang Chen's matter, leaving aside whether Yang Chen would come out of the cultivation room or not, or whether he would have a heart's devil in the future or not, being alone with that old tree demon would certainly not let him get comfortable.

He however knew that the old tree demon had been requested by Yang Chen, moreover he had also obtained a lot of benefits from Yang Chen and could thus immediately pass the Yin Fire tribulation and enter the DaCheng stage. If he offended that old tree demon, even by mistake, he could be killed anywhere, let alone Yang Chen's sect, without a care.

Upon seeing Gao Yue, the woman whom he had chased and had intended to let live, how could he have any thoughts of thanking her at that moment? So without saying anything, he stepped

forward and prostrated himself. Since he had already intended to apologise, why not do it appropriately?

“Fellow Daoist Gao, myself has injured fellow daoist Gao, I beg for forgiveness!”

After prostrating himself, Scarface knocked his head on the ground and loudly spoke.

Gao Yue clearly recognized Scarface. Among those people who had chased her, Scarface was in the front. She had heard about Scarface’s situation from Yang Chen, that he had let her go, and moreover secretly assisted her in fleeing. Gao Yue had also vaguely sensed something like that at that time.

Since the situation was like that, Gao Yue was feeling ashamed to accept Scarface’s apology, so she hastily helped Scarface up with her hands. One was expressing gratitude, the other was apologising, so it could be considered that the situation was to everyone’s satisfaction.

Gao Yue hadn’t taken Scarface doing three things for her seriously, but Scarface was earnest. Having no other option, Gao Yue could only store the three requests for a day when she would need them.

“Good, Yang Chen, you go and take care of your visitors!”

Wang Yong instructed Yang Chen, and his voice contained a trace

of complain:

“You have already thrown away your guests without taking care of them for months, what kind of host are you.”

Although, he was berating him, Wang Yong certainly did not have that kind of opinion of Yang Chen. These few months, he had been treating Gao Yue, his own disciple. While still at the Foundation stage, he had saved a person whose spiritual awareness had almost dissipated, so if not satisfaction, what other thoughts could Wang Yong have?

Yang Chen also knew that, in order to save his master, he had neglected Scarface and the old tree demon, for which he felt very apologetic, so he took Scarface back to his courtyard at once, and put his heart to entertaining them.

That old tree demon hadn't been walking around in his courtyard, he was satisfied in enjoying and nourishing himself in the abundant spirit power of the vein in the courtyard, with an expression of content.

That old tree demon did not have the same senile appearance he had previously. His Appearance Transforming Secrets had possibly become even more profound or maybe because he had obtained the nourishment of such abundant spirit power, he looked a lot younger.

“Who are you, I don't think you are the person I was waiting for!”

Once Yang Chen entered the room, the old tree demon immediately made fun of him.

“Sorry, sorry for neglecting you senior!”

Yang Chen sincerely asked for forgiveness and after seating Scarface and the old tree demon, he asked for Scarface’s future plans.

“Plans?”

Scarface shook his head:

“The only purpose of my life was to take the revenge. Since I have taken my revenge, only some trivial matters are left. Naturally, I remember your master’s matter. But I don’t know what should I do now.”

“There are many things. You could try cultivating and attacking the heavenly law, then see the world after ascending.”

That old tree demon clearly knew more than Scarface and also had higher goals.

“That is one of the to possibilities!”

Scarface faintly nodded, but then he shook his head again:



“I have already become used to life in the Greater Mountains. I am not accustomed to being comfortable every day. I don’t even have an urge to cultivate.”

“In fact, if you want, you can cure the scar on your face and get a new face and then go back to the Greater Mountains.”

Yang Chen smiled:

“Or perhaps some other region, where you can get the same adventurous life as the Greater Mountains. You could maybe also go to the side of the Greater Mountains where the demon beasts live. With your strength you would have no problems. Or if you want, you can go to the region of those devil cultivators, that place is also good.”

His face had to be changed. Although Yang Chen didn’t know it clearly, since the owner of the auction house was someone of whom the master was so afraid of, that he was ready to give up his life to protect that young master, it clearly showed many things. If Scarface, who had such a prominent feature, was researched by people, it would certainly not be good.

Scarface was fond of taking risks and provoking people. Hearing Yang Chen’s words, a shine passed through his face, but then he immediately turned gloomy:

“Change my face? Easier said than done!”

“How difficult could it be?!”

Yang Chen said with a smile:

“Isn’t it just a matter of getting a face changing pill?”

“Simple?”

Scarface bitterly laughed:

“That face changing pill... Even that traitor of your sect, Chu Heng, couldn’t get it at the Greatest Heaven Sect, and you say it’s simple?”

While staying at the Pure Yang Palace for four months, Scarface had learned a lot of things, including some of Yang Chen’s past feats; therefore he also knew about Chu Heng’s matter.

“The Greatest Heaven Sect is the Greatest Heaven Sect, I am me!”

Yang Chen disdainfully said:

“Forget others, I am a third grade pill master at my age, leave your face changing pill to me!”

“Really?”

Scarface was exalted. The most troublesome issue was so easily resolved that he couldn't even believe that all of this was true.

While Scarface and Yang Chen were talking, that old tree demon hadn't even said a word. But the smile on his face had become brighter and brighter.

# Chapter 159 - None Of You Can Be The Judge Of That

---

“What do you want?”

Scarface knew that Yang Chen would certainly not refine that Face Changing Pill for him without any good cause. That pill which could even cause an inconvenience to the Greatest Heaven Sect couldn't be produced so easily.

“If you go to the area of demon beasts or devil cultivators and find some materials, I will have the right to purchase it first.”

Yang Chen's request was not that difficult. Actually he provided Scarface with a way to make money.

“Those places are rich in natural resources, so you can get a group of people and get some commissions from the sects here and then trade the things you find at those places.”

Yang Chen said a few more enticing words:

“In any case, you like to run around, so maybe it will increase your knowledge and experience and at the same time, earn you some wealth.”

Hearing this, Scarface was extremely delighted. A person like him, who only lived for revenge, only needed to be given a desire,

and he could continue his life. As for a higher cultivation, he hadn't thought of it before, but maybe in the future he would be able to find a direction.

“Yes, I agree!”

After thinking for a moment, Scarface declared this without any hesitation.

Right now, Scarface could definitely take a stroll through markets where cultivators gather in large numbers and take a look at which things the Greater Mountains had and which were scarce, so that, when the time came, he could take some things with him and trade them to earn a large amount of spirit stones.

Scarface also wasn't too reluctant to leave, and after having this idea, he immediately said his farewells to Yang Chen. He was a little ill at ease there. Although he was considered a guest, he was only there to apologise to Gao Yue, so he wasn't very comfortable. Departing as soon as possible was a kind of release for him.

That old tree demon also didn't urge him to stay, and as soon as Yang Chen had sent off Scarface, he asked, with a face full of smiles:

“You have enticed this distracted youngster to run errands around here and there for you, what are you attempting to do?”

“I can't hide anything from you old man, huh?”

Yang Chen smiled:

“I am not attempting anything, I am just trying to create a way for the sect to make money. In fact, Scarface himself clearly knows it, but he still hadn’t thought about the future clearly.”

That old tree demon had lived for countless years, although he hadn’t communicated much with people, he had still faced countless hardships at the Greater Mountains. With an incisive gaze, he nodded his head, without saying anything.

“You are correct in this case. First, I want to borrow your place to live temporarily and will enter your sect’s Eccentric Hall.”

That old tree demon finally nodded:

“I intend to pass my Yin Fire Tribulation in a few days. Do you have any close friends who want to watch?”

The Yin Fire tribulation of a peak YuanYing stage expert was an opportunity which one couldn’t find by searching. Last time when he was at the Clear Sky Sect, he had allowed a group of people to see the Yin Fire tribulation of Hua Wanting. He was aware that his own sect’s experts were somewhat unworthy, but having such an opportunity now... Wasn’t it just a large meat pie which the Heavens had thrown into his lap?

How could Yang Chen reject such a request? After a night had

passed, Yang Chen went to see the main body of the old tree demon, but despite knowing that the old tree demon was there, he still was intimidated by the old tree demon's concealing trick.

Within Yang Chen's courtyard, behind the house, many fist thick Cassia Trees, almost at the height of two people, with thin branches and newly grown leaves, could be seen. They were basically newly grown saplings. Anyone looking at it would never think this was the old tree demon who had been cultivating for countless years.

Apparently, under the nourishment of this abundant spirit power, that old tree demon's Appearance Transforming Secrets had almost been perfected. Just this trick was sufficient to make people not pay attention to his main body. Who would care about a few little tree saplings which a house master had planted to decorate his courtyard?

Only if an enemy attacked and demanded to raze the entire courtyard, could he discover the anomaly of the old tree demon. But in this life, having Yang Chen, how could the Pure Yang Palace repeat the same mistake and get exterminated?

Moreover, there was one more benefit of having the old tree demon occupy Yang Chen's backyard: That region would be the most fortified region of the Pure Yang Palace from then on. Moreover, with his roots, the old tree demon could monitor the entire Pure Yang Palace. Furthermore, which place could be safer than the one guarded by a Da Cheng stage expert?

The matter of the old tree demon settling down still hadn't been

reported to the Palace Master, but before he could do that, his servant, Ting Yuan, had come running to Yang Chen, saying that the Palace Master and the other hall masters were waiting at the Nine Earth Manor and had asked Yang Chen to come see them.

Yang Chen had arranged for Ting Yuan to look after the Nine Earth Manor and provide guidance to the disciples together with Shangguan Feng. but she had come running to him with an anxious expression on her face. This made him very confused. Especially, her words, that not just the Palace Master, but also the other hall masters were there was completely out of his expectations.

“How many other hall masters are there?”

Yang Chen asked, feeling confused.

“All of them!”

Ting Yuan replied with confidence, immediately continuing:

“It seems that they were all brought in by the substitute hall master of the Luminous Moon Hall, Song Hang!”

Since Yang Chen wasn't very friendly with the people of Luminous Moon Hall, Ting Yuan directly said his name without any fear.

“Young Master, they all seem to be planning to condemn you.”



Ting Yuan had watched every detail attentively and had also seen the behaviour of these people, especially Song Hang:

“Apparently, as soon as they heard that young master had come out of the cultivation room, they immediately assembled there.”

“There is no harm in going!”

Yang Chen had spent much effort on the outer disciples, so if someone wanted to quarrel about them without any previous offence, Yang Chen would certainly not avoid it.

“Let’s go and take a look! The Palace Master is also there and we cannot let that old man wait for long!”

Using his flying sword, Yang Chen brought Ting Yuan to the Nine Earth Manor within an hour. The party of the Palace Master was present in the main hall of the Nine Earth Manor.

“Disciple Yang Chen greets Palace Master and all of the uncle masters!”

Without saying anything else, Yang Chen first greeted the Palace Master and then the other hall master successively. They were all his elders, so even if he didn’t want to, Yang Chen had to greet them according to the rules. Apart from one or two people, all returned his greetings with a smile.

“Good that you have come out of the cultivation room.”

The Palace Master spoke to Yang Chen with smile:

“I have heard that your master is doing good now, good work!”

This attitude of the Palace Master, made him feel relaxed and also gratified. Yang Chen had entered seclusion to treat Gao Yue. If the Palace Master had ordered him, regardless of anything to come out and receive his punishment, that would indeed have made all of the disciples within the sect terrified.

But the Palace Master had asked out of genuine concern, yet not all people could have similar concerns. At least the substitute hall master of the Luminous Moon Hall was one such person.

After the Palace Master had finished talking, and before anyone else could open their mouth, Song Hang slowly asked:

“Yang Chen, do you know your crimes?”

Luminous Moon Hall’s hall master, Liang Ming Shao, was still meditating and examining his conscience, because not only was his disciple Chu Heng a sect traitor, while dealing with Yang Chen, he had also unconsciously served as an accomplice, therefore he was punished by the Palace Master to temper himself. Luminous Moon Hall’s current hall master was Song Hang, who had been acting as a substitute hall master.

Yang Chen didn't find the people of the Luminous Moon Hall's pleasing to the eye, but they also didn't like Yang Chen very much because of the matter with Liang Ming Shao. This also had some relation with the affairs of Chu Heng, as well as the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

At that time, Liang Ming Shao wanted to strip Yang Chen of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard and take it for himself, but he was suppressed by the Palace Master. The result was that all of the elders of the Pure Yang Palace, including the Palace Master had a room there. Even the other hall's masters had rooms there, only Liang Ming Shao didn't.

Yang Chen certainly wasn't a person who would return good for evil, and since they had wanted to seize his property, he wouldn't let them enjoy the benefits of his property. This kind of thing wasn't rare in the cultivation world, therefore no one in the Pure Yang Palace cared much about it.

But in the eyes of the people of Luminous Moon Hall, Yang Chen had clearly shown his disdain for them. Adding Chu Heng's matter to that, the substitute hall master, Song Hang, didn't like Yang Chen.

It just so happened that Yang Chen currently held the responsibility for outer disciples, but because of Gao Yue's injuries, he had surprisingly left for half a year. In addition to the four months he had spent after returning to heal Gao Yue, Yang Chen didn't fulfill his responsibility as the Merit Transferring Disciple for a whole ten months.

This proved to be a great opportunity for Song Hang to deal with Yang Chen. Previously, because Yang Chen was in the cultivation room, even if he had wanted, Song Hang couldn't order him to come out, therefore he had been waiting for Yang Chen to come out. Not even half a day had passed since Yang Chen came out of the cultivation hall, and Song Hang had urged the Palace Master and the other hall's masters to set a formal meeting and punish him.

“Disciple does not know of any crimes!”

Yang Chen replied, bluntly facing Song Hang:

“I request Uncle Master Song to give me some pointers!”

“Hmph, the hell you don't!”

Song Hang coldly snorted, without caring about the frown of the Palace Master on the other hall masters faces, he continued:

“You are the Merit Transferring Disciple, yet you left without any prior notice, thus you are hampering their growth. Do you still have anything to say?”

Song Hang clearly knew that the Palace Master and the other hall masters would not investigate Yang Chen's offences, but he still raised this accusation. Yang Chen had left the Nine Earth Manor ten months ago, this was public knowledge, so no one could say anything in support of Yang Chen.

On the matter of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, the Palace Master had openly sided with Yang Chen and suppressed the Luminous Moon Hall, giving them the reason that what he had earned, was his. Presently, Song Hang was using the same reason, which made the Palace Master and the other hall masters speechless and left them with no option except punishing Yang Chen.

Sure enough, when Song Hang opened his mouth, the others were completely dumbstruck. No one said half a word in support of Yang Chen. Everyone clearly understood that this matter was based on a past revenge.

The Palace Master had an embarrassed expression on his face. He wanted to help Yang Chen, but Song Hang had stated the sect rules and he could not show any favouritism. So it was clear that this time, he could only wrong Yang Chen.

“Uncle Master Hong, I want to know, which rule of my Pure Yang Palace says that Merit Transferring Disciples for the outer disciples cannot leave the Nine Earth Manor?”

Yang Chen however remained completely calm. Standing in front of everyone, he bluntly stated:

“I don’t know of any such rule regarding being absent, where is it written?”

Hearing Yang Chen’s point, the Palace Master had sensed that

this matter was definitely not going in the direction which Song Hang had thought. A smile appeared on his face and then he took a seat, waiting for the next development. The minds of the other hall masters also jolted and they began to listen to the matter attentively.

“My sect’s rules, doesn’t have such a clause!”

The Medicine Hall’s hall master Zhu Chen Tao was the first one to jump out in Yang Chen’s support:

“And what were you saying?”

“Indeed, we don’t have such a clause. Song Hang, is being a little inconsistent a sin?”

Naturally nobody would support Song Hang, so the agreeing voices began to echo one after another.

This wasn’t something which Yang Chen had made up, instead it was a precedent set by all of the previous Merit Transferring Disciples. Only they hadn’t been absent for as long as Yang Chen, at most one or two days, but regarding this offence of absconding, a day or two compared to a month or two, or a year or two couldn’t be differentiated.

Since the previous Merit Transferring Disciples could leave the Nine Earth Manor when they wanted, then Yang Chen could also leave when he wanted, so this matter could not be said to be an

offence. Yang Chen had cleverly used this point, so that Song Hang couldn't say even half a word.

“Good, absconding is not your fault!”

Song Hang wasn't discouraged in the least, Yang Chen had left the Nine Earth Manor for ten months, so the guidance of the outer disciples had definitely been obstructed. That was naturally a sound fact, therefore Song Hang generously let this accusation go.

“But, you haven't guided them properly and have hampered their growth, what do you have to say about that?”

Song Hang immediately grabbed the later part of offence:

“For ten months you haven't guided the outer disciples, haven't you hampered their growth?”

This point, even if the Palace Master had tried to take the blame, he couldn't do anything. But Yang Chen had previously shown great confidence, which had made the Palace Master think that Yang Chen surely had something to say.

“Uncle Master Song, about your words of hampering the progress of my disciples, you don't have the final say in that matter!”

Yang Chen's voice wasn't very high, but it was clear enough to reach everyone's ears.

“If I don’t have the say, then who does? The Palace Master?”

Song Hang sneered. He thought that Yang Chen was like a cornered beast, trying to find every possible method to escape the sin:

“Then I ask Palace Master, this behaviour of Yang Chen, is it regarded as hampering the progress of his disciples?”

This time, the ball was in the Palace Master’s court. He coughed lightly and was about to open his mouth, but surprisingly, before he could open his mouth, Yang Chen had already started speaking:

“Actually, the Palace Master is also not in charge!”

Once Yang Chen opened his mouth, he immediately gave everyone a huge scare. In the matters of the Pure Yang Palace, even the Palace Master did not have a say? How outrageous! This clearly was not putting the Palace Master in his eyes.

“What atrocity!

Zhu Chen Tao became anxious and hastily berated Yang Chen loudly making Song Hang choke on his words. Because Zhu Chen Tao’s berating would always be better than Song Hang opening his mouth.



“Yang Chen, then you tell me, who can check if you have hampered the growth of your disciples?”

The Palace Master was also slightly angry and asked in a heavy voice. If Yang Chen did not give him a good reason, then he would properly discipline him first.

“Since you are saying that the growth of disciples have been hampered...”

Yang Chen gently laughed and calmly spoke:

“Then naturally the final say must be with those disciples, whose development has been hampered.”

# Chapter 160 - I Know, But I Won't Tell You

---

“The disciples who have been instructed would have the final say?”

The Palace Master was startled, but immediately realized something and gently laughed:

“Right, right, indeed those disciples should have the final say!”

In matters of cultivation, the person who experienced it personally knew the best. Other people may sense if their cultivation was higher, but they wouldn't know what kind of problems one faced during their cultivation. Whatever method they used, it would not be better than the person's own sensation.

It would not be unreasonable to say that the person himself would know if he had made some mistakes or not, but if his cultivation had been continuing smoothly, his spirit power was stable, and his spiritual awareness was rising stably, what kind of problem could there be?

What sort of cultivation method could be suitable for everyone and what sort of cultivation method could also guarantee to be hundred percent correct? Perhaps a cultivation method which was suitable for someone was wrong for another. Everyone's innate talent was different and so was their comprehension and thus they had discrepancies in their cultivation, otherwise, wouldn't everyone be the same?

Even the Palace Master found Yang Chen's words reasonable, not to mention the other hall masters. As for Song Hang, he didn't have any chance to speak, since even Palace Master could not pass the judgement here, what about him?

“Let the instructed disciples have the final say?”

But Song Hang didn't really approve of this method:

“Palace Master, if these outer disciples are scared of him, then they would not dare to speak the truth, wouldn't he get away with it then?”

“Then can you tell me another way?”

The Palace Master seemed to know that the main antagonist for the people of the Luminous Moon Hall was Yang Chen, but not even overlooking such a simple problem was truly excessive. His voice contained a trace of discontentment.

“Indeed, this disciple has a way.”

As if he hadn't sensed the discontentment in Palace Master's voice, Song Hang slowly said:

“According to Yang Chen, since the outer disciples have the final say in this method, just let them speak. But they must be put under Hall Master Meng's Mind Confusing Trick. Under the Mind Confusing Trick, they will probably not be able to lie!”

“Yang Chen, what do you think?”

The Palace Master turned to Yang Chen to ask for his opinion.

“I agree to Palace Master’s orders!”

Yang Chen did not care much about this. What he wanted was to have those outer disciples tell the truth. Song Hang feared that Yang Chen would force them by abusing his authority, so he wanted to use the the mind confusing technique, but this was exactly what Yang Chen had been looking for. With this, any kind of trick Song Hang used would just be greatly easy to spot.

“Good!”

The Palace Master immediately declared his decision:

“So this matter will be conducted according to Song Hang’s advice. Since Song Hang is the one who had raised the question, then you should also be the one to select the outer disciples whom you want to call and question them on the spot!”

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Song Hang was looking forward to this moment and immediately went out with Meng Xian, the hall master of the Law Enforcement Hall and began to look for suitable disciples to call in for

questioning.

The Palace Master and the other hall masters kept on waiting in the hall and began to enquire about Gao Yue's matter from Yang Chen. They had all seen the condition of Gao Yue's injury, especially Medicine Hall's hall master Zhu Chen Tao. Everyone knew that her spiritual awareness had suffered heavy losses and was constantly dissipating, but they couldn't find a good method to save her. Surprisingly, Yang Chen was able to cure her in only four months, which had really caught everyone's attention.

“Disciple also didn't have any special methods. Since the matter was extremely urgent, without any better option, I was forced to use a pair cultivation method for spiritual awareness, mentioned in some book.”

Yang Chen didn't tell them the complete truth, but also didn't hide everything:

“Master's spiritual awareness was dissipating continuously and in my desperation, I tried this method, which succeeded after countless difficulties.”

The reason why he had told them about the pair cultivation method was to provide them with a reasonable explanation. Naturally, he had constantly stressed that the affair was extremely urgent and he was also afraid that this method of pair cultivation wouldn't be accepted by the sect, or there would be many great troubles in the future.

But with his reasons, everyone had no other option than accepting it. Other than dying, the only option was the pair cultivation of spiritual awareness. It had to be said that this was not a genuine pair cultivation of joining bodies and at least there hadn't been any disgraceful actions between master and disciple. Others had no way to investigate this.

“Eh? This method is so effective?”

The Palace Master thought of something and asked again:

“Can it be used in our sect?”

Other hall masters were also attentively listening, since they also were very interested in this method.

“Difficult!”

Yang Chen immediately shook his head. Some things weren't suitable for others to know, even if they were from the same sect, especially when there were people like Song Hang and Liang Shao Ming in the sect:

“The procedure of the cultivation method is very complicated, and although it is said to be pair cultivation, this disciple was barely able to restore master's spiritual awareness after major decrease in my own. The spiritual awareness of both master and disciple have fallen by one realm. Just master waking up was the silver lining in this great misfortune.”

Yang Chen had already talked about all of this with Gao Yue properly and she had agreed not to release the secret of the Pair Cultivation. With his reasons, everyone also understood that point. If this was really such a good method, then why wasn't it recorded among the cultivation methods, but within a random book?

“Yang Chen, if Song Hang is able to find someone who has not been able to make anything of himself, wouldn't you be punished?”

Zhu Chen Tao was worrying for Yang Chen from the start. Seeing that Yang Chen was so nonchalant about the issue, he couldn't help but ask.

Zhu Chen Tao certainly seemed to be asking Yang Chen, but in reality he was reminding everyone on the scene that, if a few disciples weren't any good, and that influenced Yang Chen's conviction, then there was a problem.

“No worries. Many thanks for your concern, uncle master Zhu!”

Yang Chen however, did not appear to be worried about this, as if he had a hidden card up his sleeve:

“Whoever he finds, it will be the same, there will be no effect on the outcome!”

Even the Palace Master was astonished by Yang Chen's confidence and his reply. The sect was quite big and had several hundred outer disciples, so there would always be one or two who had failed to live up to the expectations, so why did Yang Chen have such confidence? No one asked about it however. In any case, the results would be clear very soon.

Everyone tacitly understood this and let this question slide. Switching to his experiences at the Greater Mountains, the special products available there and so on, slowly killing time, waiting for the disciples chosen by Song Hang.

After an hour, Song Hang and Meng Xian finally brought twenty disciples to the main hall. All people were chosen by Song Hang, Meng Xian had just followed as a witness and hadn't chosen anyone.

However, Meng Xian was resentful that Song Hang had even selected some servants and regarded them as outer disciples. Although, looking at this, Meng Xian had wrinkled his brows yet he didn't say anything. These servants were also at the Nine Earth Manor and according to the rules, they could also go to the Merit Transferring Disciple for guidance.

“Yang Chen, this time, I will make you concede your guilt!”

Song Hang who had returned in high spirits after choosing the disciples sneered towards Yang Chen.

“Do as you like, uncle master!”



Yang Chen made an inviting gesture without any concern and moved to one side, while allowing Song Hang and Meng Xian to take the center stage.

The matter of interrogating them was also handed to Song Hang, the person in question himself. Song Hang pointed to a disciple without any politeness and made him come to the center. Afterwards he asked the hall master Meng Xian to take the initiative. Since Meng Xian was not only a YuanYing stage expert, but also the hall master of the Law Enforcement Hall, Song Hang did not dare to be arrogant and asked him courteously.

The Mind Confusing Technique was a simple hypnosis to puzzle the mind. Under normal circumstances, the person who it was going to be used on would rebel and remain on guard, so it would not be completely successful. This was also the reason why Mo Qian and her disciples hadn't used such a simple technique on Yang Chen.

But the target was an outer disciple in the end, a qi layer youngster. Meng Xian himself was a YuanYing stage expert, so the difference between their realms was extremely high. In addition to that, the Palace Master was instructing all of the disciples to not resist, so hall master Meng Xian barely had to spend any effort on hypnotising this third qi layer disciple.

“You, speak truthfully, when Yang Chen was the Merit Transferring Disciple, did he guide you meticulously?”

Song Hang who was completely engrossed in humiliating Yang Chen, he did not even ask for the name of the qi layer disciple and directly came to the point.

“Yes, uncle master ancestor!”

Although he had been hypnotised, this qi layer disciple still knew the difference between juniors and seniors and only answered after making the proper salutations:

“This disciple has received great help from uncle master Yang. He focused on the special traits of this disciple’s cultivation method and cultivation and explained everything in detail, allowing this disciple to have a sudden enlightenment. Disciple cannot thank him enough!”

Song Hang couldn’t help but become gloomy, because he originally wanted to hear an answer that Yang Chen hadn’t cleared the doubts of the disciple, but he hadn’t anticipated such an answer in favor of Yang Chen.

In the beginning, Song Hang had wished to ask who of these disciples had received pointers from Yang Chen and look for those who hadn’t. But with Meng Xian on his side, he did not dare to be so brazen and so he thought of a way to show his fairness and took Meng Xian with him at the time of choosing disciples and picked them only by looking at their cultivation and did not ask anything, hoping that these would be the disciples he wanted, but he anticipated such an answer.

“What was your cultivation before he guided you and how much has it increased?”

Song Hang also couldn't be excessively impudent in front of the Palace Master and the group of hall master, so he continued to ask:

“Speak truthfully!”

“Reporting to ancestor, this disciple is very slow witted, even after becoming an outer disciple for two years, disciple has remained at the first qi layer.”

Both eyes of that disciple were blurry, but his reply was clear:

“After uncle master Yang's guidance, disciple had a sudden flash of realization and within less than a year, disciple has already reached the third qi layer.”

This disciple's cultivation had been very low, which was the reason why Song Hang had picked him, hoping that he would be able to embarrass Yang Chen, but he hadn't expected the reply to be like this. How could this be called as hampering the development of disciples? Actually this was the mark of a great master!

Even if it was Song Hang himself, he also wouldn't dare to boast that, within a short ten months, he would be able to make a dim witted first qi layer disciple enter the third qi layer. Perhaps it was possible through the use of pills, but Yang Chen certainly hadn't

been at the Nine Earth Manor for ten months, so it was basically impossible for him to use such a method.

“I will ask again! When Yang Chen had gone out, how were you able to find the solutions for cultivation problems which you faced during that time?”

Hearing answers in favor of Yang Chen, Song Hang had no choice but to forcefully steer it towards a direction when Yang Chen wasn't here. Only, he was a JieDan stage hall master, the substitute hall master of the Luminous Moon Hall, yet he still used such a method to deal with Yang Chen. This really made the other people there to look down on him.

“There were no such problems!”

This disciple bluntly killed Song Hang's efforts in its early stages:

“The pointers that uncle master Yang gave were extremely detailed. They included what problems disciple would face at what times and how to solve them. They have all been explained to this disciple and this disciple only had to follow the orders. Until this day, this disciple did not face any problems outside of what uncle master Yang has said, so within two years, disciple has no need to go to uncle master Yang for guidance!”

Bang!

The last words of this disciple were like a clap of thunder and

made the Palace Master and the other hall masters feel the utmost shock. What did he mean by that? Every problem within his cultivation was within the range of Yang Chen's explanation and he just had to verify it? He didn't need any guidance for two years? What level of teaching was this? Even if it was the Palace Master, he also didn't dare to assure that he could have done better than Yang Chen.

Song Hang was completely embarrassed, but he didn't call this reply in doubt. This disciple was under the effect of the Mind Confusing Technique of Meng Xian, so he could not lie. But this was certainly not the answer which Song Hang had desired.

Perhaps this disciple had been cheated by Yang Chen. Song Hang was unwilling to give up and immediately switched him with another disciple and asked a similar set of questions.

What was astonishing for them was that this disciple's reply was precisely the same as the previous one. Yang Chen's guidance was incomparably thorough and he also didn't need any guidance for one or two years. He only had to follow the orders and cultivate, that would suffice.

Even after asking ten disciples, there wasn't anyone who had not received guidance. All of them gave almost the same answer. Song Hang who still wasn't willing to give up, also asked the few servants whom he had brought, but what made him give up all hopes was that even these servants had received pointers from Yang Chen and their cultivations had also increased.

How was this condemning him? This was clearly just applying

makeup to his face. Moreover, in front of the Palace Master, it was like asking for an award for Yang Chen.

“How can this be possible?”

Unwillingness was spread across Song Hang’s entire face, but with incomparable astonishment he said:

“How can you be proficient in all of those cultivation methods and even understand all of the problems within the cultivation methods?”

“Why is this so impossible?”

Yang Chen smiled:

“If uncle master Song remembered the entire Hidden Pavilion, then you can also have a similar level of achievement!”

“Impossible! Absolutely impossible!”

Song Hang madly shouted:

“You have certainly cast a hypnosis on these disciples of the Nine Earth Manor, true or not? True or not?”

Once the Palace Master and the others heard this, their

complexions were immediately changed. This was clearly just causing trouble without purpose.

“Uncle Master Song cultivates the Heavenly Chaste Water Secrets right?”

Yang Chen suddenly smiled:

“Your cultivation is already at the peak JieDan stage, but recently it has been getting harder to circulate spirit power, and then after circulating you feel an acute pain in your shoulders and you also have a sensation of being pricked by needles in your lower back, while your cultivation hasn’t improved even a bit and you haven’t been able to find a solution? You also feel that your flying sword isn’t moving as strongly as you wish? And you haven’t felt the signs of forming a nascent soul for a long time?”

“How do you know this?”

Song Hang was startled and asked with great alarm, then his complexion turned cheerful:

“Do you know how to solve it?”

“Since I know the symptoms, naturally I also know how to solve it!”

Yang Chen laughed and gave a ridiculing look to Song Hang.

“How can this be solved then?”

Song Hang impatiently asked.

“Although I know the method!”

Yang Chen calmly asked:

“Why should I tell you?”



# Chapter 161 - We Have Nothing To Add

---

From the beginning, after Song Hang had started questioning disciples, the Palace Master and others had been astonished unceasingly. Instead of reducing everyone's amazement, he had only increased it.

From the time Yang Chen had become the Merit Transferring Disciple to the time he left, in less than eight months, every disciple, every single disciple of the Nine Earth Manor had been guided so thoroughly by Yang Chen. All of them were simply flabbergasted.

Hearing the truth from each and every disciple, what kind of troubles they would face at what times in their cultivation, how their seniors had solved it in the history, how they could use other people as reference and perhaps how to settle it. Rather than guiding this could be called as guiding them by holding their hands, so that they wouldn't get lost.

Everyone, including the Palace Master, couldn't help but envy those who were outer disciples at this moment. If they had had such a Merit Transferring Disciple provide guidance when they had been at the Nine Earth Manor, wouldn't it have saved them many years of work?

What's more, at that time, everyone entered the sect with some close friends. But each one had received their respective opportunities and had now become the Palace Master, a hall master and so on, while those close friends had already ended up as servants. If they had had such a Merit Transferring Disciple at that

time, then maybe they would have been able to maintain the relationship with their fellow apprentices.

In their excessive surprise, everyone began to see Yang Chen in a new light. Although Yang Chen was only a disciple at the initial Foundation stage, among the people present, who could guarantee that, if they had been the Merit Transferring Disciple, they would have done a better job than Yang Chen?

Leaving aside the fact that he was proficient in the cultivation of five attributes, just this knowledge and experience was not something everyone could compare to. Who could immediately remember which senior had come across which problem and how they resolved it at that time?

In front of a YuanYing stage expert, the Law Enforcement Hall's hall master Meng Xian, these disciples could not lie, especially when they were under the influence of his Mind Confusing Trick, so every word they were saying was completely true.

There was no one who could raise any objection now, not even Song Hang. Yang Chen had just now correctly predicted his present problem, and had moreover said that he knew a method to resolve it. This fact intimidated Song Hang so much, that he was rooted to the ground, not moving anymore.

He had been trapped with this problem for several decades now and because he wasn't able to resolve it, Song Hang could only remain trapped at the peak JieDan stage, unable to move forward. He even had a strong feeling that, as long as he was able to break through this junction, he would immediately face his thunder

tribulation and form his Nascent Soul and rush to the YuanYing stage.

A person knew his own methods best. If it were not for this bottleneck, he would not have agreed to Liang Shao Ming's request, to become the substitute hall master of the Luminous Moon Hall for the time being. He wanted to set aside his cultivation problems for the time being and then research other fields to find the path of breakthrough for himself.

If Yang Chen had said his cultivation had reached a bottleneck, then it would have still been fine, because everyone knew this. Even if Yang Chen had told him his cultivation method, then it would still not have mattered, after all this was not some big secret, all of the elders knew, so Yang Chen knowing it was not a big deal.

But Song Hang was shocked that Yang Chen had directly pointed out the crux of the matter. He had even correctly identified the condition of spirit power and the other symptoms. Even his master would not be able to know the condition of his body, but what Yang Chen had unexpectedly said was the exact situation. This did not just astonish Song Hang, instead it had already risen to the level of fear.

But on the other hand, this had brought a pleasant surprise for Song Hang. Since Yang Chen knew everything about his current situation, that also meant that he knew where the problem was and what the solution would be.

Only, Yang Chen had clearly refused Song Hang's intention of

consulting him. 'I know what I know, but why should I tell you?' These words were very clear. From the start, he didn't have any intention of informing him of the solution, but however much Song Hang's heart itched, he didn't have anything he could say to convince him.

If their positions were switched, he also wouldn't tell anything to someone who had looked for trouble just after he had saved his master.

Because of Liang Shao Ming and Chu Heng's relationship, as well as the matter of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, everyone in the Luminous Moon Hall resented Yang Chen. As long as they had an opportunity, everyone wished to teach Yang Chen a lesson, even to the extent of obstructing him, even for a little bit.

It had to be known that, on the path of cultivation, apart from following the law of karma, the mental state was also very important. Even if one was very strong mentally, the emotional troubles and frustrations still accumulated and would make it extremely hard to make the breakthrough.

This was the motive behind Song Hang's accusation of hampering the progress of students against Yang Chen. At most he would get a punishment, like examining his conscience or something similar, so he had especially come up with such a reason, for the Palace Master himself to come and see the problems with Yang Chen.

Only, what he hadn't expected was that, rather than finding trouble for Yang Chen, he would find a matter which would gnaw

on his own mind instead. Clearly Yang Chen knew the method to make the breakthrough, but it was inside of his mind and Song Hang could not obtain it in any way. If he kept on holding this kind of anxious mood, that would precisely be a heart's devil.

All the people present realized Song Hang's predicament and also understood his vexation over having no room of maneuver. There were as many rights and wrong as there were mouths, but in this situation, Song Hang himself was responsible for trying to become the spokesperson for the Luminous Moon Hall and Liang Shao Ming for venting their anger, without thinking about the consequences.

Even the Palace Master didn't know how to solve this matter. If Song Hang could break through, Pure Yang Palace would have one more YuanYing stage expert, but at this very moment, even he could not ask Yang Chen to lend a hand. Only after this matter cooled down a little bit, could he seek a method to resolve this.

"I see, regarding today's inspection, the Merit Transferring Disciple, Yang Chen, seems to have done pretty good!"

The Palace Master clearly wanted to change the subject and turned to announcing the inspection's outcome.

But just as Palace Master deliberately wanted to close the matter, someone had a different interest: Law Enforcement Hall's hall master Meng Xian, who had always supported Yang Chen in the past because of his good relationship with Du Qian, stopped the Palace Master, saying that:

“For the time being, hold the verdict, just now we have only found a few disciples with low cultivation, but we haven’t looked for disciples with a high cultivation, and moreover Ye Xiu Manor’s disciples also hadn’t been checked. It is better if check all of them properly .”

Once Meng Xian opened his mouth, Song Hang also felt support and his mental state immediately began to improve. Until now he had been unable to obtain a solution from Yang Chen, so what harm was there in keeping the investigation of this matter open for the time being? Maybe he would be able to gain some leverage as well, so that he could make Yang Chen anxious.

“Yes, those disciples with high cultivation should also be interrogated.”

Song Hang immediately added:

“These past years, there haven’t been any outer disciple building their foundation, clearly there is some problem.”

Strictly speaking, from the time Yang Chen had become the Merit Transferring Disciple, there had indeed not been any Foundation stage disciple. In the previous eight months and the ten months prior, for an entire year and a half, there hadn’t been a single outer disciple becoming a Foundation stage disciple.

For low level disciple, increasing their cultivation was very easy, but it was not so simple for high grade disciples. Everyone knew

this point clearly, and previously Song Hang had been preoccupied with finding low level disciples, believing that he could catch Yang Chen's achilles heel, but he hadn't anticipated that Yang Chen would leave a flaw so openly. Just now, after Meng Xian had reminded him, he had obtained his drive again.

But that vigorous Song Hang hadn't discovered that disdainful gazes directed towards him. In fact, none of the people present on the scene had discovered this.

Yang Chen also had a card up his sleeve, so they could find anyone they wanted, he wasn't worried. The more people Meng Xian would find, the more it would add to Yang Chen's glory. Therefore, although he was baffled at Meng Xian's behaviour, he hadn't opposed him even slightly.

The Palace Master was also astonished by Yang Chen's behaviour, but he also wanted to see the overall result of Yang Chen's guidance. Meng Xian's proposal was directly out of his heart, so he immediately instructed Song Hang to go and find more people.

Following the departure of Meng Xian and Song Hang, the Palace Master suddenly turned to Yang Chen and asked:

“Do you really know his problem?”

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen replied with a smile:

“But, I will not say!”

Even the Palace Master had been refused by Yang Chen, without getting the slightest bit of information. Today’s matter had caused a great loss of face for Song Hang. Even if Yang Chen told him the method to resolve it, he would not feel thankful to Yang Chen.

Another thing, if Song Hang made breakthrough and entered YuanYing stage, then the Luminous Moon Hall would have one more expert and Song Hang’s position would also increase. Yang Chen would definitely not have an easy time. He was also not foolish enough to help a person who was hostile towards him get promoted.

“If Song Hang made a breakthrough, then my Pure Yang Palace would have one more YuanYing stage expert.”

The Palace Master also wanted to put a fight, so he muttered to himself:

“This would really be a great benefit for my sect.”

“Since you are missing a YuanYing expert so much, disciple takes the responsibility to find a Da Cheng stage expert!”

Yang Chen continued, without giving the slightest bit of face to the Palace Master:



“So that you won’t miss Song Hang even a bit!”

“What did you say? A Da Cheng stage expert?”

Not only the Palace Master, but all of the other hall masters were greatly alarmed. The Pure Yang Palace already didn’t have a Da Cheng expert for many years, but Yang Chen was surprisingly talking about finding a Da Cheng stage expert. Did he really think that finding a Da Cheng stage expert was child’s play?

“This matter can be discussed later.”

After giving his conclusion, Yang Chen didn’t reveal anything and pushed the matter to the future:

“Today, I first request all of the seniors to check the results of this disciple’s ability to provide guidance!”

No one was glad at Yang Chen’s words, but everyone understood. The party had come to the Nine Earth Manor with great fanfare to catch the Merit Transferring Disciple, Yang Chen, for the crime of being absent without notice and hampering the progress of his disciples, a blame which none of them would like if placed on them.

“Fine, today we will inspect everything carefully!”

The Palace Master also let go of all anxiousness. Since Yang Chen was saying, so then he had to have something to back it up. In any case, it was only a matter of time. The Palace Master also became optimistic and sat up upright on the seat of honor and began to wait.

After another hour, Song Hang and Meng Xian had found suitable people from the Ye Xiu Manor and the Nine Earth Manor and arrived in front of everyone.

“Greetings to the Palace Master. Under the guidance of Uncle Master Yang, disciple’s cultivation has greatly increased.”

One disciple at the peak qi layer, respectfully greeted everyone and began to narrate:

“Previously this disciple just wanted to increase my cultivation quickly and thus the spirit power in my body was not pure, but under uncle master Yang’s guidance, disciple has been able to remove the impurities and obtain purer spirit power.”

“Uncle master Yang said that being hasty is not good, that I must build a good foundation at the qi layer, which is far better than increasing my cultivation quickly. Forcefully building my Foundation would damage it on the contrary.”

The qi layer disciple didn’t seem to hide anything, he said everything he knew:

“The profits this disciple has received from nourishing the spirit power in these one and half years are not shallow. This disciple has complete confidence that, in few months, this disciple will be able to build his Foundation in one stroke!”

Everyone present was an expert, if there had been some mistake in his words, everyone would have known. Just his confident words of being able to build his Foundation in one stroke, already clearly explained the benefits he had received from nourishing his spirit power.

Even after few more peak qi layer disciples were questioned, their words were nearly the same, the only differences were their problems. All of them wanted to cultivate quickly and build their Foundation before others, but the same thing was their confident tone towards reaching the Foundation stage.

Apparently every one of these people had no doubt about themselves being able to reach the Foundation stage in one stroke. Furthermore, their confidence was not based on any external force like a Foundation stage pill or things like that. If such disciples succeeded in building their Foundation, everyone there would clearly know at what level their future achievements would be. After a few more successive disciples, everyone looked towards Yang Chen as if he were some kind of monster.

Following those disciples, the newly entered disciples of the Ye Xie Manor were the same. Apart from those who had just entered this year and were only learning about other things, among those who had started their cultivation, there wasn't anyone who didn't have a proper understanding of his cultivation, and furthermore

all of them also knew what would be suitable for them at this stage.

The reply given by these disciples even evoked the admiration of those experts. If in the days when they had started their cultivation, they had had such a high level Merit Transferring Disciple like Yang Chen, then they would have also had an even higher cultivation base. Not to mention the time they would have saved which they had spent going on wrong paths. It would have brought lots of benefits to them.

After a time, everyone looked at Yang Chen as if they were seeing a ghost again. Especially the Palace Master, within whose sight a flame could be seen, burning fiercely, as if he was looking at a precious gem.

None of them could see as far as the Palace Master. If the outer disciples had such levels of achievements, then after hundred years, what kind of situation would the Pure Yang Palace be in? Maybe, at that time, the Pure Yang Palace would also be able to stand together with big sects like the Greatest Heaven Sect or the Clear Sky Sect.

“Song Hang, do you still have any further doubt?”

The Palace Master turned towards Song Hang. Since this matter was incited by him, then naturally, he also had to be the one who had to conclude it. If he was still not satisfied, then he could still find some example.

“This disciple has nothing to say!”

Song Hang could not speak even half a word in this kind of situation and could only bow and reply. But in his heart he was full of curses for Liang Shao Ming. He definitely had an opportunity to break through, but because of Liang Shao Ming prompting him, he had ended up making up a disgrace of himself in front of everyone.

“What about the rest of you?”

The Palace Master turned towards everyone and asked.

“We have nothing to say!”

This time, everyone replied in a uniform tone, with everyone's eyes on Song Hang.

# Chapter 162 - Her Opportunities Are None Of Your Business

---

Song Hang wanted to teach Yang Chen a lesson, but in the end he was the one who was slapped across his face. Those hall masters and the Palace Master, whom he had previously asked to punish Yang Chen, had instead become spectators for his own humiliation, moreover he could not offend them and neither did he dare to have any thoughts of attacking Yang Chen.

The meeting was then disbanded, but the only one who left was Song Hang. None among the others left, waiting for Yang Chen to clarify that matter regarding the Da Cheng stage expert. Everyone could not help being curious. A Da Cheng stage expert was the target of every sect for roping in, how could it be so easy for Yang Chen?

Yang Chen would certainly not speak of this in the Nine Earth Manor, the group of elders this concerned the most were also not present, so Yang Chen did not say much and invited everyone to the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, and even specifically asked for that group of elders to be requested over, so that everything could be cleared up.

Wang Yong only now heard about Song Hang's actions and was furious, but before he could do anything, everyone had already rushed to the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

Seeing Wang Yong so furious, everyone knew what the matter was. All of them greeted Wang Yong, one by one, and then began to praise his good fortune for having such a hardworking grand

disciple.

When Wang Yong understood the events that had taken place, he was greatly comforted in his heart. The more face his grand disciple had, the more it would add to his own face. He greatly praised Yang Chen without any restraint and without any sense of modesty.

“What courtesy?”

When someone mentioned this, Wang Yong glared at him and said:

“My grand disciple has such great accomplishments, so naturally I will praise him. If you all do not like this, then you should try to find your own grand disciple with such great accomplishments!”

His intention to shield him was clearly displayed in his speech.

When the other elders heard something related to a Da Cheng expert, they also left all of the work at hand and hurried there. After everyone had arrived, Yang Chen asked Gao Yue to go and stay with them and only then he began to explain.

The reason why Yang Chen had asked Gao Yue to go and stay with them was because he wanted to pave the way for her success. These people not only included elders, but also the hall masters. If, in the future, Gao Yue wanted to enter the upper echelons of the Pure Yang Palace then she had to make good relations with these

people.

But to everyone else, it seemed as if Yang Chen heavily respected his master, so they secretly nodded. At the same time, they also felt profound envy towards Gao Yue. Why couldn't they have such a good disciple?

Afterwards, Yang Chen didn't beat around the bush and directly made a report about the old tree demon, wanting to join the Eccentrics Hall to everyone. At the same time, he also invited them to attend the old tree demon's tribulation.

As soon as Yang Chen's words left his mouth, everyone in the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard immediately took a deep breath.

Among the people present, Wang Yong, who was merely at the peak YuanYing stage, had the highest cultivation. Among the other hall masters, elders and the Palace Master, many were just at the JieDan stage and hadn't even passed the thunder tribulation of the three tribulations. So, suddenly hearing that a peak YuanYing stage expert was going to go through his Yin Fire tribulation and all of them could attend the ritual, made everyone go crazy.

A Da Cheng stage expert was indeed a Da Cheng stage expert! According to Yang Chen's words, that old tree demon was very formidable and had suppressed the Yin Fire tribulation more than a dozen times by now. What kind of cultivation would he need to have to suppress a heavenly tribulation? Furthermore, how had he suppressed it?



Leaving aside the worth of a Da Cheng stage expert to sect, just with this one trick, if the sect could grasp it, then everyone at the peak YuanYing stage would be able to get countless opportunities.

Even without this, just being able to witness an expert pass the Yin Fire tribulation at close proximity was simply a great opportunity to touch upon the edge of the Da Cheng stage for everyone there. Especially for those elders, who were at the YuanYing stage, this was simply a heaven sent opportunity, which many people could not witness in their lifetimes.

Even for JieDan experts to be able to witness someone passing their tribulation was very beneficial towards their mental state and this kind of matter was surprisingly happening within their own sect and the one who made this possible was moreover a disciple at the initial Foundation stage. This could not be said to just be a miracle now, this was simply making the impossible possible.

Such a good opportunity had surprisingly fallen into the lap of the Pure Yang Palace. Everyone was looking at Yang Chen as if they were looking at some freak. To be able to entice an almost Da Cheng stage expert with just the initial Foundation stage, what kind of good fortune was this?

Such a great expert entering the Eccentric Hall of the sect, who would not approve? A Da Cheng stage expert... What would he need from the current Pure Yang Palace? If he wanted, he could just exterminate the entire sect without any tricks. So there was nobody who thought that there was any hidden goal or secret here. Apart from lamenting Yang Chen's good fortune, what else could they say?

“As for the matter of attending the ritual of his tribulation, the senior said that there shouldn’t be too many people and he has allowed disciple to give away invitations.”

After everyone had absorbed the shock, Yang Chen calmly continued:

“Within the next few days, disciple will send out invitations to everyone. At that time, I request the Palace Master to restrain those who don’t have invitation cards. Senior has said those people who have nothing to do with it, should not show up.”

As soon as everyone heard these words, they immediately understood that there wouldn’t be many invitations, but at the same time, everyone of the Luminous Moon Hall heaved a large sigh in their heart. It would be a miracle if Yang Chen gave an invitation to Liang Shao Ming and Song Hang. Just now there was the matter of him not guiding disciples properly, so how could they expect him to return good for evil? At least the Palace Master didn’t have any extravagant hopes.

It could clearly seen from the matter of Song Hang’s cultivation bottleneck, and that Yang Chen had refused to tell him the method to resolve it. So for the opportunity of attending the tribulation, Liang Shao Ming and Song Hang should not even think about it. If they had known that Yang Chen still had such a card up his sleeve, would they still have constantly looked to create trouble for Yang Chen?

“This kind of opportunity, every disciple of the sect with a cultivation of the JieDan stage or higher must be allowed to witness!”

Elder Lin Yunfeng had come from the Luminous Moon Hall and he naturally understood what Yang Chen meant, so he couldn't help but speak up.

But he also didn't say it directly and rather talked about all JieDan experts. In this way, he had used the power of the group to force Yang Chen. Yang Chen also would not want to offend all of the JieDan expert of the sect, would he?

“Inappropriate!”

Wang Yong immediately shook his head. The Luminous Moon Hall's people have looked for trouble with Yang Chen more than once. If his great master didn't speak up for him there, then who would?

“How is it inappropriate?”

Lin Yunfeng rhetorically asked. He had to support his disciples.

“The senior has said there shouldn't be too many people. After including all of us elders, how many seats would there be left?”

Wang Yong shook his head:

“Furthermore, if we added all of the hall masters and the Palace Master, the number of people would be many. I fear that senior would find it annoying.”

“Alright, then all of the hall masters should not be allowed!”

Initially Lin Yunfeng had wanted to get a seat for Liang Shao Ming. He had dragged in all of the hall masters as an excuse for this goal, but since Wang Yong had himself made the decision for the hall masters, he naturally wanted to use this opportunity to get the final decision.

“The Luminous Moon Hall’s hall master has been punished by all of the elders and the Palace Master unanimously to meditate and examine his conscience for twenty years.”

Wang Yong also knew the intentions of his grand disciple and directly eliminated Liang Shao Ming:

“So it will not be good to interrupt him!”

“This!”

Lin Yunfeng creased his brows:

“This is a rare opportunity. He can just come out to attend the ritual and then go back to examining his conscience again,

wouldn't that be alright?"

Liang Shao Ming being penalized to examine his conscience was a public matter in the sect, so Lin Yunfeng hadn't boldly supported him and only used a conversational tone to help him.

"Elder Lin, hall master Liang has been punished because he has sinned!"

But Wang Yong didn't back down even in the slightest. Even now the Luminous Moon Hall had tried to harm his grand disciple. If they could still obtain benefits from him, what would that mean? So he directly nodded his head:

"If he comes out to receive the benefits and then returns after getting the benefits, what kind of punishment is this? Everyone must know that playing with my Pure Yang Palace is not a child's matter."

These words of Wang Yong were completely reasonable. People who had committed offence, went out to get benefits and then went back, what kind of punishment would that be? It would be just an inconvenience. Once he said these words, the Palace Master had no option other than interrupting the discussion.

Lin Yunfeng still wanted to argue more, but the Palace Master deeply sighed:

"Senior brother Yun, regarding Liang Shao Ming's matter, the

decision will be according to senior brother Wang's words! People who are being punished should not come out."

"But, Palace Master!"

Lin Yunfeng became anxious. This was such a good opportunity, he just couldn't accept his disciple being unable to witness it.

"Don't say anything more!"

The Palace Master immediately stopped Lin Yunfeng:

"Although my Pure Yang Palace is not one of the big sects, sect rules are still sect rules, not some child's play. If everyone started to look down on them, how would we restrain our sect's disciples?"

After the Palace Master used the sect's rules, there was no more room for discussion. Lin Yunfeng could only shut up, but he glared at Yang Chen with a bitter gaze. All of these matters were because of this Yang Chen, including the matter of his grand disciple Chu Heng turning into a sect traitor. Everything was done by this Yang Chen.

Once Lin Yunfeng shut up, the other elders could already see that this line of Wang Yong, from great master to master to grand disciple, were all gritty people. As soon as they were wronged, they would immediately pay it back.

Among all of them, a few were very happy as their relationship with Wang Yong's line was very good, especially with Yang Chen. This included the Medicine Hall's master Zhu Chen Tao, Foreign Affair Hall's master Xu Cheng Xin and Law Enforcement Hall's master Meng Xian, who were extremely grateful to the heavens for giving them the opportunity to make such a young friend, whose luck was completely in defiance of the heavens. This made countless people envious to death. This kind of disciple had to be guarded and cultivated properly.

Which disciple had broadened the master vein of the Pure Yang Palace? Which disciple had discovered a new spirit vein and had still left rooms for them? Which disciple could help the sect with Elder Wu's cultivation experience, even when he could have kept it all for himself? Which disciple would invite them for the opportunity of witnessing a tribulation? Other than Yang Chen who could do all of this?

In comparison, what had the Luminous Moon Hall done for the sect? Apart from enjoying the natural resources of the sect, what benefits had they given back in return? A person's true value could only be determined by comparison and everyone could see who was better.

“In fact, it is not impossible that hall master Liang will have the opportunity!”

Just when everyone thought the dust had settled, Yang Chen suddenly opened his mouth. Not only that, the words he said startled everyone.

“What kind of opportunity?”

Lin Yunfeng was exalted, at that moment he didn't mind Yang Chen being a junior and hastily asked.

“Although this disciple hasn't seen the Yin Fire tribulation, I know that, during the time of the tribulation, the energies of heaven and earth fluctuate greatly and it is not confined to a single region, it will cover almost the entire area of our MeiQing mountains.”

Yang Chen continued further:

“As long as they are within the area of our Pure Yang Palace, anyone can sense the turmoil in spirit power.”

These words were indeed reasonable and everyone who heard these words happily nodded. But Yang Chen had not finished speaking and continued:

“Disciple has also seen some past records of tribulations of other seniors: during the time of tribulation, if the cultivation is not sufficient, then it will be better to watch it from afar. If the distance is too close, they won't be able to protect themselves and will be affected by the tribulation. During that time, the only ones who can watch the tribulation are the elders.”

Once these words came out of his mouth, everyone's complexion immediately turned awkward. Although these words were to



provide an opportunity to Liang Shao Ming, it was the same as not actually providing it. Moreover, these words completely eliminated Lin Yunfeng's previous suggestion of letting all JieDan stage experts watch the show.

Until now, every JieDan expert was looking hopefully at Yang Chen, because of Lin Yunfeng's proposal, but after Yang Chen declared this, everyone with an insufficient cultivation could not approach. So from the start, there was no opportunity. Who could still blame Yang Chen for not giving them an opportunity?

Although it was reasonable, the color on every hall master's face changed. According to Yang Chen's words, they would not have the opportunity to go close and could only sense it from far away.

"If a few hall masters want to watch, the elders can cooperatively protect them."

Immediately after Yang Chen had spoken, several JieDan experts looked at the Palace Master with hopeful gazes.

Excitement could be seen in everyone's eyes. They hadn't thought of this, but after Yang Chen's warning, all of them began to think about this problem. Apparently, the few YuanYing stage elders in front of them, protecting them would still be problematic. Even without adding Liang Shao Ming, these few people would be unable to save themselves.

In these kinds of circumstances, it was impossible for Lin Yunfeng to add more people because, for Liang Shao Ming to come,

someone had to go out and every one of them had the same status, so why would someone give up their seat for Liang Shao Ming, who was being punished?

“So then, only the elders in addition to everyone present here.”

Lin Yunfeng could only concede that Liang Shao Ming didn't have good fortune. But he still attacked another person: Since his disciple didn't have such good fortune, their's shouldn't, also.

“Since Gao Yue is also not a hall master, shouldn't she be excluded with them?”

While saying this, Lin Yunfeng hadn't looked at Gao Yue, but rather Yang Chen, as if waiting to see what Yang Chen would do if Gao Yue did not get this opportunity.

“Naturally!”

Yang Chen conceded, without caring in the least:

“Elders, you just need to concern yourselves with these few uncle masters. This disciple will handle his master's matters.”

# Chapter 163 - Attending The Yin Fire Tribulation

---

Because there was absolutely no other opportunity, Lin Yunfeng fought for his face one last time, but other than feeling vexed, he didn't feel anything.

The old tree demon was addressed as 'senior' by the group of people headed by the Palace Master. That old man, whether in terms of age or cultivation, was their senior.

Finally, after the discussion between these few people, the Palace Master, acting as a master receiving disciples, accepted the old tree demon into the Pure Yang Palace and the old tree demon became one of the few top-most cultivators in the Pure Yang Palace. Simultaneously, he also became the hall master of the Eccentrics Hall.

She Kui and Xie Sha didn't have any objection to this. They never knew anything about power struggles and the cultivation of that old tree demon was very formidable, so both of them accepted that he became the hall master.

All of the elders began to prepare to defend as many peak JieDan experts as possible at the time of the ritual, so that as many people could attend this incomparable encounter as possible. Yang Chen, together with Gao Yue returned to her courtyard, concerned about her injury.

“Currently, I don't feel anything wrong.”

Facing Yang Chen's care, Gao Yue's face had turned a little red and then she replied with confidence:

“Not just that, my spiritual power cultivation has also increased by a lot.”

After saying that, Gao Yue looked at Yang Chen with a face full of worry and asked:

“Your spiritual power cultivation has greatly decreased, is there anything to worry about?”

“No, it will be back to normal in a few days.”

Yang Chen said that with an indifferent expression. He definitely would not let Gao Yue feel guilty about this.

“This time, you have greatly offended Elder Lin and the people of the Luminous Moon Hall!”

Gao Yue anxiously continued, but she immediately patted Yang Chen's shoulder:

“But they were also trying to take advantage of you, so you do not need to mind them. If this sort of matter happens again in the future, directly go and find master. Master will definitely get you out of any predicament!”

This lineage of Wang Yong, Gao Yue and Yang Chen, didn't have any other people they could rely on, so they had to take care of it themselves. This time, it clearly were the people of the Luminous Moon Hall who had made the first provocation, but Yang Chen returned it with a ruthless slap.

“Furthermore, you said that I will be your responsibility.”

After Gao Yue said this, her gaze turned to Yang Chen again:

“Don't tell me you have some method to defend me from the influence of the tribulation?”

“Be at ease, disciple will take care of that!”

Yang Chen patted his chest and guaranteed:

“I guarantee to get you front row seats!”

If other people had said this, Gao Yue may not have believed it, but after Yang Chen had opened his mouth, Gao Yue was completely convinced. After such a long time, Gao Yue had a blind trust towards Yang Chen. Especially after he had healed her through the pair cultivation for spiritual awareness, this confidence had become even deeper.

Naturally Yang Chen was not just talking big, he directly

returned to the old tree demon and began to help him in finding a suitable location. This location had to be at the MeiQing Mountain, furthermore, if he failed, there shouldn't be any damage to the Pure Yang Palace. But the possibility of failure was extremely low: the old tree demon had suppressed the tribulation several times now and with the Body Dividing Secrets, he absolutely could not fail.

This location should also be beneficial for the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace: the spirit power would greatly fluctuate during this tribulation, so the location had to be chosen such that a majority of people could sense it.

But this matter was for the Palace Master and them to think about. Yang Chen did not need to care much about it. He just had to come at a certain time and take the best seats.

Regardless of anything, Yang Chen was convinced that there would be no better place for the ritual than where the old tree demon's main body was. But the only people who could be present near his main body while he was going through his tribulation would be the ones whom he trusted with his life, otherwise the old tree demon would definitely not agree.

But the strange thing was that the old tree demon readily agreed to Yang Chen's request. Nobody knew why he had so much confidence in Yang Chen, or if he thought that an initial Foundation stage and an initial JieDan stage cultivators could not be a threat to him. In any case, that old tree demon agreed without any hesitation.

Within less than a day, the entire Pure Yang Palace became aware of this news. Everyone within the range of the MeiQing Mountain was looking forward to it in high spirits.

Unfortunately, the time of that old tree demon's tribulation was very soon and was going to begin just the next day, otherwise, if they could notify their friends and relatives, even if they could not look at it personally and could just sense the fluctuations in the heavens' and earth's spirit power, it would be greatly beneficial for them.

The region was properly chosen: it was a place between the Nine Earth Manor and the Pure Yang Palace, slightly closer to the Pure Yang Palace. This place was found to be the most suitable region after careful calculation, so the old tree demon also didn't have any objections to it.

The group, including the Palace Master hadn't discovered that only an incarnation of the old tree demon was present with them and not the main body. She Kui and Xie Sha knew this fact, but they didn't say anything and only followed the group of the Palace Master and the elders who were arranging the defensive spell formations. They were greatly astonished after experiencing the spell formation and at the same time also silently learnt it.

It took a whole day for the Palace Master and the elders to arrange the defensive spell formations, but all of them were very happy. This kind of opportunity did not come every day.

Last time, Yang Chen had allowed people of the Clear Sky Sect to witness the tribulation of elder Hua Wanting, but he had worried

that he could not get such an opportunity for the Palace Master and the elders. The arrival of the old tree demon was just like a shipment of charcoal in the deepest winter and had satisfied Yang Chen's small wish.

Everyone was nervously waiting for the tribulation to begin. The elders had already prepared everything properly and all of the hall masters were protected within the spell formation and they were also the last line of protection and at the same time they had also prepared to sense everything at close range.

Under the eyes of the entire MeiQing Mountain, the old tree demon triggered his Yin Fire tribulation. Strictly speaking, his incarnation triggered the Yin Fire tribulation.

An imaginary fire began to burn from the second body of the old tree demon. Soon afterwards it penetrated into the mud and the entire body of the old tree demon seemed to be shrouded within imaginary fire. His entire person seemed to have turned into a human shaped torch, burning brightly.

The old tree demon again and again tried to push down the Yin Fire, but the Yin Fire continued to burn his body. The formidable spirit power triggered the energy of heaven and earth to fluctuate, which could be sensed throughout the entire MeiQing mountain.

Even at a distance the sensation was the same, but the few YuanYing stage experts had turned pale with fright. This kind of formless and shapeless Yin Fire was the final roadblock on their path towards the Da Cheng stage. Just looking at this kind of strength, if this Yin Fire really reached their bodies, how would



they handle it?

That old tree demon's resistance was extremely great: after suppressing the Yin Fire for the ninety second time, all of the Yin Fire flames attached to his body completely vanished. Soon afterwards, an extremely formidable pressure, which made everyone unable to look at him directly, began to slowly burst out from his body.

The energy of heaven and earth seemed to have lost control and the old tree demon's body seemed to be an enormous whirlpool which frantically emptied all of the spirit power in a radius of several hundred miles.

The divided body of the old tree demon was floating in the air in front of everyone and began to complete the final transformation of reaching the Da Cheng stage. The frightening spirit power submerged his body like a wave and the Yin Fire from a moment ago had cleaned all of the impurities in his body completely. At this moment, after being rinsed by the spirit power, the old tree demon had broken through the YuanYing stage and entered the realm of the Da Cheng stage flawlessly.

Under everyone's gazes, the old tree demon's body rose into the air and countless rays of life started to emerge from his body and, like goose feathers, snow began to fall to the ground, covering almost the entire MeiQing mountain and then it disappeared.

Soon afterwards, in the regions where the light rays had fallen, young cassia saplings emerged from the ground and began to grow quickly under the nourishment of the spirit power, becoming fist

thick in a short time.

By now, the entire MeiQing Mountain was completely below the shadow of cassia trees, so that the young saplings in Yang Chen's backyard were nothing out of the ordinary, submerged among countless cassia trees. Apart from Yang Chen and Gao Yue, nobody else knew the location of the Cassia Tree Demon's main body.

The defensive spell formations arranged by the elders effectively resisted the dispersed spirit power from the Yin Fire and also allowed all of the hall masters to observe this grand occasion.

This was the first Da Cheng expert in the Pure Yang Palace in several hundred years and this was moreover also everyone's first time personally witnessing the birth of a Da Cheng stage expert. This implied that the Pure Yang Palace would get even more formidable from now on and the sect's strength would increase even more.

The group of elders and hall masters were unable to control their excitement and were regretting being unable to enter seclusion immediately. But a Da Cheng stage expert had just been born and he was also the hall master of their eccentrics hall, how could they forget their manners? Therefore, after the spell formations were removed, the first thing everyone did was to congratulate the old tree demon.

Near the old tree demon's main body, Yang Chen and Gao Yue were very scared, seeing the old tree demon extinguish the Yin Fire ninety two times and complete the tribulation.

Compared to outside, it was much less intense at the location of the old tree demon's real body. Only a faint flame would burn and be suppressed, but Yang Chen knew that this small flame contained at least ninety percent of the Yin Fire Tribulation's might. Even if it just seemed like ten percent to the outside.

With such a close distance, Gao Yue could also sense the frightfulness of the Yin Fire tribulation and, looking at it tensely, she clenched her fist and her face lost color in her nervousness.

Those people who hadn't gone through a tribulation could not sense the frightfulness of that small Yin Fire, but they would still be intimidated, like Gao Yue, who was thinking how she would handle it if this frightening power came onto her body at this moment?

“Master!”

Yang Chen promptly caught the anomaly within Gao Yue and immediately grabbed her sweaty hand:

“Attending this ritual is to increase your knowledge, not to strike at your confidence!”

As soon as she felt the warmth from Yang Chen grabbing her hand, Gao Yue was quickly roused from her depression and she seamlessly struggled free from his hand, immediately recovered her senses.

“You are just at the initial JieDan stage right now, the Yin Fire tribulation is indeed slightly frightening for you right now, but believe me master!”

Yang Chen had fixed his gaze onto Gao Yue’s eyes, making her gaze back into his eyes:

“All of these heavenly tribulations will not be a barrier to you!”

Yang Chen’s words touched the sore point in her heart. Indeed, the ritual was just to increase her knowledge and not to strike at her confidence. Moreover, Gao Yue had such blind trust towards Yang Chen that, as long as Yang Chen said that she could, she would immediately feel the same way.

While, with Yang Chen, Gao Yue’s mood had quickly changed, over at the old tree demon, who had completed his Yin Fire tribulation, he began to rapidly absorb spirit power. Yang Chen and Gao Yue, who were the closest to his main body, had naturally clearly experienced this entire process.

“Congratulations! Congratulations!”

Yang Chen cupped his hands and congratulated the main body of the old tree demon. Gao Yue also followed suit.

Next, in a grand ceremony, the Pure Yang Palace declared the old tree demon to be the hall master of the Eccentrics Hall and at the

same time, with absolute certainty, also declared that the Pure Yang Palace had a Da Cheng stage expert.

Many envoys from friendly sects dropped in to congratulate them and the sect was once again busy with receiving visitors and other trifling matters. The Pure Yang Palace had once more become the focus point, giving rise to the attention of countless sects and cultivators.

Only, none of this was related to Yang Chen. In fact, after the end of the ritual, the group of people who had witnessed the tribulation entered a short seclusion to comprehend everything. Gao Yue was no exception and Yang Chen had also entered seclusion to inspect his body.

From the time he had went to save his master, he had been very busy and did not even have the time to examine his body, but now that everything was finished, he could properly examine all of the transformations which had happened in his body.

Although he was able to save Gao Yue using the Great Profound Heart Sutra, the price he had to pay was extremely high. His spiritual awareness had fallen from the initial YuanYing stage to the peak JieDan stage, by an entire realm. Even the area of his spirit sea had decreased greatly.

But despite this, Yang Chen discovered that, after passing through the pair cultivation, the framework of his spirit sea had become even more stable. Also, the decrease in spiritual awareness was not like it had disappeared, instead it was more like the spiritual sea had been forcefully compressed and the spiritual

awareness had been compressed.

Discovering this, Yang Chen immediately became delighted. He would not have even blinked even if he had to use his entire spiritual awareness to save Gao Yue, but he had surprisingly discovered that his condition was not as bad as he had estimated, so naturally he had become very cheerful.

During the practice of the Three Purities Secrets, Yang Chen quickly discovered something different. Compared to before, cultivating the Three Purities Secrets had become even more smooth and easy.

Originally, he had already reached the third layer of the Three Purities Secrets, but cultivating it every time, it was somewhat difficult. But at that moment it had become very smooth. There were almost no obstructions, and since the area had decreased, the circulation had also become much easier.

After spending several days, Yang Chen had finally inspected his body completely. Apart from his spiritual awareness and his spirit sea, there was no remarkable change in any other parts.

By the next day, his spiritual awareness had once again reached the bottleneck. People still continued to visit the Pure Yang Palace, but this did not have any relation with him, so Yang Chen returned to the Nine Earth Manor to continue with his duty as the Merit Transferring Disciple.

# Chapter 164 - First Appearance Of The Devil Cultivation Method

---

Holding the Red Sun Metal Soul, Gao Yue began to refine the flying sword for Yang Chen again. Gao Yue had thought much about this flying sword and really wanted to complete it, at least in a few years.

With the Red Sun Metal Soul now, the main material of the flying sword was already complete and only some assisting materials remained, but this time, Yang Chen did not dare to let Gao Yue go out to seek the materials alone again, and called out to She Kui and Xie Sha, asking them to take out all of the materials they had obtained at the Hao Yi Manor and give them to Gao Yue to choose.

Despite already knowing that Yang Chen, She Kui and Xie Sha, together with Scarface and the old tree demon, had exterminated the Hao Yi Manor, upon seeing this many qiankun pouches being opened before their eyes, even the Palace Master and Wang Yong were alarmed.

Although the Greater Mountains lacked in spirit power, they were extremely enriched in natural resources. The Hao Yi Manor had been raking in materials for more than a thousand years now, so their collection of things almost couldn't be counted.

Everyone was stunned looking at all of these things, crammed inside of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard and their heart were filled with shock. Even Wang Yong was doubtful that, had he been in Yang Chen's place at the Greater Mountains, he would have

been able to bring down that immense manor just by himself.

So many materials! Even the entire Pure Yang Palace may not be able to produce them so easily. Not to mention the other things, there were at least ten materials at the grade of Red Sun Metal Soul and as for spirit stones, their numbers couldn't even be counted.

“This.....this.....”

The Palace Master, who had already remained calm also began to stutter at this moment. His eyes began to glow passionately, as if someone, who had been hungry for more than ten days, had seen the food of a masterchef.

If it were not for the previous meeting regarding the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, where it was declared that everything obtained by disciples would not have to be submitted to the sect, the Palace Master would have wished to immediately announce that all of these things would be confiscated.

Looking at this, Yang Chen shook his head repeatedly. Fortunately he had not taken out those things he had got from the master and the young master of the auction house, otherwise, wouldn't these people have gone crazy?

But in the end, these were just worldly possessions to people who had a high cultivation, the Palace Master also quickly pacified his wavering heart and turned his attention to Yang Chen.



“Yang Chen, can I consult you about something?”

The Palace Master asked in a pleasant manner. If people of other sects heard this, they would have surely joked that there was no difference between seniors and juniors in the Pure Yang Palace. The Palace Master was going as far as to show this much courtesy to an initial Foundation stage disciple, shouldn't he order him? Why did he still need to show this much courtesy?

But it would perhaps be very difficult for outsiders to comprehend the Palace Master's behaviour towards Yang Chen. Even, apart from the hall masters and elders, the ordinary disciples of Pure Yang Palace would not understand it. The reason was that, currently, even the Palace Master could not dare to say that his contribution to the Pure Yang Palace was higher than Yang Chen's.

Let alone the matters of getting face for the Pure Yang Palace, just finding the spirit vein of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, as well as enticing the two YuanYing stage and one Da Cheng stage experts of the Eccentrics Hall were sufficient to make the Palace Master treat Yang Chen favorably.

If his contribution of guiding the outer disciples was added in, it raised Yang Chen's status above all of the JieDan experts in the Palace Master's eyes. So, let alone using a consulting tone, if Yang Chen's cultivation wasn't very low, the Palace Master would have already offered the seat of an elder to him. Furthermore, even if Yang Chen became the Palace Master, replacing him, he would not mind.

“As Palace Master commands!”

At this moment, Yang Chen did not dare to trust the Palace Master's friendly tone very much and hastily replied.

“You see, all of these things here, you will not be able to use all of them completely in a short time.”

The Palace Master happily continued:

“Can you allow our sect's disciple to purchase them for spirit stones, or perhaps exchange for some other suitable things? Furthermore, be relieved, the price will be same as the market value, so you will absolutely not suffer losses.”

The request was not very excessive, Yang Chen had already talked about this with She Kui and Xie Sha. They hadn't taken out the real high quality products, so aside from the things needed for Yang Chen's flying sword, they had intended to sell these things, which they had carried from there. While returning from the Greater Mountains, they only concentrated on bringing as many things as they could.

So many things certainly could not be used by them entirely and originally they had intended to give them in return of favors. Naturally, they would not give them to anyone for free, spirit stones were a must, but the Palace Master had said that they would priced according to the market value, so he was not just asking them to do a favor.

“Among this, one portion is master's, two others belong to the

senior's of the Eccentrics Hall.”

Yang Chen happily replied:

“These things, are sold at very high rates in markets, but in reality, about eighty percent of the market price will be fine. After master has chosen, I will deliver everything to fellow apprentice Shangguan to help me in taking care of them. If anyone within sect wants them, they can get them at the Second Fierce Yang Hall at eighty percent of the market rate.”

Although Shangguan Feng had reached the Foundation stage, his innate talent was limited and so his future accomplishments would also be limited. A person at Yang Chen's level could not waste his time with these things, therefore, he required someone who could handle these matters. Shangguan Feng had been the manager of the Ye Xiu Manor for several decades and had gotten very adept at dealing with these kind of situations.

When Yang Chen met with Shangguan Feng the last time, he had talked to him about things like this. Shangguan Feng was also aware of everything about himself and he knew that, with his aptitude, reaching the JieDan stage was the peak, but he actually liked handling these kinds of matters, so he readily agreed and patted his chest, guaranteeing that he would certainly deal with them properly.

These kinds of things were exactly what the Palace Master had been seeking. Why would he not agree. Even these things were only for the inner disciples of the sect, outer disciples and servants should not even think of using an external object and concentrate

single mindedly on reaching the Foundation stage. Naturally, it would also be taken care of, that nobody could take advantage of these difference in prices and make a profit. Once someone was discovered doing that, everything in their possession would be confiscated and they would not be provided with anything anymore.

Obviously, some people were an exception: Gao Yue and Wang Yong could take anything they wanted, this was out of Yang Chen's respect for them. They were his master and great master, so others couldn't say anything.

After Gao Yue had picked sufficient material, she closely began to discuss with Wang Yong about how to refine a flying sword for Yang Chen. Shangguan Feng also became a big shopkeeper at the Second Fierce Yang Hall.

Very quickly, the Second Fierce Yang Hall became the point of talks in the Pure Yang Palace again. It was continuously bustling with people looking for Shangguan Feng all day. The number of people coming there was even higher compared to those going to the sect's store.

With all of these matters settled, Yang Chen wasn't worried anymore and put his mind to his duty as the Merit Transferring Disciple and, at the same time, began to prepare for the predestined event of the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Method's emergence.

If this world's developments hadn't changed, then, apparently, within the next few months, the Long Tai Spirit Supporting

Method would emerge, and would spread across the entire world like wildfire.

After Yang Chen returned to the Nine Earth Manor, he carefully inspected, and gave pointers to each and everyone. On one side he checked how much the cultivation of the outer disciples and servants had grown, while on the other hand he earnestly reminded them that they should not cultivate a cultivation method of unknown origins. As for inner disciples, they would get their arrangements from the Palace Master.

Yang Chen had even suggested to the Palace Master to wait until the first signs of developments and then immediately publicly announce not to cultivate this cultivation method. This was not Yang Chen being very kind, but rather Yang Chen knowing that, even if the Pure Yang Palace made such an announcement, the majority of people would still not care to follow.

In his previous life, the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Method gave rise to attention of many people. The majority of people did not believe it at first and everyone adopted the strategy of waiting and watching. Especially the experts: especially those who had just entered a bottleneck, they would be ready to try any method to make the breakthrough.

Even the big sects were the same: as long as any big sect had more than a thousand inner disciples, they were bound to have a Method Researching Hall, which would do a study on every cultivation method, in order to perfect the older cultivation methods or perhaps create all new cultivation methods.

This was a very good system for improvement and innovation. No cultivation method was born perfect, instead it would become perfect over time, after passing through the amendments of different people.

These people looked for every method to promote the sect, so they would certainly not ignore this. Within every big sect, aside from those disciples at a bottleneck, the biggest loss would precisely be of this cream. If it was not for them, Lin Cheng He would certainly not have been considered as the target, when in reality he had harmed the foundations of every big sect.

Very few people would indulge in this kind of research, but among these few victims there was no lack of YuanYing stage experts, as they didn't have anyone to guide them on their side. It was not like they did not understand that haste was waste, but unfortunately they had to cultivate to find out. Therefore, with the Pure Yang Palace issuing such a warning, it would certainly gain a good reputation after the event, and there would be no change to the event itself.

People loved to draw conclusions after the event and could only remember the gems of wisdom they had heard at that time and when such a moment came. The Pure Yang Palace's reputation would increase even more in all of the big sects.

“Really, there is such a troublesome cultivation method, where even researching it is out of the question?”

Although the Palace Master considered this very important, he also had the same thoughts. Even researching it was out of the

question?

“No need to have such wishful thinking! Like the elder of the Clear Sky Sect who had not believed that the Blood Phantom Vine would break through the qiankun pouch.”

Yang Chen used the matter of the Clear Sky Sect’s elder to remind the Palace Master:

“In this matter, even a simple mistake should not be there. If the Palace Master does not want to lose any disciple of the sect, then the best is not to even look at this matter.”

Yang Chen’s words had a very profound impact on the Palace Master’s mind, after such a serious warning, the Palace Master also knew good from bad. A matter which could even make Elder Wu afraid would naturally not be so simple. A ban was quickly introduced in the Pure Yang Palace and those who violated it would be evicted from the sect. Such a serious punishment was unprecedented in the sect.

Around this time, the rumors of the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets had already started floating and some people had even tried to cultivate it. So when the Pure Yang Palace’s prohibition news spread to the outside, many sects began to joke about it. Why was the Pure Yang Palace being so careful, as if it had eaten a bad medicine.

They were so intimidated of a minor cultivation method, even after getting a Da Cheng expert? What little courage.

Very soon, every kind of crazy words began to spread, thick and fast. Even with a grand Da Cheng stage expert overseeing them, the Pure Yang Palace had such little courage, why were they still acting like an immortal cultivating sect? They should go become a farmer somewhere!

Even many JieDan stage disciples and YuanYing stage expert objected to it. It was just a cultivation method, was it so serious as to call for an eviction from the sect? Apart from Yang Chen, Gao Yue, Wang Yong and now the Palace master, everyone thought this was going too far.

But this time, the Palace Master had become unshakable like a tortoise, not going back on his decision and using his authority as the Palace Master over the elders. Even if the elders broke this rule, they would be punished severely.

Regardless of whatever the outsiders were saying, the Pure Yang Palace had sealed itself, paying no more attention to them.

Yang Chen also seriously inspected and examined the cultivation of all the disciples at the Ye Xiu Manor and Nine Earth Manor and then after guiding them once, he became carefree.

Very soon, the calamity regarding the devil cultivation method would happen and Yang Chen would certainly not miss this opportunity. She Kui, Xie Sha and even that old tree demon, all began to refine their destined magic weapons under Yang Chen's guidance.



She Kui had four of his poisonous fangs, Xie Sha had the sting of his tail as well as big claws, while the old tree demon had chosen an extremely strong trunk and thick roots.

Although all three demon beasts had a strong cultivation, regarding the refining of tools, they were just children in front of Yang Chen. The demon race's tool refining methods were different from normal cultivators, so apart from obtaining pointers from Yang Chen, they would only get such an opportunity after ascending to the Spiritual World and obtaining guidance from their seniors.

The formidable cultivations of those three allowed them to obtain outstanding results and within the short time of half a year, their destined magic weapons had already formed their embryos. After all, this had to be refined, suiting them mentally and physically, so that there wasn't any rejection. Yang Chen on the contrary hadn't made any progress himself lately.

What Yang Chen wanted to refine was a second wood attributed flying sword, fitting with his Great Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, using the Blood Phantom Vine.

The Blood Phantom Vine had already absorbed the blood of someone who was about to become a Da Cheng stage expert at the Greater Mountains, it had absorbed the blood of countless people at the Hao Yi Manor, including both dao and devil cultivators. Being enriched with blood had allowed the Blood Phantom Vine to get the opportunity to become healthy and strong. This occasion was also the best opportunity for Yang Chen to refine his flying

sword.

Naturally, with Yang Chen's current cultivation, the most he could refine was the sword embryo of the second wood flying sword.

According to Yang Chen's plan, after the arrival of the huge calamity of the devil cultivation method, this sword embryo had to be completed by the time the cultivators of the dao sects surrounded Lin Cheng He. This sword embryo would have an important use for Yang Chen.

# Chapter 165 - Spread Of The Devil

## Cultivation Method

---

The main part of the vine in addition to the luxurious master root also included the main vine. This main part of the Blood Phantom Vine contained ninety percent of its strength, which would be used as the main material for the second wood flying sword.

If Yang Chen had not already spent so much time to subdue this Blood Phantom Vine just to obtain this master vine, getting it wouldn't have been so easy. Even after this, it would still take at least one month to completely take out this main vine.

After losing the master root and the master vine, the Blood Phantom Vine had lost all of its strength. Yang Chen spent two months on it and only then did it regain some vitality. But it was only a trace of liveliness and not the earlier formidable strength which, it could only obtain after absorbing the blood of a formidable expert.

The remaining work was just to refine the second wood flying sword. But the main part of the Blood Phantom Vine wasn't sufficient by itself and Yang Chen still had to add many other materials. Fortunately, this time his harvest at the Hao Yi Manor and the auction house of the Devil Flame Valley had been quite extensive: some assisting materials were of even higher quality than the main ingredients of most people's flying swords.

The consequence of having many high grade materials was the difficulty in refining: nobody could have it both ways in this

world. Fortunately, Yang Chen had the Profound Spirit Furnace, moreover this Profound Spirit Furnace had already absorbed the Real Sun Fire, so it was capable of smelting a large majority of the metal ingredients, otherwise Yang Chen really wouldn't dare to have any thoughts of refining the sword embryo.

Another thing which made Yang Chen refine the second wood flying sword before all others was because, currently Yang Chen's second wood spirit power was basically the same as the Blood Phantom Vine's spirit power and thus had a common origin with the sword, so it would be quite easy to control and the difficulty of refining it would decrease by a lot.

Yang Chen's Immortal Beheading Blade was being warmed within the blood river in his spirit sea, which Yang Chen wanted to treat as his destined flying sword. Apart from upgrading the materials and the technique of refining it, the sword box could also receive the sword souls and increase its grade, in addition to that, the second wood flying sword was only one flying sword of the ten attributes of his Five Phases of Greater Yin and Yang.

Even creating the sword embryo was quite the laborious task. With Yang Chen's current cultivation, there was no other way but using all of his spirit power in every turn, according to the method required to make the sword embryo.

In reality, even if Yang Chen's cultivation had been high, he would still have to use a similar method. The reason was: the higher the grade of a flying sword, the firmer it should be under the control of its master. This method of using the entire spirit power in every turn raised this kind of coordination.

And what was different from his previous life was that, in this life, apart from normal methods, Yang Chen also had three cultivation methods which could make most people go green with envy. The Universal Treasure Raising Secrets, the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets. Whichever one he would use, he could even make countless people of the Immortal World start drooling.

Apart from practicing his normal cultivation, he would first cultivate in accordance with the ordinary cultivation methods, then the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets, after that the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets, and then the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets. This was Yang Chen's daily routine. Moreover, after completing this, he would also practice the Three Purities Secrets once. This would take up the entire day.

While Yang Chen was calmly and methodically preparing his sword embryo, the LongTai Spirit Supporting Method had already begun to spread in the cultivation world.

Nobody knew where this cultivation method had come from, but they knew that, within a night, this cultivation method had become famous everywhere. The ban of the Pure Yang Palace also played a role in this. Because of the Pure Yang Palace's ban, every big sect came to know of these Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets.

Many people also disapproved of the Pure Yang Palace being so frightened, which was only natural. The first ones to cultivate it were some rogue cultivators who started with the intention of testing it, since they didn't have to change their original

cultivation method and it also increased their cultivation.

The Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystals could very soon be found everywhere in the cultivation world. This ore was essential for the cultivation of the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets.

Using the Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal, those people who had cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets for the first time had gone wild with joy. It could remove all kinds of hearts devils and could even transform the hearts devil to increase the efficiency of one's cultivation, which bewitched everyone.

The Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secret, or perhaps the Son Cultivation Method of the Great Devil Mother Son cultivation method, was originally the cultivation method of the devil sects, but at that moment it was slightly decorated so the people couldn't see the truth. Compared with the dao sect's cultivation methods, it could transform all negative thoughts and increase one's confidence, thus it fascinated people even more than all of the cultivation methods of the dao path combined.

Nobody had ever heard of a method which could use their heart's devil or those unpleasant thoughts and even distracting thoughts and refine them into their cultivation before. By comparison, the methods of the dao sects, which required them to always keep their guard up, fell short of the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets.

A cultivation method which could even convert distracting thoughts into cultivation, it was easy to imagine how attractive it would be. Under the Pure Yang Palace's ban, the efficiency of the cultivation method continued to be discussed in private.

Which cultivator didn't have some old friend or best friend? On the road of cultivation, over several hundreds of years time, who didn't have one or two people whom they would relax with? Who would want to spend their final years all alone? After seeing such a cultivation method, many people naturally thought of their best friends first.

If there was some kind of secret method, then people would cultivate it in secret, but this cultivation method has spread everywhere and wasn't limited to a few people. Moreover, those who did not let their friends take advantage were unworthy friends.

The more people started to cultivate it the larger the scale became and the cultivation method began to spread. Very quickly, everyone discovered another benefit of the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets.

Some servants of a small sect discovered that, those who originally didn't have any prospects for cultivation, even those mediocre people who couldn't even sense qi, had unexpectedly broken through the first qi layer after cultivating the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets and entered the ranks of cultivators.

Those servants of the small sect had cultivated it without permission and also had a pleasant discovery: that their cultivation had increased quickly, even compared to those official outer disciples of the sect. Those servants who had lowered their heads for many years unexpectedly had a chance to blow off their steam someday in the future! This disturbed the calmness of those outer

disciples and created a fear that they would lag behind those servants and thus they also began to cultivate it.

This was the most fatal discovery. Who didn't know that these disciples who ensured that the sect would continue for the coming years. If, by cultivating this Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets, even the disciples with the worst aptitudes could enter the sect, would the sects still have to worry about their reserve disciples not being enough? Wouldn't the sect strengthen further?

As for the devil sect's cultivation method: the easier they could be cultivated in the beginning, the more difficult they would get at higher level, but when their cultivation was bearing fruits like this, nobody paid any attention to such an important detail. Even if someone took note of it, they wouldn't be convinced. After all, it was such a majestic cultivation method, how could there be a devil sect's trick behind it?

Small sects and rogue cultivators. The crazy cultivation drive of the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets began to spread and within half a year, the power of many low level qi layer cultivators had advanced by leaps and bounds and the pressure of removing the shame and disgrace provoked even more people in various regions to cultivate it.

This time, many people recalled the Pure Yang Palace's warning and did not dare to touch it as if facing a huge enemy. But when the cultivation of people around them began to rise crazily, they also couldn't help it.

Since there weren't any problems with the people cultivating this



method, who would take the Pure Yang Palace's warning seriously? Even the small sects, including all of their disciples began to research these new Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets.

After a few JieDan experts had also joined in, it brought this mysterious cultivation method to the attention of genuine experts who had also entered the main forces of the cultivation world were holding all sorts of goals.

After a year, the effectiveness of this cultivation method was spread throughout the entire cultivation world. From most junior cultivators, who hadn't even sensed spirit power, to JieDan experts, everyone's cultivation had unexpectedly increased. What kind of expert had created this top notch cultivation method?

Experts who had participated were naturally different from those low level disciples. They cared about their original cultivation method even more. But after few months, they pleasantly discovered that this cultivation method not only didn't conflict with their original cultivation method, but moreover even complemented their efficiency.

The dao sect's cultivation methods required a lot at the time for cultivation. Although all of the JieDan experts had enough cultivation experience, in the end they were still people. They still hadn't entered the stage of having no desire and having no distracting thoughts, and these seemed to be the key strengths of the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets.

Cultivating their own cultivation method in addition to the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets could certainly increase their

original cultivation. The Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets refined all kinds of hearts devils and disturbing thoughts and instead turned them into a tonic for the original cultivation method, which would lead to their original cultivation method improving greatly

Naturally the sensations which a JieDan stage expert had were completely different. After many of them had started cultivating this cultivation method, it gave rise to the attention of many big sects. Thereupon, to understand this cultivation method's characteristics, a few YuanYing stage cultivators also entered the ranks of the researchers.

Speaking truthfully, if it were not for a few reputed JieDan experts who were patting their chests and assuring the safety of this method, no YuanYing stage expert would be convinced of such a ridiculous cultivation method. How was it possible? After cultivating to this realm, who of them didn't know that haste meant waste, so how was it possible to have such an accelerated cultivation without any backlash?

But those JieDan experts who had cultivated it made a solemn vow, guaranteeing the efficiency. After that, a few YuanYing experts began to investigate the principle of this cultivation method. But they only investigated and did not start cultivating.

Although most people had joked at the Pure Yang Palace's warning, these big sects hadn't completely taken it as a joke. At least some people in them were still alert, especially after everyone found that this Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets had spread crazily through the entire cultivation world in the short time of

half a year.

Those who had cultivated to the YuanYing stage were naturally not idiots: all of them were extremely careful. All were carefully, trying to comprehend the underlying principle of this cultivation method and had also carefully analysed the composition of the Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal.

Of those who cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets, none had shown any problems. The only difference that all of them had experienced was that their cultivation speed had become much quicker than usual. The result of cultivation was quite high compared to before. This was something which was quite rare and these YuanYing stage experts also desired to understand the underlying principle of the cultivation method and improve their sect's cultivation methods according to it.

It had to be said that the trick in the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets, which refined all of the negative thoughts, was quite exquisite and also tempted the YuanYing stage experts. They pushed down this temptation and carefully pondered, hoping to discover the secrets within.

Very soon the experts discovered an important property of the Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal. YuanYing stage experts of different sects, after some time, convinced ordinary cultivators to train, using one tenth of the Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal and afterward try to cultivate their own improved cultivation methods.

As if confirming their assumption, everything during the

cultivation went according to the guesses and calculation of the YuanYing stage experts.

That kind of sensation of seizing control over all affairs, increased their confidence and their sense of superiority, produced by successfully improving their older cultivation method, made all of the YuanYing stage experts lose themselves within this sensation.

In their eyes, they hadn't cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets, but instead referred to some of its principle and had gained enlightenment for their own cultivation. This was something that all of the real experts did and it was clearly not such a shallow cultivation method that even newly entered disciples could train to increase their cultivation.

In fact, this was not simple. Even if they were YuanYing stage experts, just to research a cultivation method and improve it based on others, would take at least one year of their time. Moreover, that was also only if they didn't take a wrong path.

It could be said that nobody cherished the things which they had obtained easily, but if they had obtained them through extremely hard work, it was completely different. Although they had improved their own cultivation methods, it still required a bit of the Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal, but it was already their own cultivation method, so regardless of whether it was their feeling of cultivation or the grade of the cultivation method, it was completely different from the low level Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets.

The consequence of these experts participating was that, every big sect began to pay attention to this cultivation method and had specifically sent experts responsible to fuse the sect's most core cultivation methods and then try to make it completely perfect.

Finally, at this stage, it had completely spread in the entire cultivation realm. Apart from the Pure Yang Palace, which had strictly prohibited its disciples from cultivating it, even all of the big sects like the Greatest Heaven Sect, the Clear Sky Sect and the Five Phases Sect were included.

Yang Chen had been paying close attention to the news of the outside world all along. Fortunately, the Clear Sky Sect's elder Hua Wanting had entered closed door training with her newly accepted disciple, Sun Hai Jing, immediately after Yang Chen had left and still hadn't come out, so they didn't have an opportunity to come in contact with this pernicious cultivation method.

After three years of waiting, Yang Chen's Blood Phantom Vine flying sword's embryo had finally begun to take shape, day by day and gradually had the shape of a flying sword.

# Chapter 166 - Grand Disciple Will Settle Great Master's Bottleneck

---

The entire Second Wood flying sword's body was the same color as the Blood Phantom Vine and it was also long. Although it was a little flexible, it was extremely tough. The master root had turned into the sword hilt and the master vine had turned into the sword blade.

It was a long sword blade, around six feet long, but one of its edges was the edge of a blade. From this it could be seen that this second wood flying sword was more of a saber than a sword. Even the edge of the saber was formed after the deformation of the Blood Phantom Vine's master vine. Apart from possessing all of the abilities of the flying sword, this second wood flying sword also possessed the crazy strength of the Blood Phantom Vine.

Naturally, such a sword embryo was perfectly suited for Yang Chen, a reincarnated Great Principle Golden Immortal.

Every day he would refine the sword embryo and cultivate. After his Foundation stage had perfectly stabilized, all ten attributes of spirit power in Yang Chen's body simultaneously increased by one level and reached the second layer of the Foundation stage.

He had also cultivated to the fifth layer of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the seventh layer of the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets. Yang Chen used the Heaven Measuring Ruler from the beginning to carefully determine the effect of these formidable cultivation methods.

The Heaven Measuring Ruler had also undergone large changes after coming into Yang Chen's hands. Originally, it hadn't been properly cared for, but after being nourished by the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets, it no longer had that ruined appearance and instead changed to a brand new appearance, as if it had barely been refined.

Yang Chen hadn't refined the Heaven Measuring Ruler using the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets. He hadn't even imprinted a trace of his spiritual awareness on it, since this Heaven Measuring Ruler was to be used to help his friends to know once to make a breakthrough, so there was no sense in marking it and making it exclusive to himself.

The marks on the Heaven Measuring Ruler were used for measuring. One mark was roughly equal to the strength of spirit power in an initial Foundation stage expert. According to common sense, Yang Chen was only at the initial Foundation stage, even if all ten attributes in his body were at the Foundation stage, but it should still be considered as approximately ten marks, yet the reality was different.

A spirit power strength of thirty nine marks. This was the result of Yang Chen's spirit power on the Heaven Measuring Ruler. Shangguan Feng, standing at Yang Chen's side, only had a trifling three marks. Wang Yong was still slightly better than Shangguan Feng at four marks, while Du Qian could be said to be a lot better, with as much as seventy four marks, signifying that he had already reached the late Foundation stage.

At the same time, everyone's spirit power strength was accurately measured and it made all of them astonished. All three of them were at the initial Foundation stage, even Shangguan Feng and Wang Yuan who had reached the Foundation stage long ago, yet there was only a slight increase in their spirit power. What did Yang Chen use so that, even when all of them were at the nearly the same level, they had such vastly different strengths?

This was still the data before Yang Chen's strength had increased. After he reached the second layer of the Foundation stage and his cultivation of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets had reached the fifth layer and his cultivation of the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets had reached the seventh layer, the ruler showed his strength to be at an astonishing sixty eight marks. Using two types of cultivation methods to increase the spirit power was indeed terrifying. Yang Chen didn't even dare to reveal this to others.

Gao Yue was similar: her results were completely according to everyone's expectations, at one hundred and ten marks at the initial JieDan stage, after recovering completely. If speaking simply in terms of strength of the spirit power, a common initial JieDan expert was at one hundred marks. Gao Yue had also barely crossed this number and didn't seem very exceptional.

Looking at this data, Yang Chen's determination to convince Gao Yue to cultivate a Water attributed cultivation method became even stronger. This calamity of the devil cultivation method was a good opportunity, but it would depend on what tricks Yang Chen would use.



When Gao Yue had learned the use of the Heaven Measuring Ruler from Yang Chen, she disapproved of it. A ruler which could measure the strength of spirit power wasn't something to make a fuss about. Yang Chen had surprisingly spent one catty of high grade spirit stones to buy it? He really had become a wastrel.

But when Yang Chen properly explained the genuine use of the Heaven Measuring Ruler to Gao Yue, her eyes turned big, unable to hide her shock.

Who could have thought that such a simple item, which could only be used to measure the strength of spirit power, was surprisingly so useful? This item had clearly been at the auction house for quite a long time and people must have known that it could measure spirit power strength, but nobody had purchased it. It clearly showed that nobody had been able to think that the Heaven Measuring Ruler could also be used like this.

“Let's go find master, he seems to be having some trouble lately.”

After knowing the real use of the Heaven Measuring Ruler, Gao Yue couldn't remain sitting and immediately led Yang Chen to find her master.

Previously Wang Yong's cultivation had advanced by leaps and bounds, but he had currently entered the bottleneck stage. Despite possessing the formidable stimulus of the Heaven Seizing Pill, he hadn't been able to make the breakthrough. Especially after looking at the tribulation of the old tree demon, the pressure on

him had increased even more, so he was currently the most suitable person to use the Heaven Seizing Ruler.

Since Yang Chen hadn't intended to keep it for himself from the start, he did not hesitate to go to see his great master with Gao Yue. Once he heard the use of the Heaven Measuring Ruler, Wang Yong was extremely delighted.

He was at the bottleneck of the peak YuanYing stage, but after entering the bottleneck, he hadn't been able to sense any increase in his cultivation. With this Heaven Measuring Ruler, Wang Yong firmly believed that he would certainly not remain trapped in this bottleneck stage and would surely make the breakthrough with complete confidence.

After learning the use of the Heaven Measuring Ruler, Wang Yong immediately used it to determine his cultivation. Eleven thousand marks. This strength was already past someone who had just entered the Da Cheng stage. Naturally, all of these numbers were only a reference. Aside from the spirit power, nothing else was measured or explained.

But Wang Yong became filled with confidence. Especially after he discovered that his spirit power had already crossed the average threshold for the Da Cheng stage.

“Great master, perhaps your intense desire to make the breakthrough has instead created some obstructions. It would be better if you don't hurry and relax a little bit.”

Yang Chen immediately began to entice Wang Yong:

“Perhaps you should refine a destined magic weapon?”

The Pure Yang Palace wasn't a big sect, so it didn't have many genuine magic weapons for high level experts. Although Wang Yong had entered the peak YuanYing stage from the late YuanYing stage with Yang Chen's assistance, he still didn't have a genuine destined magic weapon.

In his previous life, Wang Yong hadn't even been able to enter the Da Cheng stage and remained in the YuanYing stage because of his hesitation and had died with regrets. Since he was always busy with cultivation, where would he have the time to refine a mere worldly possession like the Heaven Measuring Ruler?

But it was different now. With Yang Chen's assistance, entering the Da Cheng stage was no longer a dream for Wang Yong. Even ascending to the Spiritual World was also no longer a far fetched dream. That time, a destined magic weapon could reflect the presence of an expert who had made a breakthrough.

“A destined magic weapon!”

Wang Yong bitterly laughed, while shaking his head:

“Right now, I don't have any good materials to refine!”

“Great master, this disciple has some materials and requests

great master to take a look.”

Hearing Wang Yong’s words, Yang Chen replied with a chuckle.

“What is this?”

Looking at the pointed conical horn, both Gao Yue and Wang Yong became doubtful. It was the horn of some unknown beast, furthermore it was water attributed. What kind of use would it have for a fire attributed Wang Yong?

It was not like Wang Yong hadn’t thought of making a magic weapon, but on one hand he had put all of his mind to cultivating and on the other, the materials were not sufficient. Even the materials Yang Chen had obtained from the Hao Yi Manor couldn’t enter the eyes of a person at Wang Yong’s grade. Rather than using third grade materials to make a third grade magic weapon, it would be better to use this time for cultivation.

Yang Chen had already known Wang Yong’s thoughts, therefore he hadn’t taken out the qilin’s horn before. In the previous years, because of his increased confidence, Wang Yong’s cultivation had increased by leaps and bounds, so bothering him with these things was clearly not suitable.

Finally, today, when Wang Yong had already reached the peak YuanYing stage’s bottleneck, it made for the perfect opportunity: Since he had been painstakingly delving into cultivation, it had instead created a pressure on him because of his impatience to break through, and his cultivation hadn’t moved forward; so

relinquishing the thought of breaking through and refining a good destined magic weapon with all of his mind would disperse that pressure on him.

The Qilin's horn appeared to be ninth water attributed, since it had been scrubbed by ninth water for countless years, but the true attribute of the Qilin's horn was actually fire, perfectly suitable for Wang Yong.

“If I haven't identified this wrong, this should be a Fire Qilin's horn.”

Yang Chen replied with a gentle laugh:

“It had been stuck at some place for tens of thousands of years and was scrubbed by a powerful ninth water attributed river and has thus taken on the ninth water attribute and this shape.”

Bang!

When Yang Chen introduced the Qilin's horn and its circumstances in detail, Wang Yong and Gao Yue had already lost their minds because of the astonishment.

A Flame Qilin's horn? It was an item, which could only be found by luck and not by searching... How could it be in the hands of Yang Chen? Like all of the other times, how could he casually take out such terrifying things?

This was genuine treasure, but what both of them were wondering was how Yang Chen's luck was so heaven defying that, even under those kinds of circumstances, where he had gone to assist his master and take revenge for her, he had found such a treasure!

A flying sword made of a fire attributed qilin's horn in which the fire attribute was hidden beneath the water attribute... What kind of obstacle couldn't it conquer? Water and fire not encroaching on each other... As long as this could successfully be refined, it would certainly be a terrible surprise for his enemies!

When taking the Qilin's horn, Wang Yong's hands began to shake. Suddenly he had a thought: what kind of great luck did he have to receive such a great grand disciple like Yang Chen?

Apparently Wang Yong still hadn't discovered that his present cultivation was completely moving according to Yang Chen's plan. But this was not important. The important thing was that Wang Yong knew that he had received the assistance of the Heaven Measuring Ruler at the time of making a breakthrough and moreover had received a Qilin's horn to refine a destined flying sword. This was enough for Yang Chen.

The Qilin's horn required some special method to refine, but in front of Yang Chen's extensive knowledge, this was not a great problem. Wang Yong's ambitions had also begun to rise. He wanted to use this horn polished by nature and refine the most powerful destined flying sword in the Pure Yang Palace.

Because his cultivation had been stagnating, Wang Yong had

become quite depressed, but now, Yang Chen had proved that, as long as he had the confidence, he could overcome every kind of heart's devil.

Naturally, this was not some blind confidence, but confidence born from his heart, which could be relied upon. Wang Yong's current confidence was precisely aroused by the Heaven Measuring Ruler and the Qilin's horn.

Because of the participation of the big sects, the problem of Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets had become much more critical. During this time, Yang Chen and the Pure Yang Palace had been watching from the sidelines, without any intention to participate.

But Yang Chen's confidence didn't have much of an influence on other people of the Pure Yang Palace. Since they had found out that other big sects had also participated, some elders strongly suggested to the Palace Master that the Pure Yang Palace must also not lag behind, that they should at least bring in the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets and take a look.

In the beginning the Palace Master was completely on Yang Chen's side and had strictly prohibited the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace from cultivating it, otherwise they would be expelled, but as the issue got more and more intense, the Palace Master was also slowly becoming unable to resist the pressure.

The elders also wanted to research it under the pretense of thinking about the sect. After all, since the other sects were researching it, if only their little sect remained aloof, then wouldn't they lag behind others? Moreover, they could simply not

allow common disciples to come in contact with it, but what was the harm in letting the YuanYing stage experts research it?

Without anything in his support, the Palace Master could only go over and consult with Yang Chen, after all, the matter was raised by Yang Chen and the warning was also given by him, so he probably should consult with Yang Chen about the issue.

But how could Yang Chen agree? Even losing common disciples was very unfortunate, so about losing YuanYing stage experts? Did those big sects think that the main problem was the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Method? The crucial point was the Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal! As long as they used even a little, they would be invaded by the heart's devil and at that time, they wouldn't have the freedom to act independently.

“Our sect has already delayed the research for so long compared to other sects, so what's the harm in delaying it a little more?”

Yang Chen knew that there would inevitably be someone who would get impatient. Seeing the cultivation of the people in their surroundings rising leaps and bounds, these YuanYing stage experts were also feeling the pressure.

“Then how long should we delay it?”

The Palace Master had been under a lot of pressure and nodded approvingly towards Yang Chen's method.



“Two more years!”

Yang Chen replied with certainty:

“In any case, we are already late, so one or two years won’t make much of a difference. After two years, if those sects don’t have any problems then the elders of our sect can also start researching, but if they have any accidents, we will be saved from it.”

This was a good method which would satisfy everyone. The years on the path of cultivation were long, even more so for YuanYing stage expert. Since they had waited for the past three years, they would also not be that anxious.

The impatient elders agreed to the proposal after some consultation. After all, this method had appeared very recently and had attracted everyone, but nobody knew where it had come from. So, first taking a look at how the other people were cultivating would be better.

Apart from Yang Chen, nobody knew at the moment that there was no need to wait for two years. After just one year, Lin Chenghe would appear, revealing the true character of the devil cultivation method.

Only, the consequence of this would be that everyone who had cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Method or who had used it as a reference and taken the Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal, no matter how high or low their cultivation was, would all become handicapped.

And the cultivation of all these people would become the tonic for the devil Lin Chenghe, whose cultivation would directly rise to the Da Cheng stage.

# Chapter 167 - And The Pure Yang Palace Had Been Mocked

---

Among appreciation and criticism, the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Method continued to spread for another entire year. Within this year, countless people were able to take their revenge with their increased cultivation, which also helped spreading the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets.

Meanwhile, the dispute between the cultivators of both paths had never stopped. One day the disciple of a dao sect discovered a deeply hidden devil cultivator and chased him to kill him.

That devil cultivator had concealed himself quite deeply: he had been an officer within some city and acted like normal people on an ordinary day. If it were not that this dao cultivator had accidentally discovered that there was a large amount of Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystal stored there, he would have been deceived by him.

A petty official among the normal people having such a great number of Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystals, which could only be used by cultivators was completely abnormal. That dao cultivator was just about to investigate this matter thoroughly when the devil cultivator, knowing that he couldn't back out, took the initiative to attack him first.

The devil cultivator's cultivation was very low, so he was defeated by the dao cultivator very quickly, but the most astonishing thing was that the devil cultivator used some kind of trick and within a short amount of time, his cultivation

surprisingly rose greatly. Seeing that things were far from reassuring, the dao cultivator hastily ran away and finally escaped with his life.

Since everything was already exposed, regardless of any worries, the devil cultivator began to increase his cultivation crazily. By the time when the dao cultivator had returned with several others to eliminate him, he was astonished to discover that, within the period of a few days, that devil cultivator's cultivation had risen from the Foundation stage to the JieDan stage and was still rising.

While the devil cultivator's cultivation was rising, those qi layer and foundation stage cultivators who had cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets on the other hand, suddenly discovered that in one night, their entire strength had disappeared completely, without rising in the least. Not only this, but their dantians were also more or less destroyed.

This thing happened with a countless numbers of people, reaching over ten thousand. This disaster made everyone who had previously cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets experience hell.

After everyone discovered that something was not right, the matter was taken to experts who came to the conclusion that this devil cultivator was using some kind of special method to steal everyone's cultivation base - and the special method was precisely the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets and the Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystals.

After seeing the situation of the qi layer and Foundation stage

cultivators who cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets, even those JieDan stage experts who had cultivated it began to get panicky.

Currently, their cultivation base was still safe, but one thing was clear: if the enemy wanted to seize their cultivation, they wouldn't be able to do anything.

The devil cultivator had disappeared into thin air, nobody knew his real identity, only that he was a small government official named Lin Chenghe in the world of mortals. Under the joint search from everyone, Lin Chenghe had hidden himself, but the calamity hadn't been resolved, instead it had just begun.

After a period of one month, the JieDan experts also began to suffer from the effects. Since their cultivation was even higher, the time it took to lose their cultivation was even longer.

What was more terrifying was that they didn't lose their cultivation all at once, and instead lost a small amount every day, as if Lin Chenghe had eaten his fill of the day and couldn't digest any more, so he was waiting for tomorrow to absorb some part again.

The reality was very much like this. Every day the absorbed cultivation needed sufficient time to be refined, but this refining was many times faster compared to ordinary cultivators.

But those JieDan expert who had already fallen into the trap could only helplessly stare at their cultivation being stolen, day by

day. What could be more tormenting than losing all of their cultivation and becoming a cripple? This process continued every day, but it could not be stopped. This kind of immense torment even made many psychologically weak JieDan experts commit suicide.

These experts, had reached the JieDan stage after a long time of training and had been accustomed to living a comfortable life. How could they endure being the same as ordinary humans again?

Not everyone was like Sun Qingxue, who had been very fierce and completely determined in the previous life and had risen so abruptly after her cultivation was destroyed. The loss of their cultivation was very painful for the great majority of people and could make them mentally collapse, unable to rise again.

After just two months of the JieDan experts, it was time for the YuanYing stage experts. The YuanYing stage experts were usually very cautious and had only used the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets to improve their own cultivation methods, so they believed there wouldn't be much of a problem, but when their cultivation also began to vanish gradually, it gave rise to a great panic.

At least ten YuanYing stage experts had been participating in this, moreover these people were the main supports of their respective sects and schools. Moreover the existence of YuanYing stage experts was the main strength of any sect. But during the calamity caused by Lin Chenghe, these main pillars of support suffered a devastating damage.

Up until now, this whole matter came to be known as the 'great

calamity of the devil cultivation' among all of the dao sects, since it had given a huge jolt to the entire cultivation world.

More than ninety percent of dao sects began to panic and madly unleashed their manpower, sparing no efforts to find the devil Lin Chenghe.

But Ling Chenghe seemed to have disappeared completely. Apart from the fact that experts were still losing their cultivation slowly, which proved that he was still hidden at some secret location, Lin Chenghe left no trail.

Those ten YuanYing experts asked the group of experts within their sects to think of anything to save their cultivation and then slowly began to sink into a depression as their cultivation kept on declining. Regardless of what pill they took, or whatever kind of method they used, it was of no use.

People of those sects also could only watch the main support of their sect with helplessly. Seeing those experts like this, nobody could imagine how they could have been so excited when they cultivated this cultivation method.

It was said that even two Da Cheng stage experts had participated with those ten YuanYing stage experts. Although the influence still hadn't reached them, by the looks of it, they would be the next target.

Finally someone remembered, that even if the enemy was a devil cultivator, when trying to break through to the Da Cheng stage

from YuanYing stage, it would certainly lead to the Yin Fire tribulation, which would cause the spirit power in the surrounding thousand miles to fluctuate. Perhaps, with this, they would be able to find the whereabouts of this devil, Lin Chenghe.

Apparently, the best opportunity to strike would be when Lin Chenghe was going through his tribulation. If someone was disturbed during their tribulation, if that person's cultivation was not sufficient, they would certainly die. As long as they were able to find the location where he was going to take the heavenly tribulation, that would be the best opportunity to defeat the devil and protect the dao path.

The news of people's cultivation being stolen also reached the Pure Yang Palace. When they heard this news, the first reaction of the elders was wondering if someone was distorting the truth or had gotten something wrong.

When even more news came in and even some rogue cultivators of the MeiQing mountain suffered from the calamity, everyone remembered the ban which the Palace Master had put and then started to sweat, thinking of the time when they had pressured the Palace Master to allow research, but were grateful to the Palace Master for postponing it.

Fortunately, the Palace Master had listened to Yang Chen's advice and had placed a strict ban at that time. Otherwise, wouldn't the Pure Yang Palace also have suffered a great loss, like the other sects?

All of the elders were even more traumatic. If they had forced the



Palace Master without giving him any other option, then wouldn't they also have followed on the other victim's footsteps? Miserably despaired, losing their cultivation little by little every day until they became completely crippled...

The loudest voice against Yang Chen's proposal, elder Lin Yunfeng was also greatly scared. It had to be known that, at that time, in order to strike at Yang Chen, he had convinced some elders to try and force him to repel his ban. The person who was behind this entire opposition was elder Lin Yunfeng.

But at that time, Yang Chen had said in front of him that, if elder Lin Yunfeng wanted to cultivate this method in any case then he would absolutely not stop him. But the other elders could not follow his footsteps and finally, following Yang Chen's advice, the Palace Master had postponed the method by two years.

Originally elder Lin Yunfeng wanted to make a joke out of Yang Chen after two years and teach him a lesson: a trifling Foundation stage disciple neither had the qualifications nor the strength to speak in an elder's matters, but now he had found out that, if it were not for Yang Chen, he, who was a majestic YuanYing stage expert, would have become a cripple.

At that moment Lin Yunfeng didn't know how he should act towards Yang Chen - should he thank him, or should he just not appear before him? Should he just continue to see him as an enemy? Having no choice, elder Lin Yunfeng awkwardly entered closed door training, thinking that this was perhaps the best option right now.

The Palace Master and the few elders who had supported Lin Yunfeng at that time, only remembered about their disciple, Yang Chen, after suffering from a bit of lingering fear. If it was not for him, the Pure Yang Palace would have also suffered a great loss.

If anything would have happened to them, then the Pure Yang Palace would have certainly degraded to become a third tier sect. For big sects like the Clear Sky Sect or the Greatest Heaven Sect losing a few YuanYing stage experts was nothing, but for the Pure Yang Palace it would have been a disastrous blow.

In his previous life, this calamity had sown the seeds of the Pure Yang Palace's destruction. In this life, Yang Chen was finally able to save the Pure Yang Palace. After this incident, the Pure Yang Palace seemed to have started to walk on the path of becoming a top grade sect.

Among all of the dao sects, only the Pure Yang Palace hadn't suffered any losses during this calamity. Furthermore, not even one of the lowest level disciples had been lost. It could only be said to be a miracle when ninety nine percent of the sects had sustained damage and only the Pure Yang Palace had survived.

Only at this time did someone recall that the Pure Yang Palace had warned everyone about the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets at the beginning and had also officially informed all of the sects and had moreover placed a strict ban on this cultivation method inside of the sect.

In these past few years, when the calamity of the devil cultivation had erupted completely, there was no sect whose disciples hadn't

mocked the Pure Yang Palace, especially those who had cultivators who cultivated with this cultivation method.

The Pure Yang Palace which was only a second rate sect, they couldn't even follow the general trend. Countless people treated the Pure Yang Palace as a subject of ridicule and, even when they ran into some disciple of the Pure Yang Palace who was travelling outside, they would taunt them, making it difficult for the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace to leave the sect.

Finally when the calamity had started, everyone discovered who the real fool was and it surely was not Pure Yang Palace.

Many people also wanted to blame the Pure Yang Palace, since the Pure Yang Palace had known about this devil cultivation method, but didn't try to stop everyone with their full strength, but they could only think like this in their heart. At that time, the Pure Yang Palace had again and again sent out notifications to all of the sect leaders, but nobody had paid any attention. On what reasons could they now blame the Pure Yang Palace?

Regretting now was already too late. The only thing they could do was to find the location where Lin Chenghe would be undergoing his tribulation and completely destroy him. Only that would make the hatred in everyone's hearts disappear.

All of the dao sects in the entire world put their whole strength behind it. The Pure Yang Palace was no exception. All of the disciples within the sect who weren't undergoing closed door training were sent out. All such disciples were divided into groups and each group was headed by a YuanYing stage expert with one

objective: to find the whereabouts of Lin Chenghe.

Naturally Yang Chen was together with Gao Yue and at the same time they were following his great master, Wang Yong, in his group. Apart them, the group also contained more than a dozen JieDan experts and over a hundred Foundation stage experts, all of whom were scattered in a hundred miles radius and were always in contact.

Yang Chen naturally remembered the position of Lin Chenghe's tribulation, but it was not suitable for Yang Chen to reveal that at this time. Originally, Wang Yong would have been the most suitable person, but Yang Chen had an even more suitable candidate now.

The establishment of the Eccentric Hall within the Pure Yang Palace had given risen to a heated discussion: they were people whom the dao sects had always fought, how could they accept them? But over the fear of Elder Wu, nobody had publicly said anything. This opportunity was the best opportunity: as long as it could be proven that the demon beasts could also contribute for the dao sects, then the voices against them would get smaller and smaller.

After three days, there was finally some news from the side of the old tree demon. Although, the cultivation of YuanYing stage experts was still being taken away bit by bit, that old tree demon's Da Cheng stage spiritual awareness had already locked on to the position of that devil Lin Chenghe. He had to be in a hundred miles area from that location.

The news was passed on secretly to all of the big sects. At the same time, another news was also spread: the date of Lin Chenghe's tribulation should be in three or four days.

In reality, there were already experts of every sect who hadn't lost their cultivation spread in this region, but nobody was able to discover the location of Lin Chenghe. The Da Cheng stage old tree demon on the other hand, relying on his spiritual awareness, had discovered the tracks of the spirit power stolen by the devil cultivation method and confirmed the location.

After the verification, no sect had any doubt: all of them sent their elites to surround the area in a radius of several hundred miles, such that not even an ant could escape. This time, that devil Lin Chenghe would not escape!

# Chapter 168 - Betting For A Kowtow

---

Although experts from every sect had surrounded the area in a radius of a hundred miles, all of them were lying low and had concealed their presence, waiting for Lin Chenghe to trigger the heavenly tribulation.

But while all of them were hoping, this was just their wishful thinking. Yang Chen knew that, not only would Lin Chenghe survive the tribulation and enter the Da Cheng stage, he would also take away the cultivation of those Da Cheng stage experts and would only then die from the backlash from absorbing too much spirit power.

So after all was said and done, Lin Chenghe finally died thanks to his own actions, which were not influenced by the dao sects very much. If one absolutely wanted to prove that a trace of a connection existed, then it would only be that the pressure which the dao sects had put on him had made him absorb this large amount of spirit power in such a short time, nothing more. If he hadn't become underconfident at that time, then he would definitely not have faced this kind of problem.

Before the Palace Master had dispatched anyone on the mission, he had consulted Yang Chen about how should they approach this.

In fact, the Palace Master consulting a disciple who had just recently become a Foundation stage disciple was really quite outrageous. But the Palace Master couldn't help being careful regarding this great calamity of the devil cultivation. Yang Chen had shown great excellence, if it were not for Yang Chen, the Pure

Yang Palace would not have gotten off so easily.

Although Yang Chen had said that this information was offered by Elder Wu, in his heart, the Palace Master knew clearly that Elder Wu still hadn't ascended but, he hadn't said anything regarding any such matter. It was not that Elder Wu didn't have any friends among such experts, but he had never interfered with any matter before.

Naturally, all of this was within Palace Master's head, and he had never mentioned it to anyone. By now, he had stopped treating Yang Chen as a mere disciple and had instead started treating him as an elder. Yang Chen's advice could easily influence the Palace Master's attitude at all times.

“Lin Chenghe is not a simple devil, we shouldn't simply follow the general conviction about him.”

Yang Chen didn't hide much from his Palace Master:

“In any case, when we said our warnings, nobody had listened to us, but if we don't fight with them, everyone will resent us. So when the time comes, we must send some forces, but they should not force themselves to fight and try to avoid casualties.”

“So you mean that Lin Chenghe will not be killed this time?”

Yang Chen's words made the Palace Master suck in a deep breath. From the time Yang Chen had strongly advocated that no disciple

of Pure Yang Palace should be allowed to come in contact with the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets, even though it had shown huge benefits, until now, Yang Chen's ability of making judgements had received a large amount of respect in the Palace Master's eyes, so hearing Yang Chen's words this time, he immediately asked with alarm.

“Have you already forgotten the tribulation of the old tree demon?”

Yang Chen asked rhetorically:

“At that time, apart from genuine Da Cheng stage experts, who would be able to approach it? And if no one can approach it, then what else is there to do?”

“But Hall Master Cassia Demon is a Da Cheng stage expert. If he doesn't contribute at that time, wouldn't it look bad?”

The Palace Master asked with some anxiousness. The Pure Yang Palace had established a good reputation with great difficulty, so he didn't want it to get destroyed so easily.

“The Greatest Heaven Sect and the Clear Sky Sect have many Da Cheng experts, my Pure Yang Palace has only one.”

Yang Chen shook his head. Although the Palace Master could also think of this, he didn't know if he should do anything about it or not. Yang Chen also only declared his point of view. After that, it



was up to the Palace Master to judge this himself.

After conversing with Yang Chen, the Palace Master formed a tacit understanding with the old tree demon that, he would not instruct Gui Shanyou, the old tree demon, to fight until death. In any case, the Pure Yang Palace had acquired a Da Cheng stage expert after such a long time, so there was no need to fight with other sects over reputation.

Gui Shanyou had lived for countless years and had thought about this matter very thoroughly. The Palace Master's instructions were exactly what he wanted, so after hearing those instructions, he left, understanding the exact situation.

As Lin Chenghe's tribulation was slowly approaching, day by day, the number of cultivators in the region also kept increasing, but nobody dared to enter within a hundred miles of that region. Nobody wanted to fail at the last step because of impatience.

People like Yang Chen and Gao Yue were at the most outer perimeter of the encirclement, while Wang Yong was at the very center. The cultivation of people of his kind were simply not of any use. In fact, from the beginning, after they had found the position of the devil Lin Chenghe, the cultivators of the JieDan stage or lower had already been of no use in the matter. Yang Chen had only come here to participate and take a look at everything and hadn't intended on participating.

But not everyone followed Yang Chen's way of thinking: especially a few JieDan experts of the Greatest Heaven Sect, whose losses had been the most disastrous. Seeing Yang Chen acting so

leisurely, they started to spread baseless rumors.

“Ohh, isn’t this Pure Yang Palace’s fellow daoist Yang? Does fellow daoist Yang intend to show his brilliance in such a situation again?”

From within a group of cultivators, a tone filled with incomparable contempt was heard, but the person who had spoken was someone whom Yang Chen knew, someone who had already been humiliated by him at the Heavenly Stairs: Cheng Wencai.

By now, several years had passed from the time of the previous incident, but Cheng Wencai was still brooding. At that time, due to his mistake, he had not only caused harm to JieDan experts of his sect, but also those of other sects, including himself, who had fallen to the Foundation stage from the JieDan stage and had moreover suffered from a decrease in his life expectancy by many decades.

In these several years, with the help of medicines and his own hard work, he had once again attained the JieDan stage, but he still resented Yang Chen, the perpetrator of his misfortune from the bottom of his heart.

He was also the uncle master of Li QingChen, who had been killed by Yang Chen a few years ago. Although it was a life and death duel and no side could ask for compensation from the victor, Cheng Wencai remembered Yang Chen’s name clearly.

Moreover, in this great calamity of devil cultivation, the Pure

Yang Palace had been the main leader, making all of the big sects, including the Greatest Heaven Sect embarrassed. A second rate sect could see clearly and be on guard, but these top notch sects had made such a simple mistake... They really couldn't say anything.

Cheng Wencai could feel that this was his sect's mistake, but he wanted to put some blame on the Pure Yang Palace, yet he had realized that it was obviously not possible, but what was the problem with spreading rumors? The humiliation of the sect added with his encounter with Yang Chen in those days, combined both the new and old hatred upon seeing Yang Chen again, so naturally a lot of thoughts rushed to his head, making it impossible for him not to speak out.

“How can this kind of situation be something where juniors like me can interfere? This junior only followed after master to broaden his horizons.”

Yang Chen wasn't fazed in the least by Cheng Wencai's taunt, but since the enemy had ridiculed him, he would definitely not let him slip by and so, with a courteous smile, he asked back:

“But senior Cheng on the contrary, whom junior admires greatly, is the best candidate for eliminating the devil to defend the dao.”

Even if Cheng Wencai had again reached the JieDan stage, the price of decreased life he had to pay in return and his dantian had also been damaged. Now there was a limit to his cultivation. Besides, even if there wasn't any wear and tear, he was a trifling JieDan stage expert. For such an occasion, just being able to

remain at the boundary of a hundred miles was the limit. As for defeating the devil to protect the dao, he was still too far.

Yang Chen's sarcastic retort, made Cheng Wencai even angrier. If not for the wear and tear of that time, Cheng Wencai would have cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets. But that time he was recuperating his dantian, so he could only see the opportunity go by. When the entire truth was revealed however, he was delighted over missing such an opportunity.

But when someone had some prejudice, he could not see clearly anymore. In Cheng Wencai's eyes, not only wasn't he grateful to the Pure Yang Palace for warning them promptly, it had also not warned them properly in his opinion, which had led to everyone being trapped.

When his personal malice with Yang Chen was added in, Cheng Wencai flew into a rage, which was something even a JieDan expert like him couldn't handle, so he directly ridiculed Yang Chen:

“Do you even know what you are talking about? Your trifling Pure Yang Palace dares to talk wildly about defeating the devil and defending the dao? You are all just humiliating yourselves here!”

But he had also insulted the Pure Yang Palace while trying to humiliate Yang Chen. Hearing these words, not only was Yang Chen infuriated, but so was Gao Yue. From the start, Gao Yue was a person with a fiery temper, so she could not let Cheng Wencai's comments, insulting the Pure Yang Palace and her master Wang Yong, slip by easily, not to mention the insults to Yang Chen, her

only disciple, with whom she went through pair cultivation for spiritual awareness.

“Fellow Daoist Cheng, if you do not immediately take back your words, then, even though this Gao Yue is a woman, I will not tolerate your disgusting remarks about my Pure Yang Palace!”

Gao Yue’s expressions became stiff and she immediately blurted out these words.

“Why, has this Cheng spoken something wrong?”

Cheng Wencai sneered again:

“Aren’t you both master and disciple still outside of the hundred miles perimeter? Or is there someone from your Pure Yang Palace that is in the frontlines? In the end, let alone eliminating the devil and protecting the dao, you cannot even touch the hair of the devil.”

Without waiting for Gao Yue to retort, Cheng Wencai continued:

“In this Great Calamity of the Devil Cultivation, almost all of the sects had disastrous losses and only your Pure Yang Palace hasn’t suffered any losses. If you hadn’t been in cahoots with that devil Lin Chenghe, you wouldn’t have the courage to ignore that devil cultivation method. And if you really didn’t have the courage, then how are you going to cultivate to immortality? I advise you all to go back and hole up in your MeiQing Mountain, so as to not give

up your lives.”

“Senior Cheng, since you have said that my Pure Yang Palace have been cahoots with Lin Chenghe, then do you have some evidence to prove your claim?”

Not waiting for Gao Yue to open her mouth, Yang Chen loudly asked:

“Furthermore, is this only your opinion or of the entire Greatest Heaven Sect?”

“It doesn’t matter whose opinion it was, you all don’t have any use. It would be better if you all behaved properly and returned and cultivated on your gutless path to immortality!”

Since the sect had also been involved, Cheng Wencai did not dare to open his mouth and only gave a vague reply, but the contempt in his words wasn’t disguised even a bit:

“So that you don’t interfere with everyone else’s work here!”

“By these words, does senior Cheng mean that we, both master and disciple, would be a hinderance here?”

Yang Chen’s tone had become even milder, he was still calling him as ‘senior’, but those familiar with Yang Chen could sense that he was already furious.

“You all are just a burden!”

Cheng Wencai continued with his rude words. He had several JieDan stage fellow apprentices on his side, and he furthermore also had one YuanYing stage uncle master with him, so in case of a dispute, he was not worried about Gao Yue becoming hostile. With this opinion firm in his mind, Cheng Wencai became more and more rampant:

“Incompetent people can’t even harm a hair of the devil and still talk of defeating the devil to protect the dao?”

“Then senior, if this junior can touch that Lin Chenghe’s hairs, what will senior Cheng do in return?”

Immediately following after Cheng Wencai’s words, Yang Chen asked full of smiles.

“How can that be possible?”

Cheng Wencai didn’t agree to anything and only continued to sneer:

“You little Foundation stage cultivator still dare to say such big words?”

“This youngster just wants to bet with senior Cheng.”

Yang Chen still continued full of smiles:

“This junior will get Lin Chenghe’s hair. Does senior Cheng dare to take the bet?”

“Bet what?”

Cheng Wencai’s eyes shone, seemingly realizing that this Yang Chen had provided him with an opportunity to humiliate himself, so he hastily asked.

“If this junior loses, then this junior will kowtow in front of senior and admit that this junior is a burden!”

Yang Chen directly put his stake forward, as if wanted to put himself in danger:

“What do you say?”

“Good! I will agree to that!”

Expressions of Cheng Wencai and his fellow disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect became more and more cheerful hearing the terms. If they could humiliate the Pure Yang Palace, which had caused their sect to lose so much face in the recent years using Yang Chen, that would be a great thing.



“But, if this junior wins then what does senior Cheng intends to bet?”

Yang Chen didn't give any opportunity to get a loophole to Cheng Wencai and directly asked:

“What do you say about betting kowtow against kowtow?”

“You are just a Foundation stage disciple! A kowtow is too much!”

Cheng Wencai was not fooled and directly shook his head.

“What if I am also added?”

However Gao Yue, who had extreme trust in Yang Chen also pitched in:

“If Yang Chen loses, we both master and disciple will kowtow to you.”

“Good, since it is like this, then this Cheng will also get two people to admit their fault!”

Since Gao Yue was also a JieDan expert like him, Cheng Wencai did not have any more rights to deny them. But he didn't believe that he had any chance of losing this bet and laughed very arrogantly:

“When the time comes, this Cheng will invite all of his friends to make them see both of you kowtowing to me!”

Since there were so many people on the scene, they also didn't need to take any oath. All of them were JieDan stage experts so they would not say anything carelessly. Very quickly, this news began to spread among all of the cultivators.

A Foundation stage youngster thought that he could touch Lin Chenghe's hair. He was either extremely reckless or extremely arrogant. Anyone who heard this news thought the same thing.

“Yang Chen, if you dare to lose, then I myself will drive you out of the sect and will not acknowledge you as my disciple anymore!”

Gao Yue was extremely angry and ordered Yang Chen to win. Although she herself did not know what methods Yang Chen had, she could not believe that Yang Chen would lose. This was a trust which was created from the successive miracles Yang Chen had produced.

“Then if disciple wins, what will I get?”

However, Yang Chen was enjoying seeing Gao Yue like this.

“What do you want?”

Gao Yue blankly gazed at Yang Chen and slowly asked.

“This disciple only wants master to promise me one thing!”

Suddenly Yang Chen thought of something and thought that his good fortune had finally helped him while raising this request.

“Good!”

Gao Yue agreed readily without asking for any details.

# Chapter 169 - The Attackers Become The Nourishment

---

Since last time, after she had performed the pair cultivation with Yang Chen, she had started avoiding Yang Chen with the excuse of refining his flying sword, because she was afraid of meeting Yang Chen.

But this time, in the campaign against Lin Chenghe, Gao Yue feared for Yang Chen having an accident. She knew that Yang Chen had the tendency to invite disaster, so she had been sticking to Yang Chen's side, sternly and carefully looking after him; in short: trying to avoid having Yang Chen harmed by anyone.

But when Cheng Wencai tried to underestimate Yang Chen, and with Gao Yue's disposition, she naturally became angry and immediately lost her self control. All of a sudden this had become a matter of honor for master and disciple.

Only after that did Cheng Wencai and his party leave, laughing loudly and feeling proud of themselves. Gao Yue turned to Yang Chen and asked:

“A bet is a bet. Because of you I had to agree, so how do you intend to win?”

“Just wait for the meat pie!”

Yang Chen was unable to give an adequate explanation to Gao

Yue, but he could say this:

“In any case, only a hair of Lin Chenghe is at stake, which I can easily obtain with the help of old man Gui!”

Initially, Gao Yue still had some doubts, but once she thought of Gui Shanyu’s formidable strength, she nodded, feeling relieved. For a Da Cheng stage expert like him, maybe killing Lin Chenghe would be difficult, but getting a hair during the fight should be very easy.

“Then what should we now?”

At this moment, Gao Yue absolutely did not appear like a master and was instead just following Yang Chen’s commands.

“It’s a good opportunity to practice my newly obtained magic weapon!”

Yang Chen mysteriously smiled and spoke. While speaking, he clutched the sword embryo made from the Blood Phantom Vine and inserted it into a thick tree on the side.

“What kind of magic weapon is this?”

Gao Yue suspiciously looked at Yang Chen’s actions and asked in bewilderment:

“How can it be used?”

“This is a wood attributed magic weapon which hasn’t taken shape completely. It needs to absorb a large amount of first wood spirit power to form completely!”

Yang Chen casually told a lie:

“If it started absorbing, normal trees wouldn’t be able to bear it and I also don’t want to harm those trees of the MeiQing mountain so I thought of using it to absorb some of the larger trees here.”

There was wood attributed spirit power surrounding it, so Gao Yue wasn’t able to discover if it was first wood or second wood spirit power at that moment. But since Yang Chen had explained everything without any hesitation, she didn’t have any suspicions.

Although Cheng Wencai had left, he had left behind a foundation stage disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect to keep an eye on Yang Chen. That disciple had clearly heard Yang Chen’s words, but he did not think about it much, sneering at Yang Chen for a moment. This large tree was thick enough that it could not even be encompassed by both arms, but it had very low spirit quality, what use would there be to absorb such trees?

Following this, under the gaze of that disciple filled with contempt and astonishment, Yang Chen and Gao Yue continued the way they had planned. Gao Yue was following after Yang Chen, going from place to place, looking after such large trees and then inserting the blood colored sword embryo into the

trees to absorb their spirit power.

The attitude of both people was very casual and completely relaxed, as if treating the matter of Lin Chenghe as just another incident to gain knowledge and experience.

Only for the sake of appearances in front of other people, did they not do anything unusual. Let alone Yang Chen, who was just a Foundation stage expert, even the JieDan expert, Gao Yue, was not of much use in this 'Great Calamity of Devil Cultivation'. They were just two voices among the shouting of the crowd present.

While the two people were relaxing, the day of Lin Chenghe's tribulation arrived. When the Yin Fire tribulation descended, all of the cultivators within a radius of several hundred miles of that region immediately sensed that formidable power.

The cultivation of that old devil was so formidable that the power and momentum of the Yin Fire had exceeded the expectations of those experts, who had intended to jointly attack him from a distance.

Those experts who had been feeling complacent with their plans previously began to grow nervous under the formidable Yin Fire Tribulation. Even those Da Cheng stage experts did not dare to advance lightly before this tribulation. All of these people even had the thought that, if they advanced, they would also be targets of the tribulation.

Even though these Da Cheng stage experts had already passed

their Yin Fire tribulation, because they had already experienced it once, they knew how formidable the Yin Fire was. They hadn't anticipated that the tribulation triggered by Lin Chenghe would be so formidable. The more powerful a heavenly tribulation was, the more formidable was the cultivation of the person.

After thinking of this, everyone had almost given up all hopes. If they could not use the time of his tribulation to attack him, then with this kind of cultivation, after passing the tribulation, he would definitely come to kill everyone who had attacked him, which was something nobody wanted to see.

In such a situation there was only one way, which was that those Da Cheng stage experts, together with the YuanYing stage experts, would attack Lin Chenghe, who was undergoing his tribulation with their most powerful magic weapons. Even if their magic weapons were destroyed by the effect of the heavenly tribulation, they had to distract Lin Chenghe.

The heavenly tribulation had already started and the occasion demanded immediate action. At this moment, those who had suffered this bitter pain of this great calamity clearly realized that trying to kill Lin Chenghe after he had passed the tribulation would be even more difficult.

Especially those sects to which those Da Cheng stage cultivators who had cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets belonged, would be unable to bear the loss of these Da Cheng stage experts after Lin Chenghe had reached the Da Cheng stage. Countless JieDan and YuanYing stage cultivators had already proven that, as long as Lin Chenghe's cultivation exceeded their's,



their cultivation would certainly become a tonic for Lin Chenghe, without exception.

Under such circumstances, the few sect's experts joined together and, taking out their magic weapons and destined magic weapons, under the leadership of a Da Cheng stage expert from the Greatest Heaven Sect, who had cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets, they all took out their magic weapons and rushed to attack Lin Chenghe within the perimeter.

In this matter of finding the region where Lin Chenghe would undergo his tribulation, the old tree demon, Gui Shanyou had played a pivotal role. And at the time of attacking Lin Chenghe, the old tree demon uprooted a small mountain and smashed it into the location of Lin Chenghe.

But although he was very formidable, he still couldn't be compared to those experts who had their destined magic weapons with them. He couldn't be blamed however. Even now, he still didn't have a destined magic weapon. Being a demon beast, he had an inherent weakness regarding the refining tools which everyone knew about, so he couldn't be blamed.

Within the rumbling sound, the most powerful attacks of those YuanYing stage and Da Cheng stage experts, with their most powerful magic weapons had triggered a fluctuation in the energy of heaven and earth, which made all of the ordinary people and animals within a hundred miles radius immediately lose consciousness.

Within a ten miles radius of Lin Chenghe's location, other than

those YuanYing and Da Cheng stage experts, none could enter.

Under the bombardment of countless magic weapons, even Lin Chenghe was distracted, having to deal with them. But the Yin Fire Tribulation helped him greatly.

As long as something approached the region of the heavenly tribulation and was affected by the spirit power in the region, the tribulation also spread to it. Once those magic weapons entered the region, they immediately began to burn from the Yin Fire.

Countless YuanYing experts had to bear the pain of their magic weapons being burned by the Yin Fire. Their cultivation was not sufficient to trigger the Yin Fire tribulation, but they still had to bear at least twenty percent of the Yin Fire tribulation. Those magic weapons which were bearing the brunt also began to burn immediately.

Everyone had realized that, this time, those magic weapons would not return. Although those magic weapons were precious, compared to a sect's prosperity and their own lives in the future, they could be abandoned at any time. Even if they sustained such a loss, but were in turn able to inflict heavy losses on Lin Chenghe, it would still be worth it.

The figure of Lin Chenghe was suspended in the air within the tribulation. Lin Chenghe was a devil cultivator and the most prominent characteristic of devil cultivation was that, although it was very easy for a devil cultivator to start on the path of immortality and his cultivation in the earlier stages would also increase quite rapidly, as the devil cultivation reached the later

stages, cultivation became more and more difficult and under the continuous attacks of heart's devils.

Within the short time of one year, Lin Chenghe's cultivation had risen from the qi layer to the peak of the YuanYing stage. Not to mention a devil like him, even if it was Yang Chen, someone who had been reborn and whose mental fortitude exceeded even those of the Da Cheng stage, he still wouldn't remain completely unaffected.

It had to be said that the techniques of dao sects were completely fine. He was already unstable to begin with and then at the time of his tribulation, he suffered from a joint attack by everyone. Even if Lin Chenghe had two lives, he still would be swallowed by the tribulation.

Lin Chenghe was extremely formidable, but everyone had attacked him together, pouring their complete strength into this one attack. Yet this reckless attack was of no use.

Although the attack had created large complications for Lin Chenghe, at the same time they had also given him a huge opportunity: The magic weapons of countless YuanYing and Da Cheng stage experts had scattered a majority of the Yin Fire tribulation's strength.

The instant the attacks reached his body, Lin Chenghe had a sensation of certain death, but when he had completely relinquished everything and had accepted his certain death, he was surprised to discover that the Yin Fire tribulation had lost the majority of its strength.

What was most surprising for Lin Chenghe was that, when he had believed that he would certainly die, it had made him forget all of the distracting thoughts and lose sight of the attacks from all these people, making him feel completely relaxed, which had made him achieve a sudden enlightenment at the time.

To be able to use this cultivation method to cheat so many people, Lin Chenghe was an extremely intelligent person. During this flash of realization, it made him discover the method to overcome the heart's devils. Moreover, he also had countless magic weapons suffer the burden of the heavenly tribulation, so even though initially, he had lost all of his spirit power and was spitting blood, appearing to be at his last breath, at that moment, he was tenaciously bearing the test of the Yin Fire, while at the same time also shedding impurities.

No one had anticipated this, including Yang Chen. He only remembered that Lin Chenghe hadn't died because of everyone's attacks while undergoing his tribulation, but he didn't know the complete story.

Meanwhile everyone was going all out to resist the Yin Fire burning their magic weapons and were weakly attacking Lin Chenghe, with the expectation of Lin Chenghe being burned to ashes by the Yin Fire. With each attack of Yin Fire on Lin Chenghe, his figure became more and more dispirited, with each attack, everyone could see him madly spitting blood.

This kind of appearance made everyone become even more hopeful, so everyone pooled their strengths to resist the Yin Fire.

Their magic weapons were moving with difficulty, trying to attack and slice through Lin Chenghe's body. With every attack, Lin Chenghe continued to deteriorate steadily, appearing as if, with just one slight attack, he would immediately fall and turn to dust.

Only a trace of life seemed to be left within of Lin Chenghe in everyone's eyes and in their spiritual awareness. By this moment, all of them had become completely confident that Lin Chenghe would die at any moment.

A Fifth attack, a sixth, a seventh, an eighth, a ninth... In front of everyone, continuous attacks of Yin Fire fell upon Lin Chenghe's body, but, like a cockroach, Lin Chenghe remained tenacious, with just that trace of vitality.

By the time of the ninth tribulation fire, that Da Cheng stage expert of the Greatest Heaven Sect couldn't help but rush forward, towards him with a speed comparable to lightning.

Lin Chenghe ought to be in the weakest state at the instant the tribulation had just ended and, seeing Lin Chenghe's appearance, with just a small attack, the mission of eliminating the devil to defend the dao, would be accomplished, while his fame would reach new heights.

But, just as the elder reached within a hundred feet of Lin Chenghe's body, Lin Chenghe's eyes suddenly opened and two rays of light, completely bloodshot, directly shot towards his face.

“Nooooo!”

The Greatest Heaven Sect's Da Cheng stage elder suddenly discovered that the spirit power in his body had gone out of his control and had begun to disappear rapidly, but Lin Chenghe's vitality on the other hand began to grow stronger and stronger.

For Lin Chenghe, those cultivators who had cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets were simply the best kind of potion. Moreover, this elder of the Greatest Heaven Sect had delivered himself to his doorstep at this most dire time.

Before the other people could respond, the elder of the Greatest Heaven Sect had already lost the ability to move and was completely under the control of Lin Chenghe. Within a short time, his outstanding cultivation became a potion for Lin Chenghe. His original appearance of a middle aged man had quickly turned into that of an old man.

The situation happened too fast and by the time others realized, Lin Chenghe had already reached his peak condition. His bloodshot eyes glaring at everyone. Suddenly he started sneering, while flying in the air.

“It's terrible! Elder Liu has fallen under his evil schemes! Everyone attack immediately!”

Another elder who had also cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Method also realized the imminent catastrophe in front of him and hastily reminded everyone.

Unfortunately, he was already too late. He had just yelled this when he suddenly lost control of his body. His body started to decay in front of his eyes and very soon he became an old man with a white beard, at his last breath.

Soon after that, Lin Chenghe continued to smile mischievously. In front of him, spread in the radius of a hundred miles were several ashen faced YuanYing stage experts.

# Chapter 170 - Surround And Kill The Devil

---

Numerous YuanYing stage experts had their destined magic weapons destroyed and had sustained injuries. The other YuanYing experts who didn't have a destined magic weapon also had their most powerful magic weapons destroyed by the Yin Fire, which had greatly lowered their strength.

But unfortunately, at this frightening time, in front of them was this frightening devil, who had just passed the Yin Fire tribulation. The fact which made the situation even more hopeless was that two of their most powerful experts had been turned into his cultivation resources.

The only remaining expert was Green Jade Immortal Islands' elder Min Huafeng, as well as Pure Yang Palace's Gui Shanyou. Obviously, elder Min Huafeng had become everyone's last hope.

But before elder Min Huafeng could do anything, that Da Cheng stage elder of the Greatest Heaven Sect, who was the first to attack returned. With his body gradually getting older and seeming to be hanging by a thread, like a puppet, he quickly returned to everyone's side.

Bang!

Under everyone's gaze, the bodies of both Da Cheng experts suddenly exploded. Pieces of flesh filled with a crazy amount of energy came flying towards the YuanYing stage experts.



The countless YuanYing experts weren't on their guards and they hadn't expected that Lin Chenghe could be so malevolent that, even after stealing their cultivation, he would also explode their bodies.

Since nobody was on guard, those YuanYing experts didn't have a presentable defense and just when everyone was going to be injured by this ruthless attack, everybody was covered by a huge net, which firmly held those pieces of flesh outside.

Actually the old tree demon Gui Shanyou had tried to stop the attack, by trying to stop those pieces of flesh, but even then cracks started to appear in some of the branches of the network. Those YuanYing experts who were exposed, started shuddering and spat blood.

With just this one attack, the disparity in strength between the old tree demon and Lin Chenghe was clear. The enemy still hadn't attacked directly, but the branches of the old tree demon had already suffered damage. Clearly the difference in strength was not small.

Only, at this time, nobody made any cynical remarks. This time, the old tree demon had obstructed this attack and saved the lives of countless people. That precisely was comradery, and comrades who have anger towards a common enemy should deal with it together.

Then Green Jade Immortal Islands' elder Min Huafeng directly rushed towards Lin Chenghe. Regardless of how many people's cultivation he had stolen, he had just reached the Da Cheng stage

and should still be weak. He also hadn't consolidated his realm, so even though he appeared to be extremely formidable, he still couldn't completely cover up his injuries.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Countless violent sounds started to echo in the surroundings. The violent fluctuations in the air made those YuanYing stage experts shiver.

“Heal yourselves quickly!”

The old tree demon's voice echoed in the ears of every YuanYing stage expert in the group:

“I can't support you for long!”

Following the words of old tree demon, one by one, small medicine bottles began to fly towards those YuanYing experts.

Within the bottles were third grade yuan cultivation pills refined by Yang Chen. Although the effect on severe injuries was not much, it was very good against regular wear and tear. Everyone was conscious of the situation, so nobody showed any modesty and directly took the pill, healing on one side, while watching the battle on the other.

One can easily imagine how berserk a battle between two Da Cheng stage experts would be. The aftershocks of that crazy battle

was even reaching their location and even those branches of the old tree demon, which were protecting those YuanYing experts, issued cracking sounds with some small branches directly disintegrating.

Wise people also noticed something: at the beginning, people were still afraid of the Da Cheng expert of the Pure Yang Palace, but now, although the old tree demon was far more powerful than them, compared to genuine Da Cheng experts of the dao and devil sects, the disparity was too large.

Not only did he not have any destined magic weapon, but he was also being harmed by the aftershocks from the battle between those two experts. These facts added together with some more things, like him rushing in without caring for himself and then providing everyone with pills in their time of need, made everyone quickly acknowledge him.

Originally, he was only invited to the campaign as a formality, but right now, since he wasn't a great threat and would also not influence the harmony of the sects, moreover he had indeed shown great valor, the fact that Gui Shanyou was a demon beast didn't seem so outstanding anymore. Thus, Pure Yang Palace's Eccentric Hall was genuinely accepted by everyone with its hall master.

The effects of Yang Chen's third grade yuan cultivation pill was astonishing. Very quickly these YuanYing experts discovered this anomaly and after their bodies had recovered, they rushed out of the old tree demon's confinement to join the battle. Only a few experts, who had suffered severe injuries to their spiritual awareness because of their destined magic weapons being

destroyed, remained behind within the protection.

If he was really pitted against Lin Chenghe, then with his profound strength, the old tree demon could easily match or maybe critically injure him. But after hearing Yang Chen's explanation, he understood what was going on and did not show much of his strength.

In any case, after finding Lin Chenghe's location without any losses, the Pure Yang Palace had already gained the greatest glory. Now the mission of destroying the devil to protect the dao should be handled by these big sects, so that they could also save face. This method was beneficial to everyone.

From the time when he was at the Greater Mountains, Gui Shanyou had learned the art of patience. He had concealed himself so well at the Greater Mountains that he wasn't discovered by anyone for several decades. Playing the role of an expert whose cultivation was not completely pure was an easy matter for him to acquire the trust of these people.

“Currently, he hasn't properly consolidated his realm, so attack fiercely! We must not allow him to reach his prime!”

With the addition of several YuanYing experts, the pressure on Min Huafeng had decreased greatly and she also began to organize their attacks.

Everyone knew that, if they did not take advantage of this situation, eliminated this old devil and let him escape, then he

would certainly become a nightmare for all of these sects in the future. That's why nobody shrunk back, even if it was a battle between Da Cheng stage experts, they still rushed forward to attack.

Immediately, casualties began to appear. Initially, the battle was between two Da Cheng stage experts who were both equally matched, but after those several YuanYing stage experts had joined in, the battle was completely different.

Bang!

One YuanYing expert was beaten and thrown out of the fight, flying on one side, while puffing blood. One of the old tree demon's branches rapidly grabbed him, brought him back and forcefully fed him a yuan cultivation pill.

At the same time, elder Min Huafeng's attack fiercely hit Lin Chenghe, making that cunning devil recoil, raging again and again.

The scene immediately grew lively, but those JieDan experts outside of the hundred miles confinement simply could not come in. Not to mention people like Yang Chen, who were farthest outside and had just come to broaden their horizons.

Still, Yang Chen was not very concerned about the situation inside. In any case, that stupid Lin Chenghe would finally die because of the backlash caused by the surplus in spirit power he had consumed, so Yang Chen wasn't worried even a little about him remaining alive. Absorbing other people's cultivation was nice

and easy, and the cultivation would also increase very rapidly, but absorbing the cultivation of two Da Cheng experts, moreover with both of them having different attributes, was just a surefire way to die quickly.

Apart from Yang Chen, perhaps only Lin Chenghe understood this point. The present him, had to be regretting that he had become so overwhelmed by the pressure that he had completely absorbed the cultivation of a second Da Cheng stage expert as well.

The spirit power in his body seemed to be boiling. Both experts had different attributes and thus a completely different cultivation method, which were basically the opposites of each other. So the inside of Lin Chenghe's body was currently also like a battlefield, with spirit power crazily fighting itself.

For the onlookers, although he was dealing with the Green Jade Immortal Islands' elder Min quite proficiently, he himself understood the trouble with his spirit power.

If he had only absorbed the cultivation of one Da Cheng expert, then maybe the problem would not have become so large, and he would have been in advantageous state. But the only one to be blamed was Lin Chenghe's greed. Together with his usual habits, with those Da Cheng stage experts in front of him, he just had to absorb their cultivation, no matter how many people were in front of him.

There were not many YuanYing stage experts who had cultivated the Long Tai Spirit Supporting Secrets, but there were still a dozen of them. Although they also had different attributes, they

contained all attributes, so a balance could be formed. But unfortunately, there were only two Da Cheng stage experts and their attributes were such that one attribute restrained the other, which finally made him taste the punishment for his greed.

Although he had been able to forcefully bear the damage caused by the interference with his tribulation and had been able to hide the damage, but after he had absorbed the cultivation of these two Da Cheng experts, who had opposing attributes, in order to recover, Lin Chenghe was just a spent force.

Although elder Min of the Green Jade Immortal Islands' hadn't thought of this point until later, once she noticed, she was sure that passing through the tribulation was not that easy for him.

With the attack by the group of experts in coordination with the elder, they very quickly forced Lin Chenghe into a corner. This time, everyone could see that, even though Lin Chenghe had many remarkable abilities, he still couldn't escape the net of so many experts.

Lin Chenghe's condition had become very bad and the spirit power within his body had already started revolting, together with the force of many people attacking him with their weapons, this has incessantly been consuming his strength. Furthermore, whenever he attacked a YuanYing stage expert with the intent to kill, he would always be blocked by the old tree demon just after he had injured the YuanYing expert and wanted to finish the job.

The injured YuanYing stage experts would somehow always bump across the old tree demon's attack and when Lin Chenghe

wanted to escape from the entrapment by using the confusion it created, he would be stopped by the attack of the old tree demon at the most crucial time and then his entire effort would be ruined. After several tries, Lin Chenghe almost went crazy because of his anger.

This time, he also did not dare to hold anything back before thinking of leaving here alive. Suddenly he clenched his teeth and loudly shouted, signifying that he had used some forbidden technique.

Within the mother son devil cultivation, there was a Demon Body Cultivation Method which would increase the cultivation of a person rapidly in return for a heavy price, including a decreased life span and vitality. Lin Chenghe had unleashed precisely this forbidden technique.

Bang!

Suddenly everyone who was surrounding Lin Chenghe discovered that his speed had increased. Those YuanYing experts who were only daring to attack him from a distance were caught off guard, as nobody had anticipated this kind of development and many of them immediately went to the netherworld after being pierced by Lin Chenghe.

Previously, elder Min had planned to attack with several YuanYing experts and slowly kill that devil, but when such a large number of casualties appeared suddenly, elder Min became furious and immediately renounced that plan. The furious elder Min was even planning to charge in without caring for her injuries and take



down Lin Chenghe together with her.

But after using the forbidden technique, Lin Chenghe's speed became terrifying, moreover, it was clear that his cultivation had also increased greatly. But he still didn't want to tangle with elder Min and instead wanted to deal with those surrounding YuanYing stage experts.

Seeing that the turn of events was far from encouraging, the old tree demon also joined the fray, but he could only protect a few YuanYing experts in time and these people were only YuanYing experts from sects which Yang Chen had repeatedly reminded him about. As for other YuanYing experts, they were frantically hunted by the raging Lin Chenghe.

Within just a few moments, many YuanYing experts had been killed by Lin Chenghe. But by the time they were killed, elder Min had also caught up with him and began to crazily attack him.

At this moment, Yang Chen was inserting his sword embryo, formed of the Blood Phantom Vine, into the huge tree trunk of a very old tree. This old tree was many times thicker than those trees which Yang Chen had found earlier.

“Within three to four hours, they should be done, right?”

Looking in the direction of the ferocious battle and sensing the fluctuation in the energy of heaven and earth, Yang Chen asked himself.

This was already the hundredth tree which Yang Chen had emptied, so after some thought, he reached the conclusion that, after this tree, he would not need to expand a large amount of effort but this magic weapon was also essentially completed.

“Let’s wait a second!”

Gao Yue also looked in the direction of the battle. Equally concerned, but not knowing what to do. The wager between Yang Chen and Cheng Wencai still hadn’t been completed, yet Yang Chen hadn’t shown any traces of worry and this baffled Gao Yue.

After killing the YuanYing experts, Lin Chenghe sensed that he wouldn’t be able to fight for long. If he did not run away at this moment, later he would not get any chance to flee.

“I have been greatly entertained today and this Lin is grateful for that, but this Lin will now take his leave!”

Lin Chenghe sneered and turned into a ray of light, entered the ground and disappeared from everyone’s view.

Mysterious Devil Five Phases Blood Evasion. This was the most powerful escaping technique which Lin Chenghe had mastered. Using this method, his body would turn into a ray of light, and regardless of the attribute of the material, he could escape through all.

Shua!

Elder Min also chased after Lin Chenghe's presence, pursuing him closely and the old tree demon loudly shouted, releasing all of the experts, after which his body flashed once and he also chased after him.

How could Lin Chenghe still even dare to think of fighting with two Da Cheng experts, while continuing to crazily use the devil cultivation? He couldn't even pick a proper path in his panic.

During the whole journey, Lin Chenghe had sensed the presence of dao sects' JieDan cultivators just above him. He sneered within his heart, but didn't appear openly and simply immersed himself deeper to escape.

Rapidly, he had reached the outermost layer of the perimeter formed by the dao sects. Lin Chenghe didn't have any more worries after he had left Gui Shanyou and elder Min far behind. Sensing the presence of younger generations ahead, he looked for a large tree between them and escaped.

Yang Chen only sensed a trace of someone's presence and immediately pulled Gao Yue behind him and retreated. Soon afterwards, everyone saw a person's silhouette rushing away from the top of a tree. But the silhouette had barely ascended a few meters, when it suddenly separated into two parts and fell down.

# Chapter 171 - The Matter Of Dao

## Companionship Was Not Concluded

---

The only people on the scene were Yang Chen and Gao Yue, as well as the Foundation stage disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect. Suddenly seeing such circumstances, apart from Yang Chen, both others were intimidated.

“With so many people chasing to kill you, you still want to flee through this road?”

Yang Chen sighed in his heart:

“For every grievance someone is responsible, for every debt there is a debtor, this is a sin which you yourself have committed and you will have to pay for it!”

Immediately after sighing, Yang Chen swiftly turned and appeared at the side of the large tree, stretched his hand to take out the sword embryo and, without looking, he immediately returned it to the Achievement Ring.

Then his figure flashed again and Yang Chen’s silhouette could be seen at the top of the tree, where both parts of the corpse were hanging, yet no bloodstains were visible in the surroundings. Without saying anything, Yang Chen first took the qiankun pouch. These were his spoils of war, it would be better to take them. After collecting them, he jumped down from the tree, collecting both parts of the corpse.

“Who is there? Did you see it? Not only did I touch his hair, but he was actually killed by my flying sword!”

Yang Chen yelled rudely towards that disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect.

“What?”

That disciple of Greatest Heaven Sect was greatly astonished. Pointing towards the two halves of the bloodless corpse, he was stunned and asked:

“You say this is the devil Lin Chenghe? What kind of joke is that?”

Just as he was speaking, Green Jade Immortal Islands’ elder Min appeared in front of everyone and, following her, the old tree demon, Gui Shanyou, also appeared.

Seeing the body of devil Lin Chenghe cut in two halves, elder Min asked exultantly:

“Who killed him?”

“This junior!”

In front of a Da Cheng stage expert, Yang Chen didn’t act that

arrogantly and respectfully replied. Then he turned towards Gui Shanyou and greeted him, since according to the hierarchy of the sect, Gui Shanyou was Yang Chen's elder.

“You?”

If it was Gao Yue who had admitted to killing him, then it was believable, after all Lin Chenghe was already a spent force, so he could be injured by a JieDan expert, but if a Foundation stage cultivator like Yang Chen said he had killed him, elder Min really could not believe it:

“How is that possible?”

“Nothing is impossible.”

Yang chen replied with a smile:

“This junior was nourishing his flying sword with the wood attributed spirit power of this large tree, when he suddenly tried to escape through it.”

Yang Chen did not need to say what happened further, as everyone realized what had happened.

Yang Chen's flying sword was horizontally inserted into the huge tree and was also wood attributed. Lin Chenghe was using the five phases evasion method and thought of using the wood evasion to flee through the tree and didn't pay attention to the flying sword,

which was the same as delivering himself to the blade of the sword and was cut in two halves.

The five phases evasion technique was also not omnipotent, at least in some circumstances. A refined flying sword was of one such circumstances. If that was not the case, then as long as someone could use the five phases evasion technique, they would not be injured by anything in the world; wouldn't that just be a joke?

But, regardless of what was said, Lin Chenghe had died under Yang Chen's sword, this was a fact set in stone.

That disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect who until now hadn't dared to believe that the corpse belonged to Lin Chenghe, didn't have any doubt after seeing elder Min. Moreover, a group of YuanYing experts also followed and reached there, which included experts from the Greatest Heaven Sect. Seeing this, there was basically no need to doubt the identity of the corpse.

The problem was that this disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect was left behind by Cheng Wencai to keep an eye on Yang Chen. Cheng Wencai had bet with Yang Chen and Gao Yue, that, if Yang Chen could even touch a hair of Lin Chenghe, then he would kowtow and admit his defeat. But Yang Chen had not only touched his hair, that devil himself was even killed by Yang Chen!

Originally Yang Chen had not intended to put the sword in horizontally, but upright instead. Although the sword embryo of the Blood Phantom Vine had been refined, it still hadn't completely taken the shape of a blade so it still couldn't be

considered as complete. The best method to sharpen the edge of a flying sword was to let it drink the blood of an expert.

In this realm, the most powerful experts were Da Cheng stage experts. When the Blood Phantom Vine wasn't turned into a flying sword, it had already absorbed the blood of elder Hua Wanting for several decades, only, that time, elder Hua wasn't a genuine Da Cheng stage expert, instead just a peak YuanYing stage expert.

But now, the Blood Phantom Vine flying sword had finally drank the blood of Lin Chenghe. The reason why the corpse didn't have any blood was precisely because of this.

Strictly speaking, it was not just one Da Cheng stage expert, since Lin Chenghe had also just absorbed the cultivation of those two Da Cheng stage expert some time ago.

But this was obviously not the time to analyze the changes in the sword embryo. There was a large group of experts in front of his eyes to deal with.

Not only had Yang Chen killed Lin Chenghe, but he also had the old tree demon, Gui Shanyou, at his side, so nobody dared to demand the qiankun pouch of Lin Chenghe from Yang Chen. The group of people could only curse Lin Chenghe as much as they could. When they looked at Yang Chen, their intestines turned green with envy. How much heaven defying luck could one have, that a Da Cheng expert got himself cut by a stationary flying sword?



Speaking of this, many sects had sent countless experts, they had even paid the price of two Da Cheng experts' and tens of YuanYing stage experts' lives, but nobody had expected that the person who would get the fame of killing the devil to protect the dao would be a trifling Foundation stage expert.

Though most people could not accept that all of their hard work for such a long time after paying such a bitter price had just helped a junior succeed, nobody showed it. Everyone on the scene was at the YuanYing stage, while a Da Cheng stage expert was also present, so how could they lower themselves to embarrass a junior?

After looking at the dead corpse of Lin Chenghe with their own eyes, everyone was somewhat glad in their hearts. At the final moment, Lin Chenghe had surprisingly used a forbidden technique and escaped. If it were not for Yang Chen, maybe he would have been successful in fleeing. And if they had failed to kill Lin Chenghe, then the dao sects and schools would have to face the counterattack of that cunning devil in the future. Nobody would have been able to take the responsibility for that.

Yang Chen killing Lin Chenghe, regardless of whether it was intentional or unintentional, was a great service to the dao sects. Nobody could deny this; so after the initial moment of unwillingness, everyone showered Yang Chen with praise.

Those who heard of Yang Chen also began to envy Yang Chen's heaven defying luck. Which sect wouldn't want a disciple who had such great luck?

This time, the one who most embarrassed, was the Foundation stage disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect. Seeing the elders of his sect, he had to come forward and greet them, but when they asked him for the reason of being there, he stammered and could not say anything.

It was not that he could not say, but he did not dare to say it. His uncle master Cheng Wencai was a JieDan expert, so maybe he didn't care about a YuanYing expert's grandeur, but he was a trifling Foundation stage expert, so in front of so many elders, he could not speak a single word because of the their pressure.

“He is just an eyewitness of the bet between fellow daoist Cheng of the Greatest Heaven Sect and me!”

But Yang Chen exposed the gamble in front of all the elders without any hesitation:

“Fellow daoist Cheng had said that this youngster could not even touch a hair of the devil Lin Chenghe.”

After saying this, Yang Chen bent down and plucked a hair from Lin Chenghe's head and then said to everyone loudly:

“I request all the elders to be witness!”

Saying this, he used his hands to pull the hair in two parts:

“Junior has touched Lin Chenghe's hair properly!”

The matter of the bet had been spreading for a long time. In the beginning, the group of experts had thought it to be a joke, but after hearing it from the mouth of the party involved, they had to believe that it was genuine.

Other than the experts of the Greatest Heaven Sect, all of the experts began to laugh, seeing such circumstances. This kind of bet was really a joke. But Yang Chen's luck was so monstrous that people killed themselves by his sword, so Cheng Wencai losing was not an injustice.

Two YuanYing experts of the Greatest Heaven Sect snorted without saying anything. Naturally, they also couldn't say anything. The result of this matter was indeed beyond their control.

“Yang Chen!”

Elder Min carefully tried to remember this somewhat familiar name:

“You are Shanshan's dao companion, right?”

“What?”

Hearing this, the group of YuanYing experts revealed shocked expressions.

Also, only some people had heard about the duel between Yang Chen and Li Qingchen. But that JieDan expert of the Greatest Heaven Sect hadn't reported to the elders of his sect because, in his view, this was only a joke. If he even reported such a joke to the elders, wouldn't they think he was not earnest?

The events that happened afterwards were also somewhat in his expectations, in addition to that, the matter of Shi Shanshan and Yang Chen becoming dao companions was not formalized, so he believed that it was just a joke even more firmly.

Naturally, he did not spread the news, not because he did not want to humiliated Yang Chen, but because he did not want to create trouble for the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Therefore, apart from the two YuanYing experts of the Green Jade Immortal Islands and a few people of the Pure Yang Palace, not many people knew this and so there also wasn't any such rumor in the cultivation world.

But presently, after elder Min Huafeng of the Green Jade Immortal Islands had asked this question, the matter had immediately become a fact.

Who was Shi Shanshan? There was rarely anyone who had not heard about her. The genius disciple of the Green Jade Immortal Islands whom the sect had focused all of their resources upon, the heavenly talent who had already reached the JieDan stage at such a young age. If even a rumor of such a disciple looking for dao companions spread, the number of people lining up to become her dao companion would fill the entire Green Jade Immortal Islands.

Such an outstanding disciple surprisingly had a dao companion? Moreover, not only was he not from the Green Jade Immortal Islands, he was also only at the initial Foundation stage?

“Eh?”

From the beginning, Yang Chen had not intended to raise this matter and wait for a few years so that someone else would ask to be her dao companion, but he hadn't expected that elder Min Huafeng also knew about this matter.

Clearly, this meant that everyone inside the Green Jade Immortal Islands knew about this and had even given tacit approval. Otherwise, a person with the status of an elder would not ask this question publicly.

“This... Senior... There is some misunderstanding in this!”

Yang Chen could only give such an explanation. Gao Yue, standing behind him, was also very anxious and immediately stepped forward and greeted everyone and said:

“It is only a joke from that time... Senior, you must not take it seriously!”

“What misunderstanding?”

Elder Min Huafeng waved her hand:

“The matter is already settled and cannot be altered. Fellow daoist Gui, I say, it would be better if you asked your noble sect’s Palace Master to personally handle the matter. Shanshan is our most beloved disciple and should not be wronged!”

These words were directed towards Gui Shanyou, after all, the person who had the most seniority in the Pure Yang Palace was Gui Shanyou.

Since a person of elder Min’s status had said such a thing, it clearly implied that the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace personally had to go to the Green Jade Immortal Islands and find a solution. But after hearing the opinion of elder Min, it was clear that the Green Jade Immortal Islands had agreed to this matter, against Yang Chen’s wishes.

Fairy Shi of the Green Jade Immortal Islands was a heavenly talent who had a metal attributed full spirit root. Becoming her dao companion was certainly something that most people in the world yearned for; how could Yang Chen be dissatisfied?

“Idiot, this kind of opportunity doesn’t come again!”

Countless people despised Yang Chen in their hearts. Similarly, many people also envied Yang Chen’s good fortune.

Very quickly, someone managed to understand that it was not that Yang Chen was not satisfied, it was just that Yang Chen was a clever person and who knew his worth and knew that he was not

suitable for Fairy Shi, and had therefore declined.

This theory would explain many things. When everyone looked at Yang Chen again, their good opinion of Yang Chen increased even more. A disciple who had known themselves and also had such heaven defying luck was indeed rare.

Right now, everyone was still thinking about Lin Chenghe's matter. They had just talked about the matter of dao companions because elder Min had put it forward, but the most urgent thing was to inform everyone that the devil, Lin Chenghe, had been annihilated and make everyone feel relieved.

But everyone was feeling awkward, thinking about how to announce the information. Although it was true that Yang Chen had killed him, he was only a Foundation stage cultivator. If the news that the devil who had killed two Da Cheng and several YuanYing stage experts and absorbed the cultivation of countless experts had died in the hands of a Foundation stage cultivator, then all of the experts who had participated would certainly not be pleased.

“Naturally it is everyone's credit!”

Yang Chen again calmly replied:

“Seniors forced him to enter this gap and with all of you coming behind him, he still would have been unable to escape. This credit of destroying the devil and protecting the dao naturally must belong to all seniors. This junior only requests that the seniors

testify that this junior had touched Ling Chenghe's hair!"

These words of Yang Chen gave rise to laughter. Since Yang Chen had himself taken the initiative to give the credit, even the YuanYing experts of the Greatest Heaven Sect didn't want to make things difficult for him.

"Be at ease, as soon as this matter is over, this old man will send Cheng Wencai to the Pure Yang Palace to honor the commitment!"

Yang Chen knew good from bad, so all of the elders would also have a favorable attitude towards him and the Greatest Heaven Sect's YuanYing stage expert immediately made the decision.



# Chapter 172 - Second Wood Flying Sword Completed

---

This trip to annihilate Lin Chenghe had brought great fame and fortune for Yang Chen. Regardless of what happened, in the end, Yang Chen's name was still written together with those Da Cheng and YuanYing stage experts, even though it was only written in the last place.

In the end, Gui Shanyou, the expert from the Pure Yang Palace, aside from looking weaker in front of others, still had his name spread far and wide.

Pure Yang Palace's Eccentric Hall's hall master had not only accurately discovered the position of Lin Chenghe, allowing everyone to surround him, but at the crucial time, he had also saved the lives of more than ten YuanYing stage experts. Such a contribution was indeed one of the largest.

Although Yang Chen didn't appear to be very important, the credit of making the final attack on Lin Chenghe was still regarded as Yang Chen's. After all, those YuanYing and Da Cheng stage cultivators were not so thick-skinned as to falsely claim Yang Chen's credit.

Naturally, obtaining the reputation was a trivial matter. The main benefit was that Yang Chen's Blood Phantom Vine flying sword had passed through the flesh of Lin Chenghe at the Da Cheng stage and had completely become a second wood flying sword, this sword was the flying sword with the most potential in Yang Chen's armory, even higher than the Immortal Executing

Blade.

But the second wood flying sword was still one of the sword souls of the Immortal Executing Blade. Both of them would be fused together in the future, but this was not something which Yang Chen should get a headache over.

In addition to that, he had also received another great harvest: Lin Chenghe's qiankun pouch. With his actions, that devil must have obtained a lot of treasures in exchange for the Heavenly Meteor Heart Crystals.

This could be called as obtaining both fame and fortune. Nobody could claim having obtained a higher harvest than him. Apart from this, another advantage was that Gui Shanyou was now acknowledged by other experts.

The reason why Gui Shanyou had taken the initiative to resist the first attack of Lin Chenghe when he exploded these experts was because Yang Chen had told him so. This was firstly to get the reputation of saving their lives, but at the same time also to use this opportunity to collect pieces of flesh and blood, just that it had to be done secretly without letting anyone know.

Although their cultivation had been absorbed by Lin Chenghe, they were still two Da Cheng stage experts. Their flesh was the best kind of nourishment for the master root and the master vine of the Blood Phantom Vine, which were lying in the Medicine Garden at their last breath.

After the events when these were delivered to Yang Chen, he immediately went to where the Blood Phantom Vine was planted. After meticulously taking care of them, the Blood Phantom Vine finally showed some vitality and did not appear as if dying at any moment.

Perhaps after a few hundred years, the badly damaged Blood Phantom Vine would grow luxuriant again. But that was a long time away. Currently Yang Chen only wanted to ensure that the Blood Phantom Vine did not die, other things could be discussed later. In any case, Yang Chen already possessed the Blood Phantom Vine flying sword, which could also be upgraded similarly and was many times more powerful than the original Blood Phantom Vine.

The only thing left was the matter of Shi Shanshan, which was giving Yang Chen endless headaches. Even his master was continuously frowning and knitting her brows. This kind of matter would not be solved that easily. Even Green Jade Immortal Islands' elder Min Huafeng had spoken about this, so it was nearly impossible for the Palace Master not to go.

Initially, he had intended to delay the matter until everyone forgot about it, but unfortunately the Green Jade Immortal Islands seemed to be determined. He could not understand if they were doing this to prove that they wouldn't go back on their words or if there was another motive, but in any case, the matter of Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan being dao companions had already spread across the entire world because of elder Min Huafeng.

Yang Chen was convinced that, in the near future, he would start receiving challenges from countless admirers of Shi Shanshan,

which would make this matter even more of an annoyance.

Apparently nobody knew if Yang Chen had some plan in advance, otherwise why would he act as if he knew the result of the battle when making the wager with Cheng Wencai. But no one could believe such a nonsensical notion. Could it be that Yang Chen knew where Lin Chenghe was going to pass and had put his flying sword there in advance and moreover made that bet earlier?

Rather than believing that he had planned this, everyone preferred to believe in Yang Chen's heaven defying luck. After all, everyone who knew about Yang Chen's past endeavors knew how frightening his good fortune was. Only, something like this was not under the control of anyone, even Da Cheng stage experts couldn't control it.

The unlucky Cheng Wencai didn't even know what kind of mess he was in. Since even the YuanYing stage elders of the sect knew, this matter wouldn't just stop with just Cheng Wencai. When the YuanYing stage elder had gotten to know about the affair, he wanted to severely scold Cheng Wencai at once.

The bet between both sides was made after Cheng Wencai had mocked Yang Chen, so even the elders of the Greatest Heaven Sect didn't know what to say. After all, nearly all of the sects had sent all their disciples at that time, so Cheng Wencai mocking Yang Chen was equivalent to mocking all of these sects. If the matter went public, then surely the Greatest Heaven Sect would lose a lot of face.

Thus Cheng Wencai was immediately turned into a scapegoat by

the elders of the sect, in order to stop the matter from spreading. First of all, being a JieDan expert, making a bet with a Foundation stage junior was itself immature. Moreover, even at the Heavenly Stairs Assembly, he had questioned Yang Chen and accused him of cheating, losing three JieDan expert of the Greatest Heaven Sect thereafter.

He had such a bad record only his sect could clean up his mess. Naturally, the experts of the Greatest Heaven Sect would not allow for Cheng Wencai to kneel in front of Yang Chen and Gao Yue under the eyes of so many people, after all the Greatest Heaven Sect also had to save some face. This matter could only be dragged out, but it could also not be kept hanging. The only one to blame in this case was Cheng Wencai, who had spread the matter since a long time ago, sure of the outcome.

Leaving such small matters, all of the experts began to seriously summarize the lesson from this time's event. All of the sects had begun to learn Pure Yang Palace's way of handling matters. On one hand was wariness against devil cultivation, while on the other hand was their Eccentric Hall to rope in demon beasts. The merit of the Eccentric Hall could be seen from Gui Shanyou's contribution.

The genuine evaluation of merit was the work of the experts, so the Foundation and JieDan stage cultivators present had started to return to their sect. Yang Chen and Gao Yue were no exception and, after informing Gui Shanyou, they also returned to the MeiQing Mountain.

Regardless of however they distributed the contributions, Yang

Chen had matters to deal with, for example using the flesh of these Da Cheng stage experts to completely forge the edge of the second wood flying sword.

On the journey, he had told Gao Yue that he had something to do first, so as soon as they returned, Yang Chen entered closed door training. Gao Yue on the other hand, anxiously went to find her master to consult him regarding the matter of Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan.

Speaking of which, when elder Min Huafeng had asked if Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan were dao companions or not, Gao Yue felt an insufferable pain in her chest for some reason.

She couldn't describe this sensation in words, but she became extremely uneasy, as if her treasure was being robbed by someone. Every time she felt this sensation, she would remind herself that she was Yang Chen's master and there could not be anything between them. On the contrary, she should be glad that her disciple would have such an exceptional dao companion.

But unfortunately, no matter how hard she tried, Gao Yue was unable to feel happy. Moreover, she also could not talk about her feelings to anyone, so she could only push them down in her mind and suffer the unbearable pain.

But Yang Chen didn't pay any attention to Gao Yue's mood. Currently, his entire mind was concentrated on the second wood flying sword. After absorbing the blood of the Da Cheng stage expert, the flying sword was showing all of the characteristics of a flying sword, just waiting for Yang Chen to complete the last step

of the procedure.

In the room, Yang Chen cautiously took out the blood phantom vine sword embryo. Looking at the blood colored ripples on the sword, he couldn't describe the joy of his heart in words.

This was the first weapon Yang Chen had refined by himself and also a component of his destined magic weapon. In his previous life, even if he wanted to, Yang Chen would not dare to think that he could refine a flying sword from a Blood Phantom Vine. Holding the flying sword's embryo in his hand, he even felt that he was in a dream.

Releasing his spiritual awareness to the limit, Yang Chen entered his spirit sea. The flying sword was magnified within his spirit sea, allowing him to have a panoramic view.

With the support of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard's enormous spirit power, Yang Chen controlled the Geocentric Flame to remove the impurities inside and outside of the sword embryo bit by bit.

All of these impurities had appeared after absorbing Lin Chenghe's blood. Lin Chenghe's own cultivation was not pure, as all of it was formed by stealing other people's cultivation, thus impurities were to be expected.

But Yang Chen wanted a perfect flying sword, so these kinds of impurities could not be allowed to exist. Yang Chen could tolerate using ordinary materials, as they could be replaced later by high

grade materials, but he could not allow these impurities, as they would not only lower the quality of the flying sword, but also become a potential problem whenever he would try to increase the grade of the flying sword.

These impurities were caused by Lin Chenghe's impure spirit power, who was at the Da Cheng stage, so Yang Chen had no option but to spend a great amount of time and slowly refine and remove them. This was not a matter which could be solved overnight, even with Yang Chen's current strength. It was still a matter which required him to spend a lot of effort.

Fortunately, because of the mutation in his spirit sea which allowed him to enlarge the magic weapons countless times, Yang Chen could find even the minutest of flaws.

The effect of the pair cultivation for spiritual awareness was astonishing. During the refining process, the impurities were refined bit by bit, but not even a fraction of the sword embryo was harmed.

Just as a small amount of impurities were removed, the Blood Phantom Vine flying sword revealed an intense blood-thirsty pressure and began to shake incessantly within the spirit sea.

Yang Chen didn't dare to be careless and at this stage successively used forbidden techniques and formed unique seals on each of the spirit power ripples of the flying sword. After the last seal was formed, the Blood Phantom Vine flying sword emitted a glaring red light and then the red light dispersed, the flying sword itself turned black and didn't have that red color which scared people



anymore.

Finally the second wood flying sword was complete. It had a delicate handle, a long unilateral edge and, although it did not have that frightening color anymore, in exchange it had undergone many changes and turned black. It was simple but elegant, yet it had a crazy killing intent concealed beneath the surface, which made Yang Chen almost go mad with happiness.

Looking at it from a distance, the fierceness of the flying sword could be seen at one glance, but that person would very quickly think that it was a misconception. Yang Chen knew that this was the first accomplishment of the flying sword and it still hadn't shown its complete brilliance.

With a thought from him, the flying sword turned into a black dragon which seemed incomparably soft and began to soar in Yang Chen's spirit sea. The main ingredient of this flying sword was the Blood Phantom Vine, so apart from the blood sucking ability of the Blood Phantom Vine, it had also retained its toughness and flexibility.

Seeing the flying sword sometimes turn into a ring and then into a small coiled serpent, Yang Chen was unable to contain his joy.

He had finally obtained a suitably strong flying sword! Although its level still wasn't very high, just the potential of the sword made this flying sword many times more formidable than the flying sword which elder Wu had given him. Henceforth, as Yang Chen's cultivation increased, this flying sword could also be limitlessly upgraded.

Apart from using the Geocentric Flame to remove impurities, he had also used second wood spirit power at the time of refining the flying sword. As a result, after the flying sword had been finished and Yang Chen had relaxed, he discovered certain changes in his second wood spirit power.

Yang Chen was at the second layer of the Foundation stage, but currently , his spirit power was very clearly increasing, slowly attacking the boundaries of the next realm. With his ample experience, Yang Chen recognized that this was a clear sign that he was going to make a breakthrough. Calming his heart, he slowly circulated his spirit power a few times, when suddenly those formless shackles disappeared and the second wood spirit power dashed towards the next level in a flash.

The second wood spirit power reaching the third layer of foundation stage also stirred up the spirit power of the other attributes, but, in the end this was not some major breakthrough, so the spirit power of these attributes only rose by half a grade, but didn't attain the state of a breakthrough.

Such a bonus made Yang Chen equally happy. From reaching the Foundation stage's second layer and then the third while consolidating his realm had taken him around ten years. An increase of two layers in the Foundation stage within the short time of ten years had already made Yang Chen pleased beyond expectations.

But cultivation should be stabilized and properly consolidated. It was not as simple as one just comprehending a realm and reaching

that level without stabilizing it. Otherwise Lin Chenghe wouldn't have died from spirit power backlash in his previous life.

With this speed, Yang Chen could determine that, within the next hundred years, he would certainly be able to congeal his dan and enter the JieDan realm. Yang Chen would not have even dared to think of such speed in his previous life. Such speed of cultivation was almost comparable to Gongsun Ling.

Thinking of Gongsun Ling, Yang Chen suddenly remembered that, from the time she had entered the Immortal Falling Well to now, a whole ten years had already passed. It should be about time for her to return.

# Chapter 173 - Trade Can Also Increase Cultivation

---

Since Yang Chen had returned, he had been engrossed in refining the second wood flying sword, but now that the flying sword had been completed, Yang Chen could finally mention his request to his master. At the time of the bet with Cheng Wencai, Gao Yue had promised one request to Yang Chen. When Yang Chen had killed Lin Chenghe, he hadn't raised that request, but had instead delayed the matter, afraid that she would not accept his request.

Now, a few months had already passed, so Yang Chen reckoned that his master should already have a rough idea of what he wanted to ask of her, so if he spoke at this time, there would not be too many negative consequences.

In this life, Yang Chen wanted to cherish Gao Yue in every possible way. He was unable to tolerate even a single wrongdoing to her. As for the matter of the water attributed cultivation method, he wanted to introduce her to this direction willingly rather than forcing her.

The next time Yang Chen went to see Gao Yue, she was engrossed in completing the final step for Yang Chen's flying sword. Gao Yue had already spent several years on this flying sword. From the time she was saved by Yang Chen at the Greater Mountain, she had been immersed in refining the flying sword. If that 'great calamity of the devil cultivation' had not happened, she wouldn't have left the work undone.

"Just wait for two or three months, then this flying sword will be

complete.”

Looking at Yang Chen, Gao Yue cheerfully said. Sweeping her gaze over Yang Chen, she asked with a laugh:

“What’s the matter?”

“Last time, master agreed to do something.”

Yang Chen replied, beaming with smiles. The flying sword was nearly finished, so Yang Chen also became cheerful. Remembering this matter for which he was waiting for a long time, how could it not make his mood surge?

“What do you want from me?”

Gao Yue seemed to have guessed Yang Chen’s intention and asked:

“Is it the request from last time? You want me to cultivate the water attributed cultivation method?”

“Yes! Master!”

Gao Yue asking this question made it clear that she was thinking about this matter, so Yang Chen was very happy. Making her accept this slowly was also a pleasant experience for him.

Seeing Yang Chen's smile, Gao Yue stared at him with a complicated gaze for a long time and only then did she nod:

“Ok! Since I have lost, I have to pay. Although you have a very beautiful and gorgeous dao companion, I am a woman who keeps her word. Since I have promised you, I will fulfill it.”

Hearing Gao Yue's words, Yang Chen could not help but force a bitter smile. Surprisingly, Gao Yue had also begun teasing him regarding Shi Shanshan. This was such a headache. He also didn't know how Palace Master Zhong Jiao and them were going to negotiate and resolve it.

Gao Yue seemed to enjoy teasing Yang Chen. Looking at Yang Chen's anxious expressions, she cheerfully smiled:

“Go, wait for me to refine this flying sword properly, then I will begin to cultivate your water attributed cultivation method. But, beforehand, you must arrange for a suitable cultivation method and other things, so when the time comes, only you can be blamed.”

“Yes, master! Disciple will immediately go and prepare!”

Yang Chen was delighted. He had finally convinced Gao Yue to cultivate a water attributed cultivation method, which also removed a big nail in his heart. He would never allow the regrets of his previous life to be repeated in this life. As long as he would exist, he would certainly not allow that tragedy to happen again.

But now, everything had seemingly changed towards the direction Yang Chen wanted. Although the change was not very great, this life's events had already started to deviate from his previous life's events, which would become even greater with time.

“Master, has Cheng Wencai come to kowtow in front of you?”

After settling the major worry, Yang Chen began to ask about other things.

During the great calamity of the devil cultivation, if it were not for his mocking, Yang Chen hadn't intended for things to develop that way. But since he had already gained the name for killing Lin Chenghe, he could not allow Cheng Wencai to renege on his debt.

“Word was sent to the Greatest Heaven Sect, asking them to make Cheng Wencai come and honor his commitment.”

Gao Yue slowly replied:

“But you were in closed door training at that time and I was at a critical juncture for refining this sword, so it was postponed for the time being.”

“Then ask him to come over!”

Yang Chen replied without any hesitation:

“Since he agreed to bet, he has to pay. The Greatest Heaven Sect has already shown this time and again, with the demeanor of a big sect.”

Although he was speaking praise for the Greatest Heaven Sect, anyone could hear the sarcasm laced within his words.

“Yang Chen!”

Gao Yue suddenly called his name:

“If you intend to keep hating the Greatest Heaven Sect because of Li QingChen’s matter, then I advise you to expel these thoughts. Li QingChen is already dead and nobody in the Greatest Heaven Sect is targeting you!”

How could Gao Yue, his master, not see Yang Chen’s hatred towards the Greatest Heaven Sect? She already had a feeling of what would make Yang Chen angry. Apparently, as long as it did not involve herself, then Yang Chen could handle nearly all matters easily, but once anyone took the fire of war to her, Yang Chen would suddenly turn cruel, showing no sentiments.

This gave Gao Yue an unspeakable sensation, feeling delight and a little fear at the same time. Naturally she liked having Yang Chen care about her, but she was also afraid that Yang Chen had some emotions which surpassed the relations between master and disciple.



Unfortunately, since the time of the pair cultivation with Yang Chen, Gao Yue was afraid that her relationship with Yang Chen would cross that of master and disciple, but even then she had some expectations within her heart. Even though she knew it was absolutely wrong, she couldn't help but feel stifled by Shi Shanshan, feeling conflicted about what to do.

The power and influence of the Greatest Heaven Sect was great, a fact which was accepted by all dao sects. Gao Yue did not want Yang Chen to be pitted against an enemy which he wouldn't be able to handle.

“No one is targeting me?”

Yang Chen laughed. Until now, Yang Xi maybe hadn't appeared because he had just recently started to stand out in the Greatest Heaven Sect and hadn't achieved any higher realm, but who knew... When their time came, what methods would he use to deal with Yang Chen? Moreover, even without Yang Xi, Yang Chen didn't intend to let the Greatest Heaven Sect slip by lightly. The hatred of ten thousand years, how could it be renounced just because of Li QingChen?

“Ai!”

Looking at Yang Chen's expressions, Gao Yue knew that she wasn't successful in convincing Yang Chen, but she also didn't intend to put this discussion off for later and warned him repeatedly:

“Be careful in everything you do.”

“Be at ease, master!”

Yang Chen nodded:

“Disciple is well aware of the situation!”

Both of them did not speak of this matter anymore, but they were clear about one thing: Cheng Wencai had to come over and kowtow. At the time of making the bet, he wasn't very formal with Gao Yue and very rude, since he had thought that he would surely win, otherwise he wouldn't have made that bet.

The ‘great calamity of the devil cultivation’ was considered to have passed. Yang Chen thought carefully: there was no major event for some time which would affect the larger cultivation world, so it should be better used to cultivate. Most of all, his main priority should be to make Gao Yue slowly switch her attribute.

He still hadn't sorted out Lin Chenghe's qiankun pouch. What kind of things should be sent to Shangguan Feng, so that he could sell them for the improvement of the sect? After settling the matter with his master, Yang Chen directly went to Shangguan Feng.

At the Second Fierce Yang Hall, Shangguan Feng had opened a small shop, but this small shop was very well known within the

Pure Yang Palace, as everything it had was of good quality and the disciples also received a discount of twenty percent compared to the market price. Thus, because of such a benefit, the number of people coming there every day were endless.

“How are you, younger apprentice brother Yang?”

“Good morning, younger disciple Yang!”

“Uncle master, long time no see!”

When Yang Chen appeared, everyone he ran into greeted him with a smile. Everyone knew that the things in the store were owned by Yang Chen, so everyone had a smiling face upon seeing him.

Yang Chen was also happy to have a good reputation within the sect, moreover he was also indirectly contributing to increasing the strength of the sect. Yang Chen smiled at everyone greeting him and then went to find Shangguan Feng.

Seeing each other, Yang Chen was stunned by Shangguan Feng's condition. In the years they hadn't seen each other, Shangguan Feng's cultivation had unexpectedly increased greatly. This Shangguan Feng was a completely different person compared to Yang Chen's previous life.

“Senior apprentice brother, what kind of elixir did you take?”

Upon seeing Shangguan Feng, Yang Chen asked with astonishment.

It was not that Yang Chen hadn't offered to make pills for him to increase his cultivation, but Shangguan Feng himself knew that cultivation gained by pills and such things would be shallow and it would still be difficult for him to break through, so he had declined Yang Chen's kind intentions. But Shangguan Feng's current condition made him unable to be unastonished.

“Elixir?”

Shangguan Feng widely smiled:

“If I had to say, I would say the kind intentions of young apprentice brother, which I had received last time.”

“That's it?”

Yang Chen stared at Shangguan Feng:

“I still haven't congratulated senior apprentice brother for your increase in cultivation!”

Last time when he had seen Shangguan Feng, he was only at the third layer of the Foundation stage. The result from using the Heaven Measuring Ruler was also normal, but he had already clearly broken through to the middle Foundation stage and had stepped over at least two layers. This was certainly not the

condition of someone who was thought to have zero future prospects.

Shangguan Feng was in a good mood and in order to increase in cultivation rapidly, it required a friend to whom everything could be disclosed, so without caring for anything, he immediately started to speak to Yang Chen non-stop.

From the start, Shangguan Feng knew about the inferiority of his natural aptitude, so he had to renounce and turned to running this store successfully. But what no one had thought was that Shangguan Feng was like a fish in the water here.

It already had good treasures and Shangguan Feng could operate it freely. In addition to that, all of the treasures were managed by him, so he could arrange anything as he liked and at the same time delight himself. So, unconsciously, it also began to help his cultivation and by the time he paid attention, his cultivation had already risen by one level, and even more when he concentrated on raising his cultivation quickly.

Seeing that, Shangguan Feng was also baffled, but he quickly placed this matter at the back of his mind and immersed himself in business and by the time Yang Chen had come, he had already risen by another layer.

Rising two layers within little over seven years, from the third layer of the Foundation stage to fifth layer of the Foundation stage, this could put even Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling to shame.

Yang Chen continued to listen to his narration with a smile on his face and immediately realized what had happened: Shangguan Feng had taken another direction in cultivation. Actually, cultivation could be done in various ways after the Foundation stage. As long as a person immersed themselves within work, like cultivating, then it was easy for them to increase their cultivation.

Someone could immerse themselves into the four arts, someone into defeating the devil to protect the dao, someone would take up refining tools or concocting pills, so this was by no means an isolated case. In short, everyone just needed to find something they loved and single mindedly concentrate on it. Shangguan Feng also loved doing the work of a merchant and had thrown himself into the work, leading to such a variation.

To be able to find a suitable direction was good luck, but to be able to find it at the Foundation stage was indeed heaven defying luck. Throwing himself into taking care of business was indeed a sensible decision at that time, otherwise he would never have received this opportunity.

“Congratulations, senior apprentice brother!”

Hearing everything, Yang Chen only smiled and congratulated him:

“So senior apprentice brother has already found his dao.”

But Shangguan Feng hadn't thought that he would also be to attain such a heavenly fortune one day and his whole body shook.

Then he happily patted the back of his head and mocked himself:

“So from the start, I was meant to be a merchant!”

After knowing this, Shangguan Feng was unable to contain his joy and since he had the opportunity, he also gained confidence in cultivation again. Yang Chen was also satisfied with seeing his friend make the breakthrough and simply supported him from behind.

“Senior apprentice brother, I also have some more things here, come take a look.”

Saying this, Yang Chen started taking out things from Lin Chenghe’s qiankun pouch one by one.

Only two people were present in the room, so they didn’t have any formalities between them. The other people outside didn’t know what was going on and Yang Chen was taking out things one by one without the fear of anyone.

Yang Chen also hadn’t sorted through Lin Chenghe’s things, the time now was perfect for such things. Lin Chenghe had received many things in exchange for the Heaven Meteor Heart Crystal, which was more than Yang Chen could use and was just right to be sold at Shangguan Feng’s shop.

Some ordinary materials were delivered by Yang Chen, only taking some treasures, the other materials were all given to

Shangguan Feng after one look.

It had to be said, although the time of Lin Chenghe was very short, he hadn't obtained any treasures. Most of the materials were just common materials, which didn't have much use apart from enriching Shangguan Feng's inventory.

“Junior apprentice brother, all of the things that you have brought back these past years, were exchanged for.....”

After the exchange, Shangguan Feng started to recount the result of the past few years to Yang Chen, regarding how many spirit stones he had harvested. All of these things belonged to Yang Chen, Shangguan didn't have any intention of taking them.

“Perhaps senior apprentice brother should go and become a shopkeeper at the Thousand Autumn Pavilion.”

Yang Chen could not help but smile, seeing Shangguan Feng's serious appearance.

While the two people were chatting, in the outside world, a boundlessly majestic sensation which can make people delighted suddenly appeared within the sky. Suddenly a huge lotus flower which didn't disperse for long time appeared. Immediately afterwards, the sky was covered with many rays of light, which were shooting towards some region and then dispersed, after which they were no longer visible.



These bizarre circumstances forced the cultivators present to look up. Seeing the different shapes in the sky, everyone knew what was happening.

“Someone... Someone is ascending!”

Seeing this scene, Yang Chen immediately realized what happened and suddenly thought within his heart:

“This is Elder Wu’s ascension!”

# Chapter 174 - Return Of Gongsun Ling

---

Elder Wu's strength had already reached the realm required for ascension a long time ago, but because of some unfinished business, his ascension was delayed. Just recently, he had passed the Wind tribulation with his formidable cultivation. So his time of ascension had finally come.

When a YuanYing stage expert rises to the Da Cheng stage, he could trigger fluctuations in spirit power within several hundred mile and as long as one was a cultivator, one could sense it. And when a Da Cheng stage expert ascended, the anomaly could be sensed even more clearly.

Those who had lived long enough to experience someone ascending naturally knew what was happening and those who hadn't gone through the experience naturally didn't know what was happening.

However, what had astonished those who knew what was going on was that the Wind tribulation would usually last for quite a while and would be abnormally difficult, but for Elder Wu it was as easy as blowing off dust. The first thing which came to everyone's mind in that situation was precisely the Heaven Seizing Pill.

This was no secret that Elder Wu had refined the Heaven Seizing Pill. Because of that matter, Yang Chen's name had spread everywhere. But since Elder Wu hadn't ascended immediately, nobody knew whether to consider the information of Elder Wu creating the Heaven Seizing Pill successfully as real or fake. Even those who had originally participated in the refining process

weren't saying anything, so nobody could verify.

Today, Elder Wu passing his ascension so speedily had sufficiently proven that, not only had the Heaven Seizing Pill been refined successfully, it also had played a significant role in his ascension.

Only Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Wang Yong knew that this wasn't the complete truth. When the Heaven Seizing Pill had been refined, during the pill tribulation, Elder Wu had supported the pill with his hands in the last few attacks of the Wind Tribulation, so he already had sufficient knowledge and experience regarding the pill tribulation, which was the reason he was able to pass it so easily.

Unfortunately, not many people knew that. Almost everyone had accepted that it was because of the Heaven Seizing Pill. Within a short time, all kind of theories began to spread with Elder Wu's ascension and the Heaven Seizing Pill was the focus.

Elder Wu's ascension also made those cultivation experiences he had given to Yang Chen even more precious. Especially the records of the path from the YuanYing to the Da Cheng stage and from the Da Cheng stage to ascension. Without any hesitation, Palace Master Zhang Jiao immediately placed that part in the Secret Pavilion of the Pure Yang Palace kept only for the eyes of elders who needed it.

Since Elder Wu was ascending, Yang Chen's name was also mentioned. Naturally, in addition to those pill concocting masters who had participated at that time, as well as the beast tamer Fan

Shan. But the person whose name was spoken first was Yang Chen, who had the lowest cultivation among them all.

For Yang Chen, Elder Wu's ascension meant that he would lose a formidable backer in the Mortal World, but fortunately he had already formed good relations with elder Hua of the Clear Sky Sect, as well as the Da Cheng stage expert of Pure Yang Palace, Gui Shanyou, so this did not have a big effect on Yang Chen.

Following Elder Wu's ascension, Gongsun Ling appeared in front of Yang Chen, after having spent ten years in the Immortal Falling Well. She had just recently returned and had directly come to the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard to visit her master. Hearing that Yang Chen was also there, she immediately came over.

“Senior apprentice sister!”

Yang Chen was pleasantly surprised. The Gongsun Ling before his eyes was completely different from the Gongsun Ling within his memories from his past life. Her temperament had greatly changed. As for her cultivation, although she was similar to Yang Chen at the initial Foundation stage, she had an imposing air around her, refined from fighting countless battles.

“I have returned from the Immortal Falling Well!”

Gongsun Ling had a smile across her entire face. The smile was unable to obstruct her confident expression: clearly she had become determined and firm after gaining experience in countless close combat battles. She was completely different from the

Gongsun Ling in Yang Chen's memories, who disregarded the outer world and was only engrossed in bitter cultivation.

“Good work, senior apprentice sister!”

Looking at the change in Gongsun Ling, Yang Chen was also delighted. Only after gaining experience could talent genuinely be used. Immersing oneself in bitter cultivation on a spirit vein without gaining the slightest amount of experience in battles would create problems at the time of their tribulation, and even if she succeeded in ascending, she would just remain a target of bullying in the Spiritual World.

“I have also heard about your situation.”

Gongsun Ling was greatly interested in Yang Chen. After coming out of the Immortal Falling Well, she immediately asked around for Yang Chen's situation. After saying this, her expression suddenly changed and with a bitter smile she said:

“I heard about your relationship with the cool and elegant Fairy Shi of the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Younger apprentice brother, you are really fortunate with women!”

Yang Chen cursed within his heart. Why did everyone have to talk of this matter with him? First his master and now his senior apprentice sister. The reaction of other disciples was not so intense towards this matter. Moreover, Yang Chen was caught off guard by the tone of Gongsun Ling, who seemed to be in a bad mood while talking of this.

At this very moment, Yang Chen wanted to die. He had not even accepted the proposal, yet how could everyone talk like this with him?

“That is just a misunderstanding!”

Apart from explaining with a bitter expression, Yang Chen couldn't do anything else:

“Palace Master Zhang Jiao is currently negotiating. I just hope that the Green Jade Immortal Islands abandon their original aspiration!”

“You are not willing?”

Gongsun Ling raised her eyebrows, but her tone had clearly eased up and furthermore contained a hint of astonishment.

“I was saying that this was a misunderstanding from the start!”

Yang Chen could only force a smile. Everyone was thinking that he had obtained a great treasure, but only he knew the pain he had to suffer.

“Since you are not willing, just decline it!”

Gongsun Ling nodded her head in satisfaction and patted Yang

Chen's shoulder. Feeling relieved, her face resumed a smile.

“You think I haven't tried?”

Yang Chen helplessly looked at Gongsun Ling, giving rise to a crystalline laughter from her.

Regardless of what was said, Gongsun Ling was extremely satisfied with his reply and did not nag him about this anymore. Instead she happily started to recount her experiences at the Immortal Falling Well to Yang Chen and Shangguan Feng. She talked about what kind of risks she experienced and what she learned from them, seemingly wanting to let Yang Chen gain something from her experience.

Yang Chen and Shangguan Feng were calmly listening, but Shangguan Feng quickly departed, using the excuse that someone had come to buy something, leaving the two people alone in the room.

It seemed as if Gongsun Ling hadn't talked to anyone for those ten years, she kept incessantly talking to Yang Chen, moreover she also described where the elixirs given to her by Yang Chen were used, radiating with joy.

Obviously Yang Chen would not disturb Gongsun Ling and kept on listening calmly, until she had said everything she had wanted to say. After she finished speaking, Gongsun Ling seemed to have been relieved of a major concern, patting her stomach with her lily-white hands, she laughed:

“Wow, telling you everything really made me comfortable!”

After a moment, without caring for Yang Chen’s response, she directly asked:

“Younger apprentice brother Yang, didn’t you say that, you would teach me a formidable illusion spell after I return?”

At some point of time during those ten years, Gongsun Ling seemed to have turned into an impetuous person. But Yang Chen was not very bothered about this. Gongsun Ling being in high spirits was fine: the more her cultivation increased, the more it would add to Pure Yang Palace’s strength.

In any case, Yang Chen told her that this illusion spell was at the edge of the MeiQing Mountains, so taking Gongsun Ling there was no problem. But still, Yang Chen warned her again and again that it would be best if she visited her master and the other people she needed to visit before she started the cultivation, on the way. Cultivation was not something which you could stop when you wanted to, so it would be best to deal with all of the mortal affairs before starting cultivation.

Gongsun Ling nodded and committed Yang Chen’s words to memory. Apparently her master had also seemed to say these kinds of words, but Gongsun Ling hadn’t paid much attention at that time. Yang Chen’s words however, Gongsun Ling remembered.

Yang Chen didn’t pay any attention to this and led Gongsun Ling



to the place where the senior who had made the Immortal Beheading Blade had undergone his closed door training.

“There doesn’t seem to be anything special here!”

Gongsun Ling observed everything but didn’t find any trace of the illusion spell and, wrinkling her brows she asked:

“Yang Chen, are you sure we are in the correct area?”

Unconsciously, Gongsun Ling had started calling him by his name, ‘Yang Chen’, instead of addressing him formally as junior apprentice brother. At this moment, Yang Chen didn’t pay any attention to it. In any case, all of his friends used to address him by his name and Gongsun Ling was also one of them.

Regarding Gongsun Ling’s question, Yang Chen didn’t answer it, but rather gave her a smile and took a step forward. In flash, Yang Chen’s body disappeared from Gongsun Ling’s vision, but there wasn’t any sound in the surroundings.

“What?! ”

Seeing this magic, Gongsun Ling’s eyes went wide. Although she was also a spell formation expert, seeing such an illusion spell, which didn’t reveal the slightest presence, astonished her.

She also cautiously followed behind Yang Chen and took a step forward, when the scenery in front of her suddenly changed

completely. She seemed to have reached a completely different region. On the side, Yang Chen was standing with a teasing smile on his face, as if just waiting to see her surprised expression.

“Awesome!”

Because she was also a spell formation expert, she could clearly see the difficulty of the illusion spell. Such a huge valley had been hidden completely by this spell and absolutely couldn't be discovered by anyone. Moreover, even if someone passed close to it, they wouldn't be even able to sense the existence of this illusion spell. The person who had laid such a spell was surely an expert.

“A senior of the sect used to cultivate here long ago.”

Yang Chen didn't hide anything from Gongsun Ling and directly took her to that senior's grave.

Seeing Yang Chen erect the stele, Gongsun Ling didn't show any surprise. She only paid her respects and, after finishing, turned to Yang Chen and exclaimed:

“No wonder people say you have heavenly luck. At the Heavenly Stairs, you weren't affected by the illusionary land, and then after entering the Immortal Falling Well you found Elder Wu, then you formed a relation with the Da Cheng stage expert of the Clear Sky Sect and now found such a tightly concealed region. From today, you have my complete trust. If you don't have heavenly luck, how would it be possible?”

In Gongsun Ling's opinion, Yang Chen certainly had found this place by accident, otherwise there was no way to explain this. At this moment, Yang Chen also hadn't intended to provide an explanation and since everyone knew about Yang Chen's luck, he might as well just also blame this on his luck!

It would take Gongsun Ling a very long time to research this illusionary spell, so after noting down the location, both of them returned to the Pure Yang Palace. Gongsun Ling was not someone who didn't listen to the advice of others. Since she had returned to the Pure Yang Palace after ten years, she at least had to fulfill the proper etiquette expected of a disciple.

Apart from that little inconvenience, this life was going quite smoothly for Yang Chen. The great calamity of devil cultivation had also ended properly, the second wood flying sword was also refined and everything was going according to Yang Chen's plans. His master's and Gongsun Ling's lives had been altered. Suddenly Yang Chen thought that all of the plotting he had to go through was completely worth it.

With carefree mood, Yang Chen began to calmly wait for the signal to take the sword out of the furnace, and at the same time also waited for Cheng Wencai to come and pay his debt.

At that time, Cheng Wencai was going mad with rage and just wanted to humiliate Yang Chen, so he had wantonly made the matter of bet public, but he hadn't thought that, if he ended up losing, the entire world would know that he would have to bow his head in front of Yang Chen and Gao Yue.

Just because he had made the matter too famous, the Greatest Heaven Sect could not settle it in private, even if it wanted to. The influence of the Greatest Heaven Sect was great, but it had also gained the resentment and envy of other sects, so how could they allow such a matter?

Previously the Pure Yang Palace had delayed the day of the kowtow because Yang Chen and Gao Yue were both in closed door training, which allowed the Greatest Heaven Sect to see some hope and were delighted towards Pure Yang Palace to allow them to see this path. In any case, the elders had decided that Cheng Wencai had to kowtow, but he could do it secretly.

What they hadn't anticipated was Elder Wu's ascension. The performance of the Heaven Seizing Pill had once again turned Yang Chen into a topic of discussion. As a result, many people also remembered that Cheng Wencai had lost the wager and many more people also heard of this matter for the first time, so the whole matter spread, bubbling and gurgling. Even if the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Pure Yang Palace wanted to keep it low-key, it wasn't possible.

The matter which could initially be solved by Cheng Wencai kowtowing in front of Yang Chen and Gao Yue in some secret corner now had to be done in a public place because of these groups of people.

Hearing this, Cheng Wencai immediately spat a mouthful of blood. In his entire life, he had never hated someone as much as Yang Chen. He had been forced to fall from the JieDan stage to the Foundation stage and now, because of Yang Chen, he was going to

lose all face in the cultivation world.

Cultivators respected heaven, earth and their master. They didn't even care about the ruler of heaven and earth, and would only kowtow before their master. Other than that, the only exception would sometimes be a dead person, to pay their respects. But a JieDan stage expert bowing their head to another sect's Foundation stage cultivator was something which had never been seen before.

If that Foundation stage cultivator's aptitude was inferior and he had grown older without any progress because of that, then it would not be so humiliating, but Yang Chen was a youngster, how could Cheng Wencai endure this?

However, he could only blame himself. If he had not been so arrogant at that time, then why would Yang Chen make such a bet with him?

But now that the matter had become so famous, it was beyond the control of Cheng Wencai and the Greatest Heaven Sect. Even if the Pure Yang Palace said that there was no need to honor the commitment, it was still impossible. Other people would definitely say that it was done under the pressure of the Greatest Heaven Sect, so the Greatest Heaven Sect could only make Cheng Wencai clear his own mess.

Cheng Wencai started his journey towards the Pure Yang Palace with the appearance of a warrior on his final battle, flames of anger burning through his heart.

This time's shame and humiliation could not be erased even if he cut Yang Chen and Gao Yue into ten thousand pieces. Under the eyes of the entire world, Cheng Wencai could not do anything, but he pledged within his heart, that, after this insult, he would definitely not let Yang Chen and Gao Yue remain alive.

# Chapter 175 - If You Want It, It's Not Impossible

---

Mad with rage, Cheng Wencai never thought that, if he had won the bet, he would not have let Yang Chen and Gao Yue off lightly. But he did not ponder over this much, just thinking that his humiliation could only be washed away by the death of the other party.

Yang Chen and Gao Yue hadn't expected that the matter would develop in such a way. Although Yang Chen detested Cheng Wencai, he only wanted him to apologise to his master. He wouldn't have made him kowtow to himself and put him in an embarrassing position in front of all those people, but Yang Chen also didn't dislike this situation. Cheng Wencai was the kind of person who, if not thought their lesson, wouldn't mend their arrogant ways.

In the domain of the Pure Yang Palace, the MeiQing Mountains, people were coming in from all directions, making the higher ups of the Pure Yang Palace very busy. Among the people rushing over, there were even YuanYing stage experts of many sects, making it necessary for Zhang Jiao to appear personally.

Everyone mixed together and began to wait for the disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect to come and honor his commitment, but they kept the conversation centered around the Heaven Seizing Pill.

Previously, when Elder Wu hadn't ascended, he had been completely silent about the matter, and fearing his strength nobody dared to ask him about it. In addition, nobody knew if the

Heaven Seizing Pill was effective or not. Everyone had only heard the news of it being refined, so who could say if it was useful? But now, when Elder Wu passed his tribulation so easily, everyone was surprised by the effectiveness of the Heaven Seizing Pill.

If not for Elder Wu's strength, their courage would have surely increased. Not only those sects which had a Da Cheng stage expert, but even those sects which didn't have any Da Cheng stage experts would have thought of obtaining it.

Need not speak of others, even the Greatest Heaven Sect was quite tempted by the Heaven Seizing Pill. Many elders had raised this issue, forcing Cheng Wencai to go and honor the commitment sincerely and gain the favorable opinion of Yang Chen and the Pure Yang Palace. The pressure from the higher ups of the Greatest Heaven Sect was also a part of the reason for Cheng Wencai coming to kowtow.

As Pure Yang Palace was a famous sect, had a Da Cheng stage expert and had also jointly fought with the other sects against the devil, even though they had very few losses, in the end it was also one of the dao sects, so they could not openly use any devious methods and could thus only use such a roundabout route.

When Cheng Wencai reached the Pure Yang Palace, he discovered, that the Pure Yang Palace had already allowed more than a thousand prestigious guests. After seeing this, Cheng Wencai immediately spat out a mouthful of blood. This was just the first hit, in the future he would have no face whatsoever among cultivators.



Originally he had thought it was just a small matter, but with so many people present, it wasn't going to end simply.

Although many people had assembled there, it was not because everyone wanted to see Cheng Wencai honoring his commitment. Most of them had just been using this as a pretense, but it still put Pure Yang Palace in a difficult position, as they didn't have enough seats for so many people. They immediately chose a sufficiently large area and afterwards built a high platform, so that all of them could have a good view. But the number of people could not be said to be small in any case.

“Why does it have to be like this?”

Seeing so many people, Gao Yue had become slightly timid. She had not yet become hostile with the Greatest Heaven Sect like in her last life and also hadn't become the hall master of the Fierce Yang Hall, so suddenly confronting so many people made her slightly nervous.

“What is not good here?”

Yang Chen, however, didn't care. It didn't matter to him if the ceremony was small scale or large. In any case, he was not in the wrong:

“In any case, we aren't the ones who have done anything wrong, so why should we be afraid?”

Although these words were true, people had many kinds of thoughts. Perhaps, after Cheng Wencai had kowtowed, someone could immediately make a fuss and turn the topic to the matter of the Heaven Seizing Pill.

“What if they bring up the Heaven Seizing Pill?”

Gao Yue was anxious about this, fearing that Yang Chen would get into trouble.

“If someone wants the Heaven Seizing Pill, then they should find the ingredients and take them to a pill concocting master who will refine it for them!”

Yang Chen replied while smiling:

“Wanting a Heaven Seizing Pill is not a crime? What do you say, master!”

This was quite reasonable, so Gao Yue immediately calmed down. Since Yang Chen had said so, apparently there was no need for her to get anxious. Seeing such chaos, she had just tensed up and needed to be calmed down a little, that’s all.

When Yang Chen and Gao Yue appeared at the center of the platform, Cheng Wencai was already waiting on the side. Looking at Yang Chen and Gao Yue walking over, veins bulged in Cheng Wencai’s eyes, appearing as if intending to come out. Yang Chen and Gao Yue had deliberately humiliated him in front of the entire

world. This hatred had to be repaid!

“Fellow Daoist Cheng, you must pay when you lose!”

Without caring for Cheng Wencai’s ashen expression or his bloodshot eyes, Yang Chen calmly said:

“Though, whether Fellow Daoist Cheng still recognizes this bet or not, that is another matter!”

“I admit my loss!”

Cheng Wencai didn’t want to admit it, but he had no other choice. On this platform, he could only gnash his teeth and agree.

“Good. Fellow Daoist Cheng is indeed honest, he admitted at once!”

Yang Chen continued with a smile:

“Fellow Daoist Cheng has made a bet with this junior that, as long as this junior can touch one hair on the devil Lin Chenghe’s head, senior will immediately lose. This junior has many witnesses that this junior had already touched a hair of Lin Chenghe, so this bet is senior Cheng’s loss and, since you have lost, you must complete your part of the wager!”

Cheng Wencai opened his blood red eyes and firmly stared at

Yang Chen for a good moment, then he snorted with hatred and was going to immediately bow his head to the ground. But before he could make the movement, he was promptly stopped by Yang Chen.

“Wait!”

Yang Chen quickly said. Cheng Wencai was stiffly fixed on the spot just about to kneel down, when his gaze full of hatred was raised again.

“At the time of making the bet with this junior, senior also included my master.”

Yang Chen smiled without caring for Cheng Wencai’s gaze, filled with bitter resentment:

“You must not forget about my master, so that senior doesn’t have to kowtow repeatedly, furthermore, also remember to admit your mistake!”

At that time, both sides had betted a kowtow and admitting their mistake so Yang Chen reminded him of that.

Sounds of teeth gnashing could be heard from Cheng Wencai’s mouth. His hands clenched tightly, blue veins bulging in his eyes, but he still didn’t say anything and could only stare hatefully at Yang Chen, who was requesting Gao Yue to come over. Both of them took a seat, side by side. What was most intolerable for

Cheng Wencai was that, after sitting down, Yang Chen still gestured for him to begin. This was simply insulting him to his face. If this could be tolerated then what couldn't?

But Cheng Wencai couldn't do anything other than bearing it, because he couldn't dare to provoke even a single visitor present on the scene. And this still didn't include the elders from his sect. Even if he was extremely angry, he didn't dare to offend so many people at the same time.

Dong!

Cheng Wencai put down his head on the ground and kowtowed in front of Yang Chen and Gao Yue, saying in a loud voice:

“Fellow Daoist Gao and Fellow Daoist Yang, I was in the wrong!”

“You really are a disciple of big sect whose words are of enormous weight!”

Just as Cheng Wencai kowtowed, Yang Chen immediately stood up and showered him in a series of praises.

The other party had already kowtowed, so giving such praise, which cost him nothing, he would naturally not hold back. But no matter how much praise he gave him, it would not wash away Cheng Wencai's humiliation, actually, the more he praised him, the more Cheng Wencai's resentment increased.

But what made Cheng Wencai almost spit blood was that he wished that only Yang Chen said those words, but the people in the surroundings actually also started saying such things. This was simply rubbing salt into his wound, making it ache even more.

Pu!

Finally, Cheng Wencai spat out all of the blood he had been choking on, which made him feel dizzy. A disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect who was waiting on the side rushed to support and assist him.

“This old man has a pill, a high grade yuan cultivation pill. It would be suitable for Fellow Daoist Cheng.”

Some great expert sitting on the platform immediately spoke and soon the pill floated towards Cheng Wencai, as if guided by an invisible wire and stopped at the edge of his mouth. The disciple supporting Cheng Wencai hastily turned it into powder, and fed it to him.

“Thinking of pills, this old man remembers something.”

After delivering the pill, the old man changed the topic to pills:

“A few days ago, Elder Wu ascended. It is said that he used the Heaven Seizing Pill. Fellow Daoist Yang, you participated in the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill, could you give some advice regarding it?”

The topic was changed very quickly, so quickly that, even before the palace master of the Pure Yang Palace, Zhong Jiao, and the group of elders couldn't interfere. The group of elders of the Pure Yang Palace was endlessly grieving in their heart.

“This junior was lucky!”

However Yang Chen had anticipated this:

“This junior was just fortunate enough to participate and had just refined some ingredients, so this junior absolutely doesn't dare to give any advice. But if you have some request for this junior, do not hesitate to ask. As long as this junior can accomplish it, this junior will not decline.”

Yang Chen's reply was straightforward and frank, but it also made the group of people feel satisfied in their heart. Although the old man who had asked the question hadn't got a definite answer, hearing Yang Chen's straightforward reply, he also couldn't help but feel exalted and hastily asked:

“What kind of secret method was used to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill?”

Once these words came out, everyone in the surroundings started cursing him in their hearts. Why had he been so anxious and hasty that he had even forgotten his manners? However, his question was something everyone wanted to ask, so nobody interfered and everyone was looking at Yang Chen, waiting for his reply.

Everyone was fervently gazing at Yang Chen, mostly that peak JieDan stage old man who had asked the question. He was so fiercely gazing at Yang Chen that his gaze could melt iron. But Yang Chen didn't panic, and as if he didn't sense the noiseless pressure from the surroundings, he took a step forward and was just about to open his mouth when he suddenly heard a cough.

“Cough cough!”

Pure Yang Palace' palace master Zhang Jiao coughed loudly and said to everyone:

“Everyone, Fellow Daoist Cheng from the Greatest Heaven Sect has already honored his commitment, so I would like to invite everyone to the guest residence to have some tea!”

The palace master had deliberately changed the topic, thinking that even the people of his Pure Yang Palace had not asked Yang Chen about the secret method of refining, so why should you all these unrelated people know?

“Palace Master, there is no need to be polite!”

Immediately someone laughed loudly and said:

“You have no need to worry, everyone here is just reminiscing and just wanted to hear you noble sect's Fellow Daoist Yang's story, but we do not dare to trouble Palace Master!”



This person immediately agreed to the Palace Master's proposal.

Although everyone had said polite words, nobody had the intention of giving up. Despite everyone being from a dao sect, who wouldn't drool over the Heaven Seizing Pill? For an ordinary man, treasuring a jade ring becomes a crime. This recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill was precisely the jade ring. Although everyone was irritated and anxious, they could not approach the matter directly, so they could only agree with a forced smile.

The Palace Master was very stressed. He knew the intention of these people, but if they forced Yang Chen to speak about the secret recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill within the territory of the Pure Yang Palace, what face would the Pure Yang Palace have? It wasn't even able to protect its disciple, so what kind dao sect would it be?

While the palace master and the other elders were consulting about the situation noiselessly through eye contact, Yang Chen opened his mouth:

“As a matter of fact, this recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill was found just by Elder Wu from some unknown location.”

Once Yang Chen opened his mouth, everyone's attention once again turned to Yang Chen. The palace master was thinking of saying something, but seeing the smile on Yang Chen's face, he suddenly calmed down for some reason. If Yang Chen had a card up his sleeve, surely he could solve the matter.

“But this pill recipe was actually incomplete.”

While Yang Chen was speaking, everyone had pricked their ears, fearing to miss even one word.

“On top of this, only the ingredients and the first half of the refining method were recorded, the later part of the refining method wasn’t recorded.”

Yang Chen continued:

“Then at that time, senior Deng Yi, senior He Lianyun, senior Zhu Peng and senior Fan Shan had discussed the specific refining method together with Elder Wu.”

“Since this junior’s cultivation, as well as experience, was limited, I had not participated in the later part of refining and have only refined some ingredients.”

While talking, Yang Chen had a smile on his face all along and calmly continued to speak:

“Frankly, this junior also wants to know the later part of refining. If everyone can find the ingredients, this junior is willing to participate in the refining again. But seniors must find senior Deng, senior He and senior Zhu first. This youngster really doesn’t know how to refine it.”

“We have heard that you were the one who had completed the final step, is that true?”

Some people believed this fact, some people didn't, so someone immediately asked to confirm.

“This junior has only refined an elixir at the end to restore the pill spirit. With everyone's help, if those seniors had already failed earlier, then this junior would have nothing left to try.”

Yang Chen explained with a smile.

Nobody present knew if it was true or not. In fact, after Elder Wu had ascended, the events from that time were spread outside in great detail. In fact, apart from the pill recipe, everyone had all the other details. Though it was not known that the people who had spread this were Elder Wu's servants, but in any case people, already knew.

Yang Chen's words were consistent with the information they had received, but everyone didn't want to let go so easily. They wanted to force Yang Chen to reveal the secret, so how could they cower that easily?

“Can Fellow Daoist Yang Chen tell us about this elixir which restored the pill spirit?”

Immediately someone calmly asked.

“Why not!”

Yang Chen said without the slightest hesitation, but it shocked everyone without end. Didn't this mean that they had succeeded without using any tricks? Even the palace master didn't know what kind of elixir Yang Chen was talking about.

“If seniors only want the elixir, then find me some ingredients and this junior can refine it.”

Yang Chen kept on smiling:

“Also if you want the pill recipe that is also not out of question.”

Everyone was looking at Yang Chen, waiting for him to continue.

“All the seniors here are reasonable people, so you all know if you want something, you must offer something in return!”

Yang Chen smiled and continued:

“This is a fair deal without any cheating!”

# Chapter 176 - You Can't Go Back On A Debt

---

Bang!

Yang Chen's words immediately gave rise to a lot of comments. Unexpectedly, such an important recipe could also be exchanged.

As for Yang Chen saying that he could refine it it was not anything strange. Yang Chen was a pill concocting master and a pill concocting master received a lot of requests to concoct pills for some payment. This was a common practice in the cultivation world. Only, nobody could guarantee success, and the ingredients were also invested by the requestor.

Speaking frankly, pill concocting masters used materials gathered by others to practice their skill and increase their experience while also earning some profit by selling the pill. This was not strange at all. All pill concocting masters followed this practice. Making the pill concocting master gather their own materials was simply wasting their precious time.

But regardless of what pill recipe it was, which sect it belonged to or which pill concocting master had it, they were all secrets which were never revealed to other people. The more important a pill recipe was, the more heavily it was guarded.

Yang Chen was surprisingly going to sell the pill recipe. This was simply beyond everyone's expectations. These were the ingredients of the Heaven Seizing Pill, so how could Yang Chen tell them to everyone so easily?

For those people who wanted the recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill, this was great news. Since it didn't require them to become hostile with the Pure Yang Palace, just as long as they paid the price. The only question was, with such precious pill ingredients, what kind of price would they have to pay?

“If you want this junior to prepare the pill, then you only have to arrange for the main ingredients, this junior can himself arrange for the support ingredients.”

Yang Chen waited for everyone to digest that news, only then did he calmly state his price

“The reward junior wants is not much, two first grade flames and perhaps a second grade flame.”

Two first grade flames and a second grade flame were not too precious and obtaining them was certainly easy. Yang Chen currently had the Geocentric Flame, which was a third grade flame, which also couldn't be consider as very precious, but it was still very difficult to obtain. As for the Real Sun Fire and Nanming Fire, they were quite high grade flames which could not be searched for and could only be found by luck.

The reason why he needed so many low level flames was for the Profound Spirit Furnace. The increase in grade of the Profound Spirit Furnace didn't depend upon the grade of the flame, but rather on the number of flames it absorbed. Since low level flames were easy to obtain, Yang Chen didn't want to miss out on the

opportunity to obtain some.

“What are the main ingredient?”

Someone immediately asked. This kind of price could be easily produced by anyone. Even if they did not have it on them right now, it would just take them one trip back to obtain it.

“Seniors can use any kind of inner dan of a demon beasts by converting it into fine powder.”

Yang Chen quickly replied:

“There is no need to use many of them, just one or two would be sufficient.”

Once Yang Chen said the words inner dan, immediately the complexions of many people changed, but after hearing that only one or two were needed, most of the people were relieved. Since not many inner dans were needed then it was obtainable.

However, most of the people were interested in the pill recipe, so immediately one of them asked:

“Then in case we want the pill recipe, what kind of price will we have to pay?”

“That is also simple.”

Yang Chen extended a finger beaming with smiles:

“One third grade flame in exchange for a type of pill recipe. If you have even more higher grade flame then in proportions acceptable to everyone, you can obtain more parts.”

A third grade flame was not a difficult matter for the people present, but the problem was that Yang Chen was so conveniently delivering the pill recipe, moreover he was exchanging a deadly third grade flame with a type of pill recipe, so could there still be more than one type of pill recipe?

“What do you mean? Is there more than one copy of the pill recipe?”

People who wanted the pill recipe had become even more anxious so without caring for their identity or status, they immediately blurted out. Once this question was asked, everyone’s gazes turned towards Yang Chen.

“Seniors, the Heaven Seizing Pill uses a pill spirit and so far, although a particular pill recipe doesn’t work in all cases, as long as the cultivation crosses the mark, it will do.”

Yang Chen laughed and continued with his explanation:

“But, sometimes a different pill spirits contains different characteristics, so some adjustment is needed in the original recipe



and refining. This junior doesn't know about refining skills, but just for restoring the pill spirit, it is a reasonable argument."

"Sometimes the pill spirit contains poison as their internal dan is highly toxic. To take care of this, we first need to neutralize the poison otherwise once it enters the Heaven Seizing Pill, it rather becomes a life seizing pill."

Under the avaricious gaze of countless people, Yang Chen didn't have the slightest amount of nervousness:

"Some have cold properties, some have heating properties, so by all means not all pill recipes can be the same."

"In addition, when we had refined the pill recipe the last time, the spirit energy of the pill spirit was completely drained, which made it weaker in health. The methods which made it weaker were many, some would wound it, some would damage it, some would poison it, some would create an inherent deficiency in it."

Speaking until there, without caring for the expressions of the people present:

"Different methods require different tricks and the ingredients are also completely different."

"Therefore, on top of restoring the pill spirit, there are still some types of combinations which this junior is not very clear about."

Yang Chen waved his hands:

“With regards to this, even this junior knows more than a thousand type of appearances. If any of you seniors is interested that, they can buy all types with just the price of a seventh grade flame.”

Yang Chen words were really casual. A seventh grade flame, make no mistake, was, according to preciousness equal to a thousand third grade flames. But the question was: was a seventh grade flame that easily acquired? Even the Real Sun Fire and Real Moon Fire were only sixth grade flames. As for a seventh grade flame, only the Real Pure Yang Fire, which was treasured by successive generations of the Pure Yang Palace could be considered as one.

Nobody except idiots would agree to this. A third grade flame in exchange for a type, this was still not too extravagant, but it would supposedly only focus on one type of pill spirit, moreover it would still fix one of the deficiencies of the pill spirit, thinking of this, everyone consented, seemingly believing Yang Chen.

The group of people looked at each other in dismay, but the Palace Master Zhong Jiao of the Pure Yang Palace revealed a smile. Yang Chen's this trick was indeed an effortless victory and the people who wanted the pill recipe were indeed at their wits end. Really brilliant. This disciple Yang Chen, although he was of a very young age, he was quite slick.

Under these circumstances, if someone used force, he would indeed be the Pure Yang Palace's enemy and, although Pure Yang

Palace was a second rate sect, it was a second rate sect with a Da Cheng stage expert, so it was not afraid to pick a fight.

“Then can’t it be bought on credit?”

Within the crowd, a questioning voice spread outside, filled with a hint of menace.

“Naturally you can.”

Yang Chen turned towards the direction of the voice and said with a large smile spread across his face:

“If you want to buy on credit, you can, as long as you pay your debt on time. Otherwise this junior cannot guarantee if some apparently insignificant ingredients were not mixed up, making it a life seizing pill instead of a heaven seizing pill!”

Although Yang Chen had answered with a smile, it was a severe strike against the menacing voice and at the same time also a serious warning towards anyone having devious plans.

If they did not adhere to Yang Chen’s way, then the pill recipe could certainly not be obtained completely. In this world, there wasn’t anyone who could make Yang Chen confess against his wishes. He had endured the Ruining Immortal Absolute Devil Hand in the Heavenly Court for countless years, what else could these people do to him which would be more intolerable than that?

Yang Chen cared even less about the people who intended to use the method of Mo Qian. After the incident with Mo Qian, Yang Chen was eager to meet such people, maybe he could even obtain some YuanYing or Da Cheng stage expert puppets. They would be much more powerful than the spell formation of the Mo Qian's five disciples.

And this was just talking about Yang Chen himself and not counting the Pure Yang Palace which stood behind Yang Chen. There was almost no need to say that the Pure Yang Palace was ready to get exterminated defending a disciple who had produced so many benefits for the sect, the people wishing to use devious tricks also had to think about those troublesome and grave consequences.

“Naturally, if a senior really decides to renege on the debt, then this junior would indeed not mind using a complete pill recipe to exchange for an expert to retrieve senior's head.”

After everyone heard this line, they all felt a fear of death within their hearts.

For just an incomplete pill recipe, not only would they have to worry about the Pure Yang Palace' revenge, but they would also have to remain on guard for some unpredictable expert who was coming to kill them, at all times. Paying such a price for an incomplete pill recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill was indeed not worth the cost.

In any case, restoring the pill spirit's pill medicine, they could request Yang Chen to refine it for them, as long as they could find

the principal ingredient and pay the price of a second grade flame, why would they have to go through such tricks? Moreover, even if they had the pill recipe, where would they find a pill master to refine it? Why not use Yang Chen, who was already available and also had the experience?

After weighing all pros and cons, everyone had immediately made the decision. Even if there was someone who still had some ideas, they didn't dare to reveal themselves.

The farce which had dragged everyone to the Pure Yang Palace had been resolved so lightly by Yang Chen, now all of the hosts and guests present were happy, making the environment warm and affable much unlike the invisible hostility earlier. Since everyone had come to a decision, there was no need to create any more trouble over this. In any case the time when they would require a Heaven Seizing Pill was quite far off, moreover obtaining those pill ingredients was also not easy, so there was no need to reveal their intentions this early.

The subject then again turned to Cheng Wencai. Some people who were getting bored and began to discuss the bet's odds in favour or against of Cheng Wencai when it was made.

Cheng Wencai who had just woken up after being supported by some disciple, once again spat out blood hearing this conversation. Those few disciples did not dare to remain there anymore and hurriedly left, carrying their master. Seeing him spit up blood, many people joked about the amount of blood his body held, if he had remained there any longer.

Some intelligent people quickly went to Yang Chen's side to hear about some recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill without requesting for any kind of pill spirit, but actually, while refining, the process should be treated differently in accordance with a different pill spirit. This point was very important.

Using the same process for all pill spirits was just impossible. It had to be known that the pill spirit was formed of the yuan ling of a Da Cheng stage demon beast. Catching one was already difficult, furthermore there was one more problem: finding it was more than ten times more difficult than looking for a needle in a haystack. At least, when looking for a needle in a haystack, it could still be found, but finding a Da Cheng stage expert was even harder.

The reason why a Heaven Seizing Pill was hard to refine was because only Heaven Seizing Pill's creator and his family knew about the recipe until it fell into the hands of Elder Wu. Other people who had tried had failed.

At the moment it seemed that it was not the ingredients that were hard to find, nor was it the refining that was difficult. The highest probability of encountering a problem was when nobody considered the many different circumstances.

Although nobody knew the details at the time when Deng Yiya, Zhu Peng and He Lianyun had refined the pill, the first failure at the time of the refining was not because their level was low, but because they hadn't considered the different circumstances in such a situation.

Since that had happened, Yang Chen had used an elixir to restore the pill spirit after considering the different methods to deal with the pill spirit, which had allowed the pill spirit to have an unexpected recovery. According to the details, it had to be known that the Heaven Seizing Pill was only refined again from the ashes of the furnace.

Hearing about this, the intelligent people looked at Yang Chen with a different gaze. Moreover, many people also began to guess if the reason why the Pure Yang Palace had established the Eccentric Hall was to pile up pill spirits for demon spirits. A Da Cheng stage demon beast was very hard to come by, but would they really give up their sects' strength for this? Moreover, hadn't they already recruited a Da Cheng stage demon beast as the hall master of the Eccentric Hall?

Once they realized all this, someone was immediately unable to remain seated anymore and stood up. The hurriedly moving silhouette made everyone look at each other in dismay. Nobody had any idea what their fellow companions were thinking.

But very quickly, more and more people thought about various possibilities and began to say their goodbyes to the Pure Yang Palace, which led to all of the thousand visitors vanishing in a very short time.

Palace Master Zong Jiao had also thought about those possibilities and wrinkled his brows. But Yang Chen didn't say anything and directly went to the Eccentric Hall where demon beasts were staying together with Gao Yue and his grand master.

“Don’t you think you owe us an explanation?”

Although She Kui and Xie Sha were a bit slow to realize, Gui Shanyou who had already thought about it was sitting in the room, waiting for Yang Chen.

“What kind of explanation?”

Yang Chen wasn’t concerned in the least and directly went to sit in front of him:

“The Heaven Seizing Pill isn’t the only way to ascend, it is really not worthwhile to use such a harmful method.”

While speaking, Yang Chen lead Gui Shanyou to enter the Medicine Garden and then immediately followed after him. The old tree demon only had a little sensation, and immediately looked at the forest of Penglai Divine Wood, each tree was long and was thick enough for an arm to wrap around. The sensation of the divine wood was extremely pure and unadulterated which shocked the old tree demon who was then immediately moved by Yang Chen to come out.

“My great master already possesses a Qilin’s horn and is refining a destined flying sword out of it, do you still think he requires the help of a Heaven Seizing Pill to ascend?”

In order to pacify the old tree demon, Yang Chen had to leak some of his secret:



“Besides, even Elder Wu didn’t use the Heaven Seizing Pill, what are you making a fuss about?”

After looking at that forest of Penglai Divine Wood and then after seeing Wang Yong take out the Qilin’s horn, what kind of doubt could the old tree demon have? He immediately burst out laughing.

“Let this old man think about it.”

The old tree demon was a person who accepted when he was in the wrong and immediately admitted his error:

“This old man was wrong and admits his mistake.”

Without waiting for anyone to say anything, the old tree demon already started talking:

“Be relieved, this old man will continue to remain in the Eccentric Hall, but at the time of this old man’s ascension, I will have to trouble you Yang Chen!”

Once they heard these words, Wang Yong and Gao Yue both were greatly intimidated.

# Chapter 177 - That Comforting Moment

---

Before anyone could say anything, Yang Chen had already pacified the situation with the Da Cheng stage, old tree demon? Moreover, what did he just say? Requesting Yang Chen at the time of his ascension?

Although Yang Chen had given a Heaven Seizing Pill to Wang Yong, this kind of a thing could only be found accidentally, not sought at will. How could he possibly have so many things that could be given away as gifts? Moreover, Yang Chen was but a foundation-stage expert, and the old tree demon actually wanted to rely on him to ascend? Naturally, this could scare anyone.

Although Yang Chen had defied their limits again and again, when a genuine Da Cheng stage expert asked so earnestly for help, they were still a bit intimidated.

In the end, what had Yang Chen shown Gui Shanyou that made the Da Cheng expert feel so confident that Yang Chen could help him in ascending? Although both of them were curious, they didn't investigate closely. This disciple, Yang Chen, had so many secrets that sometimes it was just better not to know.

Palace Master Zhang Jiao had relatively too many matters at his hands. Only after he had sent off all the visitors did he hurry over here to the old tree demon's place and saw this peaceful scene.

“Palace Master need not be anxious.”

Gui Shanyou was gently caressing his beard as he said with a smile:

“We trust that our Pure Yang Palace won’t use such despicable methods.”

Hearing this, the Palace Master heaved a long sigh of relief. They had coaxed a Da Cheng stage expert to join with such great difficulty. If because of this guess, their Eccentric Hall’s experts felt doubt towards Pure Yang Palace, that would indeed not be good. So currently, hearing such words from the old tree demon had calmed down Palace Master Zhang Jiao’s heart.

Looking at Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Wang Yong present on the scene, Palace Master didn’t have to ask a word to know that this surely had some connection with Yang Chen. Although he didn’t know what Yang Chen had said to old tree demon, the trust crisis had evidently been solved.

This opportunity had not only allowed Cheng Wencai to honor the commitment, but had also peacefully averted a hidden crises. Now all those visitors had clearly realized that either they could obtain the pill recipe in a fair exchange or they could hire Yang Chen to refine it. Otherwise, obtaining a complete pill recipe was almost impossible.

Excluding the other factors, even Pure Yang Palace wouldn’t have consented in the first place. It was a secret recipe of the sect. Why should other people be able to obtain it? If those people really wanted to use some inappropriate means today, then becoming hostile with Pure Yang Palace couldn’t have been avoided.

Fortunately, Yang Chen had dealt with it appropriately which had saved any such thing from happening. If it had truly become the issue of their face, today, Pure Yang Palace would have been filled with corpses.

As for Yang Chen, he had only helped in restoring the pill spirit, which didn't amount to much. However, in exchange for that, he could obtain even more flames, which would be a great benefit for him. After all, apart from increasing the grade of a Profound Spirit Furnace, Yang Chen was also a fire-attributed cultivator. The more flames he could access, the more he would benefit.

Currently, Yang Chen had three kind of flames; the Nanming fire left behind by Scarface, the Real Sun Fire which had already been absorbed by Profound Spirit Furnace, as well as the Pure Yang Fire which was greatly treasured by the sect. However, regardless of whatever type of flame it was, Yang Chen could not absorb any of them presently.

However, this had also reminded Yang Chen that although he couldn't absorb the Nanming Flame, the Profound Spirit Furnace could be promoted by one grade by absorbing it. Moreover, it was also the perfect place to safeguard the Nan Ching fire.

The flying sword, which was to be refined by Gao Yue, was already at the last stage. After hearing this, Wang Yong personally went there and refined it together with Gao Yue. Both master and disciple thought for a long time about his sword-trying to refine it so that it could become Yang Chen's destined flying sword. More than half of the good ingredients in possession of Yang Chen ended up being used in the process.

This flying sword had already become the topic of discussion among majority of people in the Pure Yang Palace. Many people envied Yang Chen's good fortune to have such a great tool refining master and great master, and himself being good at refining as well.

Many people also objected to this. Although for a foundation stage disciple, a flying sword needs to be made diligently, there was no need for so much fanfare, but since this was a reward from the Palace Master, what could others have said?

Besides, neither Gao Yue, nor Wang Yong, nor Yang Chen cared for such people. A master was refining a flying sword for her own disciple, who could argue against that.

Since Wang Yong had also joined in, Yang Chen's flying sword would at most take a few more months. How could Yang Chen not be willing for this. In his heart, he was more than happy to stay at Nine Earth Manor. After giving pointers to outer disciples again, he finally decided to use this free time to store the Nan Ching fire in the Profound Spirit Furnace.

Nanming fire was on the same level as Real Sun Fire and was extremely formidable. Regardless of whether it was the Nanming fire flying sword or the Nanming fire armor, both were certainly tyrannical magical weapons. However, now the Nanming fire would also become a flame absorbed by Profound Spirit Furnace.

The process of absorption was slightly more complicated than

that of Real Sun Fire. After all in his previous life, Yang Chen possessed the Real Sun Fire. As such, he was extremely familiar with its nature. However, in this life, he had come in contact with the Nanming Flame for the first time, so some caution was necessary.

The process was nevertheless quite similar to the previous one—controlling the Profound Spirit Furnace to refine and absorb Nanming flame's source trace by trace. Since it had already absorbed the Real Sun Fire, the Profound Spirit Furnace was more than ready to support the Nanming fire, which made Yang Chen's worries vanish into air like smoke.

Naturally, Yang Chen did not forget to use the Profound Green Metal Crystal to absorb the formidable strength of Nanming flame to allow the Profound Spirit Furnace to safely absorb the Nanming flame. Moreover, during the process, Yang Chen also used some tool refining tricks and some of the Profound Green Metal Crystal to clear some deficiencies within the Profound Spirit Furnace.

So far, one tenth of the Profound Green Metal Crystal had already been added to the Profound Spirit Furnace. This time, Yang Chen again added roughly another one tenth—the whole furnace seemed to have been filled up by the Profound Green Metal Crystal, revealing a hint of green colour. With just one look, anyone could tell that it was a high grade object.

After continuing for three months, all the traces of Nanming fire had finally been absorbed by Yang Chen into the Profound Spirit Furnace. This also implied that the Profound Spirit Furnace again had another famous flame, and thus, its grade had also increased

substantially. At the same time, this also meant that Yang Chen could refine even higher grade pills now.

Naturally, this 'even higher grade pills' didn't mean that a third grade pill could be turned into a fourth grade pill, but those pills which Yang Chen couldn't refine previously because of his low strength and lack of flames could also be refined like the yin and yang nature pill, which could increase the probability of congealing dan in a foundation stage cultivator like the foundation stage pill was used by qi layer cultivators..

Perhaps, after some time, he could refine the yin and yang nature pill and convince even more people of Pure Yang Palace to come over to his side.

However, compared to refining pills, currently, Yang Chen was looking forward to two more matters more-first was Gao Yue and Wang Yong to refine his flying sword, second was to become the master of Nan Ching fire.

The Nanming fire was of the third fire attribute, same as the Real Sun Fire. Different flames could fuse with each other. Although Yang Chen presently hadn't genuinely absorbed the Nanming flame and Real Sun Fire in his own body, but if the third fire spirit power could be passed through burning by Nanming fire, maybe it will gain some presence of Nanming fire.

Yang Chen had also used this method with the Real Sun Fire. At that time, his third fire spirit power had increased rapidly, reaching the foundation stage as the consequence.

Presently, Yang Chen was at the foundation stage. Although it might not have the same effect, but tempering the spirit power will certainly be beneficial for him. Yang Chen had always been waiting for such a time, and thus, had not done this immediately after the great calamity of devil cultivation, waiting until he had properly consolidated his realm and was at the bottleneck to use it for breakthrough.

The third fire spirit power, which had already been tempered once by Real Sun Fire, would again be needed to be tempered through Nanming fire which would be extremely painful. Afterwards, the grade wouldn't further increase by much either. After all, the fire was still of the same grade. But there was another benefit which Yang Chen was eagerly expecting.

Since Real Sun Fire was able to form a false picture within the Spirit Sea, then the Nanming Fire should also be similarly able to form a false picture within the spirit sea, creating a golden coloured bright flame. Raging and occupying some corner on the surface formed of fifth earth, creating a triangle with the Real Sun Fire above and the Geocentric Fire underground.

The spiritual awareness which had declined during the pair cultivation with Gao Yue had again began to condense crazily at this moment, as if indicating another breakthrough. Even the spiritual sea began to give birth to some minute transformations in itself.

The entire formation of spirit sea had began to congeal increasingly, as if it was being compacted by a huge ramming



force. The spiritual awareness had again restored itself back to the level where it was before saving Gao Yue. However, what was outside Yang Chen's expectation was that the spiritual awareness itself hadn't broken through from peak JieDan stage to initial YuanYing stage, but was further consolidated in this realm

The spiritual awareness was greatly condensed but did not upgrade, causing slight disappointment to Yang Chen. However, the spirit power cultivation had also transformed, which gave him one more pleasant surprise.

After the third spirit power had been completely refined by Nanming flame, it broke through from second foundation and reached third foundation stage directly.

Because of the five phases engendering each other, the increase in cultivation of third spirit power had again spurred the other spirit powers to upgrade, like the last time when he had reached foundation stage. Apart from the second wood and third fire spirit powers, the other eight types of spirit power were just like dominoes, crazily upgrading because of the reaction from third fire spirit power.

While Yang Chen was laughing delightedly, the Yin and Yang five secrets had completely been upgraded from the second layer of foundation stage to the third layer of foundation stage, completely entering the third layer boundary.

Completing all this had already taken two months, which made Yang Chen anxious since the master and great master still hadn't completed the refining of the flying sword. This made Yang Chen

both eager and nervous.

Eager that the pleasant scene from the previous life would appear again and nervous that because of his rebirth, there had been many changes, so the scene might not appear again. Thinking about this, he thought of the devil Lin Chenghe's death to comfort himself. He even had to choose only that particular tree where Yang Chen had inserted his sword to escape, so with such good fortune, the Bright Ray Sword will appear again, definitely!

Yang Chen anxious waiting for three more months before he finally couldn't deal with it anymore and flew directly to the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

After reaching the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, Yang Chen grew even more nervous and walked slowly to Gao Yue's place and lightly knocked her door. Hearing the soft voice of master, allowing him to enter, he restlessly walked in.

Gao Yue was present alone, and great master Wang Yong had already left, possibly to refine the Qilin's horn into his destined flying sword. When Yang Chen came in, Gao Yue didn't stand up to welcome him, but remain seated by a stone table standing below a tree in her courtyard, drinking tea.

At this moment, Yang Chen did not know what to say, should he ask for the flying sword from his master? He wasn't able to hide the impatience in his face. Since he did not dare to say anything, his appearance became a little awkward, which happened very rarely.

“Did you hear that the flying sword had already been refined?”

Looking at Yang Chen’s expression, Gao Yue was astonished, and at the same time, also found it quite funny. At this moment, Yang Chen seemed like a child who had never grown up.

“Master!”

Yang Chen didn’t dare to deny or accept it, only kept on looking fervently at Gao Yue.

Gao Yue put down her tea cup and glanced at Yang Chen with a teasing smile and then grabbed her qiankun pouch and opened it.

Yang Chen’s heart was gripped at this moment, feeling so nervous that he didn’t dare say anything. Remembering all the memories, perhaps it would again happen before his eyes, perhaps it wouldn’t.

A dark red flying sword appeared above Gao Yue’s hand, Gao Yue only used two fingers to push the sword blade. It did a turnaround before rushing towards Yang Chen.

“Yang Chen, this is the Bright Ray Sword which I have specially created for you. You should use it carefully and practice your cultivation even more diligently!”

Master's beautiful voice seemed to coming down from heaven.

Yang Chen didn't care much about the appearance of the flying sword, at this moment, if Gao Yue had even given him a branch of tree, Yang Chen would still have accepted it like a treasure. After all, this flying sword had made his master go through a near death experience as well as costed her several years of refining process.

A thick fog appeared in his eyes and then turned into tears flowing down his face. Yang Chen's mouth of choked with emotions:

“Master!”

After saying this, he turned speechless.

Countless years of hope and expectation have again been fulfilled at this point. For this one moment, Yang Chen was ready to sacrifice any happiness in his life.

He wasn't even aware of which of the blade's sides had he caught. The edge of the flying sword had already created a huge cut in Yang Chen's hand through which the blood was flowing out. But Yang Chen seemed to have not sensed anything and kept holding the blade like a fool with tears streaking across his face.

He felt so delighted that tears appeared on his face.

# Chapter 178 - I Offered A Better One, But You Didn't Accept

---

Gao Yue was completely unable to figure out why Yang Chen had such an extreme reaction. Thinking back, this kind of scene had happened once before, when Yang Chen had formally become her disciple.

At first, Gao Yue had thought that Yang Chen was extremely happy receiving the flying sword and thus couldn't control his emotions, but as it happened, she noticed that he hadn't even looked at the sword, he just kept holding the sword's edge and shed tears.

Fortunately, this situation didn't last for long, only for a few moments, before the pain from the cut by the sword woke him up. Facing Gao Yue with a face full of tears had put him in an awkward position. Finally, with her help, Yang Chen's hand was healed.

Only now did Yang Chen pay attention to the Bright Ray sword, refined in cooperation by Gao Yue and Wang Yong.

The Bright Ray sword was approximately five foot long, with a fine silver colored hilt and an extremely long, double edged blade. The dark red body of the sword was completely covered with sealing formations. One could sense an extremely hot burning sensation just by holding it.

Yang Chen also wasn't polite and immediately used his spiritual awareness to mark it in front of Gao Yue. This was the genuine

way to obtain a sword. After marking it, Yang Chen began to move his spirit power into the sword to test its formidable strength.

Bang!

A formless fire began to rise from the sword! Anyone looking at this dark golden fire would feel a painful burning sensation. Soon afterwards, Yang Chen threw a piece of hard metal into the sky and slashed at it once with the sword. The metal in the sky was immediately separated into two parts. The cut was extremely smooth, as if the piece of the metal was the surface of a mirror. Within a moment, the piece of metal turned into molten liquid and fell to the ground. This had clearly demonstrated the strength of the dark golden flame.

“Perfect!”

Yang Chen could magnify his magic weapons in his spirit sea at any time, but even after magnifying the sword many times, he couldn't find any clear flaw. There were only some defects which couldn't be blamed on the refining skill, because they were caused by the quality of the material. From designing to refining, this Bright Ray Sword could be said to be almost perfect.

“Anyone who uses it can see how much time was spent on it!”

Hearing Yang Chen's evaluation, Gao Yue's eyebrows were raised in delight, replying without modesty:

“The main ingredient used in this was the Red Sun Metal Soul and many other high level ingredients. It can be certainly be treated as destined flying sword, and it can also be upgraded without any limit.”

The masterpiece created by Gao Yue and Wang Yong, these two great tool refining masters was certainly not an ordinary magic weapon, Gao Yue also had confidence in this fact. Even her request to Yang Chen to make it his own destined magic weapon was also sincere, as from the beginning she had intended to manufacture something which could be used as one. Naturally, upgrading it right now was not possible, but when he reaches YuanYing stage, he can again began to refine it.

Although she was feeling proud with herself, Gao Yue didn't get carried away and pointed at Yang Chen while saying:

“Strictly speaking, this bright Ray Sword can only be considered as a sword embryo right now, and not a full fledged flying sword. You can refine it anyway you like in the future. This master only leads you to the door, the rest is up to you.”

How could Yang Chen refuse anything Gao Yue was saying at the moment? He kept nodding his head to everything, like a son listening to his mother.

Looking at Yang Chen's appearance, Gao Yue lost all intentions of bragging. Stretching her hand, she extended her lily white hands towards Yang Chen and said:

“Give it to me!”

“What?”

Yang Chen was startled and hastily asked.

“You promised to find a water attributed cultivation for me.”

Gao Yue looked at Yang Chen’s puzzled face and said with a smile:

“Since you agreed, you have to bring it. I am cultivating this water attributed cultivation for the first time only for you!”

Yang Chen was extremely surprised again and with lightning speed he took out a good water attributed cultivation method, which he had selected long ago. It contained everything from laying the foundation to advanced stages of cultivation, as well as also giving her a bottle full of water attributed spirit pills to help her in cultivation.

“These things are not needed for the time being!”

Looking at those spirit pills, Gao Yue wrinkled her brows and shook her head:

“Didn’t you say that one cannot reach his destination by being hasty? And that, moreover, using such things was not good?”



“As master says!”

Yang Chen hastily withdrew those things. In any case, Gao Yue had a spiritual awareness at the peak of the JieDan stage, and she was furthermore endowed with a postnatal full water attributed spirit root. When she would cultivate to the qi layer of the water attributed cultivation method, the speed of her cultivation would definitely astonish anyone. These spirit pills were of no use to her.

“Good! You can return to your duties as the Merit Transferring Disciple now!”

Gao Yue waved towards Yang Chen, indicating him to leave:

“If I have any problems regarding cultivation, I will come to you, Merit Transferring Disciple, for guidance!”

Hearing these words, Yang Chen didn't know how to react and gloomily walked away. While Looking at Yang Chen's departing figure, she remembered Yang Chen's excitement when he had held the Bright Ray sword and Gao Yue felt a feeling of warmth rise in her.

But Gao Yue was also a little scared, fearing about getting more and more foolish ideas about getting together with her disciple, therefore she had made Yang Chen leave so quickly. But she hadn't thought that she had driven away Yang Chen this time. Last time also she had shooed away Yang Chen, but how would she be able to drive away the Yang Chen in her heart?

Yang Chen absolutely hadn't noticed the anomaly in Gao Yue, his mind was still fixated on the moment when he had received the Bright Ray Sword, replaying that moment again and again, without noticing anything in the surroundings.

The happiness in his heart continued to increase, like the Blood Phantom Vine which would grow like crazy after germinating from the root. He didn't even use his flying sword on the way home from the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard to the Nine Earth Manor, choosing to walk the entire way.

He kept holding the Bright Ray Sword tightly within his hands, not even willing to put it into his Qiankun Pouch, as if he was holding the Jade Emperor's ruler seal. At this time, even if someone used Lu Dongbin's Pure Yang Sword to exchange for the Bright Ray Sword, Yang Chen wouldn't be willing.

Yang Chen kept walking in such ecstasy for an unknown amount of time. Even when he found someone to ask the way, he kept on smiling and said:

“Who are you?”

“Under such circumstances, fellow disciple Yang has still surprisingly discovered me, you do indeed have some skill.”

Along with Yang Chen's question, a person appeared in front of him: Luminous Moon Hall's disciple, Guang Zhu, who kept his attention focused on the flying sword in Yang Chen's hand and

asked with a smile:

“The flying sword in your hand, isn’t that the one refined by Wang Yong and Gao Yue for you? What a perfect timing, this fellow disciple of your’s doesn’t have a suitable flying sword, would you be willing to forsake it?”

“Senior apprentice brother Guang, you are water attributed, this Bright Ray Sword... Of what use could it be to you?”

Looking at Guang Zhu who had suddenly appeared in front of him, Yang Chen sneered within his heart.

However, today Yang Chen’s mood was too good, looking at Guang Zhu standing in front of him, he couldn’t help but say:

“Today, my mood is good, senior apprentice brother Guang, do you lack a flying sword? I will present you with a water attributed one.”

“Younger apprentice brother Yang, let this senior apprentice brother take a look at the sword in your hand!”

Guang Zhu sneered and took two steps forward and said sinisterly:

“Younger apprentice brother Yang must still part with it and allow this senior apprentice brother to have it!”

Yang Chen didn't know what to say in front of Guang Zhu's reckless actions. Perhaps, this Bright Ray Sword made by Gao Yue and Wang Yong would indeed tempt people greatly and thus even the water attributed disciple of the Luminous Moon Hall had come to steal it.

Since that warm moment had happened again, his mood was really good, so much so that he was even willing to part with a flying sword to get rid of their differences. In any case, Yang Chen's sword box had no lack of flying swords.

But, this idiot Guang Zhu standing in front of him was wantonly spoiling his good mood, perhaps what he wanted was to confront an angry Yang Chen after his mood had been spoiled.

"You have just reached the Foundation stage not too long ago and your master has already gifted you such a high grade flying sword!"

Guang Zhu's entire face was filled with jealousy:

"You are just an initial Foundation stage disciple, such good sword is of no use to you also, so why not give it senior apprentice brother and help him!"

"Senior Apprentice Brother Guang has a water attributed cultivation, what use would a fire attributed flying sword be of to you?"

Yang Chen sneered, but rage had already accumulated within his heart.

“Although I cannot use it, I can exchange it for another water attributed flying sword of equal grade!”

With the expression of a shopkeeper, he shamelessly boasted:

“Younger apprentice brother Yang, you giving me this sword will also gain you the reputation of being selfless, I will spread this news in your place.”

“Are you sure that you don’t want the flying sword I am gifting to you and only want this Bright Ray Sword?”

Yang Chen’s eyes had turned red in anger, but he still asked to confirm once.

“Indeed!”

Guang Zhu arrogantly nodded:

“You must not think that, since you have won the life and death duel against Li Qingchen, that you can be arrogant in front of me. I do not mind teaching you my ferociousness.”

“You dare to say a lot, isn’t it just because of the seven people

hidden nearby?”

Yang Chen sneered and exposed Guang Zhu’s plan in a loud voice.

“Ha ha ha! Youngster, you are surprisingly vigilant to be able to discover all of us.”

With a impudent smile, seven people with covered faces appeared from the surroundings in front of Yang Chen. All of them were at the Foundation stage, with the worst at the mid Foundation stage and the most powerful at the peak Foundation stage. The others, including Guang Zhu, were all at the late Foundation stage.

“If you know what’s good for you, obediently hand over the Bright Ray Sword to us!”

Guang Zhu took a step forward, laughing nastily:

“Otherwise, don’t blame us for being rude!”

“Today, my mood is very good, I do not want to kill people!”

How could Yang Chen be threatened by Guang Zhu? He said with a sneer:

“If you and your masked friends leave right now, I will treat it as

if this matter had never happened.”

Yang Chen did not want to spill blood and destroy his good mood, so he went out of his way to give Guang Zhu a path for survival.

Hearing Yang Chen’s words, everyone in front of him began to look at each other as if something funny had happened and suddenly the place was filled with roars of laughter.

“A Foundation stage youngster, who do you think you are? Since you killed that devil Lin by a fluke, do you think you are unparalleled?”

A masked person could not help himself and started mocking Yang Chen, making the others again burst into laughter again.

“Heaven gave you a way, but you decided not to walk it. Hell didn’t have any door, yet you want to burst in!”

Yang Chen’s eyes shone. Confronting such people, who were courting death, how long could Yang Chen endure? Since they could not come to an agreement, he prepared to attack:

“For every grievance someone is responsible, for every debt there is debtor! Since you have all intended to steal my Bright Ray Sword, don’t let your deaths be a surprise!”

The Bright Ray Sword dazzled once and disappeared in Yang

Chen's hand. He wanted to still enjoy the beautiful sensation of the Bright Ray Sword, so naturally he stored it properly within the Achievement Ring. He didn't want the Bright Ray Sword to be sullied by the blood of these people, they did not deserve it!

The Blood Phantom Vine flying sword secretly flew out from Yang Chen's body like a long black dragon and passed through the throat of the person who was laughing the loudest, but didn't leave any blood stain.

The loud laughter immediately came to an end, but just as those people took out their flying swords, two people were already pierced through by Yang Chen's flying sword. The black shadow flew towards the person whose cultivation base was at the peak Foundation stage.

Seeing that the situation was far from encouraging, an extremely small shield appeared in his hand. Although the danger had reduced, he had to keep it accurately towards the edge of the Blood Phantom Vine flying sword. Just as he had thought he succeeded and revealed a trace of smile on his face, he discovered in astonishment that the Blood Phantom Vine flying sword wasn't delayed in the slightest, and directly penetrated the shield with his palm and then directly entered in his throat.

Maintaining the posture with his hand extended, using the shield to obstruct the flying sword, under the surprised gazes of everyone else, the most powerful person among them slowly fell to the ground. His eyes open until the end.

All of the others were extremely astonished: in front of their



eyes, one person had killed three of them, including the most powerful person on their side. How could they still dare to keep laughing wantonly, feeling proud of themselves? All of them began to run in different directions in the surroundings, wishing that their parents had given them one more leg at birth.

Still, all of them were experienced and knew that, if they ran in the same direction, they would certainly die. Unfortunately, the person they were facing was Yang Chen. After his cultivation had increased to the third layer of the Foundation stage, he could use a technique which he couldn't use earlier: the hundred and ten thousand sword secrets.

More than ten blue flying swords were flew out of Yang Chen's upper body, which afterwards turned into countless rays of light and flew towards those people fleeing in different directions.

Those people were solely preoccupied with fleeing, who would look to check which technique Yang Chen was using? They only thought of dodging Yang Chen's attack and then escape without any trace. All of them were cursing Guang Zhu wildly within their hearts. He had surprisingly dared to provoke such a monster and also dragged them down with him.

Unfortunately, there wasn't any medicine for regret. Facing Yang Chen's absolute strength, those four people were so intimidated that they didn't even have the strength to resist against his attacks, when the countless flying swords passed through their bodies. All of them released a blood curdling scream and fell to the ground.

Only one Guang Zhu was left standing. Yang Chen had

deliberately left him alive, he was trapped between more than ten flying swords, sealing him within a very small space. He couldn't even dare to make a single movement randomly.

“Younger apprentice brother Yang, please just spare my life!”

Seeing that Yang Chen hadn't attacked him, he had a little bit hope to survive, so he hastily begged Yang Chen.

“Senior apprentice disciple Guang, what do you think of these flying swords?”

Standing in front of Guang Zhu, Yang Chen suddenly asked.

“You, you already have so many flying swords of higher grade compared to that Bright Ray Sword, why do you still care about that lousy sword?”

Looking at the blue swords in his surroundings, Guang Zhu was envious to death. Each flying sword was a high grade water attributed flying sword.

“Earlier I wanted to gift you one of these, but you insisted on getting the Bright Ray Sword!”

Yang Chen rained down curses on him:

“Remember, this Bright Ray Sword was gifted to me by my

master, it is not some lousy sword!”

Saying this, more than ten flying swords flew out and entered Guang Zhu’s body.

## Chapter 179 - Justifiable Reason

---

No one knew how regretful Guang Zhu was at the time of his death. If he had just known earlier that Yang Chen was gifting him an even higher grade flying sword, why would he bet his life to insist on the Bright Ray Sword?

Yang Chen's mood worsened even more. His good mood was completely destroyed and he still had to deal with a series of matters, feeling extremely vexed.

Within the sect rules of the Pure Yang Palace, there was a rule that disciples of the same sect should not injure or kill each other, but there wasn't anything written about self defense. Since Guang Zhu had come with seven people to take Yang Chen's life, Yang Chen would certainly not let them remain alive.

Moreover with Yang Chen's worth in the eyes of the Palace Master, if he said that Guang Zhu had conspired to murder him, the Palace Master would certainly believe him.

Very soon, the Palace Master and the Law Enforcement Hall's Master led people to the site. They had rushed over there after receiving Yang Chen's notification.

After the matter had happened, Yang Chen quickly informed the higher ups and the identities of those masked men was confirmed. They were some loose cultivators who moved into the range of the MeiQing Mountain and had a good relation with Guang Zhu.

Not to mention that this matter had happened on the way between the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard and the Nine Earth Manor, which was considered as the inner territory of the Pure Yang Palace. Under ordinary circumstances, those loose cultivators didn't dare to come here casually, but since they had appeared there, this in itself was quite suspicious.

The people of the Law Enforcement Hall immediately set out and quickly obtained the purpose of these seven people from other loose cultivators in the MeiQing mountain. These seven people were not everyone. There were other cultivators who hadn't come, as they had too low a cultivation and thus didn't want to become a hindrance.

The hall master of the Law Enforcement Hall had personally come out this time and the pressure of a YuanYing stage expert made all of them forget any ideas they were having and made them obediently say everything they knew about the matter.

According to what they had said, Guang Zhu had asked these people to help in forcefully robbing a newly refined flying sword. The sword was supposed to be extremely high grade, but its master was only at the initial Foundation stage and thus very easy to deal with. Moreover, that person didn't get along with Guang Zhu, so he wanted to seize this opportunity to teach him a lesson so that he didn't raise his head again within the sect.

Hall Master Meng Xian understood everything and then informed the palace master about this matter. Apparently Yang Chen was completely innocent in this matter. But when had he done anything to this Guang Zhu? Neither in this life nor in his

past life... When did he have any contact with Guang Zhu?

“Guang Zhu was Song Hang’s disciple!”

Seeing that Yang Chen still hadn’t realized it, Meng Xian informed him about Guang Zhu’s identity.

Hearing that he was Song Hang’s disciple, Yang Chen immediately understood everything. While Liang Shao Meng was sent to think over his mistakes to improve his temperament, Song Hang was made the substitute hall master of the Luminous Moon Hall and he had already tried once to level the accusation of absconding from his duties against Yang Chen and had failed to get any punishment for him. Moreover, he had also become a joke among the other hall masters. The hatred was sown among them at that time.

“To get revenge for his master? Or to get a good flying sword for himself?”

Yang Chen had always held such people in contempt, but in any case, he had just intended to suppress his opponents without the slightest regard for the general situation or the status of these people in the sect.

“Regardless of the motive he had, he was just a big idiot.”

Meng Xian waved his big hand and the the matter had already been settled and the conclusion determined.

Luminous Moon Hall's disciple Guang Zhu had colluded with outsiders to scheme against a disciple of the sect. Colluding with outsiders and attacking a disciple of the sect... Even if Yang Chen hadn't killed him, he would still be killed because of the sect rules.

Although Guang Zhu had been killed by Yang Chen, his master Song Hang didn't have any means to escape and the accusation of not keeping his disciple properly was levied against him and he was also given the punishment to think about his mistakes for ten years.

Fortunately, by this time, Liang Shao Meng's punishment was over, otherwise, it would have been a great loss of face for the Luminous Moon Hall, if both the hall master and the substitute hall master were in punishment.

“Liang Shao Meng, if you don't have any way to control the disciples of your hall, you should allow someone else to become the hall master!”

After several incidents focusing on Yang Chen with the culprits being from the Luminous Moon Hall, the Palace Master Zhong Jiao had become very angry and the target of his rage became Liang Shao Meng.

“In addition, it also seems that the disciples of your Luminous Moon Hall don't have any self knowledge and you as a hall master are quite incompetent!”

Yang Chen had killed Li Qingchen, who was at the peak Foundation stage in a life and death duel. This would have already made the situation clear, so how could Guang Zhu pit himself against him like a fool? Did he think that adding a few people would mean that he would win?

Not only was what he did wrong, but even his strength was insufficient. He didn't even know what he was capable of. How could the Palace Master miss this? So naturally, he had to take his anger out on Liang Shao Meng.

The matter of the ambush on the way was quickly resolved. Although it was quite a scandal and the Palace Master was quite angry, he didn't spread this matter outside.

Yang Chen also finally returned to the Nine Earth Manor and carefully inspected the flying sword which had taken her master and great master so many years to complete.

Gao Yue had indeed given much thought to the Bright Ray Sword. From the beginning she had wanted to refine it so that it could be used as a destined flying sword. But this was still a sword embryo, like the Blood Phantom Vine flying sword, it still required for Yang Chen to complete the final step of the refining.

After all, even though Gao Yue and Wang Yong had refined it, the real master was still Yang Chen, so if he really wanted to use it as his own flying sword, he had to refine it properly, so that it could be properly controlled.



But they were indeed worthy of being called great tool refining masters, the Bright Ray Sword was of third the fire attribute, therefore all of the materials used were also of the third fire attribute, without even a speck of any other attribute material. The refining technique was also extremely efficient. Apart from the materials being of slight lower quality, there were very few defects. Just after few simple refinings, Yang Chen could thoroughly turn this Bright Ray Sword into his own flying sword.

At the beginning of refining, Gao Yue had thought properly about the future upgrades and so of the total time and skill spent in refining the sword, she had spent more than half there. As long as Yang Chen could find some more advanced materials in the future than the Red Sun Metal Soul, they could be immediately integrated with the flying sword, increasing the quality even further.

Earlier, Yang Chen only possessed a second wood flying sword, but now he also had a third fire flying sword. For Yang Chen, the Bright Ray Sword held a special meaning: even if it wasn't completely refined according to the expectations from his last life, Yang Chen still considered it a precious treasure. Moreover, the current Bright Ray Sword already possessed boundless prospects for upgrades.

Without much thinking, Yang Chen immediately decided to make the Bright Ray Sword the second sword soul of his Immortal Executioner Blade. The only problem that Yang Chen could think of was if, in the future, if he found some high grade materials, if he would be able or not able to start and completely destroy the body of this sword refined by Gao Yue.

Regardless of anything else, his old memories were once again being repeated, furthermore, like before, the flying sword named the Bright Ray Sword had also reached his hands. One more of Yang Chen's desires was fulfilled. Now he had to carefully plan and deliver the throne of the Fierce Yang Hall to his master.

While Yang Chen was planning his next move, in the outside world, some changes were silently taking place.

Since the Heaven Seizing Pill had shown great efficiency when used by Elder Wu, it had been on the mind of a large number of Da Cheng stage experts. Every sect, intentionally or otherwise, had also begun to collect the ingredients for the Heaven Seizing Pill. Naturally, the main ingredient was still the Blue Green Zoysia. As long as the main ingredient could be found, finding the rest would not be very difficult.

Some YuanYing stage experts were pill refining masters and almost none among them had refined the Heaven Seizing Pill. Now, a lot of people had begun to hope. The Heaven Seizing Pill was no longer unattainable, it had seemingly already reached the stage of being obtainable.

Those pill concocting masters who had participated in the refining, Deng Yi, Zhu Peng and He Lianyun became the most sought after people. Regardless of whether the information came through different means or if it was the confirmation from Yang Chen, it had become widely known that these three people were the main force behind the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill. Within a short time, the queue of people wanting to hire them became larger and larger.

Very quickly, many people also discovered that of these three people originally who were YuanYing stage pill concocting masters, one of them, He Lianyun, had surprisingly fallen to the JieDan stage for some reason.

During the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill, what use would be there for a JieDan stage pill concocting expert? It required at least three YuanYing stage experts to cooperate with each other, so a trifling JieDan stage expert was just out of question. At most, he could do what Yang Chen had done at that time and that was to refine the ingredients for the main act.

His use may be even less than that of Yang Chen. For example, Yang Chen had refined the elixir which restored the pill spirit and moreover it still couldn't be in conflict with the Heaven Seizing Pill itself. Especially this last point, if his understanding towards all kinds of effects of the ingredients was not thorough, then having a proper understanding of the Heaven Seizing Pill was simply impossible to achieve.

Until this day, there hadn't been any Da Cheng stage pill concocting masters, which also implied that, for a very long time, if someone wanted to refine a Heaven Seizing Pill, there was only one path: following after Elder Wu and using a few YuanYing stage pill concocting masters to cooperate with each other to complete the task.

This also meant that those pill concocting masters could not subdue a DaCheng stage pill spirit. So the only way was to use the method which had been used once: that was to consume the

strength of the pill spirit and after the pill had been successfully made, restore it.

Although this method of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill would lead to some inherent deficiencies in the pill, it also had a great benefit: At the time of the pill tribulation, the ferociousness of the wind tribulation could be sensed, which would provide some help regarding their own tribulation.

So according to these facts, Deng Yi was important, Zhu Peng was important, Yang Chen was important, but He Lianyun, who had participated in the refining, was not very significant. After all, refining required three people and Yang Chen couldn't be substituted.

After discovering this fact, how could He Lianyun, who had the Real Moon Fire but still hadn't absorbed it, endure it? Originally he was considered high and mighty, a YuanYing stage expert whom people would flatter and fawn over, but now he was considered as a minor figure and even a Foundation stage youngster had more worth than him. Regardless of what other people would do in his place, for him, this was unbearable.

What made He Lianyun the most furious was that the Real Sun Fire which was supposed to be his had been lost because of Yang Chen. This also made him filled with hatred towards Yang Chen. But in these last few years, since Elder Wu hadn't ascended, he didn't dare to openly show his extreme hatred. But now that Elder Wu had already ascended, He Lianyun could finally vent all the anger he had within him.

But very soon, He Lianyun miserably discovered that Elder Wu ascending didn't mean that Yang Chen had lost all backing. Instead it was just opposite: Clear Sky Sect's Elder Hua Wanting thought quite highly of Yang Chen and also owed him a favor. Moreover, even the Pure Yang Palace, whom he hadn't paid much attention had gained a Da Cheng stage expert.

Even without these, Yang Chen had promised everyone that he would refine the elixir to restore the pill spirit for them and this already ensured his safety. This was something only Yang Chen knew how to do, and how could those who wanted the Heaven Seizing Pill allow He Lianyun to touch even a hair of Yang Chen?

Therefore, although his hatred against Yang Chen was at the deepest levels, He Lianyun didn't dare to reveal even the slightest trace of it. On the contrary, he even praised Yang Chen highly to everyone coming to him.

Although He Lianyun was now a minor figure, he was still extremely intelligent. Soon the words Yang Chen had said at the Pure Yang Palace reached his ears. Comparing it with the problems he encountered during the refining, he quickly understood that Yang Chen's words were certainly reasonable.

Although Yang Chen had said something about restoring the pill when they were refining, those words could be applied to the Heaven Seizing Pill itself. It was not that he didn't want to obtain the complete pill recipe, but that he didn't have any way to obtain it.

At that time, they had only used one pill spirit and he had also

thought of this problem at that time, but he didn't know what kind of variations there would be when the type of pill spirit was changed and what adjustments would be required, so how could he make the perfect pill recipe?

Although Yang Chen's last step had seemed to be quite easy, after all it was only restoring the pill spirit, none of the ingredients he used could be in conflict with the Heaven Seizing Pill, moreover it should also be able to completely fuse with the pill itself. This implied that Yang Chen could solve the problem with different pill spirits at least at the initial stage.

This fact made He Lianyun both frightened and happy at the same time. Frightened that Yang Chen had understood so much at such a young age, even more than his YuanYing stage seniors. Happy because, looking at Deng Yi and Zhu Peng's opinions, they didn't seem to have realized this point. Even Yang Chen himself was probably not aware of it, otherwise he wouldn't have opened his mouth publicly. This secret belonged to He Lianyun alone.

If he could grab this secret within his hand, what would happen? Once this thought entered his mind, He Lianyun was unable to remove it from his mind, he even started imagining the scene when the time came.

But first he had to obtain the secret from Yang Chen's mouth, otherwise He Lianyun wouldn't have anything to work with. Moreover, he only had a seventh grade flame at the most. Even if he was willing to take it out, he couldn't, as he was a fire attributed cultivator, so how could he exchange such an important treasure?

Make some power become hostile with Pure Yang Palace? But if not in exchange of this secret, there wasn't anyone would do such a thankless task. Moreover, it also required a genuine reason to become hostile with the Pure Yang Palace. Which powerful person would be such an idiot? Who would allow He Lianyun to manipulate himself.

After thinking for a long time, He LianYun was still unable to find a proper way to acquire Yang Chen's secret. Right now, he lacked a proper reason, a justifiable excuse.

Suddenly He LianYun thought of a particular clan. Those people who had been part of the creation of the Heaven Seizing Pill a long time ago... If those people appeared personally, then wouldn't it be a rational reason?

# Chapter 180 - Even Hoodlums Dare Try Taking Advantage

---

When people were just sitting at home, matters were sent from heaven. This sentence certainly justified Yang Chen's current condition. He was simply performing the duties of the Merit Transferring Disciple at the Nine Earth Manor, but there was always something weighing on his mind.

If it was just a matter of simple pill refining, Yang Chen wouldn't care much about it. In fact, Shangguan Feng was currently substituting for Yang Chen to accept such requests, so naturally, for the time being, if disciples within the sect required some pills, they just had to follow the older rules and provide for their own materials and the price they had to pay was still just eighty percent of market rate.

However, when refining JieDan stage or higher level pills, Yang Chen had almost a hundred percent success rate. Only if someone asked for a second grade or a third grade pill, could there be some wear and tear. Many sect disciple were happy to gain Yang Chen's help and, apart from receiving benefits, Yang Chen was also happy to let his Profound Spirit Furnace gain medicinal power.

Giving directions to a disciple regarding concocting pill recipes could not be considered as anything, but what amazed Yang Chen was the lowly person who was sitting in front of him. What kind of spell had been cast on him? He was surprisingly boasting that he was ashamed to look for the Pure Yang Palace and wanted Yang Chen to directly hand over the complete pill recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill to him.



This kind of nonsensical matter was just ridiculous. It didn't even require Yang Chen to appear personally, the hall master of Foreign Affairs Hall Xi Cheng Xin himself had driven him out.

From the beginning he started with a joke, who had said that Yang Chen had understood the complete pill recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill and even if he had understood it, why should he hand it over to him? In the cultivation world, the law of karma was considered the highest. Since Yang Chen had found something, it belonged to him, why would he hand it over?

The other person was directly driven out by Xu Chengxin. This was completely normal. Even the other sects would deal with it in the same way. If he had gone to the gate of the Greatest Heaven Sect to demand their secret recipes, it would be a miracle if they didn't beat him. He would be very fortunate if they just politely turned him away.

In the beginning, Yang Chen hadn't even heard about the matter. Hall master Xu Chengxin didn't think it was necessary to make Yang Chen worry. The job of the Foreign Affairs Hall was precisely to settle troublesome matters of the sect and its disciples.

But this person didn't go away and began to assertively claim that Yang Chen had stolen the recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill from his ancestors and that's why he knew the method to restore the pill spirit at the most crucial time and refine the Heaven Seizing Pill.

The Heaven Seizing Pill's recipe was first created by the ancestor

of that family, nobody denied this fact. But everyone knew that the pill recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill wasn't complete, and even the clan of that ancestor itself didn't have the complete pill recipe not to mention other people.

The part of the Heaven Seizing Pill which Elder Wu had was probably obtained from someone belonging to the same clan as this person. At that time, he just had the intention to try and moreover at the beginning, Elder Wu had only thought about obtaining a piece of the blue green zoysia and only then think about refining the Heaven Seizing Pill.

That person kept insisting that Yang Chen had the complete recipe. This was simply absurd. Moreover, after the information spread, everyone wondered why this person didn't appear before Elder Wu had ascended and asked him for the recipe. He just wanted to look for a youngster like Yang Chen.

Since he wanted the recipe so much, then why didn't he go to the YuanYing stage experts Deng Yi, Zhu Peng or He LianYun, who had participated in the refining? Frankly speaking, it was clear that he just wanted to take advantage of Yang Chen, seeing that his cultivation and seniority was lower, so the sect might not attach much importance to him.

Although everyone understood this matter completely, nobody opened their mouths. Apparently everyone wanted to see if, since this person was making so much noise, things would take a turn for the better. If Yang Chen was not careful and broke under the pressure and revealed the secret recipe, wouldn't everyone profit from it?

Although everyone had refused to comment on this pointless matter, they also didn't say anything about Pure Yang Palace driving this person out. Nobody wanted to open their mouths casually for the fear of offending the Pure Yang Palace.

However, that person understood this situation quite differently. The Pure Yang Palace handling this matter like this was clearly bullying other people using force. But such a tyrannical style of handling made others not dare to say anything, so clearly this matter had some more problems.

Immediately after that, this person began to spread the so called proof among the cultivators, meaning the proof of Yang Chen possessing the complete recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill. The proof was precisely what He Lianyun had thought: including that Yang Chen was just a youngster, so it was impossible for him to have so much knowledge, so he certainly had to have used some kind of secret record or something like that. Moreover, this secret record was precisely the one which his ancestor had written, but hadn't been able to pass down to the family.

This was still not enough. To increase the persuasiveness, that person also brought forward a witness: a YuanYing stage expert who had already participated in the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill once: He LianYun.

The time it took from the news to get out to the introduction of He LianYun was quite brief, only one month. When he heard this news, He LianYun immediately spat a mouthful of blood.

He LianYun had only looked for that person because he thought that he could use the ancestor of that person to borrow his identity to verify that Yang Chen had the Heaven Seizing Pill recipe, but he had never intended to publicly reveal himself.

Frankly, even He LianYun hadn't genuinely thought this through. He just wanted to get the recipe from Pure Yang Palace and Yang Chen. If he had reacted after the event, it would become apparent that he held an entrenched hatred towards Yang Chen and was also responsible for this matter. He hadn't planned anything else for Yang Chen. He just wanted to humiliate him once and after this fact came out, it would certainly create some invisible enemies for Yang Chen.

He had just wanted to exploit that person, but that person was also not foolish. After realizing that even spreading the proof wasn't sufficient, he knew that he couldn't do anything more and immediately raised He LianYun's name.

It had to be known that He LianYun's name was currently much more useful than that person who had never been famous, even though he had fallen to the JieDan stage from the YuanYing stage. But everyone knew that Elder Wu had found the Real Moon Fire, which was on the same grade as the Real Sun Fire, for He LianYun. As long as he would absorb it, restoring his cultivation to previous level wasn't impossible.

It had to be said that He LianYun's analysis also had some merit. At least it could be presented in front of everyone without him embarrassing himself. If he hadn't understood the Heaven Seizing Pill deeply, how was it possible for him to get the ingredients for

restoring the pill spirit so casually? If thought of this way, then there was certainly a possibility that Yang Chen had the complete recipe for the Heaven Seizing Pill on him, and that possibility was moreover not small.

This was simply a huge discovery. Everyone's attention was immediately concentrated on Yang Chen once again, after the ascension of Elder Wu and the hurricane produced by Heaven Seizing Pill.

“Even if they look for a hundred more excuses, it will still be useless.”

Yang Chen replied to Xu Chengxin. The person from that family just believed this point firmly and directly came to the sect. He didn't even use any familial piety or family relations to request it, he just demanded that the Pure Yang Palace hand over the pill recipe so that they could use it.

The stance taken by them was certainly very low, since Yang Chen had refined the Heaven Seizing Pill, then even his sect, the Pure Yang Palace could be in the possession of the pill recipe, so they were even willing to let Yang Chen take the place of being the successor disciple of that ancestor, so that he didn't need to betray the Pure Yang Palace. Yang Chen could even use the natural resources of that ancestor like he wanted, as long as he was willing to hand over the pill recipe.

“From the start, I didn't have any kind of pill recipe for the Heaven Seizing Pill with me, so looking for it is useless.”

Naturally Yang Chen denied it flatly. He wasn't lying, he really didn't have it.

In Yang Chen's memories of his previous life, even the the creator of the Heaven Seizing Pill didn't have the have all ingredients for the pill recipe, so it was unworthy for Yang Chen to remember it. The reason why he was successful was because he had had a thorough understanding of the medicinal nature of all kinds of medicines. It basically didn't have any relation with the pill recipe.

“This is only a crafty plot of He LianYun.”

After He LianYun's name was raised, Yang Chen immediately understood what was going on. That nasty person had surprisingly used such a despicable method.

The people from that family were currently hanging around outside of the Pure Yang Palace, like a pain in the neck, shamelessly insisting on the pill recipe. Although the Pure Yang Palace could eliminate such lowly characters, they had a reputation as an honest and upright sect, which stopped them from doing anything. They could only endure the disturbance created by these people while feeling vexed.

“This matter has to be resolved!”

The Hall Master of the Foreign Affair Hall was distressed and even the Palace Master Zhong Jiao had begun to worry.

These minor characters were certainly not the cause of his worry, but now some sects had also begun to push the wave and add billows, wanting the Pure Yang Palace to negotiate with them and hand over the things of their ancestor to them for the sake of their face.

The people of that family also weren't stupid. In order to gain support of as many people as they could get, they had even put out words that, when they obtained the pill recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill, they would certainly not keep it to themselves and would immediately make it public to these cultivators, to fulfill the dream of their ancestor to help everybody.

Once these words came out, many sects immediately offered their support to them. Earlier, regardless of whether Yang Chen had seized the Heaven Seizing Pill's recipe or not, at least he had made it public that the recipe for the pill to restore the pill spirit was not up for discussion. Most people knew just one point, that if Yang Chen still thought he could get a seventh grade flame in exchange for it, he could dream on!

The other party had used such a despicable plan, staining his reputation, yet he could only use his sect's status as an upright sect and he didn't dare to move against them. Perhaps, finally feeling vexed, he would do something that would benefit these shameless people which would just increase his worries.

It had to be said that He LianYun's plan of provoking these people was pretty good. Although they had also implicated his name by putting it forward, since he had been involved in the

refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill, other people also wanted his help to think over it. Looking at Yang Chen and Pure Yang Palace's faces covered in mud, He LianYun was extremely happy in his heart.

Although the big sects hadn't issued any statement about it, some smaller sects had begun to offer their support to that family. In the beginning, the Pure Yang Palace didn't pay any attention to it, but when more and more people began to talk about it, they had to acknowledge it.

The Palace Master and a few elders had already gathered with the Hall Master of each hall to discuss about it, since Yang Chen was involved.

“The people of that family are extremely noisy and disturbing, which is very unpleasant!”

Xu Chengxin was the most distressed and the first one to complain about it:

“We must find a way to shut them up!”

“Have you thought of any method?”

Wang Yong's gaze immediately fell on him:

“Hand over the pill recipe which my grand disciple created? Pah!”



“Uncle Master, I don’t have any such opinion!”

How could Xu Chenxin dare to create a misunderstanding with Wang Yong? He hastily said:

“But the disturbance they are creating is very bad for the sect’s reputation. The number of new disciples entering the sect has reduced by a lot this year.”

“Let the clowns jump. It’s not worth your attention!”

An elder on good terms with Wang Yong snorted:

“I figure they just care about ruining our reputation. Such minor family, they can be handled in just one night, why worry so much about it? We are cultivators, we only seek a clear conscience, so let the others shout as much as they want.”

Once hearing these words, the Palace Master forced a bitter laugh. If they wanted to kill them, why not do it earlier. Though he had said one thing right: they just wanted to ruin the reputation of the Pure Yang Palace.

“Perhaps we can ask Yang Chen to hand over the pill recipe to a fair and just sect to judge it, then we will know if it is the pill recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill or not.”

On the other side, Luminous Moon Hall's master Liang Shao Meng wrinkled his brows:

“As long as we can remove this misunderstanding, we won't have to worry about that family.”

“Giving them the pill recipe, how would the just big sect know if it is the correct one?”

Xu Chengxin shook his head:

“It is not appropriate. The pill recipe which has been created by the disciple of our Pure Yang Palace, why must we give it to another sect to judge? Moreover, which big sect could undertake the heavy responsibility of judging?”

“The Greatest Heaven Sect is already considered as the top sect unofficially, moreover, since we are asking them to judge, why not ask a few elders of the Greatest Heaven Sect to come over.”

Lian Shao Meng who had already wanted to merge the Pure Yang Palace with the Greatest Heaven Sect according to Yang Chen's memories in his past life, so him saying this was nothing unusual.

“Fair handling? Not necessary?”

Wang Yong wrinkled his brows. Just as he was about to refute, the Law Enforcement Hall's master interrupted:

“Shielding our sect traitor disciple, in addition to their behaviour at the Desolate Valley, how justly do you think can they handle their affairs? Hall Master Liang, do you think my Pure Yang Palace is just for the benefit of outsiders?”

“You! Humph, this is not a matter that I created, whoever created the misunderstanding should go to settle it!”

Liang Shao Meng anxiously replied, but then he was unable to say anything more. He snorted and after saying the last sentence, he did not open his mouth again. But the meaning of his words was clear: Yang Chen had created the misunderstanding.

Wang Yong was extremely angry. A lowly hall master had dared to focus on his grand disciple publicly! He was just about to speak up, when Palace Master Zhong Jiao coughed lightly and calmly said:

“This matter is related to you, Yang Chen, what do you think?”

Once the Palace Master opened his mouth, all eyes turned to Yang Chen, the person with the lowest cultivation in the room, sitting in the back, waiting to hear if he had any method.

“Even hoodlums dare to shout in front of an immortal sect’s gate, yet we can’t deal with them?”

Yang Chen smiled, without showing any nervousness in front of

the sect elders:

“Tell them to shut up immediately. If they dare to speak again, we will behead them! Don’t tell me the prestige of our Pure Yang Palace could be ruined by a few hoodlums?”

# Chapter 181 - What Seems Reasonable Doesn't Have To Be True

---

Once Yang Chen's words were heard, it immediately shook the minds of the elders, first and foremost Wang Yong. Yang Chen's words were right. Was Pure Yang Palace's reputation lower than that of a few hoodlums?

Not only the people who supported Yang Chen, but even all of the other hall masters showed a smile. Indeed, Pure Yang Palace's method of handling these people was quite mild. Noblemen deceived by the pretense of reason would cause other people to take advantage of them.

The few elders looked at each other and the Palace Master was looking at them. When everyone's gazes met, all of them could see the approval in the eyes of each other.

“Good, we will handle them as Yang Chen has proposed.”

The Palace Master immediately made his decision:

“Hall Master Xu, tomorrow morning you must warn the people of that clan that, if they dare to babble nonsense and slander my Pure Yang Palace's reputation again, they must not blame Pure Yang Palace for being merciless. Also, give a prior notice to the people of the other sects that the reputation of my Pure Yang Palace cannot be tarnished by such people.”

No one opposed this decision, not even Liang Shao Ming said anything. Yang Chen's words were quite rational. Was the reputation of Pure Yang Palace even lower than that of some hoodlums? Would fighting against them prove this?

Xu Chengxin was delighted. He could just barely deal with those people every day. Although he was not happy within his heart, he also could not use malicious words while talking face to face. After today, he could finally blow off his steam. The gloominess which had accumulated in the past few days had also been completely dispersed. If that clan still dared to babble nonsense, Xu Chengxin could greatly embarrass them.

“However, there is still He LianYun. He won't be as easy to handled as that clan!”

Liang Shao Ming turned the subject towards He LianYun:

“He himself is a famous pill concocting master. Moreover, he also participated in the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill. Many people trust his words.”

“Forgive this disciple for being impudent.”

Before anyone could say anything, Yang Chen rushed to open his mouth and replied to Liang Shao Ming:

“Right now, disciple is also a famous and reputed pill master and has also participated in the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill.”

The meaning of these words was clear: there was no need to attach any importance to He LianYun.

Without hesitation, Liang Shao Ming immediately wanted to berate Yang Chen :

“You are just a trifling Foundation stage youngster, even if you can concoct pills, you have just started doing so. How dare you compare yourself with a YuanYing stage pill concocting master?”

But he wasn't able to say anything. Not to mention that He LianYun was no longer at the YuanYing stage, just talking of the Heaven Seizing Pill, Yang Chen was considered far more important than him. Moreover, in front of so many elders, how could he dare to speak about another person's ambition and ruin his own reputation?

“If his words are reasonable, other people will definitely believe him.”

Although he was extremely furious in his heart, Liang Shao Ming replied very gently:

“Other people wanted to speak with you and we cannot always be barbarous and unreasonable?”

While Yang Chen and Liang Shao Ming were wrangling, the other people present did not interrupt in the slightest. Everyone

was simply listening and looking at the show presented by Yang Chen and Liang Shao Ming.

“What reason?”

Yang Chen retorted with a smile:

“That the pill which I refined for restoring the pill spirit coincidentally worked on a failed Heaven Seizing Pill and that that’s how I got the pill recipe for the Heaven Seizing Pill?”

“Since so many people are also speaking against it.”

Liang Shao Ming conceded:

“We have no choice but to deal with it.”

“Which other people?”

Yang Chen suddenly asked with a smile:

“Have there been people from the Greatest Heaven Sect, whom you wanted to give the responsibility of presiding over justice? The Clear Sky Sect, Five Phases Sect, the Green Jade Immortal Islands or some other big dao sect? Which of these have spoken?”

“This!”



Liang Shao Ming was unable to speak, so he could only admit:

“No, they haven’t said anything.”

But he immediately thought of something:

“They are all famous and prestigious sects. When they open their mouth, it will determine the outcome. Since they didn’t understand it clearly before, making a judgement would be inconvenient.”

“Then according to the words of hall master Liang, they haven’t reached any conclusion, right?”

Yang Chen keenly took hold of the idea within Laing Shao Ming’s words and immediately asked back:

“Since they don’t have any problems, why are we still worried about anything?”

“Then unanimously we also don’t have to mind it!”

Liang Shao Ming seemed to not reason against Yang Chen’s argument and could only take the stance of someone thinking about his sect while wrinkling his brows.

“When has my Pure Yang Palace’s conduct become so servile that

we have to care about what people are thinking of us?”

Yang Chen strangely asked:

“What’s honest is honest and what’s muddy is muddy. A few insignificant people only had to spout some nonsense and we immediately started caring about how they think of us.”

After all was said and done, the Pure Yang Palace was still a second rate sect. From elders to disciples, nobody had developed the confidence like the people from the Greatest Heaven Sect or the Five Phases Sect or any such big sect. Even if there had already been a great amount of change, gaining a Da Cheng stage expert and also possessing many YuanYing stage experts, it still had a weak background.

Would these trifling people have dared to talk about the Greatest Heaven Sect like this? Even after the incident at the Desolate Valley, apart from talking in private, how many people would have dared to criticize it in public? Also, wasn’t it only a few of the big sects that had such confidence?

What Yang Chen wanted to do was to slowly uplift the Pure Yang Palace to gain that kind of confidence. Even he himself was not sure what he had to say to make those people shut up.

“If we handle it like this, wouldn’t people say that our sect has started to behave tyrannically?”

Liang Shao Ming naturally didn't agree with Yang Chen and asked a rhetorical question.

“Will those criticising people have any proof?”

Yang Chen directly looked in the eyes of Liang Shao Ming and raised his voice a little, but continued for everyone to hear:

“Like the Greatest Heaven Sect has arranged a spell formation at the Desolate Valley to collect the fifth earth true qi, will they have such conclusive proof?”

“No they won't!”

Liang Shao Ming suddenly discovered that he himself surprisingly didn't have confidence equal to this youngster, Yang Chen. With an empty voice he said:

“Only that He LianYun's words are irrefutable. Moreover, his analysis is also quite reasonable, that would be difficult to deal with.”

After all was said and done, he just used He LianYun's opinion.

“Then the Pure Yang Palace should forcefully request people from the big sects and ask for He LianYun to agree to a confrontation with this disciple in their presence and demand that he produce irrefutable proof. I wonder if senior He LianYun will dare or not?”

Yang Chen was completely aware of He LianYun's cowardice. He had no problem with He LianYun saying anything, but he wanted him to agree to a confrontation in the presence of people and give irrefutable evidence, or he would be offending the entire Pure Yang Palace. But how would he dare? Otherwise, at that time, he wouldn't have obediently handed over the Real Sun Fire under Elder Wu's threat.

"This is a good option!"

Before Liang Shao Ming could open his mouth, the Palace Master interrupted and turned to Xu Chengxin:

"Hall Master Xu, after warning those people tomorrow, inform them that, if they are not convinced, then they can find their only witness He LianYun, and in the presence of the experts from these sects he can provide conclusive proof, which will confirm the truth! My Pure Yang Palace cannot bear the endless slandering of the sect's reputation.

The Palace Master who had been in a good mood all along revealed a trace of killing intent while saying this. Everyone immediately realized that, if he wasn't able to provide conclusive proof, he better imagine the consequences of slandering the Pure Yang Palace.

Although Pure Yang Palace was a second rate sect, it had already gained a Da Cheng stage expert and its strength had increased greatly and it had started walking on the path of a first rate sect.

Even if it was a second rate sect, it could still not be slandered by any random person.

When Pure Yang Palace made the threat on the next day, those people who had originally been quite threatening immediately began to give in. The people of that clan, how could they still dare to say anything? They obediently retreated, thinking about how to handle this matter, or better yet, find He LianYun.

He LianYun was a loose cultivator. Although his school had some disciples, it didn't have any great strength. If he was still at the YuanYing stage, then perhaps some people would have tried to help him, currying favor with a YuanYing stage pill concocting master, but at the moment he didn't have many people who looked favorably on him.

And those numerous cultivators who were adding fuel to the fire to increase the pressure on Pure Yang Palace were hoping that it would give in, allowing everyone to get some benefits. But when the Pure Yang Palace took a tough stance, asking for He LianYun to produce evidence in front of everyone, who would still dare to take the side of He LianYun?

If they had any such proof, why would they act like rascals? They would have directly gone to a big sect and asked for them to speak justice. Using such underhanded methods clearly showed that they didn't have any certainty and only wanted to take advantage of the crisis.

As for the confrontation, that was even more impossible. How could He LianYun possibly have the guts to do it? Precisely, right

now, he also had to think about settling the rage of Pure Yang Palace. He had to find a sufficiently strong supporter to lean on. To stick in support in that clan's fate, he would certainly not want calamity to befall him.

Among the sects, apart from mortal enemies, who would incur the hatred of a sect over an imaginary rumor? Even in his previous life, when the Greatest Heaven Sect was dealing with Pure Yang Palace, they knew that they had to eliminate the Pure Yang Palace completely, that's why they took to such reckless behaviour. Without such determination, who would stick out their neck for few hoodlums?

Pure Yang Palace's tough stance made both He LianYun and that clan's people turn into ostriches. However, after two months, Pure Yang Palace went ahead to welcome more than ten special guests.

These guests included people of a few big sects, headed by the Greatest Heaven Sect and people from an alliance of loose cultivators coming together. The Clear Sky Sect, the Five Phases sect, the Green Jade Immortals Island, all of them had a share. When they arrived at Pure Yang Palace, they were quite polite towards Pure Yang Palace, saying that they wanted to help save their reputation, but they still required to talk to Yang Chen properly to get to the bottom of the matter.

These delegates had taken the stance of being helpful to Pure Yang Palace, making Pure Yang Palace unable to refuse. However, among them, the people from the alliance of loose cultivators seemed to be quite aggressive, which made Palace Master Zhong Jiao unhappy. The outcome became clear very quickly.

Seeing that the events were far from encouraging, He LianYun had turned to the loose cultivators alliance. The loose cultivators alliance also had a Da Cheng stage expert. Combined with the other experts of the loose cultivators alliance, they had to investigate the matter clearly. However, speaking frankly, all of these people just wanted to use this for their gain.

Yang Chen was led to the these people by the Palace Master. After making his greetings, he sat down in front of them, waiting for their questions.

“Yang Chen, we all have good intentions.”

The representative from the Greatest Heaven Sect opened his mouth:

“He LianYun participated with you in the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill. It seems as if some misunderstanding was created at that time and we will try to clarify it, so as to avoid hurting your and Pure Yang Palace’s reputation. So if we offend you, we ask you to bear with it!”

Seeing the other party, a YuanYing stage expert talk so amiably, Yang Chen also couldn’t deny them and could only respond with:

“You flatter me senior, whatever doubts you have, just ask.”

“This time, what do you think about what He LianYun said?”

Although it is just his analysis, there is some reason in it.”

Greatest Heaven Sect’s expert was still as polite as before and asked with a smile:

“Do you agree?”

Apparently they had already reached an agreement, only this expert from the Greatest Heaven Sect would speak and the other people would not open their mouths and just listen quietly.

“Yes, it is somewhat reasonable.”

Yang Chen nodded his head, but also didn’t deny it.

“Somewhat reasonable is good, haha!”

The smile of the face of the representative asking questions widened even more:

“He LianYun doesn’t hold any conclusive proof, after all, who knows if you have the pill recipe or not. This is not good, but it is also not good to denounce someone, we all were thinking of hearing your explanation on this.”

“Many more matters also seem reasonable.”



Yang Chen didn't seem to nervous and replied with a smile:

“Senior, but an argument having reason doesn't mean that the matter is true.”

“What does that mean?”

The smile of the other person didn't lessen and his voice was also free of tension:

“Things that seem reasonable, why aren't they true?”

“I will ask seniors to forgive this junior for being impudent!”

Yang Chen smiled at the Palace Master sitting on one side and then calmly said:

“The Greatest Heaven Sect has a ying transformation pill, the Five Phases Sect also has a nirvana pill. These two types of elixirs have nearly the same use, both are used by peak JieDan experts after ying transformation.”

This was something known to nearly everyone, so nobody had any problem. Yang Chen also didn't speak nonsense and picked at the theory behind these two pills, their refining method, the ingredients used and so on, and analyzed it once. Naturally, it was just a shallow analysis, after all he didn't have the perfect pill recipe, but the analysis was not far from the truth.

“These two elixirs are quite similar, even ninety percent of their ingredients are the same, but the nirvana pill came out first and the ying transformation pill appeared some time after it, such a coincidence.”

Yang Chen concluded beaming with smiles:

“Seniors, do you believe that the ying transformation pill recipe is a copy of the nirvana pill’s recipe? Seniors, do you think that this junior’s analysis is quite reasonable?”

“This!”

The complexion of the representative of the Greatest Heaven Sect changed. He was not smiling anymore. Moreover, the complexion of the representative of the Five Phases Sect also changed. When he looked at the Greatest Heaven Sect’s representative, there seemed some other motive. All of the representatives started looking at each other in dismay.

“Complete nonsense!”

The representative of the Clear Sky Sect clapped his hand and berated Yang Chen:

“These are all rumors, you don’t even have the pill recipe, how can you dare to spread such a misconception?”

“Many thanks, senior for providing justice!”

Yang Chen immediately stood up and cupped his hand towards the representative:

“Finally this junior has been proven innocent! He LianYun also hasn’t seen the pill recipe, how can he dare to spread such a misconception?”

## Chapter 182 - There Is No Method To Determine If It Is Genuine

---

The Palace Master, Zhong Jiao, also heard this and when he heard this, his face showed a smile. Looking at those representatives, his heart was completely relaxed.

The group of people had come over wanting to use the argument that, what He LianYun said was reasonable, to make Yang Chen admit that he had the Heaven Seizing Pill's recipe. However they hadn't expected Yang Chen's analysis would create such a complex problem between the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Five Phases Sect. This was simply reaping what they had sown, so how could the Palace Master watching from the sidelines not be happy about it?

“These kind of matters cannot be confused with each other.”

From the other side, a representative of the loose cultivators association immediately spoke up.

“That is correct.”

Yang Chen didn't refute him and admitted with a smile:

“However, if you don't wish to consider this matter, this junior has heard of another rumor which involves your precious alliance.”

Yang Chen raised another rumor about a magic weapon secretly manufactured by the elder of the loose cultivators alliance, which surprisingly resembled a powerful treasure of the Greatest Heaven Sect. There were a lot of similarities, everyone had heard this rumor many times. Yang Chen once again analysed and reached a very reasonable conclusion, that the alliance's elder had stolen the secret method of refining from the Greatest Heaven Sect.

“Venomous slander!”

The elder of the alliance was enraged and slapped the table, starting to berate Yang Chen in a loud voice.

“Many thanks, senior for providing justice!”

Yang Chen replied with the same sentence:

“He LianYun is indeed a lowly person and has used venomous slander!”

Using the other person's words to refute themselves, Yang Chen simply provided an explanation. After the two examples he gave, not only could the group of delegates not determine if he had the pill recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill, they actually became extremely careful of each other.

“Saying anything more is pointless. Just take out whatever pill recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill you have and it will be clear by testing it once!”

Finally the representative of the loose cultivators alliance, He LianYun's support, no spoke diplomatically and bluntly expressed his greed.

“Easy!”

But Yang Chen agreed, placing much emphasis on this, as if he had blurted it out accidentally.

Once these words came out, the ones who were amazed and turned pale in fright were not only those delegates, even the Palace Master Zhong Jiao was affected. Just as he was about to warn Yang Chen, the representative started speaking:

“You are willing to take out the pill recipe?”

“I can take out the pill recipe.”

Yang Chen again expressed his intentions clearly:

“Only, senior, how do you intend to authenticate it? Do you even know the genuine recipe for the Heaven Seizing Pill?”

“Isn't this simple?”

With Yang Chen willing to hand over the pill recipe and repeated provocation, the representative of the alliance was unable to think

calmly, so without much thought, he immediately spoke:

“Wouldn’t refining it once in accordance with the pill recipe make it clear?”

“Senior is indeed an expert. You have this junior’s admiration!”

Yang Chen immediately showed his approval to that person and with a smile across his whole face he said:

“When junior had refined the simple foundation stage pill, out of ten attempts five had failed. But senior surprisingly requires only one try to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill! Can senior be the number one pill concocting master in the world?”

The representative of the alliance had originally thought that as long as Yang Chen handed over the pill recipe, everything else would be easy to deal with, but he hadn’t anticipated that he would be put in such awkward position. When Elder Wu had refined the Heaven Seizing Pill, it could already be considered as extremely fortunate that he was successful in only one try. Elder Wu himself had thought that he had to have used up his entire luck in refining the Heaven Seizing Pill in this one try, but other people trying to refine it in one attempt was simply a dream.

For a Da Cheng stage expert, the Heaven Seizing Pill was the same as the yin and yang nature pill for a Foundation stage cultivator. Even if Deng Yi and Zhu Peng refined it again, their success rate wouldn’t be more than fifty percent. When they would refine the Heaven Seizing Pill again, even one percent success rate

would be a great fortune for them.

“After refining many times, wouldn’t there be success at least once?”

The alliance representative’s complexion turned red and he hastily explained.

“Wow, the noble alliance is truly rich and imposing, this junior is in awe!”

Yang Chen again raised his thumbs towards him:

“It can even easily obtain high quality blue green zoysia! The Da Cheng stage demon beast’s constituent spirits are also easily available to you, is it possible for this lowly junior to get some benefits and buy one or two? Senior can rest assured, I will pay the market price!”

This time, the representative of the alliance didn’t know how to deal with this. His expression seemed to convey he was completely embarrassed, unable to even move his limbs. But the rage on his face flourished more and more.

“It is embarrassing, but this junior still has a few questions which this junior wants to ask the seniors.”

As if he hadn’t seen his expression, Yang Chen immediately turned to the representatives sitting in front of him and cupped his



hands:

“If the refining fails, how can seniors determine if the success rate was low or the pill recipe was wrong?”

Nobody had a clear answer to this question. Originally the success rate of the pill was very low, so if the refining failed, nobody could clearly determine if it was because of the ingredients, the method or actually the pill recipe being wrong.

“Even if the refining is successful, do seniors intend to find a Da Cheng stage expert who is about to ascend to determine if the Heaven Seizing Pill is fake or genuine?”

Without caring for what these people were thinking, Yang Chen immediately threw out another question:

“If there is a Da Cheng stage senior who ate the pill but failed in his tribulation, would it be considered as a problem of the Heaven Seizing Pill or the Da Cheng stage expert?”

The Heaven Seizing Pill would only increase the chances for success of passing the tribulation, but it did not guarantee it. This was common knowledge which almost everyone knew. So if it couldn't be distinguished properly, what proof could anyone have?

Leaving aside the fact that the success rate of refining a Heaven Seizing Pill was extremely low, where could so many Da Cheng stage experts, who were just about to ascend, be found to

authenticate it even if the refining was successful?

Even if so many Da Cheng stage expert could be found, who would be willing to turn into a guinea pig? In case Yang Chen missed or added another ingredient, just as he himself had said before, the Heaven Seizing Pill would turn into a life seizing pill, so who would be willing to bet on Yang Chen's character?

“I'm willing to help as long as seniors can answer this junior's question.”

A gentle smile made its way onto Yang Chen's face and he respectfully said:

“This junior will offer you the pill recipe which this junior knows!”

How could they reply? Among these people, the highest cultivator was at the peak YuanYing stage and the possibility of reaching Da Cheng stage was still uncertain for them, so how could they speak for a group of Da Cheng stage experts? Just as Yang Chen had said, even if he handed over the pill recipe, nobody would know if it was genuine or fake, so why go to other people to determine if their pill recipe was the pill recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill or not?

“In addition!”

As if he wanted to crush these people to death with his words, he

continued to speak:

“If, after using the lives of tens of hundreds of Da Cheng stage experts, the pill recipe was found to be fake, this junior requests seniors to take his place and receive justice. He LianYun has slandered this junior and my Pure Yang Palace, so he can not be let off lightly!”

The faces of those more than ten representatives sitting in front of Yang Chen turned bright red. Initially they had thought that maybe this time they would be able to obtain the pill recipe for the Heaven Seizing Pill, but it turned out to be just a dream.

Elder Wu’s ascension had indeed provoked a group of people, everyone was thinking that the Heaven Seizing Pill was great. While, in reality, the Heaven Seizing Pill was still great, but people forget about the troubles it brought with it. If a Heaven Seizing Pill could just be obtained by getting the pill recipe, then it wouldn’t be called Heaven Seizing Pill.

A sect which had more than a hundred Da Cheng stage experts who could come and verify if the pill recipe was genuine or fake and moreover could also easily obtain blue green zoysia hundreds of times, as well as constituent spirits of Da Cheng stage demon beasts, regardless of which sect it would be, it would already be unrivalled in this entire world, why would it still need to use some crisis to gain something from Pure Yang Palace?

Leaving aside the fact that the Heaven Seizing Pill would increase the chances of success in ascension, for the people participating in this matter, it was something a long time in the future, so even if

they could get the pill recipe, they may not find the ingredients and even if they could find the ingredients, they may not be able to refine it successfully, so if the word spread that they acted like this with a Foundation stage junior, they would certainly lose face.

Finally at this moment, the representatives who had come today were all extremely embarrassed. They couldn't stand, they couldn't sit, they couldn't walk or leave, unable to even speak in their embarrassment. Each one of them was feeling extreme regret and boundless resentment at the same time.

Yang Chen's final words just a moment ago targeted these people's resentment at He LianYun. If it were not for that culprit inciting the quarrel, why would they have been embarrassed? At the same time, they didn't have any favourable opinion of Yang Chen and the Pure Yang Palace, but at this moment they were sitting in the territory of the Pure Yang Palace, so regardless of their hatred, they could only endure it.

Yang Chen had already returned to Palace Master Zhong Jiao's side and both of them were beaming with smiles, while appreciating the wonderful expressions on the faces of these representatives. After a good moment, the Palace Master coughed, attracting the attention of everyone.

“Fellow daoists, many thanks for your concern regarding my Pure Yang Palace's reputation. This time the misunderstanding regarding my Pure Yang Palace has been completely cleared up, all thanks to the contributions of these fellow daoists!”

Palace Master's words were quite sly. With the premise of

clearing up a misunderstanding, he had regained his good name again. But whatever he said, these people couldn't refute him. Since they were unable prove if it was a genuine pill recipe for the Heaven Seizing Pill or not, why should they become the vile characters here?

“It sure is a misunderstanding, I say! Pure Yang Palace has been famous for its righteousness and honesty, how could they steal the property of someone's ancestor?”

Immediately, someone picked up Palace Master Zhong Jiao's words to disentangle themselves.

After that there weren't any problems for Yang Chen or the Palace Master. With the assistance of a group of elders, they arranged a great feast for the representatives of the big sects and the alliance for helping them in clearing up the misunderstanding. Afterwards the representatives jointly issued a high profile statement in which the matter of the pill recipe for the Heaven Seizing Pill was completely based on a misunderstanding. People were just spreading falsehoods and should not be trusted.

Afterwards the Palace Master, with assistance of the group of elders, 'reluctantly' sent the representatives off and followed them with his eyes until they disappeared, flying on their flying swords. The Palace Master Zhong Jiao could not help but feel relaxed in his heart and immediately burst out laughing when everything was over.

The group of elders didn't know the details, but seeing the Palace Master laughing so heartily, they could not help themselves and

started inquiring about it. The Palace Master would naturally not conceal such a joyous matter, it had to be shared with all of his fellow disciples.

When the Palace Master told them about the events from beginning to end, repeating Yang Chen's words, including their expressions at the end, the other elders also could not help themselves and burst out laughing. This kind of satisfactory affair should be recorded in golden letters.

The matter of the Heaven Seizing Pill's recipe had evaporated with the declaration of the big sects and the alliance. All rumors disappeared completely into thin air. Even if someone recalled it, it was only considered as a topic of idle chatter and not some great opportunity. As for the people involved, they had either turned into a joke or complete villains who had to be purged.

As for that clan, they hadn't gained anything after making so much noise, other than the reputation of being hoodlums. As for He LianYun, he was called from the alliance from whom he had asked for help and was humiliated greatly by an elder who had great authority. Not killing him was already lenient.

Battered and exhausted, He LianYun had turned into a target of scorn and had no choice other than colluding with the people of that family. Although that clan had been turned into a joke, they still had a lot of manpower which could be used. Also, even if He LianYun was of no use, he was still a successful pill concocting master. Both sides once again started to collude for their nefarious aims.

Their common enemy was Yang Chen, this was the understanding between them. Nobody remembered that it was not Yang Chen who went after them and turned them into enemies, apparently they had mutually decided to forget this point selectively. But one thing that they did not forget was that the humiliation had to be paid back.

He LianYun had already thought about this deeply. Even when Yang Chen was at the Foundation stage, he had such great knowledge and experience, moreover he was also capable of refining an elixir to restore the pill spirit. Even if he didn't have the pill recipe for the Heaven Seizing Pill, there was still another thing: Pure Yang Palace also didn't have any great or famous pill concocting master, then the only explanation was that Yang Chen had at least some kind of rare record of pill concocting.

He had to get hold of this rare record, whatever means he had to use. Moreover, Yang Chen had to die, but before he would die, He LianYun still wanted to snatch the Real Sun Fire back from Yang Chen to wipe away his previous shame. As long as he could get his hands on the flame and the rare record, He LianYun was convinced that he would surpass Deng Yi and Zhu Peng, becoming the number one pill concocting expert in this world. Only at that time, when everything would go his way could he be proud of himself.

But this was all possible only if Yang Chen had not absorbed the Real Sun Fire. He LianYun didn't think he could, but after seeing Yang Chen's cultivation and his control of fire, he wasn't sure. If he had absorbed it, then He LianYun had only one option: he could only ask Yang Chen to willingly hand over the flame.

This was a great inconvenience because, knowing Yang Chen's craftiness, he knew there wouldn't be any opportunities. Moreover, it was said that Yang Chen had two YuanYing experts following him, so attacking him also wouldn't be easy. He had to find some other method to do it.

That clan still firmly believed that Yang Chen had forcefully stolen their ancestor's pill recipe and viewed Yang Chen as a thorn in their side, their mortal enemy. The group of people immersed themselves in bitter cultivation and began to wait for the day when they could take their revenge.

After suffering in humiliation for many days, He LianYun's disciple obtained an important piece of information from some mysterious person and hastily reported back to He LianYun.

Yang Chen completely obeyed his master Gao Yue, moreover, he also greatly cared about her. As long as Gao Yue said anything, Yang Chen would absolutely not disobey. Although dealing with Yang Chen was not easy, his master had recently sealed her own cultivation for some mysterious reason, which nobody knew and had begun to cultivate a water attributed cultivation method from the qi layer, thus becoming extremely weak.

Hearing this, He LianYun's eyes immediately shone. An opportunity had come!



# Chapter 183 - They Are In Big Trouble

---

“How should we take care of the debt of that clan and He LianYun?”

After calling in Yang Chen, these were the first words of the Palace Master.

“If anyone dares to accuse the disciples of my Pure Yang Palace unjustly and is let off so lightly, wouldn’t my Pure Yang Palace be considered a pushover in the future?”

Yang Chen was at the Nine Earth Manor, performing the duties of the Merit Transferring Disciple, when he was suddenly called in by the Palace Master. On the way, he kept thinking about what kind of thing could have happened. Hearing the Palace Master’s words, Yang Chen smiled and said:

“I think the sect shouldn’t pay any attention to this matter.”

“There shouldn’t be anyone who thinks that, after accusing my Pure Yang Palace’s disciple and trying to steal our properly, they can still remain safe and sound!”

The Palace Master smiled towards Yang Chen and said:

“They must pay their debts!”

“I know about your grievance!”

The Palace Master paused for a moment and then calmly said:

“But everyone in this place knew that the clan was the owner of the Heaven Seizing Pill, therefore they had previously no option but to shift the blame onto you, but since everything has become clear now, it is time for those people to pay their debts!”

As for Yang Chen not making any complaints previously, that was just drivel, but Yang Chen knew that strong public opinion was enough to melt steel beams. Even in his previous life, Yang Chen and Pure Yang Palace were definitely the victims, but when those people published their views, they just gave Pure Yang Palace another appearance: the appearance of someone overestimating their abilities and deserving to be punished.

Therefore, he previously observed public opinion in great detail, even when those people were criticizing them, the first thought of Yang Chen was to protect Pure Yang Palace’s reputation. Since the Palace Master had finally decided to counterattack, Yang Chen was naturally extremely happy.

“I am only informing you once so that you don’t keep thinking about it and focus on cultivation!”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao cared greatly about Yang Chen. Currently the Eccentric’s Hall of Pure Yang Palace wouldn’t have been established without Yang Chen’s support. Furthermore, considering Yang Chen’s previous performance, it made him a very

influential figure within Pure Yang Palace, even though he was only at the Foundation stage.

“When do you wish to attack?”

Yang Chen was very satisfied regarding this matter and inquired further about it.

“When do you think we should attack?”

The Palace Master wanted to test Yang Chen with this question, to see if he could handle the responsibility. After all, this time, the greatest victim was Yang Chen himself.

“Right now!”

Yang Chen was a little impatient. Since they had tried to forcibly rob him, they could not blame him for being fierce:

“I will go together with hall master Gui, we should be enough!”

A Da Cheng stage expert together with Yang Chen going to eliminate a clan which had already declined a long time ago, together with the stray dog He LianYun, there shouldn't be any accident. Zhong Jiao had already anticipated that Yang Chen would wish to go himself, so he didn't obstruct him and nodded in agreement, without saying another word.

Yang Chen almost jumped up standing and turned around to go to the Eccentrics' Hall. Gui Shanyou was resting in the big room with his eyes closed, when he sensed Yang Chen coming from far away. He immediately stood up and without hesitation welcomed him.

“Senior, let's go to kill some people!”

Yang Chen didn't talk much rubbish and stated his purpose for coming in one sentence:

“To make people realize that they won't be let off lightly after provoking my Pure Yang Palace.”

“Lead the way!”

Gui Shanyou was similarly rejuvenated, apparently guessing long ago whom Yang Chen wanted to kill and immediately walked after him without any preparation. In fact, there was no need for preparation, he already had his qiankun pouch on him and Gui Shanyou didn't need to be careful about these people.

Just when he was about to set off, he suddenly thought of something. Apparently master Gao Yue's current experience did not make Yang Chen feel relaxed. After all, one was a problem regarding strength, the other was regarding one's attitude. Sometimes, his master's heart was somewhat flexible, she didn't seem to completely understand the dangers on the path of cultivation. Perhaps, this would be a good opportunity to let her have a taste of it.

And same as Gao Yue, there was someone else who had this problem, that was his talented senior apprentice sister, Gongsun Ling. Gongsun Ling's cultivation perception was astonishing, but she didn't have many life and death experiences. In his previous life, this had led to her failing in her tribulation and everything being ruined at the last step, so it didn't need to be said that she should also come along to gain some experience.

“Eliminating that clan and He LianYun?”

After hearing Yang Chen's invitation, Gao Yue immediately stood up without saying anything and followed him.

She had observed everything that He LianYun and that clan did to slander Yang Chen and was furious, but since the Palace Master hadn't said anything, she also didn't dare to act without thinking. But with the sect leader's command, there was no need to worry about other things, first she had to avenge Yang Chen's grievance. Everything else would come after that.

“Experience?”

Since Gongsun Ling didn't understand everything, she hesitated a little:

“Younger apprentice brother, is this the time for gaining experience? Haven't I just recently returned from the Immortal Falling Well?”

Gongsun Ling had been immersed in that illusion spell of the senior and her research had already been nearing completion and was at the most crucial point, so she was not very excited about going.

“Senior apprentice sister, did you meet those people at the Li Lou village who made things deliberately difficult for you?”

Yang Chen asked with some curiosity.

“No, I didn’t!”

Gongsun Ling shook her head with a smile:

“They were all extremely considerate.”

Are people so different from each other? Yang Chen only had to think for a moment to get to the solution. On one hand, Elder Wu hadn’t ascended at that time, so with Yang Chen and Elder Wu’s relationship, who would dare to offend Yang Chen’s senior apprentice sister? Moreover, many people wished to establish a relation with Yang Chen, this future high grade pill concocting master, so showing consideration for Yang Chen’s senior apprentice sister was a given.

There was one more reason: Gongsun Ling was a beautiful woman, frankly speaking, she could be regarded as an exceptionally beautiful woman. Wherever beautiful women were,

they would always be popular. The cultivation world was no exception, so some consideration was inevitable.

“Senior apprentice sister, what do you think is the aim of learning through experience?”

Yang Chen asked a question.

“To increase experience and fighting experience.”

Gongsun Ling was no fool, she naturally understood what Yang Chen wanted to say:

“I have fought with those underground spirit beasts in the Immortal Falling Well with great effort, I didn’t waste these ten years.”

Yang Chen believed her. After she returned, her killing intent was completely genuine, she had clearly worked hard in the Immortal Falling Well.

“Senior apprentice sister, did you receive any injuries in the Immortal Falling Well?”

Yang Chen asked with a smile.

“No, I didn’t!”

Gongsun Ling shook her head:

“You said that, when fighting with someone, one must properly familiarize oneself with the opponent and find his weaknesses. When I dealt with those underground spirit beasts, I scored complete victories!”

While saying this, Gongsun Ling felt quite proud.

“Alas!”

Yang Chen heaved a long sigh:

“It is quite troublesome that you didn’t sustain any injuries. Senior apprentice sister, in the future you will not always confront enemies whom you can defeat and neither will you never suffer injuries. Have you thought about what your response would be if you suffered injuries? Whether you should fight on with all of your might? Or whether you should flee immediately? Or perhaps you wouldn’t know what to do?

Gongsun Ling had apparently never thought about such a problem before. Yang Chen’s question was like a deafening blast in Gongsun Ling’s ears.

From the beginning, Gongsun Ling’s understanding of learning through experience was completely different from Yang Chen’s thoughts. This was not only Gongsun Ling’s problem, but rather the problem of the entire Pure Yang Palace.



For Yang Chen, it was one of the reasons why Pure Yang Palace was exterminated in his previous life. Pure Yang Palace had always been extremely moderate, everyone there only thought of immersing themselves in cultivation, without paying any attention to the outside world. Aside from matters that had some relation with them, they would only use force as a last resort.

This gained the Pure Yang Palace a reputation of being an upright and honest sect, but it didn't have the slightest bit of use regarding the expansion of Pure Yang Palace. Pure Yang Palace didn't had the slightest desire for a power struggle, but others didn't think so. On the contrary, they thought that it was just an angle to gain fame. Pure Yang Palace had also defended its disciples several times, making people think that Pure Yang Palace had an ulterior motive and was hiding its strength, further adding to the evil designs that the Greatest Heaven Sect had for Pure Yang Palace. They were just waiting to find a reason to exterminate the sect.

Gongsun Ling's thinking clearly represented Pure Yang Palace's ideal manner, maintaining an attitude of not caring for outside matters. Regarding cultivation, this kind of attitude would not easily give rise to a heart's devil, but regarding survival and battles, this kind of attitude was deadly.

In this life, Yang Chen would not allow the past tragedies to repeat themselves. He had already begun to secretly influence the entire Pure Yang Palace, convinced that after several decades or maybe a century, Pure Yang Palace would become a completely different Pure Yang Palace.

“What would be difference in experience this time?”

A genius was a genius. Gongsun Ling quickly understood the underlying reason. Even if Yang Chen could not change the regular thinking of Gongsun Ling within a short time, Yang Chen had said something about life and death battles in the future and Gongsun Ling was no fool, she clearly knew right from wrong.

“This time, we are going to kill people!”

Yang Chen didn't conceal it any longer and clearly stated his intentions:

“The opponents are comprised of both strong and weak, perhaps they don't even have Foundation stage or qi layer youngsters, perhaps their experts are JieDan stage cultivators. We are going to kill these people, but there won't be certainty like the underground spirit beasts!”

“Good!”

After a small moment of hesitation, Gongsun Ling nodded her head. ‘Killing people’, these words created a slight resistance in her mind, but she was clear that Yang Chen would not harm her.

Although the old tree demon was accompanying them, Yang Chen wanted Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling to experience life and death fights this time and thus hadn't told them about the old tree demon, he had asked him to only assist them at the most crucial

time. This crucial time was the time when he was certain that Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling were facing a matter of life and death, otherwise even if they sustained injuries, these two women should deal with it themselves.

During the entire journey, the old tree demon's divided body was concealed within Yang Chen's Medicine Garden, enjoying the huge amount of spirit power, and cultivating. As for outside matters, they were completely handled by Yang Chen.

Apart from Palace Master Zhong Jiao, Yang Chen and the old tree demon, nobody knew that the old tree demon was accompanying them, on the contrary, many people had seen Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling leaving together, giving rise to many guesses within the Pure Yang Palace.

“Good news!”

At a secret hideout of the clan, an elder hastily rushed towards the clan chief's room and shouted with great excitement:

“Yang Chen, Gao Yue and another Foundation stage female disciple of the Pure Yang Palace have left together to gain some experience, this is an exceptionally good opportunity for us!”

“Is this information reliable?”

The clan chief's eyes began to shine.

“It certainly is!”

The elder was also excited:

“We have received fellow daoist He LianYun’s letter, and have also received this news from a clansman hidden in the MeiQing Mountains, who had seen those three come to the market there to make some purchases and then leave.”

“Do we know where they went to gain experience?”

Clan Chief excitedly asked.

“Fellow daoist He LianYun said that they intend to go to Liang Yang Mountain’s spirit beast market with the intention to purchase something.”

Elder quickly replied.

“En!”

Clan Chief stroked his beard and issued the command:

“Call all other elders over here, we should discuss the strategy to attack.”

“Yes!”

The elder agreed and quickly left to inform all the other elders.

Feeling complacent, the people of the clan hadn't even anticipated that, while they were discussing about dealing with Yang Chen, the Pure Yang Palace had already classified them as targets for attacking.

Dealing with these three, Gao Yue who had sealed her cultivation and hadn't even reached the Foundation stage, as well as two Foundation stage youngsters, Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling, the people of the clan didn't think that they would have any trouble and only dispatched three JieDan stage experts with three Foundation stage clansmen. Furthermore, they also sent seven qi layer youngsters to act as their helpers.

All of them were waiting on the only path between the MeiQing Mountains and Yang Liang Mountain to ambush them. The qi layer disciples were scattered in all directions to observe an area with a radius of ten miles. As long as they saw even a hint of Yang Chen and his group, they were to immediately report back.

Within this area, the clansmen had set up the most formidable flags they could purchase. As long as someone entered a ten miles radius, they would be immediately trapped. In order to capture Yang Chen alive, the clansmen had made special efforts. They had even prepared to move everything, in case Yang Chen and his group did not come from this road.

Naturally, they needed to keep track of Yang Chen's whereabouts

at all times and for that it was necessary to have a secret expert carefully tracking them. Moreover, he also had to be able to notify the clansmen lying in ambush at all times.

But those pitiful clansmen absolutely hadn't anticipated that their JieDan stage expert, when he spied on Yang Chen and the other two, concealing his spiritual awareness as much as he could, he was immediately spotted by Yang Chen and Gao Yue, like spotting a torch in a pitch black night.

After the duo cultivation of spirit awareness with Yang Chen, Gao Yue's spiritual awareness had already reached mid the JieDan stage, moreover her spiritual awareness had also gone through an extreme transformation. When the unfamiliar spiritual awareness spied on her for the first time, Gao Yue immediately discovered it. As for Yang Chen, nothing needed to be said. The formidable spiritual awareness threads from the cultivation of the Three Purities Secrets had even discovered the Da Cheng stage expert Gui Shanyou, so discovering this trifling clan's JieDan expert was simplicity itself.

“It seems that someone can't wait.”

When Yang Chen and Gao Yue glanced at each other, Yang Chen said with a smile.

Among the three people, Gongsun Ling's spiritual awareness was the worst and she wasn't able to discover the enemy, but she could see from Yang Chen's and Gao Yue's reaction that a formidable enemy had appeared.

“What should we do?”

After talking with Yang Chen last time, Gongsun Ling’s entire body seemed to be craving for a fight. Since Yang Chen and Gao Yue had discovered this anomaly, she also wanted to try.

“No need to worry right now!”

Yang Chen casually waved his hand, stopping Gongsun Ling from getting impulsive:

“We must first find where this is person and if we are on the right track or not. However, regardless of whoever he is, he will be in big trouble!”

# Chapter 184 - Mere Worldly Possessions Are Nothing To Worry About

---

For Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling, this was the first time someone was targeting them. Gao Yue was still fine compared to Gongsun Ling. She had experienced someone attacking her at the Great NanHuang Mountains, but Gongsun Ling never had such experience.

The experienced Gao Yue hated such actions even more, especially right now, when these people were targeting Yang Chen. Unconsciously, both Gao Yue's and Yang Chen's minds were set on each other more seriously, thinking that they could allow themselves to be hurt, but not the other person.

Moreover it was Gongsun Ling's first time facing a life and death battle within the cultivation world. Although she had already experienced the sect's martial art competition and had also tempered herself at the Immortal Falling Well, this was her first time fighting a true life and death battle. What astonished Yang Chen was that, even under these circumstances, Gongsun Ling didn't seem to be the slightest bit nervous, instead she seemed to be looking forward to it.

The thirst for battle was perhaps fostered in the Immortal Falling Well, but at that time Gongsun Ling had only faced underground spirit beasts and hadn't thought of targeting cultivators. Right now, that thirst for killing evolved from the bottom of her heart had been rekindled after her discussion with Yang Chen. Perhaps Yang Chen had confidence that Gongsun Ling would walk even further in this life.



After discovering the enemy's presence, under probe of Gui Shanyou's spiritual awareness, everyone knew what kind of tricks the enemy had planned. Spell flags were placed properly, but they couldn't hide them from this formidable Da Cheng stage expert.

Naturally, Yang Chen was the one who told the others everything, as Gui Shanyou's existence had to be kept hidden from them. Yang Chen absolutely didn't want Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling to think that they had a support, otherwise if they walked into battle knowing that they would never be defeated, the opportunity to temper themselves would be meaningless.

“That is the coiling spell.”

In the field of spell formations, if Yang Chen didn't have the knowledge of a Great Principal Golden Immortal from his previous life, then the most formidable among them was Gongsun Ling, who identified the spell formation of the spell flag with one glance:

“It is used to capture people, not kill them. I can't arrange such a formation, at the moment.”

Having enough insights but not enough strength was a normal thing. Neither Yang Chen nor Gao Yue found it strange, but Yang Chen intended to temper Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling, so he didn't say anything, moreover this entire battle was just for the benefit of his master and his senior apprentice sister.

From another point of view, it would seem that Yang Chen was

instructing his master and senior apprentice sister. Just from the aspect of seniority, this was in reverse order. It was an extremely strange affair. Even more than instructing, he seemed to be testing them.

In their personal opinion however, it was not strange. Yang Chen had long ago proven that his battle experience and ability to battle was much higher than theirs, not to mention others, just the number of qiankun pouches which Yang Chen had obtained after killing enemies was sufficient proof of everything. Let alone the life and death challenges which he had won against people stronger than him.

“What should we do?”

Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling was frantically thinking about their approach. Yang Chen had already told them about the enemy's strength, three JieDan stage experts, three Foundation stage experts and a few qi layer cultivators which shouldn't be much of a problem, but the first six people were formidable, so regardless of anything, they had to be defeated first.

Taking another way was also an option, but that would certainly make them look cowardly. Moreover, both women understood Yang Chen's intentions, and didn't want to step aside. They also realized that if they conceded there, if a similar situation happened in the future, it would be very troublesome and having such matter gnawing at their mind would certainly be detrimental to their cultivation.

“I can tell you my appearance hiding spell formation, but we still

won't be able to break away from the entanglement of the coiling spell formation.”

Gongsun Ling spoke about the things she could handle:

“I have another spell formation which can restrain the coiling spell, but my cultivation is not sufficient. Even if I stake all of my spirit power in it, I would still be unable to resist it. But if aunt master Gao helps me, then maybe we can do something, but she will be unable to protect herself from enemies.”

After thinking of everything, they understood that breaking a high grade spell flag could only be done by relying on another spell formation to break it. Just relying on Gao Yue who only had the strength of the initial JieDan stage, they simply would not be able to handle three JieDan stage experts, but if they used spell formations, they may be able to trap the enemy and then kill them or cut off their limbs, and everything would be easy.

There was only one problem: their spirit power was insufficient. Even if the spirit power of Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling was combined, it still wouldn't be enough to match up with the three JieDan experts. Clearly, they were in a disadvantageous position.

“If you just require spirit power for the spell formation, I may have a way.”

Yang Chen was not worried much about Gongsun Ling failing. As long as they had a method, he would do everything he could to

help with it. Since Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling had both agreed that this was the best method, Yang Chen would naturally support it:

“If the spirit power for the spell formation is not enough, use spirit stones.”

“They are spell flags refined by three JieDan stage experts, they also have spirit stones. We will not be able to compete with them.”

Gongsun Ling shook her head. She wasn't very optimistic regarding Yang Chen's suggestion to use spirit stones to solve the problem of their spirit power being insufficient:

“The spirit stones used by the two spell formations will be finite, we would have to use at least two whole pieces, possibly it would also be completely exhausted. This is no good!”

“There are no certain things in this world. Maybe it will work!”

Yang Chen smiled and took out two whole spirit stones and placed them in front of Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling.

“Just spirit stones won't work, we require.....”

Gongsun Ling could only speak half the sentence and then couldn't say another word. On the other side, Gao Yue was also looking at Yang Chen in astonishment, not daring to believe what she was seeing.

Two pieces of top quality spirit stones, each seemed to be around one jin, twinkling brightly within Yang Chen's hands like two bright pearls, attracting the attention of both women.

“These spirit stones should be enough, shouldn't they?”

Yang Chen asked with a smile.

“Enough!”

Gongsun Ling replied a little sluggishly, taking the two jin of top grade spirit stones, that were actually equivalent to two hundred jin of high grade spirit stones, twenty thousand jin of middle grade spirit stones and two million jin of low grade spirit stones. With this much, forget about dealing with some JieDan stage expert's trifling coiling spell, even if a peak YuanYung stage cultivator had been there, in terms of spirit power, they still wouldn't be at a disadvantage.

“So, what's next?”

Yang Chen pulled Gongsun Ling's little hand and pushed the spirit stones in her hand.

“Do you really intend to use these two top grade spirit stones?”

Even with spirit stones in her hand, Gongsun Ling still couldn't

dare to believe it. While holding them, she clenched her hands as tightly as she could to feel that sensation of the spirit stones, ready to overflow, and sense the extremely smooth and soft surface, only then could she believe it. But when she was allowed to use both of the spirit stones immediately, she still hesitated a little.

“These are mere worldly possessions, as long as we can obtain victory, this is not too high of a price to pay.”

Yang Chen nodded his head, as if instructing both of them and continued to speak:

“At the crucial time, even if it is your destined flying sword, you should be ready to abandon it. Always remember, your life is far more precious than these mere worldly possessions.”

The argument was quite easy to understand but when the time came, it may not be so easy to follow it. Even Gao Yue, who was a JieDan stage expert, had never seen a top grade spirit stone before.

Just these two spirit stones easily surpassed both Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling’s entire wealth combined, at least by a hundred times. So when they were suddenly asked to use such a large amount of wealth, they could not help but feel astonished.

Gao Yue quickly understood something and subtly raised her head, glancing at Yang Chen, just when Yang Chen was looking straight at her with a smile dancing in his eyes. A trace of a smile also blossomed on Gao Yue’s face. Looking into Yang Chen’s eyes, she felt very grateful.

After another moment, Gongsun Ling also finally looked up from her internal struggle and took a deep breath, but her expression clearly conveyed that she had been relieved of some burden.

“I understand, younger apprentice brother Yang!”

Gongsun Ling faintly nodded her head towards Yang Chen:

“I used to believe that I was already unaffected by worldly possessions, but after seeing right now, it seems that was not the case before.”

Tossing the spirit stones around in her hand, Gongsun Ling smiled without any worries:

“Then let’s see how formidable the spell formation will be after being propelled by top quality spirit stones.”

Gao Yue was also thinking of the same thing. Cultivators should never have to worry about worldly possessions, only then could they completely free their minds. But, in the end, cultivators were also people and knew the importance of wealth and companionship. While everyone was vying for these, they could also subconsciously get caught up in the worries for mortal treasures.

Yang Chen’s lesson allowed both of them to undergo a small baptism for the first time. Their mental state blossomed even

more, which naturally would be very beneficial towards their cultivation.

Although Gongsun Ling's research of that senior's illusion spell was not complete, she could already make a lesser imitation. As for another spell formation which would resist the coiling spell, it was simply the five phases sword attack spell formation. As long as the attacks were sufficiently incisive, regardless of what kind of entanglement it was, everything could be cut.

The JieDan expert monitoring the three people didn't dare to get too close and kept looking at the three of them talking from afar for a good moment, then he sat down on the ground to rest. Afterwards he disappeared from where he had appeared in a flash.

The JieDan expert suddenly felt something amiss and could not help but rub his eyes. When he looked again, he became certain that the three people had certainly disappeared from their original place. Greatly alarmed, the JieDan expert didn't even care about covering his tracks and directly rushed to the place where those three had disappeared just a moment ago.

Yang Chen and both women had entered the illusion spell arranged by Gongsun Ling. Although this illusion spell didn't have any killing power, it had a strong invisibility effect. The people using it couldn't even be discovered by using spiritual awareness. They could only be discovered if someone walked into the region.

The three inside the spell could clearly see the figure of that JieDan stage expert rushing over. Seeing the silhouette, Gongsun Ling faintly laughed and with a tremble, the spirit stone embedded



in the spell flag fell to the ground.

She was very fortunate. Under a large amount of stress, that JieDan expert directly entered the killing spell and basically didn't have any time to respond.

But still, the reaction of that JieDan expert was quite fast. He immediately summoned a magic weapon. The magic weapon was called out hurriedly however. In front of the attack power of the spell formation, driven by top quality spirit stones, the defensive magic weapon was simply like paper.

Bang!

Just as the armor took shape on his body, it was directly crushed into pieces by the powerful attack of the spell formation. As for the expert himself, his body trembled violently and he began to puff out blood madly. With great injuries, he wasn't able to maintain the armor anymore and many formless flying swords pierced his body as if it was a sieve.

“So simple? How is it possible?”

Gongsun Ling simply didn't dare to believe what she was seeing. A JieDan stage expert hadn't even been able to stand up in front of her. The difference between their strengths and the actual result was very shocking, which put Gongsun Ling at a loss for a good moment.

“The five phases sword spell formation which only has offensive strength is the most simple spell formation and perhaps because it is the simplest spell formation, it can use all of its strength on attacking and can also make the most efficient use of spirit power in the spirit stone.”

Yang Chen lauded:

“The choice of spell formation is quite good!”

Gongsun Ling was both frightened and delighted. Admittedly, killing this JieDan expert had a hint of a sneak attack, the enemy basically didn't have the time to respond, but it also clearly showed that it was not necessary that only a highly complex spell formation would shine in battles. Sometimes the simplest spell formation used correctly could reveal astonishing strength.

This kind of real combat was a completely different experience for Gongsun Ling. Compared to killing those underground spirit beasts who didn't have any intelligence, by attracting them to the simplest traps, it was more complex and completely novel.

Their enemies were a few JieDan stage experts, moreover they still didn't know anything, so this was the perfect time. The illusion spell made by Gongsun Ling allowed the three people to noiselessly approach those people who were waiting to ambush them. At this point of time, the ending those people desired had become a dream.

“Isn't such a method despicable?”

Gongsun Ling still hadn't completely accepted this method and could not help but ask Yang Chen, who was hidden within the illusionary spell some distance away from her.

“So is it righteous, that those people have sent so many JieDan stage and Foundation stage cultivators to attack us three people?”

Yang Chen didn't reply directly, but rather asked a rhetorical question.

“So, even if we won by using such a method and this method worked again in the future, would it also be usable at the time of a tribulation?”

Before reaching the Foundation stage, Gongsun Ling had been deeply influenced by the academics of the sect and hence still resisted launching a sneak attack.

“I am not asking senior apprentice sister to use this kind of method every time.”

Yang Chen gazed into Gongsun Ling's eyes and sternly said:

“I only wanted to let senior apprentice sister become aware that such methods can also be used. Moreover, this method was thought of by you yourself, senior apprentice sister, isn't that so? What kind is to be used at what time is entirely up to you.”

After saying this, Yang Chen seemed to be wanting to continue and added:

“Senior apprentice sister, actually the heavenly tribulations are not passed by using the same method. All of those seniors who passed the heavenly tribulation didn’t use only one method.”

“I understand!”

Gongsun Ling was worthy of being considered a genius and quickly understood Yang Chen’s intention and was no longer confused.

Gao Yue standing near them didn’t say anything, quietly listening to their dialog. Although the conversation between Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling was quite simple, the content was not profound, it still created much for her to reflect upon.

# Chapter 185 - Your Flying Swords Are My Responsibility

---

The reality didn't allow Gongsun Ling to insist on using just and honorable methods. She was a Foundation stage disciple and the enemy was a JieDan stage expert. If she confronted him openly, then that was not persisting on principle, instead it was plain foolishness.

When Gongsun Ling's five phases sword spell formation suddenly started attacking the JieDan stage expert responsible for the coiling spell, Gao Yue quickly revealed herself to obstruct another JieDan expert wanting to help to his friend.

As for those Foundation stage clansmen, they were all delivered to Yang Chen. Although nobody knew how Yang Chen would deal with them, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling had never doubted once that Yang Chen would not be able to easily take care of them.

Yang Chen indeed took care of the three Foundation stage clansmen with the second wood flying sword. At the moment when Gongsun Ling started attacking, he immediately got rid of the closest person and soon after that, the other two were also covered in a huge blood-red net.

Although the master root and the master vine had been removed from the Blood Phantom Vine, under Yang Chen's meticulous care and the nourishment from two Da Cheng stage experts, it had already recovered a portion of its strength. Even though it still couldn't be compared to the Blood Phantom Vine flying sword, but for two Foundation stage youngsters it was still enough.

The qi layer disciples scattered within the ten mile radius were already marked by Gui Shanyou with his spiritual awareness. Regardless of where they would escape to, they could be easily traced. Yang Chen wasn't worried about them escaping in all directions. Even if they were given a day's headstart, the old tree demon could easily catch them. Moreover, what Yang Chen wanted to know at the moment was this group's whereabouts, where their base was located.

The JieDan stage expert fighting with Gao Yue absolutely hadn't anticipated that she could still use her JieDan stage cultivation in the fight with him. Suddenly, after one move he asked her in complete astonishment:

“Didn't you seal your cultivation? How are you still at the JieDan stage?”

“I only seal my cultivation when cultivating, no one ever said that I had to seal it while fighting!”

Gao Yue sneered and continued showering the enemy with attacks.

While on one side, Gao Yue was engaging the JieDan expert, on the other side, Gongsun Ling had completely released all of her techniques, one after another, spirit formation after spirit formation. Although the difference in realms of both sides was large, the top quality spirit stone completely made up for the deficiency.

The coiling spell was perfectly prepared to ambush Yang Chen and his group. Although Gongsun Ling had mounted a sneak attack, the coiling spell was also roused, and under the control of their spell flag, both spirit formations fiercely collided.

Countless formless threads of the coiling spell were densely coiled around the five phases sword and were sliced cleanly, which were then replaced by newly formed threads again. The main principle behind the coiling spell was the same, it would exhaust the spirit power of the people trapped inside and then capture them without injuring the trapped people.

If the person trapped inside the spell formation had a lower cultivation than the person who arranged it, then it was extremely hard to cut those formless threads. Only if the person had a powerful magic weapon or some spell formation which could destroy other spell formations, like Gongsun Ling was using, would work, otherwise there was no way to come out of the spell formation.

Their original surefire plan to capture the three people by using the spell formation controlled by three JieDan experts had completely failed. Moreover, they also had to face the surprise attack of Yang Chen and his group, while the whereabouts of the expert who had been following their trail previously were unknown and out of the three Foundation stage disciples who were sent to assist, Yang Chen had already gotten rid of two of them and the left over JieDan stage experts had also become fearful.

As for the expert fighting with Gao Yue, he was barely able to

evenly match with Gao Yue, but still hadn't gotten an opportunity to push Gao Yue into the spell. What made him even more nervous was that Yang Chen had surprisingly already become free and could help Gao Yue at any time she needed.

Although he didn't know what that weird blood-colored net was, which Yang Chen had used to deal with the three Foundation stage disciples, but something that could deal a fatal blow to two mid Foundation stage disciples was definitely not something a simple.

Yang Chen's gaze was always aptly sweeping over Gao Yue's enemy like a sharp blade. This led the expert to believe that Yang Chen would certainly attack him. In his wariness and distraction, that expert who had a cultivation of the mid JieDan stage, a little higher than Gao Yue, lost the slight advantage he held and the fight became equally matched without any chances of success in sight.

The JieDan expert controlling the spell flag also discovered, with some astonishment, that his opponent, an initial Foundation stage woman, known as Yang Chen's senior apprentice sister, was surprisingly able to control his coiling spell using a simple attacking spell formation and even after such a long stalemate wasn't showing any signs of spirit power exhaustion.

What he find harder to believe was that Gongsun Ling had the perfect opportunity to break the coiling formation controlled personally by him, but she wasn't trying to destroy it. The reason why it was locked in a stalemate for so long was because she had discovered that this battle was helpful in increasing her control over the spell formation and spell flags, and she was not willing to



lose this chance to temper herself.

Gongsun Ling had already gained the understanding that, regardless of what method was used, the goal of the battle was to win, no one wanted to lose. But under the current circumstances, she herself hadn't expected that, apart from catching them off guard in the beginning, she would be able to fight the way she wanted, a just and honorable, decisive battle.

As for the sneak attack in the beginning, Gongsun Ling didn't consider that as a sneak attack. It was just dealing with them as they were trying to deal with her group. Could it be that, since the enemy had laid ambushes for them properly, she had to walk into the trap to be called honourable by the enemy?

The spell formation controlled by the JieDan expert was greatly pressuring Gongsun Ling, but with the backing of the top quality spirit stone, Gongsun Ling could easily control the spell formation to a great extent, making the battle reach a stalemate with Gongsun Ling at a slight disadvantage, but fortunately this created a misconception in the enemy's mind that, as long as he added a little more strength, he could easily subdue Gongsun Ling.

The enemy, sorrowful for the loss of one of his companions, was waiting for the instant when Gongsun Ling would crumble. His companion was fighting against two enemies alone, but he could still resist them for the time being. As long as he could subdue this Foundation stage woman, he would get his hands free and teach a lesson to Yang Chen and Gao Yue.

As for those few Foundation stage disciples who had already died,

he didn't care about them. As long as they could obtain the pill recipe from Yang Chen, sacrificing the life of a few Foundation stage disciples was not much. Gongsun Ling was getting more and more proficient with the spell formation. She controlled the spell formation to release just the ideal amount of strength.

Under the pressure of the JieDan stage expert, within the intense battle, Gongsun Ling had displayed incomparable concentration. This five phase sword spell had already released more power than it had ever released under her control.

“It is about time, we still have many questions to ask!”

Yang Chen sitting on one side apparently discovered Gongsun Ling's situation and reminded her.

Shua!

Hearing Yang Chen's words stunned the JieDan stage expert controlling the spell formation. At the same time, he discovered with astonishment that at this instant, all of the threads of the coiling spell had been cleanly cut off.

“How is this possible?”

The JieDan expert controlling spell formation cried out in fear, but was only able to get these words out.

The sword qi as sharp as the point of a spear directly broke

through all of the restraints of the coiling spell and beheaded him, effortlessly passing through his body, bringing out a bright light, which dazzled everyone's eyes.

The JieDan expert's body fell to the ground with a loud sound. The used spell flag broke down without anyone to control it, leaving all of the matters to Gongsun Ling. His gaze turned to Gao Yue, who was deadlocked in battle with that JieDan expert.

Three against one. With both his companions dead, the remaining JieDan expert, without hesitation, ducked out of the way, wanting to run away.

Yang Chen was looking at the fight from the sidelines, how could he allow him to escape at such a time? The enemy had been able to go just two meters when he suddenly collided with an ocean of flying swords, and closely packed flying swords started falling down on him.

Yang Chen had once again used the ten thousand sword secrets. When those few thousand flying swords started attacking under Yang Chen's control, even if that fleeing clansman was a JieDan stage expert, he still had to fear the consequences.

Other than controlling his flying sword to fly faster and stop those hundreds of swords one by one, he had no other choice. But the effort he spent to obstruct those swords had already decided his life and death.

A dark red sword mixed among those thousands of sword had

passed through his flying sword at some time and was directly pointed at his body.

The JieDan expert was endlessly surprised, but he didn't pay much attention to it. As long as his cultivation was intact, he could easily block this unremarkable sword.

The sharp end grazed his skin a little, but the JieDan stage expert didn't have the chance to do anything. The small pointed end seemed to have some kind of power of attraction and the blood of his entire body was concentrated at that one point where it was grazed.

He didn't have the ability to maintain his cultivation and vitality after his blood had dried up. Like elder Hua Wanting, the JieDan expert could only keep gazing at Yang Chen with endless astonishment and despair and then, as if still trying to escape, he fell to the ground.

“Finished?”

Apparently Gao Yue didn't dare to believe it. Just the three of them had so easily taken down three JieDan stage experts and three foundation stage disciples!

“How do you have so many flying swords?”

What amazed Gongsun Ling was the flying swords produced by the ten thousand sword secrets just a moment ago. Surprisingly,

not even one flying sword was formed from sword light, all of them were real.

For a Foundation stage disciple, a suitable flying sword was not something which could be obtained easily, otherwise the Pure Yang Palace would not have used a flying sword as a reward for Yang Chen. Even until now, Gongsun Ling had only one flying sword, but when she suddenly saw Yang Chen using literally tens of thousands of swords, she was so intimidated that she couldn't even move from the spot.

“Flying swords?”

Yang Chen was startled, but he immediately caught himself and said with a carefree laugh:

“By killing people!”

These words were no lie. The majority of the flying swords he had were obtained from the Hao Yi Manor, but only Gao Yue knew about that matter, so she hadn't paid any attention, but Gongsun Ling wasn't aware of that matter.

“Several thousand flying swords? Younger apprentice brother, how many people have you killed?”

Gongsun Ling turned pale with fright on the spot:

“Wouldn't it influence your mental state?”

Although in the beginning, she was asking out of curiosity, it immediately turned to concern.

“It is not like, I killed all of them by myself, don’t worry!”

Yang Chen didn’t want the people at his side to get anxious because of him and replied, playing it down:

“Also, it will have no influence on my cultivation!”

Gongsun Ling wanted to say something more, but seeing that Gao Yue hadn’t said anything, she cleverly shut her mouth. This was probably a long story, but right now they didn’t have the time for that. Even his master, Gao Yue, hadn’t said anything, so she, his senior apprentice sister, had no need to be talkative. But she was still very amazed that Yang Chen had such a great helper.

But this would also explain how Yang Chen could easily take out two top grade spirit stones. The wealth he had collected from killing several thousands of people, all together could even it out.

However, Gongsun Ling still didn’t dare to believe that her younger apprentice brother had taken the lives of so many people within such a short amount of time, merely a few decades. Even if Yang Chen was an executioner, didn’t it seem like he was just fond of killing?

While the two women still hadn’t recovered from their shock,

Yang Chen had already begun to sweep the battlefield leisurely. Starting from the JieDan expert who had pursued them at the beginning, three JieDan stage experts and three Foundation stage cultivators, six qiankun pouch were placed in front of the three people.

“Choose!”

Yang Chen waved his hand, assuming the role of the one dividing the gains.

Both women didn't have experience in killing people and taking their things, both were looking at each other in dismay and nobody moved.

“It is a simple matter, there is no use of thinking so much.”

Looking at their expressions, Yang Chen knew what they were thinking and once again substituted for them:

“Three qiankun pouches of three JieDan experts, one person one pouch, the same goes for the Foundation stage cultivators and dividing the loot is already completed!”

With this, both women had received two qiankun pouches respectively and were looking at Yang Chen as an assistant should, thinking about what kind of treasures were inside the qiankun pouches. Gao Yue was the first one to force a smile. Soon after that, Gongsun Ling began to giggle and then burst out laughing.

“This world is like this. The strong prey on the weak. It isn’t merciful.”

Without lifting his head, Yang Chen started talking while looking at the spoils of war:

“In the future, many such things will happen, you should form a habit. Don’t think too much about it. If they want to kill us and we don’t kill them, the ones who are dead will be us. I don’t know about you, but I don’t have the intention of helping them and dying.”

Both women had already taken their loot, regardless of whatever being said. Cultivators should always be optimistic. Since the matter had already reached this stage, then it was not ill gotten gains. Naturally they would have a clear conscience taking it. But experiencing so much after the first time, apparently there would be changes in their ideals, otherwise they would just be their previous selves.

“These flying swords aren’t useful for you, so I will repair and use them!”

Yang Chen didn’t divide the flying swords with varying grades, and instead tossed them all into his own qiankun pouch.

“Yang Chen, both me and your senior apprentice sister don’t have any good flying swords, what do you say?”



Gao Yue said to Yang Chen with a teasing smile, as if making fun of him:

“The Red Sun Metal Soul which I had purchased at a high price was entirely used on your Bright Ray Sword, can’t you show even a little bit of gratitude?”

“Be relieved, master!”

Yang Chen patted his chest, taking charge:

“Leave your destined flying swords to me. They will certainly not be inferior to what great master is using!”

# Chapter 186 - Clan Extermination

---

The status of these people was absolutely clear, especially from that clan's cultivation method and other things within their qiankun pouches there was no more doubt.

The clansmen surprisingly had the intention of killing Yang Chen and Gao Yue. It was not appropriate to go back to Palace Master Zhong Jiao and explain everything him. Just because of the fact that they intended to target Gao Yue, they were already destined for doom.

Although the experts had died, those qi layer disciples were still alive. Seeing that the events were far from encouraging, each and every one of them began to flee. Unfortunately, under the spiritual awareness imprint of the old tree demon, they hadn't even run a few miles before they were captured by Yang Chen and his group, who were flying on flying swords. Within less than half a day, all seven of them were lying down in front of Yang Chen and other two.

Yang Chen didn't have to use any tricks to deal with these people, just looking at the corpses of the three JieDan stage experts had already scared them stiff. Each and every one of them started talking about all of the different matters in their clan for the last few years, to save their lives. As for the location of the clan, obtaining it was as easy as pie.

“Surprisingly, some mysterious person also knew that master sealed her cultivation and is training in a water attributed cultivation method!”

After obtaining their confessions and confirming it, Yang Chen snorted:

“It seems that there is still someone inside the Pure Yang Palace who wants something to happen to us!”

Gao Yue wrinkled her brows, forming a knot. Surprisingly this matter also involved someone from the Pure Yang Palace. It was not just a simple matter about the sect’s reputation, instead it was a great problem inside of the sect.

“Should we notify the Palace Master?”

Gongsun Ling looked from Yang Chen to Gao Yue and could not help but ask.

“Don’t be so hasty!”

Yang Chen easily sealed the five senses of the qi layer clansmen whom they had apprehended and put them into the Medicine Garden. Then he clapped his hands:

“We will arrest those clansmen and their chief and then deliver them to the Palace Master to make the decision.”

This was a rather good way. Nobody could say then that Yang Chen had massacred them for nothing. In any case, since they

knew the location of the clan, the rest was simple.

The Clan Chief and some elders who had remained behind to take care of things were waiting expectantly for the dispatched clansmen to return triumphantly. Despite knowing that the pill recipe in Yang Chen's hand certainly didn't belong to their ancestor, if they could gain that pill recipe, it would greatly increase the status of their clan among other cultivators.

In those days, it was indeed a great expert who used to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill, but the pill recipe could only be understood by a Da Cheng stage pill concocting expert, with whom these later generations of the clan basically did not have any connection. Moreover, it was almost impossible to rise to the Da Cheng stage by just relying on pills. This was also one of the reasons of the decline of the clan.

The clan currently required a kind of pill which could give a great boost to spirit power at the JieDan stage or even the Foundation stage, which the children of the clan could use and Yang Chen had appeared at the perfect time, giving the clan chief the opportunity he was looking for.

Initially, they hadn't thought that they had any connection with this matter, but when He LianYun dropped in and made his almost reasonable analysis, it gave rise to hope among the clansmen. If such a matter succeeded, they could gain such a pill recipe together with the Heaven Seizing Pill and the clan would also gain in reputation.

The most important fact was that, even if they lost, based on the

fact that Pure Yang Palace had always been treating people mercifully, the worst that could happen was that they would have to apologise, but would not have to suffer any substantial damage. Who wouldn't take such a very beneficial gamble with such enticing benefits and negligible consequences?

Opportunity always comes without notice. Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling, a JieDan stage cultivator who had sealed her cultivation together with two initial Foundation stage cultivators; facing three JieDan stage cultivators and three Foundation stage cultivators, the outcome was clear as crystal.

Once he thought of the glory and honor the clan would accomplish under him after getting the pill recipe, the clan chief couldn't help but feel very complacent.

“Second Elder, what do you say, if we get hold of the pill recipe, what should be the first thing we do?”

The clan chief whose heart was filled with longing, asked the second elder, who was restlessly sitting to the side. Nobody sitting there had anything to do, so this topic of discussion gave everyone something to do.

“The first thing to do is to wash your necks!”

Before the second elder could reply, a towering voice suddenly came from outside.

“Who?”

The elders and the clan chief within the room jumped like rabbits being chased by an arrow. Someone was so close, but nobody was able to discover him? What kind of expert had come?

Naturally it was none other than Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling. Gongsun Ling was using the spell flag arranged in accordance with the illusion spell of the senior in the valley extremely cleverly. Although it didn't have any offensive power, it was incomparable in the field of hiding people. Even a YuanYing stage expert couldn't discover the existence of the spell flag if he didn't come within three meters of the spell.

This was an extremely useful tool for scouting and obtaining information. Moreover, it could also greatly assist in saving one's life at a most crucial point. Since top grade spirit stones were used at the spell core to provide spirit power, there was also no need to worry about the spirit power depleting.

After killing those clansmen, Yang Chen didn't take those two spirit stones back, and instead just gifted them to Gongsun Ling for future use. Currently she didn't have any reliable magic weapons, only those two spell formations. One purely for attacking and the other one to conceal a person. Perfect as her last resort.

As for Yang Chen's generosity, after trying to decline a few times, she accepted it without saying anything. In fact, from the time at the Heavenly Stairs, Yang Chen had been showing great consideration for her, Gongsun Ling knew this within her heart. Cultivators had long lives and they had enough time in future.

Gongsun Ling firmly believed that one day she would be able to return Yang Chen's kind intentions.

Before the clan chief and the elders in the room had the opportunity to discover the face behind the voice, they were trapped inside of a huge netting of vine. They couldn't even say anything and immediately lost consciousness.

Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling didn't have any impressive method to capture and deliver these people to the Palace Master. Capturing them alive could not be compared with killing them. Yang Chen could kill them easily, but instead of capturing them himself, asking the old tree demon would simplify things a lot.

Because of the possibility of someone from the Pure Yang Palace colluding with these people, Yang Chen didn't want one unwise move to gain him the reputation of killing people to silence them. In any case, Palace Master Zhong Jiao also found these people intolerable, so there was no need to discuss the death of these people, it was just a question of time. But before facing death, if these people could help in uncovering a spy within the Pure Yang Palace, it would still be good.

The base of the clan was hidden extremely well, perhaps they thought it was absolutely safe, so all clansmen were present there. The old tree demon only had to attack once and all the clansmen were like sitting ducks. Nobody was able to escape. In other words, the entire clan was already on the path of extermination.

Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling once again appeared on

the path of the spirit beast market at Yang Liang Market. On the entire journey, they were very relaxed, as if on a scenic tour, slowly approaching their destination.

This time, the journey took an entire two months before it was completed. Whenever they would near a human habitation on their journey, Yang Chen would take both women for a stroll.

Both women were also enjoying this experience very much. On one hand, experiencing all kinds of people, while on the other hand, confirming what they had learned. The experience in the mortal world was nothing more than this.

“We have arrived at the spirit beast market, what kind of spirit beast do you want to purchase?”

When they reached the spirit beast market, Gongsun Ling curiously asked. As for Gao Yue, she never asked reason for Yang Chen’s actions, apparently she firmly believed that Yang Chen had his reasons.

“Purchase a spirit beast?”

Yang Chen slowly shook his head, although he had experience worth thousands of years as a Great Principal Golden Immortal, he didn’t remember the mortal world having very strong spirit beasts, worthy of his attention. There was another reason for coming here, which could not be said publicly, so after shaking his head, he said:



“If you find a suitable spirit beast, there is no harm in buying it.”

Yang Chen’s words didn’t match his expression, which Gongsun Ling clearly understood. In any case, there were more than enough secrets on Yang Chen. Gongsun Ling didn’t find it anything strange, but one thing she believed firmly was that Yang Chen would not harm her in any case.

“You are a sword cultivator, moreover you also are a highly proficient pill concocting expert, you should not waste too much energy on other things, so as to avoid distractions.”

Seeing that Gao Yue didn’t have any intention to stop Yang Chen, she couldn’t help but warn him.

“Many thanks senior apprentice sister, I will remember it!”

Yang Chen smiled and nodded his head. Afterwards he immediately turned towards the spirit beast market gate’s avenue and walked two steps and, as if remembering something, he turned around and warned seriously:

“Regardless of what I say or do, you should not be baffled. I have my own reasons!”

Gongsun Ling and Gao Yue glanced at each other and, having no alternative, forced a bitter laugh, shaking their heads in tacit understanding, following after Yang Chen into the spirit beast market.

The spirit beast market was located within a huge valley, covering an area of several hundred hectares. As the name implied, the spirit beast market was an area for dealing with spirit beasts, which was the main commodity of this region. There were several hundred stores in this region, all of them engaging in spirit beast trade.

Yang Liang mountain was the territory of the Beast Taming Sect. The Beast Taming Sect was the most powerful sect in the field of controlling troublesome spirit beasts and taming them into pets. So the spirit beast market being here was not that strange.

Despite Yang Chen's reputation in the outer world, nobody recognized him here. Who would pay attention to a Foundation stage youngster? Let alone the Foundation stage, people here wouldn't even pay much attention to JieDan stage cultivators. After all, JieDan stage cultivators there were always one or two of them here.

Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling however were still attracting the gazes of many people. The beauty of both women could be considered as among the finest among cultivators. Beautiful people always attracted attention wherever they went, cultivators were no exception. Who would not watch a beautiful woman?

Because of his relationship with the two women, Yang Chen was also a target of some attention. Actually, their ranks were also a little strange, Yang Chen was walking in the front, with a JieDan and a Foundation stage cultivator walking behind him. This was the opposite of the expected order, with Gao Yue in front and Yang

Chen and Gongsun Ling following behind.

But Yang Chen didn't pay any attention to the weird looks cultivators were casting their way. He went inside the first shop he saw in the spirit beast market and then went into another one and then continued the same, observing the spirit beasts inside.

In every shop he entered, Yang Chen only asked one question:

“Do you have any spirit beast pets of the ox family?”

The ox family demon beasts were either quite rare or were very strong like the Fullmoon Rhinoceros. If someone had such a demon beast, then who would be willing to part with it? After hearing Yang Chen's question, all shop owners just shook their heads, forcing a bitter laugh.

Yang Chen wasn't discouraged in the least and continued going through shops. Although each time was in vain, he didn't give up. His strange actions quickly caught people's curiosity.

He didn't conceal the mark of the Pure Yang Palace, so any experienced person would know that those three belonged to the Pure Yang Palace. But the Pure Yang Palace was a sect comprised of cultivators. Why would they send people to buy spirit beast pets? Moreover, why such a rare spirit beast? The most baffling thing was that they had sent out a Foundation stage disciple for it.

“Why is the Pure Yang Palace purchasing spirit beasts?”

After those three had visited more than a dozen stores, some untimely voice suddenly echoed in everyone's ears.

Cultivators purchasing spirit beasts was not something to make a fuss about, but the majority of people who bought them were either from sects like the Beast Taming Sect, which relied mainly on taming beasts, some rogue cultivators or disciples of some small sect, but the disciples of a big sect like the Pure Yang Palace rarely came to purchase them.

Spirit Beasts require a lot of energy to breed. To cultivate a formidable spirit beast, not only were all kinds of high grade elixirs required, but also a large amount of time and the use of its owner's spirit power for nourishment.

Disciples of big sects were all proficient in the cultivation of one or two things, like sword cultivators, pill concocting masters, tool refining masters or spell formations among others. Once in a while, there were some cultivators proficient in taming beasts, but they were as rare as the feathers of a phoenix. Especially after the great calamity of the devil cultivation, the upper echelons of all big sects were restraining their disciples even more, not allowing them to research such messy things, thus, these people being so baffled was quite normal.

Following this sound, the three people turned to look. They saw an extremely handsome youth standing in the direction of the voice, his entire body was covered with white clothes, untainted by even a speck of dust. On his waist was a purple spirit beast pouch, looking towards them with his eyes shining brightly. That voice a

moment ago was definitely his.

“Can disciples of the Pure Yang Palace not buy spirit beasts?”

Yang Chen coldly glanced at him and retorted. Although the other person was looking at them, his gaze was concentrated on Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling, trying to show off that he was cultured and elegant in front of them, but he was not very good at making sarcastic remarks.

“Of course you can!”

The white clothed youth smiled and advanced towards them. When he smiled, it made people feel as if they were bathing in the spring wind, as his eyes were shining brilliantly.

“My name is Su Mosheng, the disciple of Windflower Pavilion, nice to meet you fellow daoists!”

Stopping some distance away from the three people, Su Mosheng cupped his hands towards Yang Chen and his group:

“If fellow daoists really intend to purchase some spirit beasts, then this lowly me can provide a little help.”

“We don’t dare to trouble you, we can find it by ourselves!”

Yang Chen didn’t have a favorable opinion of people who took

such opportunities to hit on someone, so he cupped his hands and returned the salutations, immediately declining.

“Myself is very familiar with the surroundings, if you require anything, this lowly me can lead the way.”

Su Mosheng didn't show the slightest unhappiness and was still beaming with a smile like before, but his gaze was passionately concentrated on Gongsun Ling.

# Chapter 187 - Wanting To Restore A Constituent Spirit

---

Su Mosheng hadn't concealed his gaze from the start. Yang Chen and Gao Yue could see it clearly. Even Gongsun Ling could see the lust in his eyes. However, Yang Chen and Gao Yue didn't say much.

Gongsun Ling's natural talent was brilliant. Even the entire Pure Yang Palace approved of it. Even many lower disciples wanted to get close to Gongsun Ling and had the intention of forming a dao companionship with her, but Gongsun Ling never paid heed to such intentions.

Clearly Su Mosheng had either made out Gongsun Ling's talent in one glance or he already knew about her and was thinking of some plan.

The reason why Yang Chen and Gao Yue hadn't said anything was because Pure Yang Palace didn't forbid disciples from taking dao companions from other sects. All the big sects had a similar stance on this point, even the Green Jade Immortal Islands' Shi Shanshan still had an unclear relation with Yang Chen. Since it was Gongsun Ling's matter, she had to take care of it herself.

“Many thanks, fellow daoist Su!”

A smile spread on Gongsun Ling's face and she suddenly turned towards Yang Chen and said:

“Junior Apprentice Brother, allow fellow daoist Su to help us, perhaps the matter will be resolved quickly.”

“Then we will trouble you!”

Yang Chen was also not disgruntled and rushed to thank Su Mosheng with a faint smile.

“There is no harm!”

Su Mosheng was exalted and approached a few steps closer, making an inviting gesture and asked:

“I still don’t know the names of the esteemed fellow daoists?”

Yang Chen took the initiative and made the introduction for the three people. Suddenly, a flash of realization could be seen on Su Mosheng’s face, as if he was waiting to meet them for a long time. Looking at his slightly amazed expression, he apparently hadn’t expected to meet a famous person such as Yang Chen.

“I wonder what kind of spirit beast is fellow daoist Yang looking for?”

After greeting them once Su Mosheng, he asked for Yang Chen’s purpose of coming:



“This lowly me knows a thing or two about spirit beasts, whatever request fellow daoist has, you should ask for it.”

“Myself has been looking for a spirit beast of the ox family. The best would be to purchase a demon beast.”

Yang Chen did not hide it and confidently answered. In any case, he had intended to let people know from the beginning.

“A spirit beast of the ox family?”

Su Mosheng wrinkled his brows:

“Difficult! The ox family is quite rare, ordinary ones are not enough for your request, this is extremely difficult!”

After shaking his head for a moment, Su Mosheng inquisitively asked:

“Does it have to be the ox family? Will others not do?”

“The ox family would have been the most suitable, but since there aren’t any, I can only use others in place of it.”

Yang Chen also knew that spirit beasts of ox family are hard to come by, so he took a step back.

“Forgive me for speaking bluntly!”

Su Mosheng was curious about Yang Chen’s purpose and trying to probe out, he asked:

“Pure Yang Palace hasn’t been an expert at taming spirit beasts, moreover cultivating a formidable spirit beast requires a lot of energy. Fellow daoist, if you already have something in which you are proficient, together with pill concocting, you shouldn’t distract yourself.”

These words seemed to be friendly advice, but seeing as Yang Chen and Su Mosheng had only met for the first time today, he seemed to be talking too familiarly with strangers. But Su Mosheng’s words were certainly nicely put, the expression on his face was also sincere, making it seem that he had certainly thought about Yang Chen and didn’t have any other thoughts.

“Eh, I am not looking to cultivate a spirit beast.”

Yang Chen waved his hand:

“It is also related to pill concocting.”

Once these word came out of his mouth, Gao Yue’s eyes opened widely. Related with pill concocting. In relation with spirit beasts, he had just recently resolved a dispute over the Heaven Seizing Pill. What was Yang Chen doing now? Was the amount of trouble still not large enough for him?

Not just Gao Yue, even Gongsun Ling was looking with a similar expression towards Yang Chen. Su Mosheng standing on one side did not dare to believe his own ears. He kept looking at Yang Chen with extremely bafflement.

“My Pure Yang Palace’s secret pavilion had guardian beast of the ox family. After sustaining some injury, his spirit itself had been damaged, so I was thinking if I could make some elixir for restoring his spirit.”

Yang Chen calmly explained:

“But it has never been tested on a living guardian beast, so I was thinking about testing it on a spirit beast.”

“Oh!”

Su Mosheng suddenly understood something. Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling also relaxed within their hearts and were not that nervous anymore.

Yang Chen had become famous in the entire world because of the Heaven Seizing Pill. Everyone knew that he could make an elixir to restore the pill spirit, but right now he was just trying to restore the constituent spirit of a demon beast, which wasn’t something to make a fuss about. For the purpose of insurance, buying a spirit demon beast to experiment upon first was a good idea. Nobody could say anything.

“Since this is the matter, then myself will lead you to the biggest spirit beast shops. If we still haven’t found it, then you can only select another spirit beast.”

Su Mosheng said in a deemphasizing tone and made an inviting gesture with his hand, but his heart and mind were in great turmoil.

Su Mosheng was indeed very familiar with this place because of the good relationship between the Beast Taming Sect and the Windflower Pavilion. Moreover an elder of Su Mosheng also had a good friendship with an expert of the Beast Taming Sect. The high grade spirit beast pouch was gifted to him by that senior of the Beast Taming Sect.

Because of this relationship, Su Mosheng also knew about the internal events in the Beast Taming Sect. During the great calamity of devil cultivation, the Beast Taming Sect was one of the sects which had suffered relatively little damage, but they were not interested in devil cultivation methods at that time. Moreover, during that time, the sect was preoccupied with something else and hence didn’t have the time to pay attention to it.

After a senior of the Beast Taming Sect had ascended, he had left behind a formidable spirit beast. According to rumors it was believed to be at the Da Cheng stage, but nobody had ever seen it. This was the sect guarding secret of the Beast Taming Sect, therefore the Beast Taming Sect had steadily held the position of a second rate sect.

But more than ten years ago, this spirit beast senior's constituent spirit had slowly dissipated. Regardless of whatever methods the experts of the sect used, none had been able to solve this problem. The upper echelons of the sect had become anxious like a cat on a hot tin roof.

And now Yang Chen's words about trying to restore the constituent spirit of a guardian spirit beast of the Pure Yang Palace had lit a torch in them, as if being thrown into a deep fryer. Su Mosheng wished to immediately inform the people of the Beast Taming Sect about this and thus try to form friendship with them. But before that, he still endured the desire and acted as Yang Chen's guide.

If he didn't serve Yang Chen well, why would Yang Chen help them? Su Mosheng understood this point clearly. Even if he wanted to hit on Gongsun Ling at the beginning, that he had already gotten rid of those thoughts. First he had to concentrate on serving Yang Chen, anything else came after that.

Within the spirit beast market, the scene made many people confused. Young master Su Mosheng of the Windflower Pavilion was serving Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling like a waiter with a pleasant smile across his entire face, travelling back and forth between the biggest spirit beast shops.

Even after going to many shops, they weren't able to find an ox family spirit beast. Only one place was left, the biggest shop in the spirit beast market, the Ten Thousand Beast Pavilion, opened by the Beast Taming Sect.

“This is the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion opened by the Beast Taming Sect, if they don’t have it here, then it can’t be found anywhere in the spirit beast market.”

Su Mosheng introduced, while inviting them to go in.

“Eh?”

Originally Yang Chen had planned to follow behind Su Mosheng, but after a casual sweep over the caged beasts, which were arranged in a row outside of the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion, he could not help but show his surprise.

“What happened?”

Gao Yue had heard it clearly and hastily asked. She knew that Yang Chen had found something abnormal.

“Nothing!”

Yang Chen used his spiritual awareness again to confirm that he hadn’t been mistaken and only then did he reply to his master, playing it down and went inside, following Su Mosheng into the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion, without looking at it.

Although Yang Chen had casually ignored it as if nothing had happened, within his heart he still couldn’t dare to believe what he had seen.

When coming to the spirit beast market, Yang Chen's aim was precisely to spread the information that he could restore the constituent spirit of a living demon beast, to catch the big fish, the Beast Taming Sect.

Yang Chen knew all about the matters of the Beast Taming Sect from his previous life. In his previous life, that Da Cheng stage demon beast of the Beast Taming Sect had his constituent spirit dissipate and it had perished. Only after ascending to the Spiritual World did he learn the method of restoring the constituent spirit.

Such great resources, if Yang Chen didn't make use of them in this life, then wouldn't it be a complete waste? Seeing that it was more or less time for this event, Yang Chen had come out.

As long as he could help that spirit beast senior of the Beast Taming Sect, it didn't need to be said that he would certainly gain a good impression with the entire Beast Taming Sect. This would draw a strength more or less comparable to the Pure Yang Palace to his side.

But he hadn't thought that he would get such a pleasant surprise outside of the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion, that it would make him distrust his eyes.

"Quickly ask senior Liu to come out! These noble customers are seeking something!"

Once entering the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion, Su Mosheng

hastily instructed the outer disciple of the Beast Taming Sect to call the person responsible for the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion. He was in a hurry to inform the Beast Taming Sect about this good news.

“What kind of matter requires me to appear personally?”

Su Mosheng really had great face here. In a moment, the master of the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion, Liu Yuanfeng had personally appeared in front of everyone.

Liu Yuanfeng was an initial JieDan stage expert and because he wanted to experience the mortal world, he was put in control of the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion. He was already an acquaintance of Su Mosheng and he also showed a lot of consideration towards him. Hearing that Su Mosheng was insisting on calling him, he quickly appeared.

“This is Pure Yang Palace’s fellow daoist Yang, Yang Chen!”

Su Mosheng hastily introduced Yang Chen. Soon afterwards he immediately remembered that Gao Yue was Yang Chen’s master and she should have been introduced first, but because of his impatience he had introduced Yang Chen first, he then hurried to introduce Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling.

“It’s an honor to meet you!”

Liu Yuanfeng was worthy of being called a businessman.



Regardless of whether it was sincere or not, he immediately put on an enthusiastic face:

“Fellow daoists of the Pure Yang Palace have honored me with their presence and have brought light to my humble store! I dare not boast, but regardless of whatever kind of spirit beasts fellow daoists want, if my Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion doesn’t have it, then no other place will have it.”

“Senior Liu, fellow daoist Yang is looking for an ox family spirit beast.”

Su Mosheng had already become Yang Chen’s spokesman and spoke in place of Yang Chen. Moreover, fearing that Liu Yuanfeng would not find it important, he added further:

“A guardian beast senior of the secret pavilion of the Pure Yang Palace had been injured and thus his constituent spirit had dissipated. Fellow daoist Yang Chen wanted to test if he could use some elixir to restore it and wished to test it on a spirit beast.”

In fact, in the beginning, Liu Yuanfeng didn’t think this was important. Even if they were people brought by Su Mosheng, it was just a Foundation stage youngster, so there was no need for him to be polite. Only after hearing Yang Chen’s name, he couldn’t help but be astonished. These past few days, Yang Chen’s name had been constantly talked about. Not knowing about him was difficult.

Although he had become polite, he was only polite on the

surface, but after hearing Su Mosheng's explanation, Liu Yuanfeng almost jumped in surprise.

What kind of joke was this, restore the constituent spirit of a demon beast? So many experts of the Beast Taming Sect had been unable to solve this difficult problem, so how could a Foundation stage youngster do it? But once this thought appeared in his mind, he immediately thought of the reason why Yang Chen was being talked about currently. He suddenly remembered that there had been an incident questioning if Yang Chen could refine a pill spirit restoring elixir or not.

Restoring a pill spirit, restoring constituent spirit, if one absolutely insisted on distinguishing between them, then it could be said that a demon beast's constituent spirit was refined into a pill spirit. Another would be in the one case, the life of the demon beast is lost and in other one, the demon beast was alive. After making the connection between the two, this certainly didn't seem impossible anymore.

The expressions on Liu Yuanfeng's face changed from shock to pleasant surprise and then to crazily enthusiastic, not concealed from Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling's eyes. Both of them were unable to make any sense of the matter. Was it possible that this master of the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion was a lunatic or an idiot? How could his expressions be changing so fast?

Enthusiasm born from the bottom of the heart was naturally different. After that qi layer disciple who had gone to inform Liu Yuanfeng came out, he didn't have any opportunity to do anything. He only kept looking at master Liu, who usually was

aloof and remote with a dumbstruck expression, as master Liu transformed into the best kind of salesman: from pouring tea, to accompanying the guest, he basically ran the entire show by himself.

First he invited all three of them to sit, then this JieDan expert personally poured the best kind of tea he had and offered it to Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling, then, sitting at the position of the shopkeeper he said with some embarrassment:

“Spirit beasts and pets of the ox family are extremely rare, currently we don’t have any at the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion.”

After speaking this, he wrinkled his brows and thought for a long time, then said with some awkwardness:

“I really don’t have any way. Is it possible to use other spirit beasts?”

This time Yang Chen still hadn’t replied, but Su Mosheng already started speaking in his place:

“Senior Liu, fellow daoist Yang had said that if there really isn’t any other way, other spirit beasts would also do.”

“Then fellow daoist Yang, please take a look at the beasts in my Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion and see if you can use any. If you like something, don’t hesitate to speak.”

Liu Yuanfeng naturally wanted to satisfy Yang Chen. If Yang Chen was successful, then the one saved would not only be the guardian beast of the Pure Yang Palace, the biggest winner would definitely be the Beast Taming Sect. For this reason, the Beast Taming Sect would not mind paying the price of a few low level spirit beasts.

“Alas !”

Yang Chen sighed, showing his disappointment and stood up:

“In this case, we can only use a substitute. This junior will first take a look and then make the decision.”

“At your convenience, fellow daoist Yang!”

Liu Yuanfeng hastily indicated Su Mosheng to take his place to accompany Yang Chen and his group and made the excuse of some urgent business and ran to the rear of the Ten Thousand Beasts pavilion.

“Quickly, immediately relay this information to the sect master!”

Liu Yuanfeng used the highest grade summon he had to send the couriers to quickly relay the news to the Beast Taming Sect. Successful or not, let's consider Pure Yang Palace's Yang Chen.

# Chapter 188 - How To Resolve The Fairy Shi Situation

---

“Fellow daoist Yang, whatever kind of spirit beast you want to use, choose without any hesitation! This place has the largest number of spirit beasts in the entire spirit beast market.”

Su Mosheng enthusiastically guided Yang Chen to the place where the spirit beasts of the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion were displayed:

“They don’t have any of the ox family, but choose whichever you find suitable!”

Yang Chen smiled and nodded his head slightly and then began to look at the highest grade spirit beasts of the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion. Looking at each of them one by one, he didn’t seem satisfied with any of them.

“What? None of these are suitable?”

When Yang Chen had spent almost a time of almost two incense sticks in there and still hadn’t chosen one. Liu Yuanfeng came back from the rear courtyard and was unable to control himself but ask with some astonishment.

“Whether or not they’re suitable, this junior doesn’t know.”

Yang Chen explained with a smile and then continued casually:

“This junior can only try to sense these spirit beasts’ presence and see which one is closest to it.”

Liu Yuanfeng understood the explanation and he was very much wishing for Yang Chen to succeed. As long as he found a suitable subject and his experiment was successful, the Beast Taming Sect would gain great benefits.

When Yang Chen didn’t choose any spirit beast and shook his head in disappointment, Liu Yuanfeng’s heart felt as if it was drowning in at bottom of an ocean of hopelessness. If those spirit beasts weren’t suitable, he would have to ask the experts of the Beast Taming Sects to appear personally and ask them to catch some formidable demon beasts, like the Heavenly Fullmoon Rhinoceros.

“There still seem to be some left on the outside, I will go and take a look!”

When Yang Chen calmly began to step outside, Su Mosheng hastily followed him.

Liu Yuanfeng however didn’t follow. Those spirit beasts on the outside were the lowest grade spirit beasts and didn’t even have the qualifications to be placed inside of the shop and were thus placed outside. They weren’t even chosen by rogue cultivators who didn’t have any money, so he didn’t think that those spirit beasts would satisfy Yang Chen’s requirements in the least.

“This one? Will this one do?”

Suddenly, Liu Yuanfeng heard Su Mosheng’s astonished voice from the outside. Excitedly, he rushed outside to Yang Chen’s side.

He looked in the direction where Su Mosheng was pointing and saw a spirit beast inside of a cage, whom he would be embarrassed to even call a demon beast.

How could it be called a demon beast? It didn’t have even a little spirit power on it, if one firmly insisted, then it could be said to have an extremely small trace. In other words, it could not even be counted to the grade of demon beasts.

What astonished Liu Yuanfeng most was that this so called demon beast was just a little pup. Its ashen hair wasn’t even smooth, giving it a very filthy look.

“Fellow daoist Yang, this clearly is just a little pup, how can it be a demon beast?”

Not waiting for Liu Yunfeng to say anything, Su Mosheng had already spoken:

“Is it really suitable?”

“It had that trace of presence, that’s all. Maybe it can be used.”

Yang Chen faintly smiled and answered without saying much.

“Even tho its presence is so weak that, it basically can’t even be called a spirit beast!”

Su Mosheng was not worried that Yang Chen would choose the most formidable spirit beast. As long as he was successful, the Beast Taming Sect would even be willing to give it to him, but Yang Chen had chosen such a little pup. Wasn’t he just mocking them?

“Fellow daoist Su, you must not underestimate the little pup!”

Yang Chen turned towards Su Mosheng and faintly smiled:

“You should be aware that dogs can become as formidable as their master!”

“It is just a dog, how much stronger can it even become?”

Su Mosheng couldn’t accept it and knitted his brows.

“Yang ErLang also had a dog known as Heavenly Roar, which was more powerful than many formidable spirit beasts.”

Yang Chen laughed and after saying this, without caring if the shopkeeper Liu Yuanfeng would agree or not, directly opened that



cage and seized it by the neck, taking that little pup and bringing it in front of him.

Nobody could discover the excitement in Yang Chen's heart. Fortunately it was Yang Chen, who could maintain his calm without any change in expressions, but his heart was about to explode from happiness. Surprisingly, the mortal world had such a formidable spirit beast and what was even more fortunate was that he was the one to find it. Indeed, when it rains, it pours.

But unfortunately, everyone seeing him only considered it as a normal pup and Yang Chen didn't have a way to share his happiness with others.

Whether people considered it as a normal pup or not, Yang Chen didn't care, he remembered that, when Heavenly Roar had died, it was said that he had left behind a drop of blood essence in the mortal world which could excite the blood vessels of any demon beast.

Although this blood essence could not be said to significant compared to the wealth Yang Chen had, it could still be used to enhance the strength of this little pup. Moreover, this blood essence was also quite beneficial. It could confuse the majority of people to think that this little pup was Heavenly Roar.

“This one will do!”

Yang Chen indicated to Liu Yuanfeng that he had selected it:

“How many spirit stones?”

“If fellow daoist Yang Chen likes it, then take it without any hesitation. There is no need to pay any spirit stones!”

Liu Yuanfeng didn't know whether to laugh or cry, the difference between the favor he wanted to ask from Yang Chen and this little pup, who had just a trace of spirit power was like heaven and earth. How could he even ask for spirit stones from Yang Chen?

“It is a gift for you!”

“That won't do!”

Yang Chen directly declined:

“Senior Liu is operating the sect's business and giving it away for free would not be according to rules and this junior doesn't want to break rules. Senior, it would be good if we settled the bill.”

Yang Chen didn't want to owe somebody for such a small thing. He did not have such an intimate friendship with Liu Yuanfeng and he didn't want to gain karma which had no use for him. Business was business and friendship was friendship. Yang Chen didn't need to blame himself for this.

“Fine, if fellow daoist Yang Chen insists, then you can buy it for two low grade spirit stones!”

Liu Yuanfeng was also not unreasonable. In any case, it was only a matter of two low grade spirit stones, not worthy of arguing with Yang Chen, so he waved his hand and set the price.

“I would still like to purchase a spirit beast pouch, so that this junior has a place for it!”

Since he was acting, he had to complete the whole act, in any case, it was just a matter of a few more low grade spirit stones, so naturally he had to buy it all.

Liu Yuanfeng gave the instructions at once and that outer disciple who had been serving them swiftly returned to the shop and quickly retrieved a spirit beast pouch and delivered it to Yang Chen. This time, the clever assistant quickly announced the price, without needing for Liu Yuanfeng to speak:

“This spirit beast pouch is quite ordinary, it also costs two low grade spirit stones.”

For that little filthy pup, even this ordinary spirit beast pouch seemed to be extravagant, but since Yang Chen had insisted, there was no need to say anything more. In any case, when Liu Yuanfeng looked at Yang Chen’s serious expressions, he could not help but be glad. Fortunately he had placed this filthy pup outside to make up for the numbers, otherwise if Yang Chen hadn’t found a suitable spirit beast, it would have been a great inconvenience.

Yang Chen had guessed his intentions spot on, but unfortunately

Yang Chen could only secretly be happy within his heart and could not speak to anyone, having to swallow his happiness.

Spirit beast pouches were things which provided a spirit beast with a comfortable place to reside, moreover it allowed the spirit beast to slowly recover their energy, even if it was the most ordinary spirit beast pouch. Compared to that cage, however, it was many times more comfortable. Yang Chen immediately placed the little pup into the spirit beast pouch and then hung it from his waist.

After paying the price, Yang Chen expressed his gratitude towards Su Mosheng and then solemnly said his goodbyes to Su Mosheng and Liu Yuanfeng, and then he started moving towards Pure Yang Palace.

Regardless of how unwilling they were, Liu Yuanfeng and Su Mosheng had no option but to see off Yang Chen and his group with a smile. They didn't have any other option: if Yang Chen didn't test his method once, how could they allow him to treat the Beast Taming Sect's senior?

“What are you doing?”

After having departed from the spirit beast market for a while and checking around that no one was near them, Gao Yue asked softly.

“Purchasing a spirit beast!”

Yang Chen laughed:

“And attracting some business to concoct pills.”

“Concoct pills?”

Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling immediately thought of the matter which Yang Chen had discussed with Su Mosheng at the spirit beast market and seemed to realize something:

“Could it be, that it was the Beast Taming Sect?”

“Yes!”

Yang Chen replied, nodding his head. Very few people knew this information on the outside. Gongsun Ling and Gao Yue had not come out of the sect recently, so not knowing things was completely normal.

“And I believed that you were still toying with them for your amusement.”

Gongsun Ling also suddenly realized this and spoke in a complaining tone, not too lightly and not too harshly.

“Forget about me, senior apprentice sister. That Windflower Pavilion’s Su Mosheng seems to have taken fancy to you, congratulations!”

Yang Chen's gaze swept over Gongsun Ling and suddenly he began to tease her:

"He also seemed cultured and elegant, what do you think, Gongsun Ling?"

"Yang Chen!"

For some reason, hearing Yang Chen's joke, she suddenly grew furious:

"You should not talk rubbish! As for a dao companion, it seems that Green Jade Immortal Islands' Fairy Shi is still waiting for you, isn't she?"

Gongsun Ling didn't know why she was so angry, moreover when she blurted Fairy Shi's name, she felt unhappy in her heart. This mysterious sensation was too difficult to bear for her.

Once the name of Fairy Shi came up, even Yang Chen didn't know what to say. Gao Yue also couldn't say anything and those three didn't have anything to talk about, making for an awkward atmosphere. Everyone was walking awkwardly, unable to endure.

"The Palace Master still has a decision to make about that clan, so we must hurry on our path!"

After walking silently for a good while, Yang Chen raised the issue and proposed this solution.

None of the women were against this suggestion and nodded their heads in approval, taking out their flying swords at the same time and beginning to fly towards the MeiQing Mountains. On the entire way, everyone had tacitly turned silent and didn't say anything.

Palace Master Zhong Jiao, together with a few elders were gathered and the hall master of the Law Enforcement Hall was also there when Yang Chen released the people of that clan in front of them. The clan chief wasn't feeling lucky to try anything in front of Palace Master Zhong Jiao. His five senses had already been sealed by Yang Chen, so he immediately collapsed on the ground and narrated his entire conspiracy with He Lianyun, including the matter of that mysterious person.

“What kind of person shits where he eats? Colluding with outsiders to conspire against disciples of their own sect?”

Wang Yong's current cultivation was very high and thus his temperament was a lot better. But upon hearing that someone had schemed against his disciple and grand disciple, how could he still endure? He immediately slapped and shattered the desk in the hall where official business was discussed:

“Palace Master, if there isn't any clear explanation for this, don't blame me for being unreasonable!”

Let alone speak of Wang Yong, the Palace Master ZHong Jiao himself was also shaking with rage. Even the complexion of hall master Meng Xian had turned black and his brows were tightly wrinkled. Pure Yang Palace always seemed to have such a disciple, having evil intentions towards the sect.

Everyone's gaze, intentionally or otherwise, turned towards Lin Yunfeng. When it came to people who tended to target Yang Chen and his master Gao Yue, apart from the people of the Luminous Moon Hall, there wasn't anyone. Moreover, Luminous Moon Hall's hall master, Liang Shao Ming himself was the disciple of Lin Yunfeng and had tried to scheme against Yang Chen, making him the most likely suspect.

“Liang Shao Ming is still going through his punishment, how could he go out?”

Lin Yunfeng knew why was everyone looking at him and hastily clarified. While being the target of anger for so many people, such a matter could not be admitted, even if he were beaten to death. Even having a connection should be out of question.

“Hall master Meng!”

With a furious face, Palace Master Zhong Jiao instructed hall master Meng:

“I order you to find out the traitor of the sect!”



With the words from the Palace Master, the person of the sect who had colluded with He Lianyun had already been marked as a traitor, but nobody disagreed. Hall master Meng Xian agreed and didn't say anything, but anyone could sense the anger rising from the bottom of his heart.

“About these clansmen, how should we deal with them?”

Yang Chen still hadn't returned those clansmen to the back, but it still caught many people off guard. Nobody knew that Yang Chen had also taken Gui Shanyou with him and had thought that Yang Chen, Gongsun Ling and Gao Yue were the only people who had gone. After hearing everything from the people of the clan, they also had to be punished, so an elder asked immediately.

“For the time being, we will just hold them and wait for He Lianyun to be caught. After that, we will execute all of them publicly as a warning to everyone who wants to fight.”

Zhong Jiao had already made these plans and calmly explained them to everyone. Not killing them immediately, fearing that He Lianyun would get the information and flee.

Strictly speaking, compared to finding the traitor of the Pure Yang Palace, punishing those clansmen was a trivial matter. Nobody cared about them. From the time they provoked Pure Yang Palace they were already doomed. Pure Yang Palace's dignity could not lightly be trampled by anyone.

After the group of elders scattered, only Palace Master Zhong

Jiao and Wang Yong were left behind. They were still questioning Yang Chen. Yang Chen took the initiative and without waiting for them to say anything, he narrated everything that occurred on the journey.

“What did you say? You have the key to cure that senior of the Beast Taming Sect?”

What kind of person was Zhong Jiao? He immediately understood the intentions of Yang Chen when he said those words. The Palace Master had no guardian beast whose constituent spirit had dissipated, nobody knew that more clearly than him.

These kind of tactics which Yang Chen used were beneficial for Pure Yang Palace and could build an alliance, so why wouldn't the Palace Master be in favour of it. Seeing Yang Chen, he was elated and without being stingy with praise he said:

“It seems that my Pure Yang Palace really requires a guardian beast who has a dissipated constituent spirit which can be cured by you.”

“Many thanks for helping, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen laughed and made his salutations, completely different from those other disciples who would remain nervous in front of him.

“This can't be called help!”

Zhong Jiao shook his head:

“You have rendered a great merit if you manage this well. Whatever reward you want, ask for it.”

“Then disciple will not be polite.”

Yang Chen stood up straight and asked:

“Disciple wants to know how you are going to deal with the matter of Fairy Shi of the Green Jade Immortal Islands!”

# Chapter 189 - Favour Drops By Voluntarily

---

Earlier because of the great calamity of devil cultivation, nearly all big sects were in chaos and didn't have the time to discuss the matter of Yang Chen's dao companion. Afterwards he was under the pressure because his reputation was being tarnished by He LianYun and that clan, so this matter was pushed to the back of his head.

Originally the Palace Master had intended for this matter to resolve itself, but since Yang Chen himself had taken the initiative to raise the issue, the Palace Master had no other option than to make clear where he stood.

“Green Jade Immortal Islands' Fairy Shi!”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao forced a bitter smile. Looking at Yang Chen, he suddenly asked:

“Regarding cultivation talent, perception, beauty and cultivation, Fairy Shi apparently has it all! If you form a sturdy bond with Fairy Shi by becoming her dao companion, it will also form a good relationship between the Green Jade Immortal Islands and my Pure Yang Palace. Are you really against it?”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao's words were facts. Hearing Min Huafeng and Guan Yueying's opinions, it was clear that they were very much looking forward to Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan becoming dao companions. If Yang Chen really accepted Shi Shanshan, then the relationship of both sects would advance one

more step, no doubt about it.

Not only the relationship between the sects, even Yang Chen himself becoming dao companion with someone who had a full metal spirit root would have many advantages for his cultivation.

Unfortunately, Yang Chen couldn't accept Shi Shanshan. His master's image had filled his vision for more than ten thousand years, including both lives, so how could he easily agree to become dao companions with someone else?

"I don't have any problems with other things, but Fairy Shi's temperament is somewhat cold and not quite suitable for Yang Chen."

At this point, Wang Yong was completely in support of Yang Chen:

"Moreover, the age difference her and Yang Chen is large, so she doesn't seem very suitable."

Fairy Shi had already reached the initial JieDan stage, even if she was a cultivation genius and hadn't even encountered the smallest of accidents, it would still require at least a hundred years. As for Yang Chen, taking everything into account, he was at most forty, so if someone absolutely insisted, then it could really be considered a problem.

However, cultivators had extremely long lives, moreover, before

their cultivation reached a bottleneck, maintaining one's appearance was easy. So this matter of age was just forcefully twisting logic to find fallacies.

The Palace Master looked at Yang Chen and then at Wang Yong defending him, everything seemed to be out of his expectation. But his face was completely calm and collected and he only shot a faint glance at Gao Yue sitting to his side and sighed within his heart:

“Fine, since you are so unwilling, then I will talk about it with the island master of the Green Jade Immortal Islands!”

Despite Zhong Jiao declaring his stand, Yang Chen still had a trace of uncertainty within his heart. Perhaps looking at Shi Shanshan's circumstances at that time, he was afraid that she had taken things too close to heart. Moreover, later Min Huafeng had also agreed, thus making the matter difficult to resolve.

But regardless of what was said, the day was still far from over. The matters of the future could be settled in the future. Presently, Yang Chen still required the Palace Master to put up an act with him and calmly wait for the people of the Beast Taming Sect to drop in.

When he was joking with Gongsun Ling on the journey and she had used the matter of Shi Shanshan to attack him, Yang Chen simply forgot about the little pup he had just purchased. It was simply put into the spirit beast pouch without any concern. Fortunately, the spirit beast pouch offered a cozy environment, and that clever assistant had moreover placed many types of food inside, so for some time, there would be no change in it.

Yang Chen would naturally not attach much importance to the lowest grade spirit beast pouch. After returning to his own courtyard, Yang Chen greeted the old tree demon once and then pulled out the little pup from the spirit beast pouch.

Because of not having any special traits, this little pup had not been cared for much at the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion, but after staying comfortably in the spirit beast pouch these past few days, it seemed full of spirit.

After washing the pup cleanly, Yang Chen suddenly smiled while looking at the ash gray pup. In the beginning, it was only a shallow laugh, but afterwards he was completely unable to repress his emotions and burst out laughing until his belly started to ache.

Even if he had been reborn and possessed the memories of a generation, Yang Chen hadn't expected that such a huge golden pie would fall into his lap. Within the memories of his previous life, no such thing had appeared, neither did the secular world have any such spirit beast which could even shake the Immortal World.

Perhaps it was because of the different appearance in the beginning, therefore without proper care, this little thing died before it could reach its full potential. Or perhaps it was because of some other reason, but regardless of what was said, in this life not only it had it caught Yang Chen's eye, but he had also gotten his hands on it.

This was Yang Chen's immortal karma. He would certainly

cherish it. Only, Yang Chen couldn't rejoice for long. Such a formidable spirit beast had unexpectedly fallen into his hands in such a dramatic manner, which made him sceptical about how, apart from his memories of the previous life, his fortune had become so extremely formidable.

“If your origins were publicised, then I fear that it would really shock anyone.”

Focusing his attention on that slightly shy pup in his room, Yang Chen spoke towards it:

“Whatever... Calling you Heavenly Roar will be fine, moreover, everyone would think that you are a common dog. Wait for the day when I can find the blood essence left behind by Yang Erlang and patch you up first.”

After saying this, regardless of whether the little pup understood or not, he directly threw it into the Yang Mountain's Medicine Garden and said:

“Heavenly Roar, you should not eat the things inside indiscriminately and instead wait for me to find a suitable high grade spirit beast pouch for you.”

Heavenly Roar's circular eyes were scuttling gazes at Yang Chen, slanting its head to look at Yang Chen. Yang Chen patted its small head, massaged it and then released it into the Medicine Garden.



On the next day, Yang Chen began to concoct a pill at the Nine Earth Manor. He wasn't refining the elixir for restoring a constituent spirit, instead he made the appearance changing pill which he had promised to Scarface.

The refining requirements of the appearance changing pill were relatively high, moreover, some of the raw materials were difficult to find, even with the strength of the Greatest Heaven Sect. But after plundering for so long, Yang Chen had already gathered everything and had begun the refining in advance, while waiting for Scarface to return so that he could make the exchange.

Yang Chen had to spent a full year to start the furnace this time. Because of the addition of the Nanming Fire, the grade of the Profound Spirit Furnace had been raised by another level and it had become even more proficient at the job, cutting the time of refining in half. Yang Chen didn't have any refining experience in his previous life, but with so much knowledge and the formidable technique from the pill scripture of the Great Supreme Elder, he could successfully refine with the first attempt.

Four batches of raw materials were used up, returning four appearance changing pills. The hundred percent success rate even made Yang Chen feel a little proud of himself. Observing the appearance changing pill in his spirit sea once concluded the experience, only then did he come out of seclusion and immediately received the information that a senior of the Beast Taming Sect had come.

“Senior Fan Shan?”

When Yang Chen saw Fan Shan before his eyes, he was caught off guard as if not daring to believe his eyes. Only after confirming it again did he believe it. The Beast Taming Sect had unexpectedly sent his acquaintance.

“Junior brother Yang!”

The person who had come was senior Fan Shan, who had helped in refining the demon beast when refining the Heaven Seizing Pill. However, at this moment, Fan Shan didn't have the slightest air of a senior, and was addressing him like a friend instead.

Fan Shan had given sufficient face to Yang Chen and Pure Yang Palace this time. He had already come here three months ago, but after finding out that Yang Chen was refining a pill, he forcibly waited for three months without showing the slightest impatience. His manner was nothing to complain about.

When the Heaven Seizing Pill was being refined, most of the time the other people were working, while Yang Chen and Fan Shan were observing and chatting. They had a much closer contact. From the beginning, Fan Shan hadn't shown any great arrogance and was quite amiable towards Yang Chen, and Yang Chen also had a somewhat favourable opinion of Fan Shan.

“We are honoured by your presence, senior Fan Shan. What instructions do you have for us?”

Yang Chen asked respectfully, after all Fan Shan was a YuanYing stage expert, moreover one who had the unique skill to control a

Da Cheng stage demon beast, even Yang Chen didn't dare to put his Beast Taming Secret's to test against his.

“My sect is currently in a very difficult situation and you possibly have a solution here, so I have specifically come to ask.”

Fan Shan also didn't speak any nonsense and directly came to the point.

“A senior of our sect has not been well these past few years.”

Fan Shan didn't beat around the bush, in any case there were only Yang Chen and Fan Shan two there, so he was not afraid of other people overhearing them and frankly asked:

“That senior's constituent spirit has faced some wear and tear. Your words at the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion about creating a pill to recover the constituent spirit, was it successful?”

“Very difficult to say! My sect's problem has been solved, but there are different methods to heal constituent spirits based on the cause of the problem.”

Yang Chen didn't give a definite reply directly, but rather replied ambiguously:

“I don't know what this senior's actual situation is. I can only say anything after taking a look.”

Fan Shan was appreciative towards Yang Chen's cautious manner. Those who made guarantees for the solution before hearing the problem were definitely the kind of people who either did not understand it perfectly or hadn't succeeded in doing it. In any case, Yang Chen's cautious approach gave people an impression of someone knowledgeable.

Especially hearing that Pure Yang Palace's problem had been solved was good news because it definitely meant that the guarding beast who had sustained injuries and had his constituent spirit dissipated had recovered, if Yang Chen could solve such injuries, perhaps he could settle other reasons too.

“Young friend, let's go on a trip, come with your elder brother to examine the situation!”

Fan Shan lowered his status by a lot and directly called himself elder brother:

“Elder brother has personally come to ask you, so please give me some face! Regardless of whether you can cure him or not, my entire Beast Taming Sect will be in your gratitude.”

Regarding Fan Shan's invitation, Yang Chen hadn't intended to decline. From the beginning, Yang Chen was waiting for the people of the Beast Taming Sect to drop in. How could he miss such an opportunity? Only, some matters still required the Palace Master to appear personally, Yang Chen could not take his place.

“Senior Fan Shan!”

Yang Chen had barely called him, when Fan Shan already opened his mouth to correct him:

“Don’t call me senior, I am not that old, you should call me elder brother.”

“Ok, elder brother Fan!”

Yang Chen followed his advice readily and directly changed his address:

“I was going to Palace Master Zhong Jiao to make the report, then I will accompany elder brother to go on the trip.”

“This is only natural!”

Fan Shan naturally didn’t say anything. It would be a miracle if Yang Chen didn’t make any report to the Palace Master:

“This elder brother will also pay a visit to your noble Palace Master.”

Fan Shan was totally oblivious that everything had already been planned by Yang Chen and Palace Master Zhong Jiao. After both of them met Zhong Jiao, the Palace Master heard everything, then as if realizing everything suddenly, he instructed Yang Chen to help

as much as possible.

While talking, the guardian beast of the Pure Yang Palace whom Yang Chen had cured naturally also came up, which Yang Chen had already confessed to Palace Master Zhong Jiao about, so naturally the Palace Master confirmed what Yang Chen had told Fan Shan earlier.

The Palace Master immediately agreed to do a favour to Fan Shan, a favour to the Beast Taming Sect. After paying a visit to the Palace Master, Yang Chen also made a report to his master, Gao Yue, then he followed Fan Shan and left the MeiQing Mountains to go to the Beast Taming Sect at the Yang Liang Mountain.

Fan Shan was very anxious and directly took Yang Chen along on his flying sword and within less than thirty days, they arrived at the Beast Taming Sect. After hastily leading Yang Chen to meet a few seniors of the Beast Taming Sect, he didn't delay for a single moment and directly led him to that senior demon beast whose constituent spirit was dissipating.

At the rear part of sect within a huge cavern, Yang Chen met that demon beast senior. It was an enormous black tiger with a body several times larger than common tigers, lazily basking in the sun at the mouth of the cavern.

From the body of the demon beast, some guesses about its cultivation could easily be made, however there were two prerequisites: one was that it hadn't cultivated any Appearance Transforming Secrets, another was that its cultivation should have reached the Da Cheng stage.

Although this black tiger was enormous, compared to Shi Kui and Xie Sha whose bodies were several hundred meters long, its body had already shrunk. After cultivating to the Da Cheng stage and passing the yin fire tribulation, the yin fire had already refined the impurities within its body and the body size had reduced a lot. The black tiger in front of his eyes was in exactly these circumstances.

Fan Shan had come together with a Beast Taming Sect's expert. The black tiger only snuck a glance at them, not paying them any heed, lying on its stomach and enjoying the warmth of the sunlight. But when it looked at Yang Chen following behind Fan Shan, the black tiger lifted its head with some suspicion. Its eyes were emitting an insulting gaze, as if wanting to pierce Yang Chen's eyes.

“Uncle master, disciple has found a pill concocting master, who can perhaps help in settling master's dissipating constituent spirit.”

Fan Shan and the others stopped a few steps in front of him and uniformly bowed:

“I apologise for causing you some inconvenience, but I still request uncle master to pardon me!”

“This little boy is interesting, step forward and let me take a look.”

Suddenly the black tiger spoke human words, which could make anyone feel bewildered. But the people present kept their calm, with an accustomed expression.

“I formally pay my respects to senior!”

Yang Chen respectfully stepped forward and respectfully saluted him. This black tiger had entered the Da Cheng stage several years earlier than Gui Shanyou and had a formidable cultivation. It definitely discovered the anomaly within Yang Chen’s spiritual awareness. All of this was within Yang Chen’s expectations.

“You have a way?”

The black tiger observed Yang Chen for a good moment, only then did it open its mouth and began to talk.

“This junior doesn’t dare to be sure.”

Yang Chen replied with a bow:

“Before being certain, this junior requires to do an inspection of senior and find the reason, only then can this junior make accurate judgements.”

Yang Chen’s words were as careful as ever, he had used the word ‘judgement’ instead of claiming to prescribe the correct medicine.



“For what reason?”

The black tiger roared:

“When this old man passed the yin fire tribulation, the yin fire had left behind some internal energy which had flared after several hundred years, so do you have a way?”

# Chapter 190 - I Will Assist You In Dealing With Him

---

Once these words left the mouth of black tiger, immediately the few experts of the Beast Taming Sect present on the scene were stunned. For several years, they had tried to find the reason of the problem, but they hadn't been able to find it, but no one among them had anticipated that the black tiger himself knew the root of the problem.

However, what they didn't understand was why hadn't the black tiger informed them even after knowing the cause of his constituent spirit dissipation. Perhaps, because the black tiger knew that their cultivation was not sufficient and thus can't help in solving the problem.

But, if this was true and the black tiger had tried to conceal his illness, then why did it told Yang Chen whom it was seeing first time that it had sustained internal injuries, could it be that it already knew that Yang Chen can cure its unmentionable illness? However, Yang Chen was just a trifling foundation stage junior. Whether it was naked observation or probing with spiritual awareness, Fan Shan and the others couldn't see anything extraordinary in Yang Chen, so what had made the senior black tiger see him in such favourable light?

However, Yang Chen wasn't the slightest bit amazed. Previously, the old tree demon had called Yang Chen a little calf with a single look. This senior black tiger had entered the Da Cheng stage several hundred years before the old tree demon, so him sensing few clues was perfectly normal.

Perhaps it was only because of the assembly of people and the glimmer of hope he'd seen in him that senior black tiger had told him the cause in just one meeting.

“If I could ask senior to answer the following questions. How severe is your injury, what kind of circumstances does it flare up under, and furthermore, what is senior sensing presently?”

Without paying attention to the astounded gaze of those around him, Yang Chen respectfully asked.

“You all, return. Allow this little friend and I to chat.”

The black tiger didn't reply directly, but rather used his tail to signal to Fan Shan and the others that he wanted privacy.

Fan Shan and others didn't dare to neglect his wishes in the slightest. Moreover, they were perfectly aware that Yang Chen, as just a foundation stage junior, was incapable of harming the black tiger. As such, everyone respectfully bid their farewells and vacated the cave, leaving just Yang Chen and the black tiger inside the cave.

“Strange little friend!”

After everyone had left, the black tiger again lay on his stomach and said,

“So in the end, are you a cultivator or a little calf?”

“Senior’s perception is so piercing, this junior is greatly admiring!”

Yang Chen slightly flattered him and then replied:

“This junior is a cultivator but has had the opportunity to study the cultivation method of the demon race.”

“Pure Yang Palace’s cultivation method?”

Senior black tiger asked again.

“No.”

Yang Chen immediately rebuffed that notion and explained:

“Junior is fond of reading various books, and obtained that cultivation method from one of them. This time after curing the senior, I will once again request various books from your noble sect.”

The black tiger didn’t much care about Yang Chen’s puny request. In fact, his primary interest lay in whether Yang Chen could recover his constituent spirit or not,

“Have you tested this method on yourself?”

“Tested!”

Yang Chen nodded,

“I have tested it on the sect’s guardian beast. However, senior’s circumstances are a little strange, and perhaps there is some inconvenience that needs tending first.”

“What kind of trouble?”

The black tiger interestedly asked. Since it concerned himself, even if he didn’t care about life or death, but he didn’t want to spare any effort in thoroughly investigating the method.

“Senior has injuries from the heavenly tribulation, which is similar to the injuries of the guardian beast senior of my sect. .”

Yang Chen explained a little, making the black tiger feel somewhat relieved, then continued:

“But senior’s injuries certainly are more grave compared to that senior of my sect, therefore it will take slightly more time. Can senior provide me with specific circumstances of your injury?”

“Prove your method to me!”

The black tiger thought for a long moment and said.

If the one standing in front of the black tiger was an ill-tempered pill master, he would've immediately stormed off in a huff. The black tiger was merely assisting him in the diagnosis and he still wanted more proof? Yang Chen had already said that he had cured a demon beast with similar injuries, what more proof does he want?

But Yang Chen knew that the black tiger was a Da Cheng expert, and if not for the old injuries, maybe he would have already surpassed Elder Wu. Originally he had intended to peacefully welcome his death, but suddenly a foundation stage junior was telling him that he could be healed. So naturally he had to put quite a bit of thought into it.

Yang Chen unleashed the Beast Taming Secrets, and his thoughts met the senior black tiger's spiritual awareness. Immediately, the both of them exchanged their thoughts, without any kind of barrier. Just this allowed the black tiger to lay the majority of his hesitations to rest.

At the same time, Yang Chen also received a great amount of information from the black tiger. What astonished Yang Chen was the inclusion of images of when the black tiger had overcome heavenly tribulation as well as many other experiences.. Naturally, the most detailed information was about the injury, which was included within the process of heavenly tribulation described to Yang Chen.

The Beast Taming Secrets was indeed convenient, and also

ensured the utmost secrecy. No wonder senior black tiger had insisted upon proof before answering the questions. Just the information of heavenly tribulation was of great use to Yang Chen. Even if it was of no use to him, when the time of She Kui and Xie Sha's heavenly tribulation comes, then this information could be used to great benefit if consulted.

The exchange happened in an instant and broke off just as quickly. Even if outsiders were spying on the two, they would only think that the both of them had gone silent for a moment. No one would even imagine that a short instant had been more informative, persuasive, and detailed than a conversation held for several days and nights.

Yang Chen's face turned grave as he began to analyze the problems, the condition of injury and the sensations after cultivation. Only after fully evaluating the variables could Yang Chen judge what was required for treatment.

There was no need to wonder whether he could cure this problem or not. There was no doubt to that conclusion. Otherwise Yang Chen also wouldn't invested so much effort in acting. But what kind of price needed to be paid for the complete recovery of senior black tiger required considerable deliberation.

"Senior, your injury has been left untended for too long. Although you have suppressed it with your great cultivation, its recent flare-ups have made it quite troublesome to manage."

Yang Chen also wasn't afraid to tell the complete truth and directly got to point,

“My method can allow you to stabilize the condition of your injuries within five years. But for complete recovery, at least an additional ten years would be required, so from the beginning to end it will take around fifteen years. Is senior willing to receive my treatment?”

“Fifteen years time, I can wait.”

The black tiger’s tail once again lashed from side to side and slowly said,

“If you want anything, go look for those youngsters who brought you here.”

With the conversation at an end, his tone already held the tone of one chasing away a customer.

“Then this junior will take his leave!”

Yang Chen again bowed and took his leave. However, before he left, the black tiger said from behind,

“My Beast Taming Sect isn’t a rich and overbearing sect, so don’t extort them excessively!”

“Don’t worry, senior!”



A smile split Yang Chen's face as he left in the direction Fan Shan and others had taken.

Outside this region, Fan Shan and others were waiting anxiously, wondering what Yang Chen and senior black tiger were discussing. Their primary worry was whether Yang Chen could rescue their senior or not. As their apprehension grew to a peak, they suddenly saw Yang Chen's figure making its way towards them.

“Younger brother, what happened?”

Fan Shan almost ran over to Yang Chen and nervously asked.

It wasn't just Fan Shan, everyone else were also equally uneasy. For the Beast Taming Sect, having senior black tiger and not having senior black tiger were two diametrically different situations, so they couldn't help but worry.

“Can be cured!”

Yang Chen knew their situation and made no show with his reply.

When Yang Chen's words reached them, all the YuanYing experts immediately let out a long sigh without caring for appearances. The mood at the scene also immediately became relaxed.

“Only.....”

Looking at their relaxed expressions, Yang Chen couldn't help but caution them calmly, slowly changing the topic.

“What? There is still some trouble?”

The hearts of Fan Shan and others tightened again, wondering what the wrinkle was?

“It will require at least fifteen years.”

Yang Chen also didn't keep them hanging and immediately continued,

“Moreover, the amount of ingredients required is not a small number; you all should prepare yourself mentally. After all, senior's injury is a result of overcoming the yin fire tribulation, it is far from ordinary.”

Hearing that the complications were only some extra time and excessive cost, everyone's hearts grew a tiny bit relaxed. Curing a Da Cheng expert's injuries easily was naturally an impossible task, so all of them had long been mentally prepared for an exorbitant price to pay.

On the contrary, when Yang Chen confidently told them his caveats, everyone felt relief. This was finally a guarantee that senior black tiger could finally be saved. As for fifteen years, compared to the long life of cultivators, this time would simply

used for a nap, no one cared about it much.

Despite rejoicing, Fan Shan didn't dare to drop all forms of etiquette towards Yang Chen, rather becoming even more careful in his speech as he said,

“Whatever ingredients you need, younger brother, just make a list. Although my Beast Taming Sect cannot be compared to big sects like Greatest Heaven Sect or Five Phases Sect, but we also cannot undervalue ourselves.”

This was only natural, the ingredients needed for treatment were definitely the responsibility of Beast Taming Sect. It was only right and proper, so Fan Shan did not bother Yang Chen with it. On the contrary, these words of Fan Shan, were about thanking Yang Chen with a gift.

“For delaying fifteen years worth of pill concocting cultivation, younger brother, this elder brother will repay you with a great favour.”

Fan Shan patted his chest and said,

“I cannot speak about other matters, but of that He Lianyun who tried to tarnish your reputation, sect disciples have already found his location. This elder brother will go in your place and settle the problem for you!”

Fan Shan undertaking the task would cause far less waves than

having Yang Chen and Pure Yang Palace disposing of him. However, Fan Shan was trying to be thoughtful and wanted to take care of this little worry for Yang Chen.

“Found his whereabouts?”

Yang Chen was startled and his face revealed a smile. This was an unexpectedly pleasant surprise. Without any politeness, Yang Chen raised his request,

“Elder brother, when you take care of him, please keep in mind that he has a flame that is of great use to me, your younger brother. Specifically, it is the Real Moon Fire.”

“Rest assured!”

Fan Shan nodded vigorously,

“As long as he or his disciples have any kind of flame, I will bring it for you.”

“Young friend Yang, if you still have any other request, please feel free to ask,. my Beast Taming Sect will not haggle.”

As soon as Fan Shan had finished speaking, the master of Beast Taming Sect immediately continued in the same vein, reiterating their gratefulness.

Delaying fifteen years of cultivation, in addition to the favour of rescuing a Da Cheng stage expert, cannot be repaid fully by simply getting rid of that trifling He Lianyun and seizing the Real Moon Fire, even if the Real Moon Fire was already very precious. For the Beast Taming Sect it was but a scant portion of what they owed Yang Chen.

“Since senior is being so generous, then this junior will also not be polite.”

Yang Chen turned towards the master of Beast Taming Sect, bowing once before continuing,

“Junior has a bad habit of being fond of various sorts of books. If senior’s sect has some books which are not related to cultivation, then I would request senior to bestow them to this junior. This junior will be extremely grateful. Junior also won’t ask for much, just twenty thousand books will be sufficient.”

“That’s not a problem!”

Hearing Yang Chen only wanted some books, everyone heaved a sigh of relief. Each sect and school had many books unrelated to cultivation. Even if they didn’t have enough, it was easy enough to send out people to collect the required number for Yang Chen.

Twenty thousand books, this number had been spread from Clear Sky Sect. Apparently when Yang Chen had rescued elder Hua Wanting of Clear Sky Sect, he had demanded the same number of books. He had also been granted the qualifications to enter in the

Clear Sky Sect's auction. This was not a secret, everyone was fully aware of the particulars.

Compared to elder Hua Wanting who had recently become Da Cheng stage expert, senior black tiger was much more important to the Beast Taming Sect. So, twenty thousand books, He Lianyun, and his flames were far too profitable a trade for the Beast Taming Sect.

Although it didn't have an influence as large as Clear Sky Sect, Beast Taming Sect also wasn't miserly. Without waiting for Yang Chen to mention it, the master of Beast Taming Sect immediately realized and added for Yang Chen,

“Young friend Yang, you are welcome to my Beast Taming Sect's sect auction any time you want.”

Everyone tacitly understood not to raise the issue of relations between the two sects. The Beast Taming Sect also owed the Pure Yang Palace together with Yang Chen. However, this is a problem between sect masters. As a youngster, there was no use raising it in front of Yang Chen.

“Ah right, seniors, this junior will require the assistance of my sect's Medicine Hall's hall master uncle master Zhu's help this time.”

Yang Chen suddenly remembered something and asked,

“He Lianyun’s pill concocting furnace was pretty good, do you think you can part with it to gift it to my uncle master Zhu?”

Before his realm had fallen, He Lianyun was a middle YuanYing stage cultivator. He was also one of the people invited by Elder Wu to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill. As such, his pill concocting level was not low, and his furnace was first class. When all was said and done, Zhu Chentao was a JieDan stage expert, and his furnace wasn’t of a very good grade. This would be a very profitable exchange for him.

“You just need to mention such trivial matters to consider them done!”

The master of the Beast Taming Sect immediately agreed to Yang Chen’s small request. Not only that, he also added one more thing,

“After taking care of He Lianyun, of all the pill recipes we receive from him, my Beast Taming Sect will keep one copy and give another copy to your noble sect as a small gift.”

After this, Yang Chen didn’t make any more requests and immediately took out an empty jade slip on the spot to mark all the materials required. Since he had agreed to do this for them, he would see it through to the end. The items that he had stocked under the supervision of Shangguan Feng, he immediately marked. As long as they paid the full the price, it would save Beast Taming Sect a lot of trouble in searching.

The experts of Beast Taming Sect were extremely grateful for this

consideration and favour. After entertaining Yang Chen for some more time, they sent him back to Pure Yang Palace in grand style.

This time, on the journey, apart from his old friend Fan Shan, the master of Beast Taming Sect had also followed. Some of these matters needed the a consensus reached between the master of Beast Taming Sect and the palace master of Pure Yang Palace.

As soon as Beast Taming Sect's master together with Fan Shan entered Pure Yang Palace, it immediately gave rise to huge chaos. Pure Yang Palace's palace master and a few elders came out together to welcome them and discuss recent affairs. After extending his greetings to everyone and leaving the Beast Taming Sect delegates in their hands, Yang Chen went towards the Medicine Hall.



# Chapter 191 - He Lianyun Exits The Stage

---

“Uncle master Zhu!”

Yang Chen’s goal was naturally Zhu Chentao. This hall master of Medicine Hall had always supported Yang Chen from the time he entered Pure Yang Palace. This time, it was Yang Chen’s turn to return the favour.

Regarding Yang Chen’s arrival, Zhu Chentao was greatly astonished. Frankly speaking, in the outer world Yang Chen was renowned as a famous pill concocting master, but inside the Pure Yang Palace he had never once entered the Medicine Hall. He was trying to think of why Yang Chen had come to find him this time.

Fortunately, today Zhu Chentao was guiding disciples and hadn’t entered seclusion to concoct pills, thus Yang Chen was able to catch him.

Seeing Zhu Chentao, Yang Chen didn’t directly say anything about the matter, rather pulling the senior to his room within the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. After which, he placed a layer of restriction and secretly asked the main body of Gui Shanyou to place a layer of restriction as well.

Some matters were not suitable for many people to know. The Beast Taming Sect had kept it secret for ten years, and the sect master of Beast Taming Sect and palace master of Pure Yang Palace were discussing it right now. Yang Chen also didn’t want to let it known to strangers. At least he could not allow those people who

were harbouring disloyal and malicious intentions towards Pure Yang Palace to know about this.

“What affair requires so much mysteriousness and secrecy?”

Zhu Chentao was baffled, unable to figure out what Yang Chen wanted. Seeing him attach so much importance to this matter, he was greatly surprised.

“Uncle master Zhu, there is a matter for which I require your assistance”

After confirming that no one else would hear their conversation, Yang Chen made his request with the utmost seriousness.

After he explained the entire matter, Zhu Chentao almost jumped out of his skin in astonishment, completely discarding the poise of a JieDan expert.

“What? Refining an elixir to treat a Da Cheng stage expert?”

Zhu Chentao’s eyes opened widely, simply not daring to believe what he had just heard,

“Furthermore, an injury left behind by a yin fire tribulation several hundred years ago? Me? How is it possible?”

“Uncle master Zhu how can you say it’s impossible?”

Looking at Zhu Chentao, Yang Chen was slightly dumbfounded:

“Even disciple didn’t think it was impossible, so how can uncle master think it is?”

“Ehh!”

Zhu Chentao only then remembered that Yang Chen was famous for pill refining in the outside world because he had successfully refined the Heaven Seizing Pill. That was a pill which allowed people to ascend, which was many times more formidable than this elixir used to cure injuries.

“Can I really?”

But when all was said and done, Zhu Chentao hadn’t ever considered being able to refine elixirs for the Da Cheng stage. Never mind Da Cheng stage, he didn’t harbor much hope in successfully refining elixirs at the YuanYing stage. When it come to pill refining, the Pure Yang Palace wasn’t a very knowledgeable sect, so Zhu Chentao not having confidence was completely normal.

“Naturally, disciple still requires uncle master’s strength!”

Naturally, Yang Chen wasn’t about to pour cold water over Zhu Chentao’s hopes. In fact, he wanted to use this opportunity to push Zhu Chentao another step forward in the pill concocting world,

even give him a push to rise from JieDan stage to YuanYing stage.

“How can I help you?”

Zhu Chentao suddenly realized something, Yang Chen was obviously giving him a huge opportunity. He could already refine an elixir capable of restoring a pill spirit, how could he require help to refine an elixir that only needed to treat a constituent spirit? Clearly, Yang Chen wanted him to broaden his horizons and rise another step using this excuse.

When it came to pill concocting, even if Zhu Chentao was the hall master of Medicine Hall, he wouldn't dare compare himself with Yang Chen. Yang Chen, even as first layer, could create the recipe for and refine the xun qi pill. Not only that, he could already refine third grade pills of qi supporting pill, yuan cultivation pill and foundation stage pill while Zhu Chentao can only refine them to at most two times. This was the difference between them.

If Yang Chen's cultivation wasn't low, and he hadn't already paid his respects to Fierce Yang Hall instead of under Zhu Chentao's name, then Zhu Chentao would've nourished Yang Chen as the future hall master of Medicine Hall.

Now Yang Chen wanted his assistance, and even if he called it assistance, it was clear he was the one helping Zhu Chentao. Since Zhu Chentao was his elder, he couldn't thank him, but in his heart, he was extremely grateful for the opportunity. How could he not agree to this?

“Then first let me pay my gratitude to uncle master Zhu.”

Yang Chen didn't mention when the refining will start. It was still early enough since all the required materials had to be prepared, so there was no need to be hasty:

“For the time being, there is no rush, but first uncle master Zhu must make the appropriate arrangements for Medicine Hall. After the refining begins, you won't be able to attend Medicine Hall for one or two years.”

“That is not a problem, I will return to make the arrangements.”

Zhu Chentao didn't talk much and stood up to go make arrangements.

“Uncle master you don't need to rush. Just wait for the instructions of palace master.”

Yang Chen also stood up and smiled. Zhu Chentao was seemingly impatient to get started. This matter naturally would not begin until the talks between palace master and sect master of Beast Taming Sect were completed, so presently there was no need to be hasty.

“Haha, however I am very eager.”

Zhu Chentao also embarrassedly smiled and also sat down, calming his heart, and began to talk with Yang Chen about

controlling fire and other things.

“The Beast Taming Sect has also agreed to compensate for delaying ten years of uncle master’s cultivation.”

Yang Chen first told him about the advantages Beast Taming Sect offered,

“He Lianyun’s pill concocting furnace will also be given to you, uncle master.”

“There really is such a thing?”

This was again a pleasant surprise. Just witnessing and helping with the refining itself was enough to make Zhu Chentao participate. With still more unexpected benefits to come, how could he not be joyous? That pill concocting furnace of pill concocting master He Lianyun was already a famous treasure which unexpectedly was already scheduled to come to him.

“Presently you don’t have a good pill concocting furnace, you can make good use of it.”

After rejoicing for a moment, Zhu Chentao calmed his head, attempting to refuse.

Although he was delighted, Zhu Chentao carefully thought it through. In pill concocting talent alone, Yang Chen was clearly far ahead of him. If Yang Chen had a high grade pill concocting

furnace, then it would certainly increase his power by leaps and bounds. Although it was unfortunate, helping Yang Chen increase his strength would help many pill concocting masters in Pure Yang Palace. In front of such an outcome, how could he covet a pill concocting furnace for himself?

“Disciple already has the high grade pill concocting furnace conferred by the uncle master Zhu, so I don’t require another.”

Yang Chen clearly knew the thoughts in Zhu Chentao’s heart and moved to cut them off. At the moment, he already had the Profound Spirit Furnace, why would he need another one?

Although Zhu Chentao had such thoughts, Yang Chen felt that himself assisting Zhu Chentao this time was not a mistake but rather was well deserved. Zhu Chentao was certainly a deserving individual.

Zhu Chentao naturally didn’t believe Yang Chen at first glance, but after Yang Chen took out his Profound Spirit Furnace and taking a look at the furnace which had already risen several grades, the earth shattering transformation of the furnace thoroughly convinced Zhu Chentao that Yang Chen really had a high grade spirit furnace. It was only then that he agreed.

The events that followed were well within expectations. After Palace Master Zhong Jiao and few elders talked with sect master of Beast Taming Sect and Fan Shan, they grandly sent the two people off. Soon after, they immediately called Yang Chen and Zhu Chentao in and told them about the discussion. Afterwards, the two of them went their separate ways to prepare individually.

Although Yang Chen had already prepared a portion of the medicinal ingredients, the Beast Taming Sect still required some more time to prepare all the ingredients.

However, Fan Shan had already begun his favour. The disciples of Beast Taming Sect had already discovered the location of He Lianyun. After confirming this, Fan Shan moved heaven and earth to capture He Lianyun and his diehard followers within a single month.

He Lianyun was a cowardly person, otherwise he wouldn't have easily handed over the Real Sun Fire. Facing Fan Shan's threats, he didn't dare to haggle over the price. Between being swallowed by Fan Shan's spirit beast or handing over all the flames he had collected over his life, He Lianyun cleverly chose the latter.

After handing over the Real Moon Fire obediently, he also had to hand over the Cold Ice Flame which he wanted to absorb first in order to absorb the Real Moon Fire. His few disciples also handed over two flames, Green Phosphorescence Fire and Profound Wood Fire. High grade flames were not always needed, but the two flames his disciples had handed over were both suitable for pill concocting.

Fan Shan complied with his promise and didn't kill He Lianyun, rather abolishing his cultivation and delivering the group to Pure Yang Palace. This was at the request of Palace Master Zhong Jiao, he wanted to execute both He Lianyun and those clansmen together to display Pure Yang Palace's temperament.



He Lianyun certainly hadn't anticipated such an ending. At this stage, any trick he tried, any benefit he promised, any agreement he tried to strike with Fan Shan for high grade pills, everything was rendered impotent.

When they were working together, Fan Shan had already understood He Lianyun's temperament. Further, the slander circulating about Yang Chen was something originally fabricated by him, how could he cooperate with a small person like He Lianyun. When comparing him with Yang Chen, a pill master and genius with grand future prospects, he would be an idiot to offend the latter.

This time, Pure Yang Palace had displayed an unprecedented hard-line stance regarding Yang Chen's matter. First they silently invited few big sects to witness the confrontation and afterwards silently set off the campaign to capture those clansmen, He Lianyun and his disciples. Furthermore they had also grandly announced to everyone, that these people will be executed.

As for the one who to kill them, it was naturally chosen to be Yang Chen. He was originally an executioner, and karma had been sown between all these people and Yang Chen. Yang Chen also didn't have anything to be afraid of. So outside the gate of Pure Yang Palace, under the eyes of several hundred disciples of other sects and loose cultivators, he chopped their heads off one by one.

Pure Yang Palace's actions caused a huge uproar. The few big sects didn't express their views except to say that killing too many people would affect their cultivation. Their manner of handling such a problem was similar anyway. If someone had dared to

knock on their door with such matters, their response would have been even more cruel.

But many loose cultivators thought Pure Yang Palace was being tyrannical, but they only spoke about this when they met another rogue cultivator. No one dared to personally come and create trouble for Pure Yang Palace.

Who would oppose the Pure Yang Palace for the sake of a few dead people? The loose cultivators had no sect to back them and they were far from fools. Bother the sect? Hadn't they witnessed the end of He Lianyun and those clansmen?

In the midst of this clamor, Beast Taming Sect also firmly expressed their support of Pure Yang Palace, stating that such people who had dared to slander others needed to be killed. None of the big sects had responded, and the loose cultivators didn't dare talk. Within the second rate sects, Beast Taming Sect and other few sects who were on good terms with Pure Yang Palace had also expressed their support. At this point, who still dared to say anything to the contrary? Even if they had anything to say, who would dare to challenge Pure Yang Palace at MeiQing mountain?

Those people who had previously dared to spread malicious words about Yang Chen and Pure Yang Palace, decided to cleverly shut their mouths, not even daring to mention rumor that Yang Chen had stolen the pill recipe of Heaven Seizing Pill of the clan. It commonly said that rumors die when people become wise, but most of the time, rumors are stopped by force.

Those people who still wanted to obtain the pill recipe from Yang

Chen, in these circumstances, they also sensed Pure Yang Palace's attitude. Regardless of whether they still harbored such thoughts within their heart or not, at least on the surface, they didn't dare to say anything.

Seeing the end of this matter, everyone also began to realize that the current Pure Yang Palace was not a pushover. These few years, the strength of Pure Yang Palace had increased by leaps and bounds. Not only had they gained one Da Cheng stage expert and two YuanYing stage experts as part of Eccentric Hall. They hadn't suffered the slightest during the great calamity of devil cultivation, while other sects had suffered great losses. Their decisions had allowed Pure Yang Palace's authority among dao sects to greatly increase.

But those matters were for Palace Master Zhong Jiao and other elders to think about, Yang Chen was endlessly happy holding his newly acquired pile of flames. Green Phosphorous Fire, Profound Wood Fire, Cold Ice Fire, and Real Moon Fire, he'd obtained four flames all of a sudden. If the Profound Spirit Furnace absorbed these four flames, it will certainly become the most formidable furnace in the mortal world. Even Deng Yi's purple furnace will also be inferior compared to it.

The Profound Wood Fire was perfect for Yang Chen to act as a buffer before Real Sun Fire. As for other flames, apart from Real Moon Fire, the green Phosphorous Fire and Cold Ice Fire were both fourth fire attribute and could completely fuse with Geocentric Fire, increasing his fire attributed cultivation by one more step.

The flames should also be absorbed in sequence from lower to

higher grade. After his cultivation had risen again in the future, he could refine even more high grade flames. When flames were refined within the body, they could fuse with other flames and increase their grade.

Yang Chen didn't even dare to think about the Real Moon Fire right now, but he could think about refining other types of flames. Only today, he had to first make Profound Spirit Furnace absorb it. It could greatly upgrade the Profound Spirit Furnace which would be beneficial for future pill concocting. While the refining the mixture of the flames was time consuming, it would pay dividends later when it came to refining speed of pills.

Other people believed Yang Chen's cultivation would be delayed because he chose to accept this refining request. They wouldn't be able to even imagine that Yang Chen could still increase his cultivation during pill concocting.

Zhu Chentao had also received the pill concocting furnace he had been yearning for. The high grade pill furnace used by a YuanYing stage expert was now in his hands which made him extremely delighted. When Yang Chen had given him the furnace, he had repeatedly warned him to refine it and make every effort to begin to refine some pills. A high grade pill furnace could not only increase the level of a pill concocting master, they could also increase the success rate of pill concocting as well as the quality of pills refined.

When Fan Shan handed everything to him, he also gave him an approximate idea of when all the materials would be gathered. Yang Chen still wanted to wait for one year, before officially

beginning pill concocting. This one year was just perfect to allow Yang Chen to increase the level of the Profound Spirit Furnace.

Yang Chen didn't wanted to waste this time. All the four flames were in his hands, only waiting to be absorbed by the Profound Spirit Furnace.

# Chapter 192 - Upgrading The Profound Spirit Furnace

---

Great master Wang Yong had already begun to refine the qilin horn flying sword. After returning, Gongsun Ling had also headed back to that valley. As long as she could thoroughly understand the illusion spell, combined with the two top grade spirit stones provided by Yang Chen, it would certainly end up being a life saving treasure for her. Moreover Gao Yue also had begun his meditation to cultivate the water attributed cultivation method.

During this time's pill concocting, he would not be able to see his master much for at least ten years, therefore Yang Chen visited his master in advance to provide her with the things he had prepared.

“What is this?”

Gao Yue looked at the qiankun pouch Yang Chen had provided her but didn't open it immediately, instead asking curiously.

“For some time, disciple will go into seclusion with uncle master Zhu to concoct pills, therefore I have prepared some water attributed fruits for you in advance.”

Yang Chen said with a smile,

“Disciple is just showing his filial respect, please use them while cultivating.”

“Oh, one more thing, master, remember these fruits must be peeled before eating.”

Yang Chen again warned,

“If you eat one everyday, then it will last almost as long as disciple is in seclusion. As for the others, you don’t need to worry much. Just wait for the sect to purge some people and then we will tell them.”

To Gao Yue, hearing this line that didn’t make any sense was as if Gao Yue had entered a misty black fog.

Until Yang Chen left, Gao Yue didn’t clearly understand what Yang Chen had meant, what fruit? What peel and eat? But when she opened the qiankun pouch and glanced at the contents inside, her whole person was rooted to the spot.

Even if Gao Yue had stressed tool refining as her field, it didn’t mean she was unaware of medicinal ingredients. Nestled within the qiankun pouch were clearly Profound Yang Fruits. Moreover, they were the thousand year Profound Yang Fruits, all of them at least maturity of one thousand five hundred years. All of the fruits were large and sturdy, neatly arranged within the qiankun pouch. There were at least ten thousand fruits, so if she ate one per day, then they would last for at least twenty seven to twenty eight years.

Each of these matured Profound Yang Fruits, as long as they were refined properly, could turn into high grade foundation stage pills.

If ordinary cultivators wanted to purchase such fruits they would at least have to pay a price of a thousand low grade spirit stones. These ten thousand Profound Yang Fruits, if introduced to the market, would sell for at least one hundred high grade spirit stones.

Such enormous wealth and natural resources, Yang Chen had surprisingly turned over to Gao Yue to show his filial respect. Even more astonishing, he had still asked her to peel them before eating, didn't he know that even the peel of such matured Profound Yang Fruits were also precious ingredients?

For some time, Gao Yue couldn't understand how to deal with these Profound Yang Fruits. Should she really follow Yang Chen's opinion, and treat them as fruits to eat them? If these were handed over to the sect, let alone other things, these would produce ten thousand high quality foundation stage pills. How big a benefit would that be for the sect?

But she also understood Yang Chen's final warning sentence. The Luminous Moon Hall had not been exactly friendly to either master and disciple. It could be said that there was clear hostility from their side. Besides, that clan and He Lianyun also surprisingly knew that she had sealed her cultivation to cultivate a water attributed cultivation method. Clearly, someone in the sect had leaked that information, and Luminous Moon Hall couldn't escape responsibility.

If these fruits came out in public, it would certainly be troublesome and maybe again give people an excuse to target master and disciple. Since Yang Chen had insisted so much, she



would accept them. In all likelihood, Yang Chen had arranged for them long ago, and Gao Yue didn't believe that Yang Chen would not have thought about the sect. His actions all these years clearly proved his care for the sect .

After piecing all this together, Gao Yue was finally able to calm her heart and in accordance with Yang Chen's words peeled and ate a fruit. Immediately, an enormous amount of spirit power erupted, so massive in fact, that she was unable to absorb it completely with her water attributed cultivation of third qi layer. Finally after the water attributed spirit power had increased many times over, she undid the seal on her fire attributed spirit power and used the cultivation of JieDan stage to absorb this colossal amount of spirit power without letting any go to waste.

Only now did Gao Yue realized why Yang Chen had told her to eat only one fruit per day, her present cultivation at most could only handle one. With this speed, by the time Yang Chen was finished concocting pills for ten years, her water attributed cultivation would have already reached mid foundation stage. After all, she already had the temperament of a JieDan stage cultivator and the spiritual awareness of peak JieDan stage cultivator.

After sensing this, Gao Yue also again developed complete confidence about Yang Chen, he didn't even conceal such things from her. Regarding Yang Chen, her disciple, she was more than satisfied.

Over the course of the next several days, Zhu Chentao had already made proper arrangements for Medicine Hall, even

entrusting Law Enforcement Hall's hall master Meng Xian to act as a substitute hall master. Within the Medicine Hall, there were many foundation and JieDan stage experts, but all of them were ordinary, so even under the supervision of Law Enforcement Hall, they should not devolve into chaos.

Yang Chen also had no option but to relieve himself of his status as Merit Transferring disciple, since he would be in seclusion for more than ten years, refining pills. It would be impossible for him to continue to hold office. This time however, everyone in the Nine Earth Manor and Ye Xiu Manor were reluctant to part with him. Not to speak of other things, this Merit Transferring Disciple Yang Chen hadn't let any person remain anxious for any problem related to cultivation.

Yang Chen had to enter seclusion to concoct pills because of the sect's affairs, but Palace Master Zhong Jiao had released a statement to everyone stating that the time for Yang Chen to serve as Merit Transferring Disciple had already been fulfilled and it was just an ordinary turnover of responsibility. This was just normal substitution, no one could find anything inappropriate here.

As for the refining location, it was chosen to be Yang Chen's little courtyard within the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. The Palace Master Zhong Jiao had thought of arranging an even more dependable place, but Yang Chen had insisted on this. What a joke, what more safer place could there be in the Pure Yang Palace than the location of old tree demon Gui Shanyou's body?

Yang Chen's four servants kept cultivating even while following after Yang Chen all these years. Yang Chen had also spared no pain

in guiding them. All of them had already reached peak qi layer. Before this time's seclusion, Yang Chen also wanted to honour the commitment he had made to them.

“These are four third grade foundation stage pills.”

Yang Chen called all four of them, and in front of everyone, placed a foundation stage pill with a clear pill pattern,

“Right now, all of you are at peak qi layer. I had promised you all foundation stage pills, so take it! After reaching foundation stage, you all will be inner disciples of my Pure Yang Palace and will not be servants anymore, do your best to behave!”

All four people kept on looking at each other, unable to repress their emotions. Originally they had believed they would remain servants at Ye Xiu Manor for the rest of their lives. They had never anticipated that they would one day become inner disciples.

Naturally, all this had come from Yang Chen. Just as the pavilion closest to water enjoys moonlight first, they all had also obtained most detailed and frequent guidance, so more than half of their success could be attributed to Yang Chen.

“Thanks, young master!”

Four of them uniformly kowtowed in front of Yang Chen.

Yang Chen also didn't stop them and received their respects:

“This is the last time you will call me young master. After reaching foundation stage, I will be your senior apprentice brother!”

Third grade foundation stage pills were sufficient for those four to reach foundation stage. After Yang Chen had given them the pills, all four took their leave with different feelings in their heart.

In the beginning, none of the four had accepted Yang Chen, and had even thought to forcefully dominate Yang Chen during the first month. But after being beaten by Yang Chen and following him for so many years, they had also obtained great benefits. Now, they were one step away from moving from a servant's status to inner disciple of Pure Yang Palace, simply a difference between heaven and hell.

Although none of them said anything, everyone knew that in the future, they should definitely continue to follow Yang Chen. After all the things Yang Chen had done at Pure Yang Palace, their prestige had also grown at Pure Yang Palace. Certainly, following Yang Chen was never a mistake.

“Ho Lin, if you can reach foundation stage in one year, then I will allow you to wait upon me and uncle master Zhu while we are concocting pills in seclusion.”

Although she still hadn't reached foundation stage, the benefits had already dropped in. Observing Ho Lin, Yang Chen encouragingly said,

“If you display satisfactory performance and impress uncle master Zhu, then paying respects and entering uncle master Zhu’s faction is also not impossible.”

Ho Lin was beyond happy, and hastily bowed her head. Being able to help in Yang Chen and Zhu Chentao’s pill concocting was certainly an opportunity which could only be found by luck and not by seeking, Ho Lin herself emphasized pill concocting, so naturally she knew the seriousness of this chance.

As for being able to pay respects to Zhu Chentao and enter his faction, it made her even more delighted. Zhu Chentao was the hall master of Medicine Hall. Although he was only at JieDan stage, everyone in the Pure Yang Palace was extremely respectfully towards him. Entering his faction was definitely the first choice of any disciple trying to become a pill concocting master.

Naturally, being able to pay respect under Yang Chen’s faction would have been an even better opportunity, but unfortunately, Yang Chen was only at initial foundation stage and could not accept disciples. However for Ho Lin, this was not a big deal, Yang Chen was her young master. If she goes to Yang Chen with any questions, Yang Chen would never decline.

After sending off the delighted and surprised servants, Yang Chen sealed his courtyard and began to increase the grade of Profound Spirit Furnace.

The Profound Spirit Furnace which had absorbed the Geocentric

Flame, Real Sun Fire and Nanming Flame had already become very high grade, not in the least inferior to He Lianyun's ancient pill concocting furnace.

Green Phosphorous Fire and Cold Ice Flame were the same grade as the Geocentric Flame so there wouldn't be much difficulty in absorbing it into the Profound Spirit Furnace.

When Yang Chen had first used the Profound Spirit Furnace to absorb the Geocentric Flame, he had to waste half a year. Naturally, at that time, Yang Chen's cultivation was low and the grade of Profound Spirit Furnace was also inferior, but now he didn't have to waste so much effort.

Both Green Phosphorous Fire and Cold Ice Flame belonged to the fourth fire attribute. Yang Chen easily absorbed them both within the Profound Spirit Furnace at the same time. From beginning to end, it only took two months.

Profound Wood Flame was a little bit troublesome. Compared to the Geocentric Flame, it was of a higher grade. But it wasn't a big deal for the Profound Spirit Furnace which had already absorbed the Real Sun Fire. Within another two months, the Profound Wood Flame was successfully absorbed and stored within the furnace body.

But the next Real Moon Fire was also quite troublesome, this flame was on the same level as Real Sun Fire but its nature was the complete opposite. Yang Chen wanted to absorb it too, but he couldn't allow the Real Moon Fire to come in contact with the Real Sun Fire stored within the furnace. With his present cultivation,

that was an almost impossible task.

Fortunately, the Real Sun Fire and Nanming Fire had already laid a good foundation. With those two, the impossible task turned into something just highly difficult. Yang Chen only needed to be a little careful and have some patience. As for Yang Chen, who had played with fire for over ten thousand years in his past life, how could he let a trifling Real Moon Fire baffle him?

Back when he absorbed the Real Sun Fire, he had used the same technique and process. Only this time, he just needed to be a little careful and not let the Real Sun Fire encounter Real Moon Fire inside the furnace. It was similar to refining two types of flames together, but for Yang Chen, success was only a matter of time.

After half a year, the Real Moon Fire was also completely absorbed within the Profound Spirit Furnace. In addition to these four types of flames, the Profound Spirit Furnace already had seven types of flames. Of those, three were of them were high grade, Nanming Fire, Real Sun Fire, Real Moon Fire. The whole magic tool's grade had risen more than twice.

The body of Profound Spirit Furnace was emitting a hazy light and didn't have the color and lustre that gave it its customary illusionary sensation.

But Yang Chen knew that in front of the current Profound Spirit Furnace, let alone He Linayun's furnace, even Deng Yi's purple coloured furnace which was used to refine Heaven Seizing Pills were just dregs. After absorbing seven flames, the Profound Spirit Furnace had already attained the peak of magic tools in the mortal

world.

Naturally, if he could also absorb the Real Pure Yang Fire passed down by the great ancestor of Pure Yang Palace, then it will genuinely reach the pinnacle which no other pill concocting furnace of the mortal world could attain.

Among the magic weapons and magic tools which Yang Chen had, only the Profound Spirit Furnace could separate itself from Yang Chen's cultivation and continue to be upgraded. But this moment, the Profound Spirit Furnace didn't have the aura of a high grade magic weapon, rather seeming reserved, like nothing out of the ordinary. If he told someone that this seemingly unremarkable furnace has some relation to the one of the most formidable pill concocting furnaces of the Heavenly Courts, no one would believe him.

With the present Profound Spirit Furnace, Yang Chen could refine the elixir for healing senior black tiger even more easily, and with a greater chance of success. By this moment, Yang Chen's preparation was already nearly complete, taking him more or less ten months. Now, he just had to wait for Beast Taming Sect to deliver the ingredients.

During the waiting time, Yang Chen once again went to meet his master. With the Profound Yang Fruits given by Yang Chen, within these ten months, Gao Yue's cultivation advanced by leaps and bounds and had already reached fifth qi layer from third qi layer. Moreover within the short period of two months, it had already increased by two minor layers. Even if it was Fairy Shi who was in another whole world with regard to cultivation speed, she



couldn't match this cultivation speed.

Naturally, Yang Chen and Gao Yue both knew that apart from the Profound Yang Fruits, Gao Yue's formidable peak JieDan stage spirit awareness was also a significant reason for this speed. Despite all this, Gao Yue was still astonished, she wondered whether she was really suited to water attributed cultivation methods? But she obviously had a fire attribute spirit root!

“Master don't be worried about you cultivation, you will know the reason with time.”

Naturally Yang Chen couldn't tell her the reason right now, let alone make it public. In his last life, it was because others knew that Gao Yue had a post-natal water attributed full spirit root, that she had been forced to become someone's dao companion.. This life, before Yang Chen obtained the strength to protect Gao Yue, he would certainly not let anyone know.

Ho Lin was not willing to break Yang Chen's trust. Within brief ten months, with the assistance of the third grade foundation stage pill, she had successfully built her foundation. In fact, all of Yang Chen's four servants had a similar cultivation. The other three had already reached foundation stage and entered the inner sect, only Ho Lin was waiting for Yang Chen, waiting to see whether she has the opportunity to enter Zhu Chentao's faction or not.

# Chapter 193-Cultivating While Pill Concocting

---

Before Yang Chen entered seclusion, he was called in by Palace master Zhong Jiao. The reason for calling him this time was none other than Yang Chen's four servants reaching foundation stage.

Among the inner disciples of Pure Yang Palace, how many were servants? It was not like servants who had the benefit of a long cultivation period and good guidance from their masters could not reach foundation stage successfully, but, these kind of servants are very rare. Moreover, servants with inferior aptitudes who could reach foundation stage within a short twenty years belonged to Yang Chen alone.

This point had already clearly illustrated Yang Chen's exceptional guiding abilities. Guiding a disciple with a good aptitude to reach foundation stage was very easy, but guiding a servant who had an inferior aptitude to reach foundation stage was not something many could do.

Palace master Zhong Jiao only wanted to know the reason behind Yang Chen's incisively accurate guidance, so as to confirm whether other Merit Transferring Disciples could also do what Yang Chen had done. It must be known that the more robust the foundation of a cultivator was, the higher his future accomplishments were. The entire time, Palace Master Zhong Jiao was only thinking about raising the sect's strength.

“Reason?”

Yang Chen didn't know whether to laugh or cry, since Palace Master had asked a question that he was obliged to reply but could not be truthful. How could he explain that he had already lived one life and had also retained the memories of more than ten thousand years of that life. So he could only use another reason that was palatable to everyone.

“Palace Master, disciple had already read and memorized millions of jade slips in the Hidden Pavilion of my sect. In those slips were the experiences of difficulties many seniors had faced during their cultivation.”

Yang Chen's words were also true. These past years he had really read all the jade slips in the Hidden Pavilion once, so it wasn't completely false.

“Moreover, all the five phases of this disciple has reached foundation stage so disciple also has personally experienced all attributes. Thus when it comes to guiding disciples who have problems, disciple is personally aware of what they are going through.”

This was Yang Chen's second reason. To begin with, it was a convincing reason. Almost all the Merit Transferring Disciples could only provide guidance about the attribute they cultivated in, as for other attributes, they usually didn't have enough knowledge or experience.

Both reasons were quite reasonable, but if someone wanted to

replicate those circumstances, it would be quite difficult. Let alone foundation stage disciples, even Palace Master Zhong Jiao and any of the other YuanYing stage elders were incapable of doing so. If they spent the effort to read a million jade slips, perhaps they'd be able to do so, but reading and memorizing that many jade slips was easier said than done. Even still, that would still leave them bereft of experience regarding other attributes.

“However, presently, setting up five Merit Transferring Disciples, one for each attribute, would do the job better.”

Yang Chen seemed to hesitate for a moment before putting forward this suggestion. However, this suggestion was clearly against the unwritten rules that every disciple should follow after their karma.

It wasn't like there was any provision that only one disciple could be made the Merit Transferring Disciple. But every big sect had such unwritten regulations and no one had broken it. Yang Chen's words made Palace Master Zhong Jiao's brows pucker up immediately.

“But it doesn't sit well with the rules set by Ancestor, does it?”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao's thoughts also began to waver slightly. But tempting as it was, this clearly did not conform with the rules.

“The Eccentric Hall also isn't in keeping with the rules set by Ancestor.”

Yang Chen faintly smiled and reminded him.

“If my Pure Yang Palace indeed becomes the first in the entire world to implement this rule, then maybe everyone can follow along.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao pondered for a moment and faintly shook his head,

“Is there any other dependable method? We cannot create an opportunity for other sects to exploit.”

Perhaps all sects understood that if they had more Merit Transferring Disciples that they could provide better guidance to those outer disciples. But it was also unknown which ancestor had left behind this rule and insisted on using this ineffective and merciless rule to guide the disciples at all sects, playing such an important role in affecting their destiny.

Reforming the immortal cultivating sects was even more difficult than reforming the Heavenly Court. Even the Eccentric Hall was established only because there was no precedent. Only when Pure Yang Palace saw that the resistance from the sects weren't too great, and the obvious benefits did they clench their teeth and go through with it. Any problems that would've popped up were quickly erased with Elder Wu's support and the devil cultivation calamity. Only because of these two events was it accepted by everyone with great difficulty.

Pure Yang Palace was only a second rate sect, but after the

previous few events, if they absolutely insisted on transforming the Merit Transferring Disciples system, then it certainly cannot begin from Pure Yang Palace. Therefore, the Palace Master was asking Yang Chen to think of a method.

“How about if Nine Earth Manor can still have only one Merit Transferring Disciple, but if every peak qi layer disciple voluntary agrees to be the Merit Transferring Disciple’s assistant and guide the younger disciples for one year in exchange for reward of a second grade foundation stage pill, wouldn’t this improve this situation?”

Seeing that Palace Master Zhong Jiao was serious about increasing the reserve strength of Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen thought for a brief moment and gave a solution that could act as a compromise.

“Peak qi layer disciples guiding junior fellow disciples?”

Once the Palace Master heard this, he immediately began to mull over it, and both his eyes began to shine with some excitement.

This was certainly not in violation of the rules, there was still only one Merit Transferring Disciple as before. But even some of the peak qi layer disciples guiding their fellow disciples of the same attribute would be of great assistance, compared to the disciples fumbling on their own. As for these peak qi layer disciples, a second grade foundation stage pill would greatly improve their chances of reaching foundation stage, satisfying both sides.

“Good! Good!”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao nodded his head. In reality, he hadn't expected to obtain a specific solution from Yang Chen when he had called him in this time. He had only sought the reason behind Yang Chen's superb guidance and see if it could be duplicated. But he hadn't in the least expected that Yang Chen would be able to find a method.

However, Yang Chen heaved a sigh of regret inwardly. Secular world cultivators were so inflexible in comparison to those people of the Heavenly Court. Perhaps it was because of their wholehearted immersion into cultivation that they never thought of breaking the rules of the cultivation world. Unlike the secular cultivators, the officials of the Heavenly Court would first seek to see which rules and regulations needed changing in order to satisfy their requirements.

“Yang Chen, you have again rendered a great service.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao's heart was filled with joy. This disciple, Yang Chen always delivered such unexpected surprises, so how could Pure Yang Palace not rise?

“The sect traitor who had leaked the information about your master, it was Luminous Moon Hall Song Hang's disciple.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao calmly told this to Yang Chen,

“He had already admitted his guilt, and no other person was involved. You can deal with him as you see fit.”

As for the authority to punish him, he had handed it over to Yang Chen.

“Kill!”

Without the slightest hesitation, Yang Chen condemned him to death. Leaking his master's weak point and putting her in danger, what else could enrage Yang Chen more? For him, such a person was an enemy who had to be killed.

This judgement also decided that person's fate. Since Palace Master Zhong Jiao had allowed Yang Chen to handle the punishment, it counted as a small reward, and absolutely couldn't go against his wishes. Also, it was only natural to kill a traitor, who would dare speak up against it? Even his own master Song Hang couldn't do anything.

Initially, Palace Master Zhong Jiao had intended to ask Yang Chen about Song Hang's bottleneck. It'd already been several years since Song Hang had tried to embarrass Yang Chen while he was the substitute hall master of Luminous Moon Hall. His hatred may have abated by then, but with this, the Palace Master was no longer in a position to ask.

Perhaps he already knew what his reply would be, so it was better to save himself the embarrassment of asking. Hearing Yang Chen's reply, Palace Master Zhong Jiao also sighed in his heart. It seemed



the matter between Yang Chen and Luminous Moon Hall could not be resolved peacefully.

People of Luminous Moon Hall had repeatedly tried to provoke Yang Chen. From Chu Heng to Liang Shaoming, then Song Hang and now his disciple, their repeated actions had also begun to make Palace Master Zhong Jiao extremely resentful.

If that one disciple hadn't taken all the blame this time, and the Law Enforcement Hall had implicated more people of Luminous Moon Hall, the Palace Master could've used this chance to clean the Luminous Moon Hall thoroughly. It could only be said that this time, Luminous Moon Hall's luck was very good.

Compared to Yang Chen, who had been continually battling to gain benefits for the sect, these Luminous Hall people had simply been biting the hand that fed them. This kind of behavior had already infuriated the palace Master. If they tried anything to provoke him again, he certainly wouldn't let Luminous Moon Hall off easily.

Besides these brief interludes of conversation, all that remained was many months of waiting before the people of Beast Taming Sect finally collected all the ingredients and delivered them to Yang Chen. Yet those months were not put to waste, as Yang Chen frequently met with Zhu Chentao to discuss the ingredients, pill recipe and the sequence of the entire process from the beginning to end.

For the sake of Yang Chen's face, Zhu Chentao also approved Ho Lian as the assistant for the two people during pill refining. This

point made Ho Lian almost jump up and down due to excitement. Even though she had already reached foundation stage, she still hadn't reached the level of maintaining a serene heart.

The person who had come to deliver the ingredients was Fan Shan. After putting all the items one by one in front of them, Fan Shan finally took out a jade bottle with a serious expression. Even while delivering it to Yang Chen, he was still reluctant to part with it.

“Younger brother, this is the powder shaved from senior black tiger's inner dan, in accordance with your request.”

Fan Shan continued with almost a begging tone,

“While scraping this powder, senior black tiger was in unbearable pain, and even his cultivation has dropped the equivalent of several decades. Younger brother, you must succeed at all costs!”

“Be relieved elder brother, I am well aware of the situation!”

Naturally, Yang Chen knew how painful it was to forcefully shave a demon beast's dan, but there was no other option. He had to add the elixir made of the inner dan's powder to make the pill the most compatible with senior black tiger and heal him perfectly.

Under Fan Shan's expectant gaze, Yang Chen, Zhu Chentao and Ho Ling entered the first five year period of seclusion. During this

period, the two of them wanted to refine an elixir which could stabilize the internal condition of senior black tiger so that it doesn't worsen more. The rest of the time would be spent refining the rest of the ingredients properly. During the next period of ten years, they intended to refine the elixir which could treat the condition of the injury.

As for the period, the time for this refining was longer compared the time it took to refine Heaven Seizing Pill. That wasn't entirely strange since, back when refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, there were three YuanYing stage pill concocting masters working with the assistance of Elder Wu himself and Fan Shan. Currently, however, there was only the initial foundation stage cultivator Yang Chen and peak JieDan stage cultivator Zhu Chentao, so the time taken would naturally be different.

On Yang Chen's request, the old tree demon had sealed Yang Chen's small courtyard. As long as Pure Yang Palace doesn't face a situation comparable to sect extermination or Gao Yue isn't in any mortal danger, Yang Chen would not be bothered by anyone. According to Yang Chen's memory, no major events happened during this period and each sect just steadily increased their strength.

"Uncle Master, I will first purify the ingredients once and then uncle master can take a look."

Yang Chen once again confirmed the refining process with Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin and began to purify them with his Geocentric Flame.

The difficulty of concocting the elixir that could stabilize the injury wasn't very high, but it still required Yang Chen to use his unique technique at some crucial points. During the early stages, Zhu Chentao would be responsible for conducting the refining according to Yang Chen's directions. At the latter stages, Zhu Chentao's proficiency for controlling flame was insufficient and Yang Chen would take over. As for Ho Lin, she was responsible for delivering the ingredients. Her main role was to learn from the concocting process.

Zhu Chentao was extremely focused. This was his first time participating in refining an elixir to be used by a Da Cheng stage expert, let alone acting as the main pill concocting master. Yang Chen would only lend assistance during the most crucial of times. In other words, it can be said that ninety nine percent of this elixir would be refined by Zhu Chentao.

If the refining of this elixir was unsuccessful, both Zhu Chentao, the principal pill concocting master, and Ho Lin would be lambasted as the ones responsible for ruining Yang Chen's reputation as a famous pill concocting master which he had carefully built from that time of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill. So both of them were extremely cautious with this opportunity, acting as if they were facing the biggest hurdle of their lives.

Under the dual force of the Geocentric Flame and the present grade Profound Spirit Furnace along with Yang Chen's extremely proficient control over fire, it only took a couple of days to completely purify all the ingredients, bringing their medicinal quality to the peak. It was only waiting for Zhu Chentao to open his furnace and begin refining.

One year's time was already enough for Zhu Chentao to become proficient in using He Lianyun's pill concocting furnace. As the furnace was started, Ho Lin started to bring the ingredients one by one according to the plan. Zhu Chentao took a deep breath and looked at Yang Chen with seriousness. After seeing Yang Chen nod, he began to add the ingredients one by one to the furnace.

Being cautious, Zhu Chentao even started using the trick Yang Chen had used when he was still a qi layer disciple and caught the furnace by its handles with both hands for the first stage of refining.

Looking at Zhu Chentao slowly stabilize his flame control and begin refining, Yang Chen took out his Profound Spirit Furnace and began to absorb the refined flames.

As during the time while refining Heaven Seizing Pill, Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin were carefully refining while Yang Chen was busy with his cultivation. This time, Yang Chen's plan was to absorb the Profound Wood Flame, Green Phosphorous Flame, Cold Ice Flame, and fuse all of them together. The brunt of the work would be undertaken by the Profound Wood Flame.

# Chapter 194 - Finally Again A Fire Attributed Cultivator

---

Presently, Yang Chen was trying to cultivate all ten attributes together. Right then, all were at the third layer of foundation stage. However, for other people, it was very strange, Yang Chen was of fire attribute, but he could still cultivate other attributes. Since his cultivation was low right now, other people didn't care, but when his cultivation rose higher, other people would certainly start raising questions.

In terms of spirit power quality, fifth earth spirit power was the most formidable at the moment. Using True Fifth Earth Secrets as a cultivation method and fifth earth True Qi as a spirit power, the one considered nearest to origin fifth earth. Next was first wood spirit power and second wood spirit power, one was the PengLai Divine Wood spirit power while the other was Blood Phantom Vine's spirit power.

Following it was fourth attribute spirit power, which was the Geocentric Flame's spirit power. Compared to fourth attribute spirit power, third attribute spirit power was slightly weaker. Even though the third fire spirit power had undergone tempering by Real Sun Fire and Nanming Fire and had been purified, neither of them could be absorbed at present, so it was much weaker. As for the other spirit powers, they were all ordinary and didn't have any special features and constituted the last grade of spirit powers.

Presently, Yang Chen could make use of the flames at the grade of the Profound Wood Flame. Absorbing the Profound Wood Flame would allow his third fire spirit power's grade to rise a little,

allowing it to achieve equilibrium with the fourth fire spirit power.

The method was similar to absorbing the Geocentric Flame, where he would absorb a trace of the flame it, using the third fire spirit power to absorb and transform it.

The process was very simple and uninteresting, it only required Yang Chen to be able to endure the pain of self immolation during the flame purification and absorption process.

For Yang Chen who had already absorbed the Geocentric Flame as well the Real Sun Fire in his previous life and had also endured over ten thousand years of suffering, this was nothing. The only thing he had to pay attention to was avoiding a backlash from absorbing too many flames.

Ho Lin was amazed as she saw Yang Chen immersed in that sort of cultivation state right in front of her. Her amazement was only compounded when she looked over to see Zhu Chentao holding both handles of Profound Spirit Furnace, doing something she couldn't understand. What was more strange was that there was nothing inside the Profound Spirit Furnace, it made her all the more amazed.

However, despite not understanding what was going on, Ho Lin didn't make any careless moves. On the contrary, her actions became more deliberate and cautious, moving to the area between Yang Chen and Zhu Chentao between their pill concocting furnaces. In case some accident happened while Zhu Chentao was concocting, Ho Lin could substitute for Yang Chen to reduce the harm.

Zhu Chentao continued refining the ingredients meticulously, following the pre-determined plan. Of the multitude of ingredients, Yang Chen had already explained clearly which one to add when, what sort of temperature should be maintained, and how to control the flames. Zhu Chentao also remembered everything clearly.

Due to a combination of excitement and nervousness, Zhu Chentao entered a profound state. Apart from the pill concocting furnace in his hands, he couldn't see anything. Perhaps, even more strictly speaking, apart from the ingredients being refined in the furnace, he was unaware of anything around him and was wholeheartedly working on the process as discussed with Yang Chen without any mistakes.

Looking between Zhu Chentao's expression and Yang Chen's, Ho Lin suddenly comprehended something. She may not be gifted with talents like Yang Chen, but if she could learn hall master Zhu Chentao's temperament of not letting himself distracted, whether in cultivation or pill concocting, this attitude will be very good for her.

Traces of Profound Wood Flame entered Yang Chen's body one by one until it had sufficiently accumulated. At that time, third fire spirit power rumbled loudly and began to ignite. The fierce burning made Yang Chen's meridian ache as the third fire spirit power soon seemed to have completely exhausted itself.

Yang Chen knew that this was the Profound Wood Flame assimilating and compressing into his own spirit power. The



familiar pain drilled through his body as an endless stream of energy came from the Profound Wood Flame. Finally, the entirety of his third fire spirit power had transformed.

Yang Chen quickly swallowed the Profound Yang Fruit which he had kept in his mouth earlier. Back in those days, the amount of spirit power in one of them was enough for Yang Chen for a couple of days was now barely enough to recover his spirit power. After being tempered, the spirit power transformation was even more fluid. After a few cycles of absorption and transformation, Yang Chen's third fire spirit power successfully transformed to Profound Wood Flame spirit power.

Bang!

After the whole process was completed, Yang Chen once again entered his spirit sea. It had changed once more. Above the PengLai Divine Wood's tree trunk appeared many ring size flames. The raging flames were burning fiercely, and rose very high, but it didn't seem to be harming the trees in any way.

The range of spirit sea once again began to expand, only this time the range of expansion was not very large, stopping after only expanding twenty percent. His spirit sea was now nearly as large as it was before he had healed Gao Yue.

His spiritual awareness had increased again, but had stayed within the boundary of JieDan, reaching peak JieDan stage. If it increased any more than now, it would make its way into initial YuanYing stage.

Now that the third fire spirit power had completely transformed into Profound Wood Flame, it had also upgraded the third spirit power. Yang Chen again ate a Profound Yang Fruit to recover his spirit power and was pleasantly surprised to discover that his third fire spirit power had reached the fourth layer of foundation stage and entered mid foundation stage.

Opening his eyes, Yang Chen was slightly distracted to find Ho Lin staring intently at him. But seeing Ho Lin in protective mode made him extremely satisfied at her performance so far.

A soft query to Ho Lin, and he was aware that four months had passed. Yang Chen walked to Zhu Chentao's side and began to examine the refining situation.

Zhu Chentao didn't seem to pay any attention to Yang Chen and was wholeheartedly concentrated on the pill concocting furnace within his hand. Looking at his situation, it seemed that he had been persisting for these entire four months. Seeing this, Yang Chen couldn't help but admire him more and more, thinking that choosing Zhu Chentao for this pill concocting was correct.

There hadn't been the slightest bit of mistake in pill refining until now, if he continued at this rate, within only three more years, Zhu Chentao can successfully refine all the ingredients and deliver them to Yang Chen to work on.

There was still plenty of time left, so Yang Chen once again sat down cross-legged. After exhorting Ho Lin to be careful in tending

to the two of them, he again took out the Profound Spirit Furnace. This time, Yang Chen had intended to absorb the Green Phosphorous Flame.

Green Phosphorous Flame was fourth fire attributed and was the same grade as Geocentric Flame. For Yang Chen, this also wasn't anything difficult and only required some patience and time.

Everything was going according to Yang Chen's plan, including the absorption of these flames. During this pill concocting period, Yang Chen was aiming to make people recognize that he only had a fire spirit root and was fire attributed cultivator, not a mix-up.

Absorbing and refining the Green Phosphorous Flame was not difficult, the only difficulty lay in fusing the Geocentric Flame and the Green Phosphorous Flame. However, Yang Chen's present goal was not fusion, but rather absorption. All the other things come after that.

After four months, Yang Chen had again completed the absorption and refining process. The fourth fire spirit power within his body had completely changed into two types. Among the spirit power flowing within one hundred and eight paths, half belonged to Geocentric Flame spirit power while another half belonged to Green Phosphorous Flame.

Absorbing the flame made Yang Chen's spirit power rise again as fourth fire spirit power directly broke through the third layer of foundation stage and entered fourth layer.

The largest transformation still happened within the spirit sea, the spirit sea had again expanded this time and had finally reached the size it had been before Yang Chen and Gao Yue's dual cultivation. A ball of flickering light appeared within the sky. It didn't resemble flame at all, but Yang Chen knew, this was Green Phosphorous Flame's truest and simplest form.

His spiritual awareness which had already reached the peak, finally broke through and entered initial YuanYing stage with seemingly unstoppable force. Only this time, his spiritual awareness was even more compact and seemed to be of higher quality.

At this moment, within Yang Chen's body, only third and fourth fire spirit power had reached fourth layer. Although the other spirit powers had broken through too, but they had stopped at the third layer's peak without upgrading any further.

After resting for a little bit and examining Zhu Chentao's situation again, Yang Chen sat down cross-legged and began to absorb Cold Ice Flame.

Under Ho Lin's gaze, with these eight short months of cultivation, Yang Chen's body began to emit a dense fire energy. If it is said that previously she couldn't sense any particular attribute strongly from Yang Chen, it was clear now that Yang Chen was a cultivator with a fire attributed spirit root.

The presence of fire was growing more and more vigorously, but the strange thing was that while emitting that sensation of flames raging vigorously, he was also simultaneously emitting the shady

sensation of phosphorescence. It was extremely strange.

Ho Lin had recently reached foundation stage not too long ago and still hadn't accepted any master. At most, she was consolidating her realm under Yang Chen's guidance, so naturally she didn't realize what was happening. But very quickly, Ho Lin discovered after four months that Yang Chen's body had begun to radiate an ice cold sensation that felt like it could freeze bone to the marrow.

This sensation was extremely strange. It was clearly flame, but anyone who could sense it also felt an impression of deep cold. By this time, Ho Lin finally remembered that fire attributed cultivators can absorb some different flames, so in all likelihood, this was some kind of ice attributed flame.

Cold Ice Flame, Geocentric Flame and Green Phosphorous Flame were all of similar grade, but compared to Geocentric Flame and Green Phosphorous Flame, Cold Ice Flame was slightly more difficult to absorb. For better or worse, Geocentric Flame and the Green Phosphorous Flame both had high temperatures, but the Cold Ice Flame had a temperature below freezing.

Yang Chen had already prepared for this long ago. With three flames as a foundation, he began to steadily and surely absorb traces of Cold Ice Flame into his meridians. Soon enough, fourth fire spirit power's one hundred and eight paths were evenly divided, every thirty six spirit power threads, between the three flames.

Absorption of the Cold Ice Flame once again lead to upgrade of

fourth fire spirit power. This time, the fourth fire spirit power broke through fourth layer and entered fifth layer.

In his past life, when Yang Chen reached foundation stage, it had taken him fifteen years to reach third layer. But in this life, over the course of a single year, his fourth fire spirit power had jumped two layers and his third fire spirit power by one. Overall, his fire attribute spirit power had entered mid foundation stage.

His spirit sea had expanded once again, reaching one hundred and fifteen mu. Around the roots of the PengLai Divine Wood and Blood Phantom Vine, many large ball shaped flames had appeared, extremely pure and transparent, like everything touched by it would freeze over.

Spiritual awareness had again upgraded, reaching the peak of initial YuanYing stage. With the slightest increase, it would be able to break through.

From the outside, at present, Yang Chen's body was radiating signs of the fire attribute, especially fourth fire spirit power which had the highest cultivation.

Zhu Chentao's refining had also proceeded without the slightest mishap. He was single mindedly concentrated on refining without slowing down even a little bit. Within the time of one year during which Yang Chen had absorbed three flames, relying on his astonishing willpower, Zhu Chentao had continued to persist with the refining.

Ho Lin also discharged her duties as helper earnestly, aptly bringing the ingredients Zhu Chentao needed, whether it was feeding him yang qi pills or yuan cultivation pills, allowing Zhu Chentao to maintain sufficient spirit power. Yang Chen didn't dare to give Profound Yang Fruits to Zhu Chentao> That kind of high grade supplement would have no greater benefit, only distracting him and making him feel regret at using such a high grade supplement.

At this rate, this refining would still require two more years. Only then Yang Chen would take the stage. Currently everything was moving according to the plan.

Keeping to his own schedule, Yang Chen once again sat down and began to fuse Green Phosphorous Flame and Cold Ice Flame within his body. For the time being, he wouldn't be fusing the Geocentric Flame, he still required it to raise the grade of refining.

The process of fusing flames was again a process which would again increase his spirit power, allow the fire attribute within his body to rise in quality and also imply that Yang Chen's fire attributed cultivation had become even more formidable.

Compared to refining, fusing the flames was even more difficult, but fortunately, the grade of flames was not very high, reducing the difficulty. Moreover for Yang Chen, it was only a matter of time and patience.

For the next two years, the fourth fire spirit power paths in Yang Chen's body where Green Phosphorous Flame and Cold Ice Flame were flowing, incessantly touched, fused and separated in a

continuous cycle. But in the final two months, they began to genuinely fuse together without any distinction.

Ho Lin had already become accustomed to the unusual changes in Yang Chen's body. At the same time, she had also understood that his spirit power had increased greatly within a small period. Although, she didn't know how to react to this. In a short three years, Yang Chen's cultivation seemed to have increased by yet another layer, finally breaking through to fifth layer, at the point of entering late foundation stage.

This time's upgrade was naturally because of fusion of the flames. Fourth fire spirit power had again upgraded, and Yang Chen's body was clearly emitting the presence of fire attributed spirit power. But this time's spirit power upgrade didn't lead to increase in spirit sea's area nor spiritual awareness. The true form of those flames in the spirit sea hadn't fused and were still present.

The fire attributed spirit power seemed to be outstanding compared to other attributes' spirit power. Regardless of whether it was third fire or fourth fire, both had surpassed the other attributes, so the spirit power of other attributes wasn't that eye-catching.

At this stage, Yang Chen finally could confidently declare to anyone that he was a fire attributed cultivator with a fire spirit root. Moreover, the best way to increase one's fire attributed cultivation was to absorb and fuse all kind of flames.



# Chapter 195 - Awe Inspiring Pill Concocting Technique

---

Not everyone can successfully fuse different types of flames. Before one's cultivation had reached a certain stage, it was a dream within a dream.

Pure flames had the benefits of pure flames. The fire's quality was high, and controlling it was a matter of ease. Furthermore, it would not become chaotic.

But its weak points were correspondingly clear. The strength of pure flames were not constant, and depended on the cultivation of the cultivator. Moreover if someone has only one kind of flame then it may not be usable under certain circumstances.

Furthermore, controlling fused flames was exceedingly difficult and required a formidable spiritual awareness. If Yang Chen was the slightest bit careless, he could entirely lose control. But fused flames did have a qualitative increase in strength as well as caused an increase in the quality of spirit power.

In his previous life, Yang Chen only had the Real Sun Fire. He didn't have many other opportunities to collect flames either, since he was constantly hunted. But even if he had had the fortune of obtaining other flames, he didn't have the knowledge, experience or control to fuse them. Only when one had a deep understanding of different flames would one obtain the ability to fuse flames.

By the time he had ascended to heaven, he was already a prisoner, so he he didn't have any opportunities. But in this life, Yang Chen had the opportunity to discuss methods of controlling fire with experts and learned how to fuse flames.

The fusion ended at the perfect time, only two months after Zhu Chentao had finished. These two months, while cultivating, Yang CHen had also been guiding Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin on the principles of control and manipulating fire.

It was not that Yang Chen didn't want to share this knowledge and purposely didn't guide Zhu Chentao earlier, but because Zhu Chentao could only understand now that he had completed three years of continuous refining.

On the other hand, Ho Lin couldn't understand most of the principles. Nothing could be done about that, her realm was too low, her perception a little below par, and her experience with pill concocting inadequate. Thus, not understanding was completely normal.

Two months passed like the wind as Zhu Chentao's work neared completion. All of the ingredients had been refined and mixed properly, nearing the second stage of this concocting.

This elixir originally didn't have any name because Yang Chen had prescribed the ingredients according to senior black tiger's exact condition of injury. However, for Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin, this time's refining had great meaning, so it absolutely had to have a name. After a slight discussion between the two, according to Zhu Chentao's opinion, this time's injury stabilizing pill was called

the Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir, and the injury restoring pill was called the Black Tiger Spirit Supporting Pill.

The Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir still required one more step before completion, but that single step was a gulf Zhu Chentao couldn't cross. It was almost laughable, Pure Yang Palace's Medicine Hall master, a cultivator with a JieDan cultivation, unexpectedly couldn't best a foundation stage junior's prowess. But this face, even Zhu Chentao was well aware of when to step aside.

The initially refined medicinal liquid was wrapped by Zhu Chentao's spirit power and softly deposited within Yang Chen's Profound Spirit Furnace. At this moment, no pill concocting furnace in the mortal world could compare to the Profound Spirit Furnace, so changing furnaces was entirely appropriate.

Now it was out of Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin's hands, the rest was up to Yang Chen. Both of them slightly backed away, eyes glued to Yang Chen's technique in an attempt to learn something from his refining technique.

Inside the Profound Spirit Furnace, different flames drew patterns on the furnace walls. Of all the high grade flames within, the Geocentric Flame, the Profound Wood Flame, Green Phosphorous Flame, Cold Ice Fire, Real Moon Fire, Nanming Fire, and Real Sun Fire Yang Chen didn't choose the flame most appropriate for pill concocting, the Geocentric Flame, to bear the brunt of the world, but rather the Real Sun Fire.

It was the flame that Yang Chen was the most familiar with,

having more than ten thousand years of experience in his previous life. He knew everything about it, so even if he hadn't absorbed it, he could already utilize it to the point of perfection.

If it was just this, it wouldn't have made Zhu Chentao gasp in amazement. It wasn't like Zhu Chentao hadn't had the opportunity to obtain high grade flames, it was that his cultivation was too low to have any effect in controlling flames.

What stunned Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin speechless was what Yang Chen was doing with his other hand. His one hand was controlling Real Sun Fire, but the other was doing something absolutely astonishing.

Water attributed spirit power, precisely speaking ninth water attributed spirit power, was controlling the medicinal liquid as fluidly as water. Under the control of Yang Chen's ninth water spirit power, the medicinal liquid was spreading to form a complex formation within the Profound Spirit Furnace.

Both Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin weren't familiar with the spell formation, but when the spell formation was unleashed and directly controlled the strength of surrounding flames, this scene completely absorbed their attention. Yang Chen had only revealed this trick once before when refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, so how could Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin even imagine such a method of pill refining?

Yang Chen wasn't done yet. When the spirit formation made of medicinal liquid was laid down, Yang Chen used his other hand to manipulate the Real Sun Fire to form another spell formation.

However, even made of flames, it gave of a sensation as if the power of fire had been replaced with water attributed spirit power.

Water power based pill concocting? Ho Lin and Zhu Chentao almost lost consciousness. It wasn't like a water method of pill concocting didn't exist, but only some unique pill concocting masters used it in some unique elixirs.

But presently Yang Chen was clearly controlling fire, but was using water attributed spirit power to concoct pills. This was already outside the horizons of cultivators, who could even do this?

Apart from astonishment and admiration, Zhu CHentao and Ho Lin couldn't think of any words to describe their mental state at this time. Was this still pill concocting? It really wasn't a performance?

Only, soon Zhu Chentao grew worried. If he was using this kind of method and the flame was being controlled like water spirit power, the Real Sun Fire's formidable strength might burn all these ingredients. But this was Yang Chen, if he had taken this into account, wouldn't it be rude to interrupt?

But the next surprise made Zhu Chentao snap his mouth shut. A cyan colored cold flame, the Cold Ice Fire, began to flicker within the Profound Spirit Furnace, wrapping itself around the medicinal liquid. The presence of this icy fame brought the temperature of the furnace to normal and the medicinal liquid also began to smoothly accept the next phase of refining.

The two spells seemed to have a complementary effect, bringing out the best in fire and water spirit powers. The medicinal liquid within Profound Spirit Furnace quickly began to change.

“Fortunately, the situation turned out to be even better than I expected.”

While concocting, Yang Chen didn’t forget to speak what he was thinking.

This action scared Zhu Chentao almost to death, and he almost couldn’t help himself from jumping over to cover Yang Chen’s mouth. Fortunately, he was able to control himself and didn’t do anything rude and impetuous.

“You should not speak for a little bit, so you don’t scare the life out of me!”

Even if Zhu Chentao was Yang Chen’s elder, at this moment he clearly was a student.

Without any aids, a single person was using two types of flames, one of which producing a spell to release water attributed spirit power and another to evenly cool down the medicinal liquid while still using water attributed spirit power to manipulate the medicinal liquid to form a spiritual formation to absorb spirit power. Seeing this, Zhu Chentao’s face was completely turned to stone, he was at a loss to describe what he was feeling.

Even if Zhu Chentao told this situation to someone, who would believe him? Until he had seen Yang Chen do it in front of him, even Zhu Chentao wouldn't have believed it. If someone had dared to describe this to him, Zhu Chentao would've slapped him without a second thought and asked him what kind of dream he was in to speak such rubbish.

The situation before his eyes had completely toppled all the knowledge Zhu Chentao had learned. Ho Lin was still a bit fortunate. She had just recently become an official disciple and still didn't have any deep seated beliefs. But Zhu Chentao had been concocting for several hundred years and his brain was already packed with traditional concocting methods. Yang Chen's performance had simply placed Zhu Chentao at a loss of what to do.

Was this still pill concocting? Didn't pill concocting include procedures like refining and mixing ingredients controlling fire? What kind of relationship does it have with spell formations? Moreover using both fire and water to concoct pills at the same time, what was this sorcery?

Without caring for whether it was unfathomable or unbelievable for Zhu Chentao, Yang Chen steadily carried out the refining in the Profound Spirit Furnace and smoothly advanced through the last stage of Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir.

Originally Yang Chen had planned to use common pill concocting techniques to refine the elixir in two years after Zhu Chentao had completed the initial three year stage of ingredient refining. But

after absorbing the Cold Ice Fire and seeing the crazy upgrades of the Profound Spirit Furnace, Yang Chen could only resort to such a method to drastically accelerate the refining process.

Using this method, the originally required two years could be cut down to one year. That would allow senior black tiger's condition to stabilize one year earlier. Which in turn would allow the people of Beast Taming Sect to have some assurance one year earlier, which would have significant impact on both sides cooperation.

While pill concocting, Yang Chen was also explaining some of the principles of pill refining and fire control being used by him then to Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin. Although neither of them could grasp the whole thing immediately, it would still open their eyes to a larger world, letting them know that there was still a long road ahead of them on the path of pill concocting.

Not to speak of other things, but the last time Zhu Chentao had seen Yang Chen use fire to imitate living beings, he had touched upon a vague insight, but this time, Yang Chen's words caused him to have a flash of enlightenment. Only then did he realize that compared to what was happening in front of him, even entering YuanYing stage wasn't impossible.

For Pure Yang Palace, a YuanYing stage expert certainly held great importance. But if they also had a YuanYing stage pill concocting expert, then they would be a half step closer to becoming a first rate sect.

But the benefits didn't stop there. No one would dare offend a pill concocting master, especially a YuanYing stage pill concocting



master. Even Da Cheng stage experts would tread carefully around them. Didn't Elder Wu, on the verge of ascending need the assistance of three YuanYing stage pill concocting masters to refine a Heaven Seizing Pill?

YuanYing stage expert Deng Yi, although she belonged to a minor school, the Heavenly Lake School, no one dared casually offend them. Even He Lianyun was a powerful figure in earlier days. If his realm hadn't fallen, he wouldn't have died so easily.

Although Zhu Chentao was obsessed with pill concocting, he wasn't an idiot. He naturally understood Yang Chen's intention. He didn't dare distract Yang Chen, and intently watched his technique, fearing to miss even the slightest thing. He was even more focused now than he had been before when he was refining ingredients. Maybe this time even the slightest change in spirit power could allow him to gain enlightenment. .

Just as Yang Chen had anticipated, after absorbing the Cold Ice Fire, this kind of method of using water and fire in tandem like yin and yang aiding each other really increased the efficiency of refining. In a little more than a year, his control of temperature had already reached perfection.

After calling Ho Lin and Zhu Chentao to pay attention, Yang Chen began to receive the pill. His pill receiving technique was different from ordinary methods, It was rather a technique written within the Great Elder's pill scripture. The more superior a technique was, the more profound it was.

However, Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin were unable to make any

sense of his pill receiving technique, rather just seeing the flame transform so nimbly at just the moment of pill receiving endlessly shocked the both of them, leaving them watching in rapt attention.

Under Yang Chen's control, the flame slowly began to die down, and the medicinal liquid began to slowly fuse together to form a rough sphere, just like a low grade elixir.

Soon, this rough elixir began to smoothen out, turning into a proper sphere and emitting a sweet fragrance.

At this stage, Zhu Chentao's nervous heart began to calm down. Looking at the Real Sun Fire and Cold Ice Fire slowly fade away, this Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir was finally completed.

Just when they were thinking that, the Profound Spirit Furnace suddenly emitted a trace of flame, the Nanming Fire. This mild seeming flame wrapped itself around the pill form of the elixir instantly, the dark green pill bursting into flame.

“Ah!”

Zhu Chentao screamed loudly. Just when the pill had been successfully completed, how could Yang Chen make a mistake like this? These four years of hard work had been completely ruined.

Just as he was about to extend his hand and snatch the burning elixir, Zhu Chentao was suddenly pulled back by Ho Lin. When he

took ahold of his senses again to take a look, he saw an extraordinarily serious look on Yang Chen's face. His eyes were fixed on the elixir, his entire being focused on the furnace.

When he was controlling two flames and medicinal liquid at the same time, he had the leisure to explain everything he was doing, so why wasn't he speaking now? Zhu Chentao immediately realized something was off, so he began to concentrate, no longer daring to utter another sound that could disturb Yang Chen.

This time, the flame was burning without any pattern, it was just ordinary refining, but after a few seconds, Zhu Chentao understood everything. Yang Chen wasn't satisfied with the elixir and had unexpectedly advanced to second refining.

After realizing this point, Zhu Chentao again cried out in fear. This Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir was to be used by a Da Cheng stage expert. Any elixir required by a Da Cheng expert was far from comparable to ordinary elixirs. Surprisingly, Yang Chen wasn't even satisfied with this elixir and still wanted to refine it once more.

This moment, even if he was a JieDan stage expert, even if he was the hall master of the Medicine Hall, Zhu Chentao couldn't help but admire Yang Chen. There was already no need to say anything more about Yang Chen's technique, but just this attitude of seeking perfection had already made Zhu Chentao admire him even more.

# Chapter 196 - Your Time Has Come

---

Truly speaking, Yang Chen was certainly excited. He was controlling the Profound Spirit Furnace so he naturally knew that the Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir had been successfully refined. But this moment, he had spied an opportunity of good fortune so he immediately summoned the Nanming Fire to begin a second refining without hesitation.

If he wanted to increase the level of his pill concocting, than only relying on his experience of ten thousand years of refining some low grade elixirs was absolutely impossible. Only by charging forward to refine high grade elixirs would improve his pill concocting.

Since he wanted to establish himself as a pill concocting master in this life, and a high grade pill concocting master at that, Yang Chen couldn't let any opportunity slip by. And in front of him was one of the most optimum opportunity.

The Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir wasn't entirely crucial to the overall treatment plan. It was only mean to suppress the injury from worsening, a transitional elixer. Yang Chen had intentionally created this step to impress the difficulty of pill concocting onto the Beast Suppressing Sect, so even if it failed, it wasn't a problem.

Another important fact was that regardless of however unimportant this Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir was to the overall picture, it was still an elixir meant to be used by a Da Cheng stage expert. The higher the grade of the pill, the greater the difficulty in refining it. There was no need to prove this, it could be seen clearly

from Yang Chen using two types of flames as well as both water and fire to complete the refining. Refining such a high grade elixir to second grade was certainly an exceptionally good opportunity for Yang Chen to improve the level of his pill concocting.

Within Great Elder's pill scripture, there were many records. Because of his cultivation, Yang Chen had selected the most suitable type of method for this type of refining. To Zhu Chentao, it seemed that he was just cultivating according to some set rules.

Naturally, Zhu Chentao didn't understand the high grade skills and techniques within this kind of seemingly ordinary refining which Yang Chen was doing, but this didn't stop Zhu Chentao from realizing that Yang Chen was advancing the refining to second grade.

While being careful that neither himself nor Ho Lin disturbed Yang Chen, Zhu Chentao was carefully observing Yang Chen's refining. But what again astonished Zhu Chentao was that he couldn't make any sense of what Yang Chen was doing. What was even more difficult to bear was that at this moment, Yang Chen was extremely focused, and not in a position to answer any of the myriad questions he had.

With his heart tense yet full of expectation for two months, Yang Chen's refining finally came to an end. With an exceptionally clean pill collecting technique, the flame wrapped around the pill flickered down to embers, leaving behind a crimson pill. Only, on the pill, there were two exceptionally clear pill marks.

The mark of a second grade pill was precisely the two pill marks.

But since the pill marks were so clear, Zhu Chentao almost wanted to extend his eyes to his hand and put the second grade Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir in his eyes. Ho Lin was looking at that beautiful elixir with even more infatuation and was speechless for a long time.

“I want to rest a little!”

Yang Chen only said these words and immediately sat down in a meditative posture and threw two Profound Yang Fruits in his mouth, closing his eyes without saying anything.

During the first refining, Yang Chen could still distract himself and explain things. During the second grade refining, the technique was seemingly ordinary, but Yang Chen was strained enough to be unable to say anything. In the previous year, he hadn't sensed any pressure, but the refining of last two months seemed to have utterly drained Yang Chen's entire strength.

His spiritual awareness and spirit power had been consumed to the extreme, and astonishingly, his ability to recover his power had also been deeply affected. Once the Profound Yang Fruit entered his stomach, as if a clean spring had begun to flow through a desert, it was completely absorbed in an instant.

Fortunately, they were inside the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. The spirit power in the underground vein was greatly sufficient and with the spirit power of the Profound Yang Fruits, Yang Chen soon thrummed with spirit power.

However, recovering the spirit power was easy, but recovering his spiritual awareness wasn't so simple. So after half of his spirit power had been recovered, Yang Chen stopped cultivating spirit power and began to cultivate Three Purities Secrets to restore his spiritual awareness.

This was the first time that Yang Chen's spiritual awareness had been consumed completely after reaching foundation stage. Even though his spiritual awareness had already reached initial YuanYing stage, it was still of no help. This clearly proved the difficulty of the second stage of refining.

However, apparently this was in accordance with the principles of cultivation. Despite being ferociously consumed, with the formidable supplement from Three Purities Secrets, the restored spirit power was seemingly more compact compared to before. After so much practice, maybe Three Purities Secrets could really break through to the fourth layer.

Naturally, that is something to be done later. For the time being Yang Chen didn't have any extravagant hope of reaching the fourth layer. Right now, he he had forcefully reached the third layer by drawing on the power from beheading tens of thousands of immortals as well as fusing the will of the Immortal Executioner's Platform. That was already taking advantage of his tremendous luck, Yang Chen didn't think there was still a place in the secular world that would give the opportunity to behead so many like the Immortal Executioner's Platform.

Yang Chen rested for around ten days. Within these ten days, Zhu Chentao was unable to remain calm and was continuously

tweaking his ears and scratching his cheeks.

Yang Chen had surprisingly refined the Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir to second grade, how could that not drive Zhu Chentao crazy with happiness? He had waited until Yang Chen had recovered with great difficulty, but as soon as Yang Chen awoke, he wasn't able to wait anymore. Facing the volley of questions, Yang Chen didn't know which he should reply to first.

Yang Chen was even more embarrassed upon finding out that Zhu Chentao was unable to make head or tails of a few of his simplest techniques! His brow deeply furrowed, Zhu Chentao was completely engrossed in Yang Chen's words. Unfortunately, some of things were from Yang Chen's experience while others he had learned from reading books, Zhu Chentao didn't have this experience and knowledge, so basically he didn't understand.

“Don't be hasty, uncle master!”

Finally Yang Chen could only force a bitter smile and remind Zhu Chentao. However he didn't say much, if he said too much, Zhu Chentao will lose face.

“On the path of pill concocting, I am still far behind!”

Zhu Chentao himself realized and took a deep sigh. However, afterwards he vigorously stood up,

“It seems this old man would have to live a little bit longer to see



more things.”

After he finished saying this, his eyes burned with an unprecedented seriousness.

Zhu Chentao used to think that until he broke through JieDan stage, it will be impossible for him to move forward on the path of pill concocting. After he had witnessed Yang Chen’s fire control, desire had begun to rise once again within his heart. But after today, the conviction of victory has been genuinely established in him. This would prove to be a great advantage for him when he attempted his ascension to YuanYing stage.

“After delivering this elixir to the people of Beast Taming Sect, should we continue immediately?”

After setting a goal, Zhu Chentao was impatiently waiting to participate in the refining of the Black Tiger Spirit Supporting Pill. He was already itching to once again observe Yang Chen’s pill concocting techniques.

“Don’t be hasty, uncle master Zhu!”

Yang Chen shook his head with a smile:

“Uncle master, rest during this time. Take this time to comprehend everything you’ve learned. Disciple will have to refine this Black Tiger Spirit Supporting Pill personally, since only disciple has taken a look at senior black tiger’s injuries.”

“Why is that?”

Zhu Chentao asked this, but before Yang Chen could reply he understood. For an elixir which is going to be used by a Da Cheng stage expert, whatever the results were, the eventual responsibility would land on Yang Chen who had suggested the pill recipe and refining method. As such, this time he couldn't just watch from the sides, otherwise the people of Beast Taming Sect will also not dare to make senior black tiger take this elixir.

“Fine, you go to Beast Taming Sect, this old man will enter seclusion for two months.”

Zhu Chentao waved his hand and made his arrangements. Before leaving, he didn't forgot to take Ho Lin,

“You also come, I have looked at your fire controlling methods. Are you willing to become this old man's disciple?”

This was one of Ho Lin's aims when entering pill concocting with Yang Chen. Hearing Zhu Chentao's words, Ho Lin was simply pleased beyond expectation. Without any hesitation, she immediately tapped her head on the ground,

“Master, please accept disciple's salutations!”

“Slow down! Slow down!”

Zhu Chentao's words pushed Ho Lin's heart into the deepest abyss, was there still some problem?

"Uncle master!"

Yang Chen also couldn't help but speak up, not realizing Zhu Chentao's meaning.

"Humph, when you become a disciple, you have to become a glorious disciple of the Medicine Hall. Why should this old man's disciple simply kowtow?"

Zhu Chentao snorted, flung his sleeves and walked out of Yang Chen's small courtyard:

"Ho Lin, follow your master. Good or bad, this old man is a hall master of the Medicine Hall, so there must be a grand ceremony!"

Ho Lin was greatly overjoyed at the unexpected news and glanced at Yang Chen. She suddenly tapped her head on ground heavily towards Yang Chen and got up tearfully, hastily following after Zhu Chentao and leaving Yang Chen's courtyard.

After coming out of seclusion, Yang Chen's first target was naturally his master. Within short four years, Gao Yue's water attributed cultivation had already entered the late stage of qi layer, only a step away from reaching peak qi layer.

From beginning to end, it had only required seven years to reach

this stage. Although Yang Chen had offered great supplements in the form of Profound Yang Fruits, it has to be said, Gao Yue really was extremely suitable for a water attributed cultivation method.

After realizing this point, Gao Yue's trust towards Yang Chen increased even more. Removing all doubts, she devoted herself to cultivation. Seeing Yang Chen come out of seclusion, she made her own inquiries about him. After hearing that Yang Chen had refined the second grade Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir, she urged Yang Chen to make haste and deliver it to the people of Beast Taming Sect.

Fan Shan was the representative connecting Beast Taming Sect and Pure Yang Palace. Just two months before Yang Chen's first stage of refining had ended, he had rushed over to Pure Yang Palace, fearing that Yang Chen may have come out of seclusion in advance and hoping to avoid delay. It seemed that senior black tiger's injuries had again worsened.

“Second grade elixir?”

Fan Shan was both surprised and excited at the same time. Yang Chen had put forward the second grade Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir, so clearly the refining was a success. If this was true, wouldn't it mean that they would have greater assurance of controlling senior black tiger's injuries from worsening? After looking at the pill, Fan Shan couldn't help himself and started urging,

“Walk faster, walk faster!”

“Wait for some time, elder brother, let me make a report to Palace Master.”

Yang Chen smiled and urged Fan Shan to stay. Such a matter of great importance, how could he not inform Palace Master Zhong Jiao before leaving for Beast Taming Sect,

“Be relieved, senior black tiger’s injuries will certainly not worsen after taking this pill.”

With Yang Chen’s assurance, Fan Shan was greatly relieved. After all the convoluted formalities had been rushed through, a few elders of Pure Yang Palace still had some questions, so only after that did Yang Chen depart with Fan Shan.

“Younger brother, wait here for older brother for a moment.”

After crossing MeiQing Mountain’s market and coming out of Pure Yang Palace’s territory, both of them had just flown for half a day and arrived at the edge of a great mountain when Fan Shan suddenly made Yang Chen stop,

“Older brother has to collect some spirit beasts.”

Some spirit beasts were specifically reared on this mountain cliff, and collecting them here would avoid wasting time later. Yang Chen also nodded, it would only take a moment for Fan Shan to capture the spirit beast, so waiting for a moment was no big deal.

Fan Shan quickly disappeared. Being bored, Yang Chen found a big tree to sit atop. He was sitting on the top of the tree enjoying the view of the surroundings. But, in just a moment, he wrinkled his brows, spotting someone flying over on a flying sword from the other side.

Warned by his spiritual awareness, his gaze flicked over. Within a few moments, Yang Chen discovered the identity of that person.

What astonished Yang Chen was that the person coming over was someone he had previously crossed paths with. He had met Greatest Heaven Sect's JieDan stage cultivator Cheng Wencai for the first time when he tried to humiliate Yang Chen, which resulted in his realm falling, and for the second time during the time of great calamity of devil cultivation where he had lost a bet to Yang Chen and Gao Yue about a kowtow.

Cheng Wencai also discovered Yang Chen's presence and turned his flying sword towards the region closer to Yang Chen. Floating under the clouds, he gazed at Yang Chen for a long moment before breaking out in a sneer,

“I was thinking who it was and it turned out to be you!”

“So it was senior Cheng!”

Yang Chen remained sitting on the tree top without any intention of standing up and smilingly asked,

“Senior hurrying like this, where are you going?”

“Youngster, this is a desolate area outside the city, what are you doing here?”

Naturally Cheng Wencai didn't bother answering Yang Chen's question and menacingly asked.

“Whatever this youngster is doing here, isn't it unrelated to senior?”

His smile unaffected, Yang Chen gazed into Cheng Wencai's eyes, strongly tempted to punch his lights out.

Attentively watching Yang Chen's face, Cheng Wencai's spiritual awareness was quickly released. He also hadn't expected to run into Yang Chen. But since he had run into him, that could only be called Yang Chen's bad luck. Within this barren mountain, if there weren't other people, then it was an exceptionally good place to kill people.

“Youngster, don't say that I didn't give you any opportunity!”

Cheng Wencai's spiritual awareness explored for a good moment and didn't find anyone in a ten mile radius. An evil grin split his face as he said,

“Obediently kowtow and admit your errors towards me and this old man will let your death be easy!”

“Kowtow? Admit mistakes? Easy death?”

Yang Chen couldn't help but expose a stunned expression, looking all around, seemingly only noticing that his fortune is not that good.

“You need not waste your breath making schemes!”

Cheng Wencai looked at Yang Chen with contempt,

“This old man has already examined the surroundings, and there is no one else beside us. Yang Chen, you do not walk on the road to heaven, and neither does hell have a gate to burst into. You have humiliated this old man, and I will extract my due a hundred, no, a thousand times over.”

“You dare to kill me?”

Yang Chen showed a seemingly panicked expression, as if he was intimidated. Yet, unexpectedly, he still hadn't stood up.

“The scenery is very enchanting here, but at the same time it is an exceptionally good place for burying corpses!”

Cheng Wencai mischievously laughed, enjoying the panic on



Yang Chen's face as if drinking the finest wine,

“After killing you, I will also kill that bitch master of yours at some other time. Daring to make this old man kowtow, humph, don't say this was unannounced, the time to pay for my humiliation had finally come!”

“Seemingly, this really is a pretty good place for disposing a corpse!”

Hearing Cheng Wencai speak about Gao Yue, Yang Chen's expression turned ice cold.

# Chapter 197 - Suspicious Cheng Wencai

---

When Cheng Wencai had identified Yang Chen, this JieDan stage expert of Greatest Heaven Sect didn't have any clue of what's going on. How could he have imagine that in this region where there were apparently no signs of human habitation, how could the person who he wanted to kill be so nonchalant?

From beginning to end, Yang Chen had remained seated on top of the tree without even changing his posture. When Cheng Wencai's spiritual awareness was probing all sides, Yang Chen's formidable spiritual awareness had also probed this area, and Fan Shan had already returned to this side.

Even though he was only at foundation stage, Yang Chen was curing senior black tiger, moreover was also personally escorting the Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir with him to Beast Taming Sect to stabilize the injury of senior black tiger. How could Fan Shan let Cheng Wencai injure Yang Chen so easily? Fan Shan had established the relationship of a brother with Yang Chen with great difficulty, how could he let Cheng Wencai destroy it so easily?

Cheng Wencai and Yang Chen's relationship was something which everyone knew. Since Cheng Wencai had to kneel down and kowtow towards Yang Chen and Gao Yue in front of that many experts and had to face utter shame and humiliation, attacking Yang Chen here was inevitable.

Unfortunately, Cheng Wencai's luck was not very good, encountering Fan Shan here. Even if disregarding Yang Chen's

relationship with senior black tiger, the choice between an old JieDan stage cultivator who had already dropped a realm once and had no future prospects, and a foundation stage disciple bursting with potential who was also a high grade pill concocting master was obvious.

Even if it meant offending Greatest Heaven Sect, Fan Shan wouldn't care. Moreover, just a moment ago, Cheng Wencai himself had said that within these mountain woods where any signs of humans were rare, even a murder would go unnoticed. Although Yang Chen was watching, why would Yang Chen speak up?

At their first meeting, before Cheng Wencai could see clearly who was behind him, he was cleanly knocked down by Fan Shan without any mishaps.

“I am very curious, senior Cheng!”

Yang Chen jumped down from the tree and slowly walked over to Cheng Wencai's side. He stopped in front of him, crouching in front of him and looking at his battered and exhausted old face. Without a change in tone, he asked seriously,

“What exactly are you doing in this desolate area?”

“Despicable!”

Cheng Wencai almost bawled. The situation had turned on its

head so quickly from a position where he was sure he could kill Yang Chen. How could he still restrain his temper? What was even more infuriating was that he had no idea who had attacked him from behind.

“Despicable or not, this does not matter for you now.”

Yang Chen said, beaming,

“Instead of recuperating at the Greatest Heaven Sect, senior has come here, it is indeed queer!”

Casually guessing the direction where Cheng Wencai was rushing over to, Yang Chen made a guess and grimly laughed,

“Senior Cheng, being so hasty, were you heading towards MeiQing Mountain? Would you happen to have some business with Pure Yang Palace?”

While those words were spoken, Yang Chen noticed Chen Wencai’s eyes begin to roll. Doubts grew in his heart. Originally, he just wanted to spout some hypotheticals and kill him, but it seemed there was more to investigate here.

Without any hesitation, he directly sealed Cheng Wencai’s senses and threw him into the Medicine Garden. For the time being, Yang Chen was not in a position to deal with him. Senior black tiger’s condition came first, everything else could come later.

From the start, Fan Shan hadn't appeared in Cheng Wencai's view, and moreover, with one hit, he had sealed Cheng Wencai's spirit power and spiritual awareness. Cheng Wencai was never aware who had attacked him.

Fan Shan didn't interfere seeing Yang Chen deal with Cheng Wencai like this. He also agreed with Yang Chen's intention of immediately rushing over to Beast Taming Sect to deliver the pill to senior black tiger. So both people continued on their journey towards Beast Taming Sect at Yang Liang Mountain as if nothing had happened.

No one knew Cheng Wencai had appeared here, and neither did anyone know that he had fallen into Yang Chen's hands. Not a single trace of battle existed. Let alone battle, there weren't even traces of people. Cheng Wencai seemed to have disappeared from the face of earth without any trace.

At the back mountain of the Beast Taming Sect's Yang Liang Mountain, Yang Chen, Fan Shan and the Beast Taming Sect's sect master stopped in front of senior black tiger's cave. He was still lazily lying on his stomach. At that moment, a red colored pill was floating in front of senior black tiger. This was the second grade Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir refined by Yang Chen.

“Second grade elixir!”

Seeing that elixir, apparently even senior black tiger was also astonished. Not only senior black tiger, in fact, anyone who saw this elixir was completely amazed.

This was an elixir to be used by a Da Cheng stage expert and unexpectedly had been refined to second grade. Everyone who laid eyes on this elixir looked at Yang Chen in a new light. A pill concocting master who could refine a second grade Da Cheng stage elixir was certainly someone who would be super popular among people.

When Palace Master Zhong Jiao saw this elixir, his face broke into an heartfelt smile. Yang Chen was already this formidable, so once he reached JieDan stage, he could very well reach the level of a fourth grade pill concocting master. One had to remember, Yang Chen had refined third grade foundation stage pills more than ten years ago, and now he could refine second grade Da Cheng stage elixirs. Fourth grade pills would be as easy as making pie.

If he could then become a fourth grade pill concocting master with the ability to refine second grade Da Cheng stage elixirs, even Deng Yi, who was considered the most formidable pill concocting master at the moment, would pale in comparison. From now on, no one would be dare to say that Pure Yang Palace doesn't have a pill concocting master.

As for the people of Beast Taming Sect and Fan Shan, there was no need to say anything, their attitude could clearly seen from Fan Shan's actions. From not hesitating to attack Cheng Wencai to apprehending him for Yang Chen, ready to deal with anyone for him, it was obvious how much they valued him. He feared that if he didn't do everything according to Yang Chen's intentions, he would ruin his good relation with an almost fourth grade pill concocting master. That was an opportunity that can only be found by luck and not by searching.

The pill hanging in the air in front of him was quickly swallowed by senior black tiger. Initially, senior black tiger had been deliberating for a while, but once the elixir had slipped down his throat, it was unexpectedly refreshing

After black tiger had swallowed the elixir, all three of them, including Yang Chen, began to tense up. Yang Chen was also slightly anxious. After all, this was a method he had heard about in the Spiritual World but hadn't put into practice. If it failed, it would certainly make him lose face. Fortunately, he was certain that even if it failed, it wouldn't damage senior black tiger.

After swallowing the elixir, black tiger didn't seem to show any special signs. Even after a good while, not even the slightest change could be seen in the lazy appearance of senior black tiger.

What was going on? Fan Shan and the sect master of Beast Taming Sect both doubtfully looked over to Yang Chen's side. However, Yang Chen was deeply pondering, his brows furrowed, the result shouldn't be like this, should it?

Suddenly, the black tiger who was lazily lying on the ground until now, let out a loud roar.

Hou!

That heaven shaking howl, to the people nearby, was like their ear had suddenly exploded. Their heads rang, and their ears began to buzz.

Black tiger, who had been lying down until now, suddenly stood up. Just this one act, immediately gave rise to a huge ripple in his spirit power. It was almost impossible to believe that this was the same black tiger who had been bedridden until now because of illness.

Hou!

With yet another earth shattering howl, senior black tiger suddenly extended his claws and swiped down. A mountain peak in front of the cave entrance shattered into dust and smoke with an explosive bang.

Although everyone's vision was obstructed, they could still clearly sense everything with their spiritual awareness. With just one swing from senior black tiger, a huge claw print was etched into the ground.

“Hahahaha!”

Senior black tiger issued a carefree laugh,

“I believed that in this lifetime, I would never be able to attack like that again. I never imagined a day like this would come!”

Fan Shan and Beast Taming Sect's master had been both scared and happy. Senior black tiger didn't need to explain the current circumstances, it was clearly the effect of the elixir.



“Yang Chen, you have done a great favour for my Beast Taming Sect; you have our undying gratitude!”

The tone of Beast Taming Sect’s sect master was trembling. With a Da Cheng stage senior black tiger as the head, the future generations of the Beast Taming Sect was secure, so why wouldn’t he be excited?

Although Fan Shan hadn’t said anything but his slightly trembling body had already given away his emotions. Two YuanYing stage experts seemed to be shaking at the cave entrance of the small cave of senior black tiger as if caught in paroxysms of joy.

“What a formidable elixir!”

Senior black tiger finally stopped exerting himself, slowly walking over to Yang Cheng and bowing in thanks.

“That is only because senior’s cultivation is profound and had been able to forcibly suppress the injury for so many years.”

Yang Chen made a slight smile, but didn’t claim any credit for himself,

“If senior hadn’t controlled it and this injury had worsened even more, then even if junior had enormous skills, it wouldn’t have been of any help.”

“Hahaha!”

Black tiger’s attitude was one that had just been relieved of a huge burden. For the last several hundred years, he had confined himself to a cave at the back of the Beast Taming Sect to keep his internal injuries stable. His cultivation had begun to waste away, and he was withering away to death while hoping to stay as the support of the younger generation.

Today after he swallowed the Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir, his injury, for the first time in centuries, didn’t flare up, held firmly under control by the elixir. Astonishingly, the injury had even healed itself a bit. Prior to this, his constituent spirit had been slowly dissipating. Now, as long as he doesn’t enter a life or death battle or encounter an accident, his life had been saved.

But for the condition of the injury to improve, that was inconsistent with Yang Chen’s words. The only possible reason was that the second grade Black Tiger Suppressing Elixir was much more formidable than the first grade elixir. That had greatly increased his confidence, if this elixir could already improve his condition, maybe a complete recovery wasn’t an extravagant hope.

Next, Beast Taming Sect’s sect master and a few elders grandly received Yang Chen. A veritable mountain of assorted delicacies were prepared to show their gratitude for Yang Chen.

Several YuanYing stage experts clustered around Yang Chen. Apart from profusely expressing their thanks, most were almost

speechless with gratefulness. One of them insisted on presenting Yang Chen with a high grade spirit pet upon seeing him without one.

“Senior, apart from the previously agreed remuneration, junior does not dare to be greedy.”

Yang Chen politely refused that senior's good intentions. He already had obtained the Heavenly Roar and didn't harbor any extravagant hope to obtain any other like it. Moreover, what kind of spirit beast could be called high grade in front of Heavenly Roar?

This refusal made the seniors of Beast Taming Sect look at Yang Chen in a new light. There aren't many youngsters who were so principled and also knew how to control his greed, especially one who had such a high grade pill concocting skill. His future accomplishments were boundless, and fortunately Fan Shan already had good relationship with Yang Chen.. This was simply the good karma of Beast Taming Sect.

But the Beast Taming Sect didn't dare to spread the news about senior black tiger's injury being stabilized, fearing that if any formidable opponent heard this news, then maybe they would attack. They had intended to make the news public only after Yang Chen had completely refined the Black Tiger Spirit Supporting Pill and senior black tiger's injury had completely recovered. It was better to be safe than sorry.

In reality, the Beast Taming Sect didn't have many formidable enemies, but indeed there were some sects who were not willing to

see Beast Taming Sect take a superior position and were only waiting for opportunity to strike. These sects would use all kind of tricks to undermine the Beast Taming Sect which honestly couldn't be defended against. As such, the entirety of the Beast Taming Sect was on guard.

It wasn't that Beast Taming Sect had a guilty conscience or anything. Even when Elder Wu refined the Heaven Seizing Pill, as formidable as he was, he had also found a secret location and only publically declared it after the refining had been completed. In this world, everything cannot be revealed to people, cultivators were also quite shameless and envious people like ordinary mortals.

After senior black tiger's injuries had stabilized, he was also unwilling to stay in the cave and also came out to greet him, flying towards some unknown place to enjoy himself. In any case, he hadn't returned until Yang Chen departed, and the sect master of Beast Taming Sect was extremely apologetic for causing trouble.

Yang Chen also didn't care much about it. In any case, he had met him personally. Yang Chen could already see that senior black tiger was not someone who would talk about emotions openly, so perhaps when the time comes, apart from the reward of Beast Taming Sect, senior black tiger would also reward him generously. Naturally, this was something to be taken up later, and there was no need to mention it for now.

The books promised to Yang Chen had already been rewarded to him. As before, Fan Shan, this YuanYing stage expert, escorted Yang Chen back to Second Fierce Yang Courtyard at MeiQing Mountain, and only then departed.

Originally, Yang Chen had intended to immediately enter seclusion with Zhu Chentao after returning to the mountain, but he had currently captured Cheng Wencai within his Medicine Garden. He wasn't feeling particularly anxious, so he arranged an appointment with Palace Master Zhong Jiao and Law Enforcement Hall's hall master Meng Xian at his courtyard.

Once they entered the door, Yang Chen strongly insisted that Palace Master Zhong Jiao and Meng Xian place several layers of restrictions. Hearing this request, Palace Master Zhong Jiao understood that Yang Chen may have once again discovered some major event which could be not spread. Without another word, he placed down top quality restrictions and calmly took a seat, waiting for Yang Chen to speak.

Yang Chen also didn't conceal anything and directly spoke about his encounter with Cheng Wencai. At the same time, he also voiced his doubts. A JieDan expert from the grand Greatest Heaven Sect, who seemingly had no matters to tend to, why would he come to the place where he was extremely humiliated before? Most of all, after the event, Yang Chen had also discovered a carefully refined mask which could change one's presence and appearance at will, which only raised more doubts.

“Because of this you captured him?”

Law Enforcement Hall's hall master Meng Xian was a firm and decisive person, hearing this, he puckered his brows:

“It is not appropriate, if you want to kill him then kill him, why go through all this trouble?”

“He is certainly suspicious!”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao didn't think much and directly instructed Yang Chen:

“Take him out, we will carefully examine him at once.”

# Chapter 198 - There Is Another Traitor Again

---

When he took out Cheng Wencai, he didn't look like the others who had crumbled due to their five senses being sealed by Yang Chen. On one hand, the time he was sealed was short, while on the other, Cheng Wencai was already a JieDan stage expert.

Although his cultivation wouldn't be able to increase greatly in future, his mental state was still firm. Compared to the pitiful creatures at the foundation stage, he still hadn't collapsed completely.

Looking at Yang Chen and Palace Master Zhong Jiao, Cheng Wencai knew that he had already fallen into the hands of the Pure Yang Palace. So without spouting any nonsense, he immediately said to Palace Master Zhong Jiao:

“This Cheng is extremely delighted to meet the Palace Master of your noble sect!”

“Want to die? That's easy.”

Before Palace Master Zhong Jiao could open his mouth, Yang Chen replied in place of him:

“If you think that you will remain alive after insulting my master, that's just wishful thinking. However before you die, this junior wants to know, why did you come to MeiQing Mountain?”

Even though Palace Master Zhong Jiao and Law Enforcement Hall's Hall Master were present, Yang Chen didn't conceal his killing intent. Both Palace Master Zhong Jiao and Hall Master Meng Xian didn't objected to it. After all, they knew what status Gao Yue held in Yang Chen's heart, and by abusing Gao Yue, Cheng Wencai was just courting death. The two of them absolutely wouldn't obstruct him.

Regarding Yang Chen's intense interrogation, both of them didn't say anything. They only wanted for Cheng Wencai to speak the truth. As for whether Cheng Wencai lived or died, they were not concerned at all. Yang Chen had already told them that no one knew he had Cheng Wencai, so they didn't care much whether or not Yang Chen killed him.

“Humph, don't get too carried away!”

Since Cheng Wencai knew that he would most certainly die, why would he cooperate:

“This old man isn't afraid of death, so why would I be afraid of your threats, you stupid brat!”

Once he said these words, both Palace Master Zhong Jiao and Hall Master Meng Xian knitted their brows. Yang Chen had apparently said too much just now. Since Cheng Wencai knew he didn't have any chance of survival, there was a low possibility of getting any information out of him.



“Very good!”

Yang Chen expressionlessly nodded his head, revealing a fake smile which could make anyone tremble in fear, and said to Cheng Wencai:

“This junior greatly admires senior’s courage. Originally this junior had intended to seal senior’s senses for the duration of my seclusion of about ten years, so that senior could figure out what he wants to do. But since senior has such strong resolve, then this junior would have to change his plan.”

After saying this, Yang Chen fished out a small porcelain bottle from his qiankun pouch and took out a pill the size of a dragon’s eye that seemed completely ordinary.

While looking at Cheng Wencai, he laughed once again, and afterwards, grabbing Cheng Wencai’s chin, he shoved the pill in his mouth. Gently caressing his throat with a little bit of power and applying some spirit power, he pushed the pill into Cheng Wencai’s stomach.

Cheng Wencai only sneered, since he knew that he was already going to die, what kind of torture couldn’t he endure? Furthermore, this was just a seemingly insignificant pill. If it weren’t for Yang Chen grabbing his chin making him unable to speak, he would have already snorted.

After feeding him the pill, Yang Chen threw Cheng Wencai back onto the ground, not caring about him anymore and turned

towards Palace Master Zhong Jiao and began to inform him about the matters of the Beast Taming Sect.

Hearing that senior black tiger had such strength even while injured, Palace Master Zhong Jiao was astonished. Fortunately, Yang Chen belonged to Pure Yang Palace, otherwise some other formidable sect would have appeared within the cultivating world.

On one side, they were happily talking, while on the other side, Cheng Wencai was unable to endure the pain. Even though his spirit power and cultivation had already been sealed, even though he couldn't move his body, his body was still issuing trembling sounds. It was obvious how much pain he was in.

“What kind of pill is this?”

Law Enforcement Hall's Hall Master Meng Xian was very interested in this. If the Law Enforcement Hall could obtain some of these pills, then maybe they could have a much easier time getting information from the mouths of others.

“Ahh, it's nothing much, just a pill which makes them feel itchy over their whole body.”

Yang Chen said, lightening its effect. While speaking, Yang Chen went over to Cheng Wencai's side:

“Actually sometimes, pain isn't that much, many people aren't afraid of pain. But itching is different, itching is intolerable, isn't

that so Senior Cheng?”

Hearing Yang Chen’s words, apparently Meng Xian also sensed an itch at some part of body and couldn’t help but reach out his hand to scratch it.

Cheng Wencai could only produce frightening, shivering sounds. As he could still control the muscles on his face, he was incessantly trying to make wry faces to get relief for the strange itch on his face. Though his body still couldn’t move, this was a gleam of hope for him, this extravagant little hope that he still could move a small part of his body.

“Senior Cheng, not allowing you to move is for senior’s own good.”

Yang Chen said to Chen Wencai with deadpan expression:

“If senior’s hand and foot could move, this junior can guarantee on his life, even a piece of flesh won’t be left on your body.”

As for why wouldn’t a piece of flesh be left, everyone knew even without Yang Chen explaining. Cheng Wencai would certainly scratch himself until his body was filled with bruises and cuts.

“It is still early, senior should continue to sense this for a while longer.”

Yang Chen laughed:

“If the antidote of this pill isn’t taken, then the effect of this medicine can last for one year. This junior can absolutely guarantee your life, but if you endure it for one more day and can still control your flying sword, then you will certainly use your flying sword to scrape all the flesh off your body and be left with only bones.”

“Si si!”

Cheng Wencai still couldn’t do anything, Palace Master Zhong Jiao and Meng Xian standing behind his body already sucked in a breath of cold air. A pill which could make him remove his own flesh, how ruthless!

“We have plenty of time, so we can take things slow.”

Yang Chen sat down in front of Cheng Wencai, bowing his head to look at Cheng Wencai’s twisted face and calmly said:

“This pill of mine doesn’t have a name for now. Senior, your fortune is great. Since you are the first one to experience this pill, I wonder what senior thinks is a suitable name for this pill?”

“This junior has already thought of a few names, but I still think they are not good enough, maybe senior can suggest some good name to junior.”

Yang Chen extended his hand and began to count names one by

one on his fingertips:

“Asking for itch, asking for death, asking for killing of seven generations, asking for ripping your flesh alive, which does senior think is the most suitable?”

While Yang Chen was speaking , Cheng Wencai’s expression twisted again and again. After Yang Chen finished listing down all the names, Cheng Wencai couldn’t tolerate it anymore and tried to speak loudly.

“End...me....quickly!”

With great struggle and his face changing several expressions, Cheng Wencai was only capable of speaking these few words. Rather than saying that he spoke those words, it would be better to say that he squeezed them out from his throat.

“Want death?”

Yang Chen sneered:

“Be relieved senior, even if you want to live, you won’t be able to. As for when, you will have to wait until you have informed this junior about everything and then this junior will personally send you on your way.”

“I.....will.....speak!”

Cheng Wencai again yelled, but only with this yell was the strange itch in the vicinity of his neck slightly dulled.

“Junior is listening.”

However, Yang Chen didn't have any sympathetic expression on his face and coldly said.

Cheng Wencai narrated everything while stammering the entire time and Yang Chen and other two finally knew of his intention for coming here.

Because of falling down from JieDan stage and in addition to his life expectancy and dantian being substantially damaged, regardless of how hard Cheng Wencai cultivated, he wouldn't have any great future accomplishments. Being able to return to JieDan stage was already the extreme limit, and he couldn't raise his cultivation any higher.

However, after all is said and done, he was still a JieDan stage expert. Many cultivators with limited aptitude didn't reach this stage in their entire lifetime. Although Cheng Wencai wasn't the focus of Greatest Heaven Sect to be nurtured, the sect still has its reputation to keep and used Cheng Wencai as an example for other sects that they will not abandon any disciples.

There was great hatred between Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Cheng Wencai, they were irreconcilable enemies. It was impossible to reduce the tension between them. So his sect had considered it

over and over again and had given out a secret mission to secretly rope in some disciples of the Pure Yang Palace and destroy it from inside in order to topple the Pure Yang Palace.

Naturally, this plan was a long term operation and success couldn't be achieved overnight. But Cheng Wencai himself took the initiative to undertake this mission as if he was gaining a precious treasure.

He was a JieDan stage expert claiming to be a person who accepts important missions, but in reality he had been reduced to the most pathetic creature. Cheng Wencai had been so blinded by his hatred that he didn't even realize he had been deceived. When Yang Chen and others heard this, they all shook their heads with a grim smile.

This time, apart from looking for an opportunity to rope in some disciples of Pure Yang Palace, he still had one more important mission. That was to retrieve some important item concealed at some place in MeiQing Mountain. As for what it was, Cheng Wencai himself didn't know.

“Where is it?”

Meng Xian asked in a deep voice, but his expression was furious. Something was being concealed at MeiQing Mountain, and by sending Cheng Wencai to retrieve it, it could clearly be seen that it was the work of someone that was from the Pure Yang Palace. Why does Pure Yang Palace need have another traitor, Meng Xian couldn't help but get enraged again.

When the strange itch stopped, Cheng Wencai didn't dare to conceal anything and told them the location. However, since it was not far from Pure Yang Palace's entrance, it clearly showed that the person who had concealed this thing couldn't go too far out of Pure Yang Palace.

Hearing Cheng Wencai's information about the location, Meng Xian was just about to immediately probe that location, but he was stopped by Yang Chen.

“Don't be hasty, Hall Master, listen to what he has to say.”

Yang Chen stopped Meng Xian with some intention in mind.

Meng Xian was startled, then without saying anything, remained at his original position, waiting for Yang Chen to continue with the questioning. Now, he could also see that although Cheng Wencai had been forced to reveal everything, he also hadn't informed them some affairs which no one paid any attention to.

“The location where that thing is concealed, what kind of characteristics does it have?”

Yang Chen said calmly while standing near Cheng Wencai. While speaking, he stretched his hand to form some kind of sign and a wave of spirit power hit Cheng Wencai's body.

Cheng Wencai sensed a wave of comfort passing through his whole body, as if the strange itch had been entirely scratched off



by someone, he was unable to immerse himself in comfort as this sensation only lasted for a few seconds, following which the itch became even more difficult to endure.

Since he had been enduring the strange itch from the start, he would have been able to continue enduring it. But after it was cut off for a few moments and he had experienced comfort, when he had to go through that itch again, the sensation became even more difficult to endure. Immediately, Cheng Wencai's body started trembling violently once again and his face started transforming into sinister expressions again.

“That place.....has.....has.....a hidden spell formation.”

Cheng Wencai almost yelled in a hoarse voice:

“Only....after.....obtaining the.....command tile.....that I have.....can...one go in!”

Without saying anything, Yang Chen rummaged through Cheng Wencai's qiankun pouch and discovered a command tile. The tile created was with metal attribute and had a spell formation engraved on the forefront, while on the back, the word 'command' was written.

“Isn't there any ambush?”

Yang Chen flipped the command tile several times looking all around and then tossed it to Meng Xian.

“Go.....with.... the command tile!”

Cheng Wencai was already unable to preserve anymore and quickly spoke out.

When Meng Xian received the command tile, he bowed to his head to examine it carefully. He then looked towards Yang Chen and nodded once. Then, he rushed out immediately after lifting the restrictions. Palace Master Zhong Jiao promptly restored the restrictions and sat down on one side with a grim expression.

“Palace Master, should I ask him about the cultivation methods of Greatest Heaven Sect?”

Seeing Palace Master’s unsightly expression, Yang Chen couldn’t help but ask.

“Cultivating his sect’s cultivation method, would be a taboo.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao’s line of thought was broken by these words as he quickly replied to Yang Chen:

“My Pure Yang Palace’s cultivation methods are not inferior to other sects, so there is no need to for this.”

Regarding this however, Yang Chen didn’t approve, but he didn’t say anything. The cultivation methods, that Cheng Wencai had

access to were finite and there was no need to go through that much trouble for the sake of those low level cultivation methods.

“Yang Chen, since you said that my Pure Yang Palace is one of the grand dao sects, then why is there someone who is cheating their master and deceiving their sect?”

Meng Xian hadn't returned back yet, and Palace Master Zhong Jiao also didn't have the intention of continuing to question Cheng Wencai anymore. So instead, he turned towards Yang Chen and asked.

“Greatest Heaven Sect is currently the unannounced leader of dao sects, naturally people will follow behind them, this is just human nature.”

Yang Chen said without thinking much:

“Greatest Heaven Sect had never stopped annexing small sects. In reality all the other big sects are the same. Pure Yang Palace has many formidable cultivation methods and magic weapons that were left behind by the great ancestor, this is just what Greatest Heaven Sect wants.”

Yang Chen didn't say much, but had convinced Palace Master Zhong Jiao that he understood everything clearly. The great ancestor was valiant and formidable, but the present disciples had failed to live up to his expectations.

The most formidable ones had only been able to reach YuanYing stage. It would be a wonder if the big sects didn't lust after such a big piece of meat. Similarly, there are some disciples who thought that the Pure Yang Palace didn't have many future prospects, and that if they merged with the Greatest Heaven Sect, then saying that they were a disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect was much more pleasant to hear compared to saying that they were a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace.

Palace Master Zhong Jiao didn't ask anything else and only closed his eyes and began waiting. Yang Chen was also got bored to death and began to search through Cheng Wencai's qiankun pouch to see whether there was something that could be of use to him.

After a moment had passed, Meng Xian quickly returned. This location was near the outside gate, so it was not that far away from the hidden spell formation. With Hall Master Meng Xian's YuanYing stage strength, he quickly made the journey. After returning, he handed over a small qiankun pouch to Palace Master Zhong Jiao, without saying anything.

This was clearly retrieved from the location which Cheng Wencai had mentioned. There were no seal marks on top, so the sect it was from couldn't be distinguished. After opening qiankun pouch, Palace Master Zhong Jiao was startled once again. He then took out two different things from the qiankun pouch.

One was a porcelain bottle containing several tens of pills. Looking at the pills, Yang Chen was certain without any hesitation that they were the xun qi pill refined by Ho Lin for the disciples of Ye Xiu Manor.

The other item was a jade slip which Palace Master Zhong Jiao swept through his spiritual awareness to check the content that was inside. However, once he saw what was inside, he became even more furious. The jade slip contained everything which had happened in the Pure Yang Palace in recent times in great details, regardless of whether it was important or not.

# Chapter 199 - Cheng Wencai Dealt With

---

Palace Master Zhong Jiao and Hall Master Meng Xian were extremely angry, although these two things didn't seem very remarkable, but with these, the Pure Yang Palace had been completely sold out to Greatest Heaven Sect.

Xun qi pill was used by the outer disciples, assisting them in finding spirit power. Although it was not very high grade, it required a unique flame controlling technique to refine.

Because of the xun qi pill, the number of outer disciples in Pure Yang Palace had grown several folds compared to previous years. However, this was Pure Yang Palace's secret trump card for revitalizing the foundation.

Apart from Yang Chen and Ho Lin, only the Palace Master Zhong Jiao, Medicine Hall Master, Law Enforcement Hall Master and few other elders knew about the xun qi pill. This was Pure Yang Palace's secret. Even the Hall Masters of Fierce Yang Hall, Luminous Moon Hall and other such halls, also didn't know about the xun qi pill. Yang Chen and Ho Lin had been repeatedly urged again and again to not tell others.

Even if it were the managers of Ye Xiu Manor who were responsible for dispersing the pills among the outer disciples, they also didn't know what kind of pill was it. They only knew that it was provided by higher ups to supplement the bodies of those outer disciples. Once they tried to cultivate, the pill would be consumed completely. Therefore every time they cultivated, they would ask for a dose of the pill and that would be all.

Presently finding this one bottle of xun qi pills meant that this secret had already been discovered by that person hidden within the Pure Yang Palace. He had even acquired a bottle of it by some method. If this had been handed over to Greatest Heaven Sect, and they could research it, then perhaps they might not find out about the refining method, but they would certainly find out about the use of xun qi pills.

And when the time comes, the Greatest Heaven Sect would gather some other big sects to suppress the Pure Yang Palace under the name of righteousness. Then the Pure Yang Palace would just sink into passiveness. Although, it would not go as far bringing some damage because of xun qi pill. On the contrary, this xun qi pill would rather bring some advantages, but Pure Yang Palace's advantage would also be removed, and everything would again return as before.

This kind of secret, naturally could be hidden only for some time, but if someone betrayed them, then how could it not make Palace Master Zhong Jiao, who was always thinking of reviving the Pure Yang Palace, furious?

The things recorded on the jade slip were the last straw for his patience. Not only what kind of tendency had the upper layers of the Pure Yang Palace formed in the recent years, but even the changes in the middle layer of Pure Yang Palace was also recorded clearly. Even the newly established Eccentric Hall was also reported about within this jade slip. The special analysis was performed in great detail, and even the fact that the Pure Yang Palace may have grasped the secret method allowing the demon beasts to transform into human form was mentioned. Otherwise

the three demon beasts of the Eccentric Hall wouldn't be able to retain human form.

This was again a great secret which Pure Yang Palace had tried to conceal in many ways, but unexpectedly, this was also clearly recorded on the jade slip. Although the Appearance Transformation Secrets weren't recorded, but this was already enough to make him furious.

Yang Chen's current movements were also recorded that Yang Chen was concocting pills in seclusion, but there wasn't much clarification on it. Probably that person hadn't got the information about what kind of pill Yang Chen and Zhu Chentao were concocting as of yet.

If this jade slip had fallen into the hands of the Greatest Heaven Sect, the entire Pure Yang Palace would have been naked in front of the Greatest Heaven Sect without any secrets.

“Palace Master, a good spell formation had already been laid at that location, if I didn't have that command tile, then even with my cultivation, I would have barely escaped alive.”

After Palace Master had completely swept the jade slip, only then did Meng Xian opened his mouth:

“The spell formation was hidden remarkably well, only after reaching within three feet radius of it, could one discover it.”



That place was originally above half a wall over a cliff near a bare rock, and since it didn't have medicinal ingredients or any other heavenly treasures, so why would anyone go to that place?

What made them feel more astonished was that a spell formation which could even stop a YuanYing stage expert was arranged near the gate of the Pure Yang Palace without anyone suspecting anything. This certainly couldn't be done overnight.

Once Palace Master Zhong Jiao thought that the Greatest Heaven Sect might possibly have been monitoring the movements of the Pure Yang Palace for maybe past several hundred years or maybe more, he immediately broke out in cold sweat.

Yang Chen was also completely astonished. Originally, he used to believe that the Pure Yang Palace was exterminated because of him, but he hadn't expected that the Greatest Heaven Sect had surprisingly laid plans so many years ago, concealing them so deeply. Even thinking about it made them afraid. Maybe, him killing that young master at that time was also a big conspiracy.

“Desolate Valley's arrangement!”

Yang Chen almost yelled out, but still managed to say out this line calmly. It must be known, after the incident at Desolate Valley was revealed, all sects were endlessly shocked when they heard that several hundred years ago the Greatest Heaven Sect had placed spell formation in Five Phases Sect's territory. Five Phases Sect was a first grade sect, by comparison, the spell formation arranged at Pure Yang Palace was just a small appetizer.

The only fact to rejoice at was that the xun qi pill hadn't been explained in much detail, rather there was only a guess. This clearly illustrated one thing, that spy or those spies didn't knew about the use of xun qi pill. With this, at least those people who knew about the xun qi pill could be removed from suspicion.

“Good! Good!”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao almost exploded with anger, his whole body was unable to restrain his emotions and was shaking, suddenly his presence exploded out because of anger, even Yang Chen and others also felt some pressure. Fortunately, Yang Chen could still control, only Cheng Wencai wasn't that comfortable, With the strange itch, in addition to Palace Master Zhong Jiao's pressure, he was simply thrown into double hell.

“Bullying us to the limit!”

After shouting loudly, Palace Master Zhong Jiao loudly commanded:

“Meng Xian, carefully investigate, who all were in contact with the things written on this jade slip.”

“Yes!”

Meng Xian bowed his head to accept his command. In any case, this was his job as the Hall Master of Law Enforcement Hall to

investigate this. He had been furious in rage from the time he had found about these things. Even without Palace Master's command, he would still have investigated this matter.

“This scoundrel, Yang Chen, deal with him however you want!”

Pointing towards Cheng Wencai, Palace Master Zhong Jiao said without the least bit of compassion. Other people already have formed evil schemes to interfere in his sect, even laying down spell formation at the entrance of the Secret Pavilion, it would only be a wonder if Palace Master still defended Cheng Wencai

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen similarly agreed. From the start, he hadn't intended to let Cheng Wencai remain alive, and with Palace Master Zhong Jiao's words, he could deal with him without any worries.

“Be relieved and concoct pill with Zhu Chentao, as for other matters, you need not worry about them for now.”

In the end, Palace Master instructed him once more. Presently, Pure Yang Palace's influence was too little, it was impossible to directly confront the Greatest Heaven Sect. Yang Chen refining the black tiger spirit supporting pill will have many great benefits and will pull many allies towards Pure Yang Palace, allowing the influence of Pure Yang Palace to become even greater.

“Just settle the matter with Beast Taming Sect first, then I will

permit you to enter the Secret Pavilion again.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao had also made his resolve. Yang Chen had not only pulled an ally for the sect, but had also discovered such a big conspiracy. He should certainly be rewarded. Moreover, the reward couldn't be a small one.

Regarding entering the Secret Pavilion, Yang Chen didn't have any great interest. Whether it was going in several times or few times, it didn't make a difference to Yang Chen. In any case, the thing that Yang Chen wanted most from the Secret Pavilion, the Real Pure Yang Fire, he had already obtained the safekeeping rights for the next three hundred years.

Within the next three hundred years, Yang Chen had the confidence that he could certainly find a method to refine and absorb the Real Pure Yang Fire. Even if he took a step back and couldn't find any method to absorb it, he could still use the Profound Spirit Furnace to absorb the Real Pure Yang Fire. As for other things within the Secret Pavillion, he had no interest.

Even in Palace Master Zhong Jiao's hands, Cheng Wencai didn't have any hope of living. Under Yang Chen's hands, there was absolutely no chance of him remaining alive.

“For every grievance someone responsible, for every debt there is a debtor, you had tried to injure this junior over and over again. This time you have insulted junior's master again. You cannot remain alive anymore, be at ease and start on your journey!”

Regarding Cheng Wencai who had already collapsed, Yang Chen didn't have any compassion and directly slashed his sword and beheaded him.

At the instant when his head was removed from his neck, Cheng Wencai unexpectedly had a smile as if he had been freed from a great burden, which made the others present feel even more dread towards that pill of Yang Chen's.

A JieDan stage expert's corpse, although it wouldn't be of much help, would still provide some nourishment to the Blood Phantom Vine. Very quickly, under the roots of Blood Phantom Vine, Cheng Wencai's body turned into bones. In this world, there wouldn't be a person named Cheng Wencai from Greatest Heaven Sect anymore.

Not too long after, Pure Yang Palace released news, Yang Chen and Medicine Hall's hall master Zhu Chentao had taken out a pill which could extend one's life by forty thousand years from the Secret Pavilion for research. However, it was stolen by someone, and his identity and whereabouts were currently unknown.

The entire Pure Yang Palace was extremely furious and had unleashed all its manpower in hunting down the unknown culprit. While searching, they had also discovered that hidden illusion spell, by the time a few experts got there and forcefully broke down the spell formation, all traces of that mysterious culprit were long gone.

Moreover, the Greatest Heaven Sect also didn't have any information about the whereabouts of Cheng Wencai, and no one

heard about any news regarding him. Everyone unanimously believed that Cheng Wencai had snatched the forty thousand life pill and then had begun to cultivate in seclusion. The upper echelons of the Greatest Heaven Sect hated Cheng Wencai to the core. This time, surprisingly, several hundred years of meticulously arranged spell formation for hiding items near Pure Yang Palace was also destroyed.

While the information was released on one side, on the other, Yang Chen had already begun to prepare for the refining the black tiger spirit supporting pill. This time, he also had to go to Yang Liang Mountain for almost one month. When Yang Chen was not present, Zhu Chentao took Ho Lin as his disciple with great fanfare. Moreover, he also summarized all the methods they had used during the refining of black tiger suppressing pill for her. Regardless of whether it was Zhu Chentao or Ho Lin, both had benefitted from the experience.

After the official ceremony for master and disciple, Yang Chen and others once again came together at the Second Fierce Yang Hall and spent almost ten years to refine the black tiger spirit supporting pill that is supposed to cure senior black tiger's injury completely.

The process was almost similar to the refining of the black tiger suppressing pill. First Yang Chen used the geocentric fire and purified all the ingredients, Then, Zhu Chentao took over the refining and with normal methods, and refined the ingredients to a certain stage. After congealing the pill in the initial step, Yang Chen again advanced the refining meticulously, finally finishing the pill.

Everyone was skillfully advancing the pill concocting process, and this time, there were a lot more ingredients used. Moreover, the powder from the inner dan of senior black tiger was also included, so they couldn't even be a little careless. However, this was the inner dan of a Da Cheng stage demon beast, so Yang Chen had to spend around half a year to refine it perfectly.

Then, Zhu Chentao once again began the long term refining process. Refining the pill was not a job that could be completed overnight, and all the pill concocting masters knew this from experience. The physical strength and spirit power had to be properly distributed, but this was not a difficult matter for Zhu Chentao.

The beginning process was relatively easy, and Zhu Chentao even had energy left over to talk to Ho Lin about some pill concocting techniques while refining. He also explained to her logically about identifying and dealing with medicinal ingredients, and the medicinal liquid refined by Yang Chen was the best kind of sample to deal with.

While Zhu Chentao was refining, Yang Chen began to fuse the geocentric fire with the flame formed by fusion of green phosphorous fire and cold ice fire, to form a completely new flame.

Naturally, this was certainly not Yang Chen's final flame but was just another transitional flame. Yang Chen was even disinclined to name it and just called it 'hybrid fire'. Yang Chen's goal was to fuse a large number of third and fourth fire attributed flames, especially the real sun fire, real moon fire, pure yang real fire and if possible also find and fuse pure yin real fire and finally

transform the fusion into one of the most formidable flames, the yin and yang heaven burning fire or perhaps also known as the heaven and earth burning heavenly fire.

But this goal was still too far away, and presently Yang Chen could only fuse these low grade flames. He didn't even dare to lightly touch the real sun fire and real moon fire. According to his plan, only after he had congealed his dan and entered the JieDan stage would he be able work on the real sun fire and the real moon fire.

Before fusing, Yang Chen also intended to check upon his spirit beast, Heavenly Roar. The spirit beast pouch he had purchased at the Ten Thousand Beasts Pavilion was quite low level, so Yang Chen had put Heavenly Roar in the Medicine Garden.

Since he also had the Beast Taming Secrets of the demon race, Yang Chen didn't forget to form an initial stage connection with Heavenly Roar. Within the Medicine Garden, Heavenly Roar could eat many formidable medicinal herbs whenever he wished, apart from the Blood Phantom Vine.

But Heavenly Roar only ate several profound yang fruits. Other than that, he wouldn't touch the other medicinal herbs. Whenever he was hungry, he would start nibbling at the profound yang fruits. Apart from those fruits, regardless of whether it was thousand year old ginsengs or anything else, Heavenly Roar wouldn't even look at them. This behavior surprised Yang Chen greatly.

Even if he threw spirit stones at Heavenly Roar, he would treat



them disdainfully. Yang Chen was at a loss for how to deal with this issue. He didn't have many memories pertaining to feeding Heavenly Roar, and it seemed that only after reaching the spiritual world could he consult some seniors about this problem.

Only, this time, when he opened the Medicine Garden to take a look, Yang Chen was astonished. Heavenly Roar, the ash grey coloured little pup, was surprisingly holding a flying sword horizontally within his mouth and was excitedly jumping around the Medicine Garden.

Where did he get that flying sword within the Medicine Garden? Yang Chen was also greatly surprised, but quickly understood. This sword was inside the qiankun pouch that he had thrown inside the Medicine Garden when he was dealing with Cheng Wencai. Heavenly Roar had somehow found it and was playing with it.

Thinking about Heavenly Roar's origin, Yang Chen immediately laid down the worries in his heart, seemingly, this kind of spirit beasts require some extraordinary method to be cultivated. He might as well throw in all of the several thousand flying swords he had gathered inside the Medicine Garden.

Heavenly Roar was also quite knowledgeable. These flying swords had been refined by the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets, Earth Fiend Sacrificial Spell Secrets and Universal Treasure Raising Secrets. They immediately caught the attention of Heavenly Roar and he began to rush towards them excitedly. However, he still didn't dare touch the high grade ones, only picking a seemingly low grade one and slowly began to lick it.

# Chapter 200-Tribulation As Soon As The Pill Forms

---

Looking at Heavenly Roar happily licking the low grade flying sword, Yang Chen realized he now knew how to cultivate this small pup spirit beast and became excited. Feeling ecstatic, he also felt anticipation with regards to how formidable this beast would become once he matured. How would he look?

After visiting this spirit beast, Yang Chen gave some pointers to Ho Lin. He then began the fusion of three third grade flames.

As the number of flames to be fused increased, the difficulty of handling these flames also increased. However, for Yang Chen, this increased difficulty didn't exceed the amount of trouble he could handle. It only required more time and patience.

While carefully attending to her master, Ho Lin also began to study a large number of jade slips. Zhu Chentao also didn't ask much of her and only taught her about a large number of ingredients she was already familiar with. He also taught her how to identify and deal with these ingredients along with their medicinal efficiency. This was not like the basic education she had obtained at Ye Xiu Manor but was rather a basic knowledge provided to improve all the principles of pill concocting and direction for more research.

Apart from these subjects, she also had to learn about controlling flames. Zhu Chentao was very lazy regarding this point and directly told Ho Lin to go to Yang Chen for guidance. With a devoted mind, Ho Lin began to use her flames to form shapes like

other living things, in accordance to Yang Chen's guidance.

Zhu Chentao was also a student like Ho Lin right now. Refining such a high grade elixir allowed Zhu Chentao's horizons to be expanded. At the same time, he broadened his line of thought. Although he was using the most common refining method, Zhu Chentao was still able to comprehend many extraordinary things.

Each day seem to pass peacefully, with everyone busy on their own matters, but the three people immersed in their own preoccupations didn't seem to realize the quick passage of time.

After a certain amount of time passed, Ho Lin would leave her own practice and would assist her master in deciding how much of an ingredient should be thrown in the pill concocting furnace, while also learning slowly from her master's pill concocting technique.

The fire attribute on Yang Chen's body had become more and more powerful. Previously when Ho Lin was following Yang Chen, she knew Yang Chen himself was very mystical, but she had perceived that all five attributes on his body seemed to be in perfect harmony. No one could predict what his attribute was. Presently, he was completely a fire attributed cultivator. Moreover, his flame seemed quite formidable and gave a sensation of going out of control.

This was not an illusion, rather Ho Lin's genuine feeling. Like Ho Lin, even Zhu Chentao also felt the same sensation. The transformation produced by fusing three flames not only made the power of the resultant flame greatly formidable, but the most

direct effect was that the fire attributed spirit power seemed to be going berserk.

The fusion of flames was an extremely dangerous thing in other people's opinion, and the degree of danger could be compared to mixing formidable explosives and using a sledgehammer to hit them incessantly. If one is even a little careless, the mixture would immediately explode. For other people, sensing that Yang Chen's flame was about to go out of control was completely normal.

More time passed, and the berserk flame within his body seemed to have obtained some control. The presence of fire within his body also lessened greatly. The anxious Ho Lin could finally put down the worries in her heart and no longer felt that apprehensiveness.

After taking a deep breath, Yang Chen finally stopped his cultivation and sobered up. During the fusion of the flames, he had to spent most of the time in resisting and controlling, finally successfully accomplishing the fusion.

This time's fusion had great benefits for Yang Chen. The fourth fire spirit power had unexpectedly been upgraded to the seventh layer of the foundation stage. This upgrade was the equivalent of entering into the later foundation stage.

Because of the increase in the fourth fire spirit power, the third fire spirit power had also obtained replenishment and broke through the fourth layer of the foundation stage, entering into the fifth layer of the foundation stage. The spirit power of other attributes also increased, finally breaking through the threshold of

the third layer of the foundation stage and entering the fourth layer of foundation stage, collectively stepping into mid foundation stage.

Now Yang Chen seemed to be purely a fire attributed cultivator. The fourth fire spirit power was around three layers higher compared to spirit power of other attributes, thus suppressing his other attributes and standing out.

“How much time has passed?”

While Ho Lin was serving her master, Yang Chen casually asked.

“Five years, senior apprentice brother!”

Ho Lin respectfully replied, although her address of Yang Chen had already changed to senior apprentice brother, but her manner was still respectful like before.

“Five years?”

Yang Chen also didn't expect this, although he knew that fusing the three flames would take long time, he hadn't expected that such a long time would have passed.

He also didn't know what was happening outside or whether his master had already reached the foundation stage in the water attribute. How did Palace Master Zhong Jiao deal with the matter regarding Shi Shanshan? These thoughts kept passing through his

mind and fading away.

Speaking of Yang Chen, within Ho Lin's view, his previous image was that of a lazy person. She had never before seen him sit and cultivate for any length of time while ignoring everything else. In the past, he would just circulate his spirit power once at fixed time everyday. Afterwards, he would either read some book or perhaps do something which would astonish everyone. This time, Yang Chen cultivating directly for five years was an unprecedented matter for her.

However, Ho Lin had already reached foundation stage, so she could also sense Yang Chen's present cultivation vaguely. Within a brief twenty years, Yang Chen had surprisingly entered the late foundation stage. This progress had already surpassed the normal speed of advancing by leaps and bounds. Instead, with his speed, it would be closer to say that he was advancing with the speed of an ignited rocket.

For a very long time, Yang Chen's cultivation hovered within the initial foundation realm. It could be said, within these past ten years of pill concocting, that Yang Chen had directly upgraded to the late foundation stage from initial foundation stage. This progress would astonish anyone.

Ho Lin had been together with Yang Chen for a long time and also knew about his temper. Thus, she asked him about the reason cautiously.

Yang Chen also didn't blame Ho Lin and explained it once for her that he had absorbed many flames and because of that his spirit

power had increased. Other than that, there was no other reason. However, this method to increase one's cultivation substantially shouldn't be used so lightly. Rather after using it once, one must spend a sufficient amount of time in consolidating the current cultivation. Otherwise, the gains wouldn't make up for the losses.

This was a fact even for Yang Chen. After explaining this to Ho Lin once, he also had to resume the daily routine of circulating the spirit power once again and slowly consolidate his current realm. At the same time, he also had to wait for Zhu Chentao to finish the early stage of refining.

Heavenly Roar residing within the Medicine Garden, until now, could only hold the most low level grade flying sword and lick it violently. Yang Chen also wasn't hasty. Instead, on an ordinary day, apart from reading those books sent by the Beast Taming Sect and guiding Ho Lin, he didn't have anything to do, so he used this time to refine the other flying swords he owned. He was convinced that as Heavenly Roar became more and more formidable, he would still be fond of more high grade flying swords.

Looking at Heavenly Roar holding and licking the flying sword madly, Yang Chen also decided something, after this time's refining was completed, he would go and find that drop of blood essence of a Heavenly Roar dog to provide proper supplements to Heavenly Roar.

While Yang Chen was waiting leisurely, Zhu Chentao also finally completed the initial stage of the black tiger spirit supporting pill and quickly shifted the medicinal liquid into Yang Chen's Profound Spirit Furnace.

The black tiger spirit supporting pill was of a higher grade compared to the black tiger suppressing pill, so the difficulty was also higher, furthermore Yang Chen's attitude towards refining it was also much more earnest. Zhu Chentao's excitement had already reached the same level as when Yang Chen had refined the black tiger suppressing pill to second grade.

This time, Yang Chen didn't use that eye dazzling method of controlling fire like last time. Instead, he used a method similar to Zhu Chentao who had used the most basic method of controlling fire to advance the refining.

But the more it was this way, the more serious Zhu Chentao became. From the time Yang Chen had refined the black tiger suppressing pill, Yang Chen had continued to use different refining methods, which gave Zhu Chentao an indistinct sensation, as if he had been looking at the gate of YuanYing. Presently looking at Yang Chen sincerely using the most fundamental refining method, it was as if something was being stirred up in Zhu Chentao's stomach, and suddenly he had a flash of understanding.

Regardless of whatever kind of technique is used, some basic things always remained constant. The most fundamental things used anywhere, they are always reliable. He previously thought he couldn't reach YuanYing stage because he was not proficient in using different high grade techniques, but now he discovered, it was certainly not that way.

Zhu Chentao seemed to have achieved great enlightenment during this period of time. After carefully observing Yang Chen's



refining technique for a whole year, he suddenly burst out laughing. Then heaving a sigh of relief, he said:

“I understand!”

Soon after, he sat upright on the ground, in the posture of cultivating and immersed into meditation.

A puzzling expression crossed Ho Lin's face, she didn't know what her master had realized, but she honestly performed all her duties, not daring to be lazy in the slightest. Fortunately, there was sufficient spirit power, so there was basically no need to use spirit stones for supplement. There was no problem, if any Da Cheng stage or lower level expert immersed himself in cultivation for a long time, so Ho Lin wasn't anxious about her master's safety.

Zhu Chentao's meditation lasted for several years. Moreover after the first three and a half years of his cultivation had passed, Yang Chen had already refined the black tiger spirit supporting pill and was ready to receive it.

The spirit power within the pill furnace was in great turmoil which caused Zhu Chentao sitting in cultivation to open up his eyes. He opened up his eyes perfectly at the time when Yang Chen was going to collect the pill and he hastily took a step forward, to observe everything carefully.

Using the pill collecting technique from Great Supreme Elder's pill refining scripture was indeed excessive in mortal world. Similarly, it gave great confidence to Yang Chen. The long process

of pill concocting had been completed very smoothly without any mistakes and finally at this last step, there basically wasn't any worry of the pill being a failure.

The medicinal liquid within the Profound Spirit Furnace began to rotate violently with Yang Chen's signal and slowly began to solidify. First the chaotic mess formed a lump, then slowly it began to rotate and turn spherical, the crude portions also began to disappear little by little, as if it was being sculpted carefully by an invisible hand.

Finally, when Yang Chen made the final gesture and turned his hand into a fist, a spherical pill was shaped up in a moment. On top of the elixir was a mark of black tiger that was quite realistic, as if an extremely gifted artisan had carved it on top, the long mark of 'hissing' towards the sky. Although didn't make any sound, it gave a sensation of hearing a tiger's roar.

And the instant the pill was finished, Zhu Chentao's body emitted a dazzling brilliance. Soon after, Yang Chen sensed something inappropriate in the surroundings.

“No way?”

Even Yang Chen couldn't help but become astounded. Zhu Chentao's situation this time was clearly the first sign of the YuanYing stage. After this stage had passed, immediately tribulation of lightning would come. Only after passing the lightning tribulation, could one be called a genuine YuanYing stage expert.

“Ho Lin, leave immediately!”

Yang Chen immediately instructed Ho Lin and then loudly shouted facing the sky:

“Senior Gui, release the restrictions!”

While yelling, he quickly collected that pill within a small jade bottle, this was the result of exhausting hard work of almost ten years, Yang Chen couldn't let it be destroyed by Zhu Chentao's lightning tribulation.

He collected the Profound Spirit Furnace and other things one by one properly, while on Zhu Chentao's side, the formation of Ying had already begun, his body was overflowing with spirit power. Yang Chen couldn't stay here anymore and quickly rushed out.

Everyone present in the Second Fierce Yang Hall had already sensed that events were far from encouraging and quickly rushed out to examine the situation. Although the range of influence of spirit power wasn't very large during the formation of Ying, but it was more than sufficient to cover the entire Second Fierce Yang Hall.

“Everyone fall back quickly and do not influence uncle master Zhu's Ying formation!”

Yang Chen loudly commanded, which made everyone realize

what was happening. Quickly, everyone followed Yang Chen's instructions and left the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

Not to speak of one Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, even if there were ten Second Fierce Yang Courtyard's, Yang Chen was willing to exchange them for a YuanYing stage expert. In any case, only some buildings would be damaged, and there would be no harm the underground spirit vein.

Yang Chen wasn't worried that anyone would interfere, having old tree demon's original body there, no one would be able to create a disturbance inside. He kept observing the transformation in Zhu Chentao's body from far away using his spiritual awareness, while secretly assessing Zhu Chentao's current situation.

Soon, Palace Master Zhong Jiao and other few elders who weren't in seclusion quickly hurried over there, on seeing Yang Chen, he asked only one question, whether the pill refining was a success. After Yang Chen nodded affirmatively, Palace Master's attention concentrated on Zhu Chentao's situation. Regardless of however much foreign help they might get, it would never be as reliable as having a YuanYing stage expert in his own sect.

The colour of sky darkened suddenly with black clouds appearing in the sky, which continued to grow thicker and thicker, from time to time, a bolt of lightning would flicker among them. Everyone looking at this suddenly tensed up, this was the tribulation cloud of the lightning tribulation, which clearly meant that Zhu Chentao had already formed his Ying successfully and was only waiting for the tribulation lightning to arrive.

The rotating lightning cloud in the air suddenly turned into a spiral, then immediately, a lightning strike struck Yang Chen's small courtyard. At that instant, Yang Chen's small courtyard immediately turned into fragments, revealing Zhu Chentao sitting inside in upright position.

Zhu Chentao who was baptised by thunder, remained sitting motionlessly. However, his body emitted a different brilliance as if he had been set on fire.

The lightning strikes kept falling, second strike, third strike, all along until the eighth strike. Until now, Zhu Chentao hadn't shown any intentions of moving, but before the last strike, he stood up, the fire on his body also suddenly rose up, as if a bucket full of boiling oil had been poured on him. The fire seemed exceptionally clear under the black shadow.

Bang!

Finally, the last and thickest lightning strike directly struck at Zhu Chentao's forehead almost penetrating inside, the flickering around Zhu Chentao's body continued for a good while, then slowly disappeared. The tribulation cloud in the sky also finally started to turn bright and finally disappeared.

"Palace Master! All elders!"

Without caring about his completely charred looks, Zhu Chentao rushed towards the higher ups of Pure Yang Palace and bowed in front of them.

“Congratulations, Hall Master Zhu!”

Regardless of whether it was the Palace Master or the elders or other people who were watching, at this moment, everyone was saying the same thing.

Palace Master Zhong Jiao burst out laughing, unable to hide his happiness. His sect only had few YuanYing stage experts, let alone a YuanYing stage pill concocting master. What other matter could bring him greater happiness compared to this?